

INSIDE THE ROYAL FAMILY  
AND THE MONARCHY'S FIGHT  
FOR SURVIVAL

# ENDGAME



OMID SCOBIE

NEW YORK TIMES BESTSELLING AUTHOR OF  
*FINDING FREEDOM*



INSIDE THE ROYAL FAMILY  
AND THE MONARCHY'S FIGHT  
FOR SURVIVAL

# ENDGAME



OMID SCOBIE

NEW YORK TIMES BESTSELLING AUTHOR OF

## *FINDING FREEDOM*

# endgame

*Inside the Royal Family and the  
Monarchy's Fight for Survival*

OMID SCOBIE



DEYST.

*An Imprint of* WILLIAM MORROW







*Omid Scobie*

# Dedication

*To everyone who clicks on, reads, or watches my work—  
your support means the world. Thank you!*



## **endgame** (noun)

ěndgām

the final stages of a chess game after most of the pieces have been removed  
from the board

*also:* the final stages of an extended process or course of events

# Contents

*Cover*

*Title Page*

*Dedication*

Prologue

1: The Queen and Her Piper: Elizabeth II's Final Days

2: Shaky Ground: The Queen Is Dead, the Monarchy Faces Trouble

3: "Oh God, I Hate This": King Charles's Premiere

4: Remembrance of Things Past: The Ongoing Campaign to Make the Royals Great Again

5: Baggage: The Lingering Trials of King Charles

6: The Fall of Prince Andrew: Scandal, Shame, and Silencing Jane Doe

7: Race and the Royals: Institutional Bigotry and Denial

8: Gloves On: Prince William, Heir to the Throne

9: Gloves Off: Prince Harry, Man on a Mission

10: The Men (and Women) in Gray: Royal Courtiers and the Struggle for Power

11: Ghost at the Feast: Princess Diana and Revisionist History

12: Skilled Survivors: Camilla and Kate, Windsor Women

Part I: Camilla—The Transformation of a Mistress

Part II: Kate—Suddenly Front and Center

13: A Dangerous Game: Royals and the Media

14: The Decay of Years: The Fading Glory of the Crown

15: Endgame

*Acknowledgments*

*Notes*

*Photo Section*

*About the Author*

*Copyright*

*About the Publisher*

# Prologue

When Queen Elizabeth II was in her nineties, there was an element of covering the royals that those around me found a little morbid. Wherever I went, whether it was on a road trip with mates to Wales or a royal visit to Morocco, I always packed a black suit and tie. To friends and family outside the royal bubble, the presence of that ominous suit bag was, to say the least, somewhat gloomy, and a grim reminder that Queen Elizabeth II was nearing the end of her life.

As a journalist who joined the royal beat in 2011, I knew this was a vital piece of the reporting tool kit—an appropriate outfit at the ready so I could spring into action the moment Buckingham Palace shared the news of the Queen’s death. While I was at home in London, the suit (a practical polyester blend, because who has time to steam out creases during breaking news?) mostly lived in the trunk of my car.

On September 8, 2022, however, that car and its contents were twenty-odd miles away getting serviced when I was summoned to ABC News’ London bureau for what we worried might become the long-feared announcement. I was in the middle of running errands when rumors started to flood through via sources and colleagues, so I didn’t have time to race home to grab a backup suit. Feeling the pressure and lack of time, I grabbed a simple black sweater from a nearby Marks & Spencer and took the fastest route, via London Underground, to the Hammersmith studio.

The Queen had been bedbound at Balmoral Castle in Scotland for the forty-eight hours prior, after conducting what later became her final engagements on September 6—seeing out the controversial prime minister Boris Johnson and welcoming in his exceedingly short-lived replacement, Liz Truss. Palace aides announced the day after the monarch’s royal duties

that she had accepted doctors' advice to rest. The next morning, after a further Palace update warned that her doctors were "concerned for Her Majesty's health and have recommended she remain under medical supervision," an insider messaged me to say, "It's not looking good." For a multitude of reasons, I hoped the warning would turn out to be a false alarm.

Arriving at ABC News' offices that Thursday afternoon, I received a text from someone very close to the family. As I caught my breath in the elevator of the Disney-owned building, "A Spoonful of Sugar" was playing quietly in the background, making a surreal moment even more so. "Please don't say anything yet but I think it's happened," they wrote. I responded with a follow-up, checking that I understood their message correctly. No doubt trying to get confirmation of their own, the source—someone whose word I had come to trust over recent years—didn't reply.

Fifteen minutes later, as I sat in front of the camera and put on my earpiece and mic, my calm in the storm, the network's royal producer Zoe Magee, called across the newsroom: "We've had confirmation." Messages started pouring into my phone within seconds. The statement from the Palace had yet to land, but my heart was already thumping. Though I had been at briefings that described what would happen the moment "London Bridge" (the code name for the monarch's death and the operation that kicked into action straight afterward) went down, nothing could have truly prepared anyone for the news. Not even the two-hundred-page research bible Magee had created in the recent months. The death of Britain's longest-reigning monarch, a woman much loved and revered around the world, had a bigger impact on me in the moment than I expected. The Queen had been a presence in my life for as long as I could remember, a fact shared by most Brits. Whether you cared about the royal family or not, she had evolved into the nation's grandmother—a comforting presence during destabilizing times and easily more popular than the monarchy itself. "New York is going to come to you shortly, Omid!" my producer prompted.

*This is it.*

\* \* \*

An astounding amount of royal history happened during the writing of *Endgame*. The world was introduced to King Charles III and Queen



Camilla; Prince Andrew was stripped of his titles. Prince Harry released an explosive memoir and a revealing Netflix series, and, of course, Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II passed away. All these events, along with a litany of startling headlines, greatly impacted this book, including the structure and shape of the narrative and its cast of characters. What should have been a banner year for the royal family, one spent celebrating the Queen and her seventy years of service, was instead a year of more upheaval and strife. The Queen's Platinum Jubilee in the first half of 2022 is but a footnote now because her death followed so quickly in September—a summer of flag-waving celebrations quickly met an autumn of profound change and depth charge revelations. All this proved trying for a staid institution not exactly used to, or adept at managing, such rapid-fire disruptions or change. The royal establishment has now assiduously installed an elderly new king while fending off unyielding accusations and misgivings from an exiled prince.

I started this book in the summer of 2022, so the Queen's passing happened well into the writing process. This meant going back and figuring out how to reframe key chapters while looking through the twin prisms of the late monarch's death and the ascension of her eldest son. Where significant parts of *Endgame* initially theorized about the future of the Firm, I suddenly found myself watching and reporting on that future as it happened in real time. Overnight we were in it: the royal family's new chapter—a moment I couldn't have imagined during my first royal engagement with Prince William and a then Kate Middleton over eleven years earlier. The months following the Queen's death gave me the necessary time to process such a seismic event and an opportunity to peer into the new era before contextualizing it. And that time provided me with a chance to speak with those currently at the center of it as well as the many individuals who had been part of the journey leading up to it. Think of it this way: I started writing the book in the New Elizabethan age and finished in the Carolean era—a dynastic sea change happened in a matter of days. And with it, so did many of my perceptions.

The full reality of Queen Elizabeth II's death hit me ten days later, when I joined a small group of journalists to observe the scene of the former monarch lying in state at Westminster Hall. Members of the public had queued for up to ten miles and over twenty-four hours to pay their respects. For those of us in the press working eighteen-hour shifts, reporting to

millions of others around the world, British Parliament's "Operation Marquee" team had arranged prebooked one-hour time slots in Westminster so we could capture this moment in history.

I'd been to the Houses of Parliament before, for other assignments and events, but with all political activity suspended during the ten-day national mourning period, the usually buzzing alley through the length of the Palace of Westminster was eerily silent as we walked toward New Palace Yard. Deep in conversation with one of the staff members guiding us, I wasn't at all prepared for the moment we arrived at the doors of Westminster Hall. Suddenly, there it was: the Queen's coffin resting on a raised ornamental catafalque.

You couldn't hear much else beyond our footsteps and the rustle of coats and bags carried by mourners as we entered the hall's vaulted silence. A solemn usher, obviously weary from his work, calmly directed us up a narrow spiral staircase at the back of the room. We climbed a makeshift riser painted to blend in with the thick magnesian limestone walls of the eleventh-century room—an inconspicuous observation tower for the press.

From this position, about fifteen feet off the ground, my eyes were almost at the same level as the Imperial State Crown resting atop the coffin. As I'm sure it did for so many of the people who quietly walked in and out to pay their respects, the juxtaposition of the crown and the coffin emphasized the finality of it all. Like many journalists covering this story, I had been operating in a suspended state of disconnect up until that moment.

Lying next to the pillowed crown were the orb and scepter. I'd seen them in person before, many times, but being so close to the two symbols in this setting gave me goosebumps. There was the weight of history and tradition, yes, but also the aura of mystery and myth. Ordinary things in and of themselves, really, but an accrument of time, the narratives of power and divine lineage dictated over centuries, and the human desire for meaning and order all alchemized, transmuting those *things* into powerful ideas. It was a strange, commanding magic that I felt that day in Westminster. But the woman, the human form of all that regal authority and mysterious poetry, was lying in a coffin underneath. For so long, she stood for the Crown, and the Crown for her. Without her presence, these ornaments and symbols seemed exposed, naked somehow, as if they had been caught unawares.

King Charles III. Even after all this time, it still doesn't always look quite right on the page. The same can be said of Queen Camilla—those promises of her taking on only the titles Princess Consort, and then Queen Consort, were just white lies the Palace is now keen for people to forget. But here we are. Despite their flaws and many mistakes, it's difficult not to sympathize with the new king and queen. Filling such enormous shoes is almost an impossible task, especially considering that when Her Majesty died, unfortunately so did much of the legend, mystique, and secrecy that enshrouded the monarchy. It's safe to say that very few outside a strict inner circle knew much of anything about Queen Elizabeth II. She inhabited her stately role completely. Her personal life was her own and she fiercely guarded it, knowing full well that to share it was to lose it. She also appreciated and respected the demands of the Crown: service over personal gain, and duty over individual happiness. In public, her resolute composure expressed this in spades, no explanations necessary.

With Charles and Camilla, it's the opposite. The King has lived a full life out in the public as an outspoken environmental activist, an occasional meddler in politics, a successful businessman, a flawed father, and a philandering husband who destroyed the life of Princess Diana—an ignominious legacy he's eager to put behind him now that he is on the throne. He's known to us warts and all. His litany of personal failings and missteps is front-page fodder, and much of the British public will never fully forgive him for his role in Diana's tragic demise. And Queen Camilla, a woman who is finally tolerated by the public but is still not universally *accepted*, remains to many as "the other woman," the third person in Charles and Diana's marriage and someone who caused much pain and chaos within the royal family. Now, no veil of arcane secrecy falls between the new King and Queen and their subjects, providing cover and inscrutable power. Everyone already knows that King Charles might have preferred a life as Queen Camilla's tampon.

Though off to a steady start, the ongoing efforts to boost Charles's popularity will never come easy for the institution of the monarchy, regardless of his new station. As prepared for thronedom as he may have felt, behind palace walls, and in the minds of the public, the question remains: Is he up for the job? Immediately after the Queen passed away and ordinary citizens were still shedding tears, the new King Charles made headlines after cameras caught him throwing a tantrum over a faulty pen. A

stubborn eccentric who has spent most of his life waiting and planning for his ascension, even at the cost of his relationships with his own sons, the former Prince of Wales is not only far less popular than his predecessor and his successor, he has also been a thorn in the side of the institution. Despite the fact he's well-liked by world leaders and global power figures, during the life of his mother, he was never fully embraced by power brokers within the system, the Palace operators and partisans with links to the British establishment, including the government. When he was Prince of Wales, some senior Buckingham Palace aides had expressed to me and others that they felt the then next in line didn't quite have the moxie or vision for the family's next chapter. Perhaps they were right. Just weeks before becoming the new monarch, he was knee-deep in controversy involving bags of money, cash-for-honors allegations, and a police investigation into donations accepted by his Prince's Foundation charity.

Or perhaps he was just never allowed to demonstrate his readiness. Many in the Firm's old guard, including the Queen's most senior courtiers—those shadowy men, and now women, “in gray,” as Diana famously called them—distrusted and disliked Charles. Personally, I've always admired Charles's efforts in the environmental space, but it's telling that he is also a man who—over fifty-five years into his life as a working royal—failed to truly capture the imagination and interest of those outside the monarchist bubble. His quirks and entitled behavior have, at times, alienated him from the institutional hidden forces that could change that popularity overnight, leaving him to take matters into his own hands, often with disastrous results. His failure to initiate a substantive dialogue with Prince Harry, despite how clearly his son detailed their fracture in interviews and public statements, is yet another sign of his inability to effectively address family matters head-on or navigate constitutional crises.

To add insult to injury, Charles knows his reign will be a transitional one, an intervening sovereignty that must happen before his elder son, William, the Prince of Wales, takes over at a far younger age and attempts to breathe new life into a desiccated monarchical system. Over the years I've watched as, behind the scenes, senior courtiers and other establishment figures groom Prince William for the throne. As a long-serving member of the Queen's most trusted staff put it to me before the monarch's death, Charles may be the next king, but William is “the future.”

This brewing power struggle between the favored prince and the unpopular king is Shakespearean—a familial tug-of-war waged both onstage and off that still has the potential to unravel the monarchical tapestry. Scheming and backstabbing began long ago. Jealous of Harry’s popularity with the media and William’s preferred status in the Firm, King Charles has been known to turn a blind eye while aides leak details about his sons to the press. Camilla, also guilty of the same practices, caused further damage to the family during her long-running campaign to rehabilitate her own image. A tactical masterstroke, a well-timed leak, can pave the way for a beneficial back-scratching relationship with media confidantes in exchange for favorable treatment while also cutting down competition for the spotlight a rung or two. Long before the release of *Spare*, it was well known within the tight circle of royal correspondents that Charles eagerly piggybacked on reports of Prince Harry’s teenage drug use by allowing the leak of personal details about his own son to construct a “great dad” narrative that many within the press gladly printed in return.

They say never mix family with business and, though the brothers had in the past put on a good show when needed, William and Harry are the perfect example of why this particular family business often teeters on the brink. Though they were remarkably close as they grew up, Harry’s decision to “defect” to America (William’s choice of word, according to a source, not mine) widened an already growing rift between the pair. Disappointed in Harry’s life decisions and rooted in his ignited, newfound dedication to the Crown, William now considers his brother an outsider, especially since the release of Harry’s memoir, which not only gave further details surrounding the Sussexes’ decision to step back from their royal roles but also William’s part in it. The heir doesn’t really “need” the spare any longer anyway, one source admitted to me shortly after the Duke of Sussex left Britain in March 2020.

No longer useful as a helpful distraction or collateral damage, William had been wanting to distance himself from his brother ever since Harry’s marriage to Meghan—whom the then Duke of Cambridge took a disliking to from the start. Now firmly established within their own household, William and Kate have become a committed, driven team, focused on their roles in the family and in royal history. Harry’s dramas are no longer of any concern to them. Or so they say.

Some might argue that it's unnecessary to bring the Duke and Duchess of Sussex into conversations about the future of the monarchy since they started their separate life in California three years ago. As royal family members now living autonomously and completely disconnected from the institution, they currently play no part in where the Firm goes from here. But their role in the bigger royal story remains as important as ever. The issues raised by the couple, including allegations of bullying, misogyny, racism (or, in Harry's description, "unconscious bias"), and image manipulation, alongside the institutional cruelty they experienced, remain largely ignored and unexamined by the Palace. And any promises made after their departure, including a focus on diversity within the royal households, have proved little more than PR-friendly gloss-overs. Not a great look for an institution whose monarch is sovereign to interracial Britain and the head of the predominantly non-white Commonwealth. Discrediting Harry and Meghan through negative press briefings (no matter how many times Palace sources deny doing so) may have damaged the Sussexes' legitimacy to many, but for the members of the public still horrified by the family's treatment of its first mixed-race royal, it remains a thorny issue.

Beyond the family circle's damaging dramas, the institution of the monarchy is in increasingly desperate straits, too. Supporting a cratered Firm after the Queen's death is a tall order in and of itself. Doubly so when a growing percentage of the population feels that the monarchy is losing relevancy, with many now far more comfortable in voicing their views after Elizabeth II's passing. Recent years have seen an institution scrambling to justify its significance to younger generations who believe it no longer serves a strong enough purpose to justify its growing cost to the state. To stay relevant, the system, in an almost Trumpian twist, leans on patriotism—even jingoism—to shore up its purpose. When in doubt, festoon the palace, unfurl the Union Jacks, and enlist the tabloids.

In the first year of his reign, however, with the memory of the late Queen still fresh in the minds of many, King Charles III has received a healthy amount of support. To many, particularly Britain's royalists, he is still a son who lost his mother. But, as declining popularity polls already show, the good favor of the country can last only so long. And the bigger question remains: How can a former pampered prince who is now an aging king keep the attention of those who already feel the monarchy is less

necessary than ever—or, worse, are totally indifferent to it? Charles’s mother left a mandate and a clear path forward—a blueprint for how to keep things afloat. But is Charles the kind of king to simply follow the rules? Or will he want to go his own way, as he has repeatedly demonstrated in the past? It’s an inescapable fact that the Firm’s public ordeals, knee-jerk reactions, and family discord have created a life raft mentality that has long made their “never complain, never explain” mantra impossible to live by. The rot has set in, and it’s eating away at the monarchy’s undergirding. Without Queen Elizabeth II, who is there to offer a counterpoint? To stop the rot from spreading? Like Dorian’s portrait in the attic, the ruinous truth is starting to show.

\* \* \*

I have followed every important step of the royal story since William and Kate’s engagement captured the hearts and excitement of a global audience in 2010, but I never expected to one day find myself in the middle of it. Working as the European bureau chief for Jann Wenner’s *Us Weekly* magazine—at the time one of America’s most-read publications—my entrance into the royal press ranks was bright-eyed, and I cut my teeth covering the gamut of royal events and news stories: engagements, weddings, births, and many wet Wednesdays in small rural towns for community center openings and plaque unveilings. The job gave me the perfect courtside seat to their world, and it wasn’t long before I started to travel around the globe on tours and foreign visits with William, Kate, and Harry—the younger, more exciting stars of the family at the time—while forming bonds with those around them. Whether it was privately sharing strategies in the dawn of the social media age, providing a sounding board during certain media crises, or getting invites to private drinks receptions with the royals, I was a welcome face to Palace aides from the kinder U.S. press. Luckily for me, my work separated me from some of the less savory British media outlets that staff and family members had grown to quietly despise. The arrival of Meghan in 2016 saw my two news beats (entertainment and the royals) collide, and less than a year later I made the decision to focus on the royal family full time. Owing to a unique pool of sources and a refusal to follow the crowd, I quickly became a trusted confidante for many in and around the younger family—a true insider.



But that all changed in late 2020 after the publication of my first book, *Finding Freedom*, about Harry and Meghan's whirlwind journey in, and out of, the House of Windsor. It blew the lid off the Sussex saga, finally revealing the backroom machinations and family betrayals that eventually forced the royal couple out of the Firm. But it also put me on the receiving end of several of the same toxic practices that pushed the couple to their breaking point. "You ended up in a place a journalist rarely finds themselves—in the middle of a family war . . . And you were on the wrong side," a senior aide to the late Queen opined to me as I began writing this book. The fear of damaging revelations scared the family and angered powerful Palace operatives, and it also put a mark on my back. Five months before its release, a close friend of Prince Harry had warned me that the institution—and the media allies that support it—might "play dirty" against those who attempt to expose the truth. They weren't wrong.

I'm still in the mix, but let's just say I'm no longer the journalist who some in the family, or the more royalist-leaning correspondents, are thrilled to see at engagements. Having moved away from playing the Palace game of give-and-take to maintain access, I am now a perceived source of trouble for the institution. Why? Because I know—and share—too much. For four years, some of the most damaging in Windsor history, I witnessed the full scope of the deceptions, malice, and defensive posturing of an unstable family business and an institution in decline. I saw just how far they would go to save their own skin, the deep corrosion at the heart of the royal establishment, and I've witnessed the human damage done because of it.

It's impossible to deny the Queen's achievements during her seventy-year reign—something the world was reminded of during the outpouring of grief and tributes after her death. I was fortunate enough to cover some of the late monarch's greatest moments—from making the line of succession more equitable to her tireless charity efforts—and I've seen the impact that Her Majesty's unwavering dedication to duty had on a new generation of working royals. Even at the height of his painful battle with the institution, I can't forget how Prince Harry's closest aide told me that the Queen's life of public service continues to inspire and motivate his every step forward in the Sussexes' new American life.

But all that hangs in the balance now. I fear that by continuing to ignore the ongoing constitutional corruption in the Palace's inner sanctum and enabling a cabal of courtiers and the British media to call the shots—as well

as quietly supporting those who have brought shame and humiliation to the Crown—the royal institution is risking untold damage to the Queen’s legacy. King Charles and Prince William have already displayed signs that they are allowing selfish agendas, a culture of cover-ups and PR trickery, and family discord to take over the House of Windsor. It is an outcome the royal family can avoid, but only if there is change.

In the past I, like others, have held back on revealing some of the darker truths at the heart of the institution of the British monarchy because I didn’t want to lose my insider position or my contacts, or experience some of the threats made toward me. But as the once-majestic brocade of the royal family continued to fade and fray behind the scenes and on the front page, I was increasingly convinced that it was time to write this book.

Some of what you will read in *Endgame* may already be known to those in the self-regulated pack of journalists who, just like the White House press pool, shadow the family on their various endeavors. But that doesn’t mean you will hear it from them. Though one can usually get away with the occasional rock of the boat, you need to waltz the Palace’s dance if you want to maintain access to those off-record briefings and invites to private engagements. Me? Let’s just say it’s not the path I continued to follow.

The information shared over the pages ahead is sourced from over a decade of personal reporting files as well as conversations and interviews with the many who have played a part in seminal moments, be they friends or professional acquaintances of the royals and those working for the monarchy, Palace aides and courtiers past and present, insiders from the world of politics and media, and, as you’ll see, occasionally royal family members themselves.

Parts of this book will burn my bridges for good. But to tell the full story, there’s no holding back. Not anymore. We’re in the endgame.

# 1

## The Queen and Her Piper

Elizabeth II's Final Days

*Life seems to go on without effort when I am filled with music.*

—George Eliot, *The Mill on the Floss*

*So the days, the last days, blow about in a memory, hazy autumnal, all alike as leaves: until a day  
unlike any other I've lived.*

—Truman Capote, *Breakfast at Tiffany's*

**O**n the morning of September 6, 2022, at Balmoral Castle, a fifty-thousand-acre royal estate situated deep in the northeastern corner of the rugged, mystical Scottish Highlands, the piper to the sovereign, Pipe Major Paul Burns, started his day the same as he had done for over a year. Standing below the draped bay windows of Her Majesty's quarters, he fired up his bagpipes at 9:00 a.m. sharp to "wake the Queen." She was, of course, already up at this time (since 7:30 a.m.), but for seventy years of her life it had always been the official start to her day after having a bath and breakfast, and a moment she always looked forward to.

Though his fifteen-minute piping session usually started promptly on the hour, those in charge asked him to commence his tune thirty minutes later on this foggy autumn morning due to the Queen's ailing health and need for rest. As Burns blew air into his instrument's flutelike chanter, a low drone crowned by a haunting melody drifted over the sprawling Balmoral grounds, ascended into the forested hills surrounding the castle, and spread into the cloudy sky. To those within earshot, goosebumps were as guaranteed as his presence. Major Burns's piping prefaced a busy and

important day of engagements for the monarch. At the time, of course, no one knew that this piping session would also herald the Queen's final day of royal duties.

At 11:00 a.m. exactly, the Queen met with Boris Johnson to accept his official resignation as prime minister. The conservative Tory party had pushed him out after a series of disgraceful scandals, and this was his official exit. The meeting lasted forty minutes, with Johnson later sharing that the Queen appeared "bright and focused." Professional, too—though the monarch privately disliked Johnson because of his behavior (the only one of fifteen prime ministers forced to formally apologize to the sovereign *twice*), sources said "you wouldn't have known it" during their time together. At noon, she met with the newly elected party leader, Liz Truss, to officially grant her permission to form a new government. The Queen had always conducted this ceremony, known as the "kissing of hands," at Buckingham Palace, but, due to her ongoing health struggles and her officially stamped "episodic mobility issues" from which she continued to suffer, Palace officials decided that Truss should make the trip to the Highland estate instead.

Less than forty-eight hours earlier, concerned courtiers suggested to the monarch that she might be better off letting Prince Charles carry out the task in her place. After all, the heir had already stood in for his mother at the opening of Parliament four months earlier. But this was one duty the Queen—despite the crippling pain she was experiencing in private—would not step aside from. "It's my job," she defiantly told aides.

Her meeting with Truss was short, lasting a little under an hour, and the Queen concluded it by allowing a photograph of the two to be released—the monarch with her walking stick in her hand (a dark wood favorite that once belonged to Prince Philip) and a room-lighting smile. Truss looked somewhat out of her element, which proved to be the case—her time as PM lasted a mere seven weeks. After carrying out light reading and correspondence from her desk, the Queen returned to her bedroom after lunch. Two days later, and after she postponed a virtual Privy Council meeting on the advice of doctors, Major Burns piped the Queen awake for what would be the last time.

A member of the Royal Regiment of Scotland, Pipe Major Paul Burns took over the piping duties from his predecessor, Pipe Major Richard Grisdale, in late 2021. A forty-six-year-old unassuming man with

distinguished graying temples, solemn eyes, and a welcoming smile, Burns hailed from Ingleby Barwick, a small North Yorkshire town not far from the heathered valleys and Jurassic scenery of the North York Moors. He served as the Queen's thirteenth piper during her seventy-year reign and was part of a line of pipe majors who stretch back to Queen Victoria's time on the throne. A dutiful, even-keeled man who is proud of his country and honored to serve, Major Burns told his family and friends on several occasions that it was the job of his dreams.

The tradition of the piper to the sovereign began in 1843, after Queen Victoria traveled to the Scottish Highlands to visit John Campbell, the 2nd Marquess of Breadalbane, at Taymouth Castle. The marquess had his own piper, and Queen Victoria fell in love with both the sound of the instrument and the idea of having a piper of her own. She later wrote to her mother, the Duchess of Kent: "We have heard nothing but bagpipes since we have been in the beautiful Highlands, and I am become so fond of it [*sic*], that I mean to have a Piper, who can, if you like it, pipe every night at Frogmore." After seeking Campbell's sage counsel, Queen Victoria ordered her clerk marshal, a member of her royal household, to swear in Angus Mackay as the first official piper to Her Majesty. Since then, pipers, who are present whenever the monarch is in residence, have served the sovereign in this position, establishing what is an unquestionably affecting royal tradition.

To most of the thirteen pipers taken on by Queen Elizabeth II, their nickname ended up as "Pipes," and all the pipe majors quickly developed a lighthearted, friendly rapport that included jokes and cheerful banter with Her Majesty. Scott Methven, who piped for the Queen from 2015 until 2019, enjoyed a particularly warm relationship with Her Majesty.

Though the friendship was respectful on both sides, the Queen was never afraid to be the first to break the ice with her pipers, knowing that they would probably be nervous in her presence. "Do you know you're the first piper to hold the post that I haven't had to look up to?" she once joked to Methven, who—though broad in stature—stands at just five six. "That was the first thing she said to me," he later shared. "So, I was like, 'Right, is that how it's going to be?! One-liners. Right, here we go!'"

And it wasn't just jokes. The Queen demonstrated her genuine kindness to him when his wife, Morven, was diagnosed with cancer. He was at a loss as to what to do after discovering the tragic news, not wanting to let down the Queen and skip his playing session that evening. But the boss was

having none of it. “No,” the Queen told him that afternoon. “You’re not playing. You’re going to go to the hospital now and sit with your wife.”

“She treats everyone with the utmost respect,” he said, adding that when he took time off to be with his wife during her chemotherapy treatments, the British Army wanted to install a new pipe major who didn’t have family matters to attend to. But, once again, the Queen had his back. “I’ve got one Queen’s Piper. And the reason he isn’t here is that he’s away caring for his wife,” she told her staff. “So, you are not replacing him under any circumstances. He is not getting removed from his post because his wife is dying of cancer.”

The pipers to the sovereign do more than just pipe in the mornings and at night; they also sometimes play when guests arrive at Buckingham Palace, Balmoral, or any other royal residence where a royal hosts visitors and family members. During the Queen’s final summer at Balmoral, Major Burns greeted many of those who came to visit, including family members who had all grown to love the unwieldy instrument and its rustic tone. For the most part, anyway. Prince Harry has amusingly described the instrument as a “drunken octopus” that, depending on your mood, “could sometimes drive you mad.”

Balmoral, in any season, is a beautiful place. The Queen often referred to it as her “happy place.” Located in Aberdeenshire, Scotland, the huge estate is nestled in the foothills of the craggy Cairngorms, a mountain range that includes some of Britain’s highest plateaus and peaks, namely the cratered but towering Mount Lochnagar. It was “Dark Loch na Garr” to Lord Byron, who, in one of his earliest poems, praises the mountain’s rugged glory: “Restore me the rocks where the snow-flake reposes / . . . Oh for the crags that are wild and majestic.”

With a stunning view of these sublime peaks, Balmoral Castle sits at the heart of the estate and was acquired by the royal family in 1848, when Prince Albert privately purchased it for Queen Victoria. A Scottish baronial castle built from local granite and outfitted with a seven-story tower and pepper pot turrets, Balmoral predominantly functions as a grand country house for the royal family. Inside the fairy-tale home are stone floors, decorative fireplaces, and dozens of rooms—it’s cavernous but warm, with dark woods accenting all the granite and stone. It’s historically been a quiet Highland retreat for gatherings, shooting parties, and outdoor pursuits such as salmon fishing—the late Prince Philip’s favorite pastime—hunting, and

hiking. Even during the Queen's later years, she was known to confidently drive her Land Rover Defender over large swathes of the fifty-thousand-acre property—both on and off road. “The roads were bumpy and full of potholes, but she handled them all like a pro,” a longtime aide told me. “The further out you go, the easier it is to get lost, but she knew every inch of the estate off by heart.”

About a mile from Balmoral's main castle, up on a hill above the cascading, salmon-rich River Dee, is Craigowan Lodge, a modest (at least by royal standards) seven-bedroom guest house where the Queen and Prince Philip would often stay for part of their summers on the estate. It was at Craigowan where the Queen spent the first month of her final summer at Balmoral, before moving into the castle. Her team there was much leaner than her others, but close aides like her long-serving page of the backstairs, Paul Whybrew, and her sergeant at arms, Barry Mitford, were always nearby. After Philip's death, these two men dutifully watched TV with their boss in the evenings and brought in her beloved *Racing Post* newspaper every morning. Also by her side was her personal assistant and advisor, and curator to the Queen, Angela Kelly. A fashion designer and, according to most, a stern woman, Kelly was very protective of the Queen—she even lived with the monarch during her February 2022 bout with Covid, doing everything including reading to her at night and washing her hair. She was one of the Queen's most trusted aides and confidantes, and a source said she was “indispensable” during Her Majesty's final weeks.

By all accounts, it was a peaceful summer for the Queen after her arrival that July. Sources familiar with her itinerary, and those who had visited her there, shared that she enjoyed spending time sitting in the sun when it was pleasant out. Mobility issues kept her from taking her usual walks, but she did use her staghorn walking stick—a cane suitable for outdoors made from locally sourced wood—to take short strolls around Balmoral's grounds and watch her two beloved corgis, Sandy and Muick, scamper around the gardens. As a close aide described, “That summer was walks, picnics, and barbecues—all the things the Queen loved to do at Balmoral.” People who spent time with her, including one of the staff members who spoke to me for this book, said she was often “smiling and in good spirits.”

Always mindful of the work to be done, the Queen also fulfilled her daily duties without fail—her red box of government papers and briefings

was always up-to-date and close by. All play and no work was never the Queen's style. In fact, it was loyal aides who had to make sure she paced herself, knowing that for her to do it all, they would have to find ways to spread out her scheduled duties so they didn't take an irreversible toll on her limited energy. Though she loved attending the annual Braemar Gathering, an historic Highland Games festival near Aberdeen—she missed only two in her life—Palace aides and doctors decided the lively event was not a good idea for the ninety-six-year-old. Courtiers back in London, including the Queen's private secretary Sir Edward Young, Prince Charles's private secretary Sir Clive Alderton, and the master of the household Sir Tony Johnstone-Burt, discussed the sovereign's workload if she didn't return to Windsor at the end of the season—and how other family members, particularly Charles, could help pick up some of that work in her stead. The monarch usually left her Balmoral retreat in late September or early October to return to palace life, but with her health issues, her departure was looking unlikely. Even before she left, a long-serving Buckingham Palace courtier told me a month before her arrival that they were unsure whether Her Majesty would come back at all. "I have a feeling in the pit of my stomach that this will be the last time we see her head up there," they said. "There's a sense that, and I feel scared to even say it, that she may not make it."

Despite her serious health issues and the unwelcome changes to her work schedule, the Queen ensured that Balmoral was a revolving door of close family members sojourning there that summer, including her son Prince Edward and his wife, Sophie, Countess of Wessex, and her grandson Prince William with Kate, then the Duchess of Cambridge, and their children, Prince George, Princess Charlotte, and Prince Louis. And the steadfast Major Burns was there to greet every single one of them who came through the door. The Queen also welcomed friends from every part of her life to Balmoral during her last days. The Reverend Dr. Iain Greenshields was appointed as the moderator of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland that summer and received a two-day invite on September 3 from the monarch. Unknown to all at the time, his visit would fall on what would become the final weekend of her life.

"You could see her fragility, but as soon as she started talking, as soon as she was engaged with you, a very different kind of person emerged," he said of his time with the monarch. "She was somebody whose memory was



exceptional . . . She spoke very warmly of Scotland and the relationship she had with Scotland and particularly the Balmoral estate where she felt very much at peace in her last days as it was going to turn out to be.” And despite her physical struggles, the Queen’s trademark wit was as sharp as ever. After dining together on the Saturday, the monarch stopped Reverend Dr. Greenshields before he returned to his guest accommodation at the castle’s Tower Rooms. “Your Queen is sending you to the tower,” she said with a smile, chuckling at her own joke.

The monarch was also in a reflective mood, Greenshields shared, often reminiscing about the joy she had felt while staying in Scotland. “She loved Balmoral estate and [after lunch] she took me over to the window and she was just showing me the different gardens and flower beds that were there and pointing out the estate that brought her so much comfort and peace in her life.” The pair also spent time reflecting on Her Majesty’s faith and the role it played throughout her seventy-year reign. “[Her faith] was fundamental,” he said. “She said she had no regrets, having started that journey of faith, she had no regrets at all.”

On the second day of his visit, Reverend Dr. Greenshields presented the monarch with a parting gift—a handmade cross that an inmate in a rehabilitation program at Glenochil prison gifted him on one of his many visits. “I asked what I could possibly give to somebody who had everything, and she smiled at me. I offered her the cross, and she took it very graciously and thanked me for it and wished me the best.”

Just four days later, the Queen passed away peacefully at 3:10 p.m. in her bedroom. The official cause of death later given by Her Majesty’s official apothecary in Scotland, Dr. Douglas James Allan Glass, was “old age.” Her eldest children—Princess Anne, who was in Scotland for royal engagements at the time, and Prince Charles, staying less than ten miles away at his Birkhall residence—each received calls from Dr. Glass to tell them the time had come. Anne spent the night at Balmoral Castle with her mother, and both children got to spend time at her bedside before she passed. “It was what she wanted and what we all prayed for,” a close friend of the family shared. “To have her loved ones close by and for that moment to happen in private.”

Prince Andrew, Prince William, Prince Edward, and Sophie, still then the Countess of Wessex, arrived at Aberdeen Airport on a private flight just before 4:00 p.m. that day. Prince Harry—already in Britain with Meghan

for nonroyal engagements—landed almost three hours later, on a separate flight, a story in itself I will get to later.

Each family member was given time alone with the Queen as she rested in peace. A final moment in private before the world—which was informed of the sovereign's passing at 6:10 p.m.—was invited to join the royal family in grief. That night the group was split in two, with Charles, now King, and Camilla, Queen Consort, leaving for Birkhall with William, now next in line, for a dinner together. A top-of-the-hierarchy gathering of sorts. Meanwhile, Andrew, Edward, Sophie, Anne, and Harry sat down for dinner together at Balmoral. Major Burns—dressed in a Balmoral tartan kilt (the only nonroyal allowed to wear this gray-and-red design)—played the pipes in honor of the Queen before they ate. As he stood outside the residence's dining room, it was the first time Burns had played for guests without the presence of “the boss.”

The Queen's passing in Scotland was considered serendipitous by some in the family. The “land of the brave” was not only a country to which she was duty bound, but also a home with ancestral roots (Her Majesty was a direct descendant of Queen Margaret of Scotland). “It was where she was most at peace,” said Ailsa Anderson, a former press secretary to Queen Elizabeth II. “There had always been plans in place if she were to pass away there.” Indeed, the monarch's death in Scotland called for an extension within the “Operation London Bridge” plans. “Operation Unicorn” took its code name from the lion (England) and the unicorn (Scotland) featured in the coat of arms for the United Kingdom. The protocol included an additional ceremonial procession in the Scottish capital, Edinburgh, and a service at the city's St. Giles' Cathedral.

The processions and rituals that followed her ten-day journey from Balmoral to her final resting place in Windsor saw the Queen's coffin steadfastly accompanied by Princess Anne—a wish the monarch's daughter had made some years before her mother's passing. The Princess Royal—whose strong work ethic and no-nonsense attitude were often likened to that of her mother—became a stoic presence for the nation. The six-hour journey from Balmoral to Edinburgh began with six gamekeepers (known locally as ghillies) carefully carrying the coffin out of the castle's ballroom through to a hearse outside. Major Paul Burns played his bagpipes as the oak coffin passed by him in the dining room. With such an important role to play, he turned to Methven the night before for some sage advice for the

days ahead. “He’s a cracking piper and a good man . . . I told him he would do a fantastic job,” Methven said.

As the hearse drove through Aberdeenshire, and then on to Aberdeen and Dundee, Princess Anne, now joined by her husband, Vice Admiral Sir Timothy Lawrence, remained part of the royal cortege until it arrived in Edinburgh. There, Anne and Sir Tim joined other family members for the procession to St. Giles’ Cathedral, where the Queen would lie at rest for twenty-four hours. Reverend Dr. Iain Greenshields, his weekend with the Queen still fresh in his memory, conducted the ceremony that followed, telling the congregation, “Most of us cannot recall a time when she was not our monarch. Committed to the role she assumed in 1952 upon the death of her beloved father, she has been a constant in all of our lives for over seventy years. She was determined to see her work as a form of service to others.”

On the final morning of the Scottish portion of the processional, Anne was there again to escort her mother’s coffin to Edinburgh Airport. The Queen’s final journey from Scotland to England was originally planned and documented in “Operation Unicorn” for the Royal Train, but, due to security concerns, Palace aides and government officials decided that the coffin was safer on a plane. The royal standard of Scotland draped over the Queen’s solid oak coffin, and a flowered wreath rested on top, with each flower type representing values and traits that Her Majesty held dear. The dahlias represented kindness, commitment, and perseverance, while the white phlox stood for harmony and understanding. Lovingly picked the day she died by Balmoral staff, the sweet peas—Elizabeth’s favorite—meant “thank you for a lovely time” and “goodbye.” The Scots who gathered at the airport to bid farewell to their beloved Queen waved and, in some cases, wept as soldiers closed the cargo door of the Royal Air Force C-17 that carried her to London.

“It has been an honor and a privilege to accompany her on her final journeys,” Anne said of escorting her mother. “Witnessing the love and respect shown by so many on these journeys has been both humbling and uplifting . . . I am also so grateful for the support and understanding offered to my dear brother Charles as he accepts the added responsibilities of the Monarch.”

Five days into the ten-day period of national mourning, King Charles and Camilla, Queen Consort, received the coffin at RAF Northolt, on the

western outskirts of London. It was there that the royal family formally handed over her body to the public she served—Her Majesty then lay in state until the day of her funeral. At Westminster Hall, the oldest building on the British parliamentary estate, units from the Sovereign's Bodyguard, the Foot Guards, and the Household Cavalry Mounted Regiment stood watch as members of the public filed past to pay their respects, a tradition that dates back to 1898, and since then, King George V, King George VI, and Queen Mary have all laid in state before their funerals. And so, it would be no different for Queen Elizabeth II, a woman who valued and cherished tradition. Over four hundred thousand people from every corner of the country and overseas lined up for five days for an opportunity to venerate Her Majesty and her legacy or to just be present for this historical moment. #TheQueue trended on social media, and lines—which could even be seen from planes flying to Heathrow—became an important final scene of the Queen's life: a national moment of shared experience.

Dignitaries from all around the world, including President Joe Biden and First Lady Jill Biden, also stopped by to pay their respects. On September 17, all eight of the Queen's grandchildren—Peter Phillips, Zara Tindall, Prince William, Prince Harry, Princess Beatrice, Princess Eugenie, Lady Louise, and Viscount Severn—stood in silent vigil beside the catafalque on which her coffin rested. Each was instructed where to stand and what cues to follow. “You were our matriarch, our guide, our loving hand on our backs leading us through this world,” Eugenie and Beatrice wrote in a statement. “You taught us so much and we will cherish those lessons and memories forever.”

The morning of the funeral on September 19, 2022, was the culmination of a plan conceived in painstaking detail. A cortege of soldiers and family members escorted the late monarch's coffin, now draped in the royal standard flag, to Westminster Abbey, resting on the same 123-year-old State Gun Carriage that former Palace officials rolled out for the funeral of her father. Behind the carriage and to the beat of marching drums walked the new King; his sons, William and Harry; and immediate family including Princess Anne, Prince Edward, Prince Andrew, and the late Queen's first cousin, the Duke of Gloucester. The procession also included Palace officials—the Queen's master of the household, Tony Johnstone-Burt; the most senior officer of the royal household, Lord Chamberlain Baron Parker of Minsmere; principal private secretary Edward Young; equerry lieutenant

colonel Nana Kofi Twumasi-Ankrah; and Keeper of the Privy Purse Sir Michael John Stevens, the man in charge of the monarchy's coffers. With a view of Westminster Abbey from the roof of the neighboring Methodist Central Hall, where ABC News was live on air, the rousing sound of bagpipes dolefully echoing through the streets of Westminster is one I won't soon forget. All air travel was suspended for the solemn occasion, and the silence that immediately followed the procession as Her Majesty was carried into Westminster Abbey by eight soldiers from the Queen's Company 1st Battalion, Grenadier Guards was profound.

The Queen chose the Abbey over the larger St. Paul's Cathedral because of the medieval church's significance in her life. The Abbey was where she married Prince Philip in 1947 at the young age of twenty-one, and where, just six years after their union, she was crowned. Her words on the day of her coronation now served as a reminder of her service. "The ceremonies you have seen today are ancient, and some of their origins are veiled in the mists of the past. But their spirit and their meaning shine through the ages never, perhaps, more brightly than now. I have in sincerity pledged myself to your service, as so many of you are pledged to mine," she said in her first speech as sovereign. "As this day draws to its close, I know that my abiding memory of it will be, not only the solemnity and beauty of the ceremony, but the inspiration of your loyalty and affection."

Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II's coffin arrived at the Abbey shortly before 11:00 a.m., and it was now her family's turn to say goodbye to her era. As 4.1 billion people tuned in from around the world to watch the first state funeral since Winston Churchill's in 1965 (Prince Philip turned down the opportunity for one, not wanting "the fuss"), it was the first in over seventy years to allow viewers to witness firsthand how the royals pass on their hereditary power. After handing over responsibilities and duties to those more physically able in the final few years of her life, the Queen had already put a spotlight on the new representatives of the royal family. King Charles and Camilla, Queen Consort, stood front and center to illustrate the beginning of the new Carolean era, while Prince William and his son Prince George stood closely behind to reinforce the family's next two generations. For a family that heavily relies on imagery, it was a well-choreographed moment on an emotionally potent day.

Just one part of the most complex security apparatus in British history, the Metropolitan Police watched over all two thousand guests from every

corner (and rooftop) as other family members—from the Sussexes to the Wessexes—joined representatives from 168 countries (out of 193 UN member states), eighteen monarchs, fifty-five presidents, and twenty-five prime ministers, including President Joe Biden, President Emmanuel Macron of France, and all of Britain’s living prime ministers. (An envoy from North Korea was present, but representatives from Myanmar, Belarus, and Russia all remained firmly on the no-invite list.) All the guests stood as the choir’s spine-tingling rendition of the nineteenth-century hymn “The Day Thou Gavest, Lord, Is Ended” filled the Abbey with sorrowful acceptance.

Major Burns waited patiently in the wings of a balcony overlooking the congregation. It was, he admitted to Methven just days earlier, the most important day of his career, and he wanted to get it right. In the days leading up to the funeral, he practiced in private, but, in just over an hour, there would be no room for error during his rendition of the traditional lament “Sleep, Dearie, Sleep.” Dressed in a kilt of Royal Stewart tartan plaid and the piper’s traditional Glengarry hat, Burns had received instructions earlier in the morning about where he should stand to allow BBC cameras to capture the moment, a small piece of tape marking the exact spot. He always took pride in his bagpipes, but he went the extra distance for this occasion, deep cleaning and polishing the dark, weathered wood and silver tuning slides, even lint-rolling the pipes’ bright blue velvet bag.

But before Major Burns’s lament came the religious ceremony led by the Dean of Westminster, David Hoyle. A devout Christian and the proud head of the Church of England, the Queen often spoke about how her faith guided her reign and her personal life. As Archbishop of Canterbury Justin Welby noted during the service, “People of loving service are rare in any walk of life. Leaders of loving service are still rarer.”

Every detail, every moment of religious symbolism, was carefully considered by the Queen and her closest aides during the later years of her life. “Her Majesty’s state funeral was so God honoring because that’s exactly how she lived every moment of her life,” a Buckingham Palace courtier said. “The service was a celebration of her life but also a true show of her commitment to God and serving others.” A minister who knew her added that she lived her life “immersed [in Scripture]” (she would read daily and worship privately every Sunday) and wanted people to feel that throughout the service.

For a woman who had purposefully remained so shrouded in mystery during her life, the Queen's state funeral offered new glimpses into her personality, namely through music and readings, as those elements emphasized the things she respected and loved in her personal life, a rich inner existence she kept mostly to herself.

As the national anthem and two-minute silence signaled the end of the service, Major Burns tuned up his bagpipes for his soul-stirring version of "Sleep, Dearie, Sleep." The Gaelic lullaby brought tears to the eyes of many, including King Charles, who, after touring the nation for eleven days as the new monarch, was "understandably exhausted and emotional," a senior aide later explained.

On this unusually dry and sunny day in London, thousands lined the streets to watch as the funeral procession solemnly moved from the Abbey, past her former Buckingham Palace home, and then to the nearby Wellington Arch, where a cortege would head toward Windsor for the committal service that would officially end Elizabeth II's reign. Big Ben's affecting chimes were the only accompaniment to a reigning, powerful silence.

This twenty-two-mile journey to Windsor would also lead to the Queen's final retreat from the public eye. After the high polish of the official proceedings, this homecoming trip returned her from the public to the private sanctuary of her family. For them, the strict protocol of the past eleven days naturally led everyone to demonstrate the famous stiff upper lip and push through the formalities. But there in Windsor, without all the cameras and conventions, they would soon be able to mourn freely as their mother, grandmother, and great-grandmother was returned to the earth.

Since her death, Charles had already become king two times over—the day the Queen died and the day of his September 10 proclamation at St. James's Palace in front of the accession council. At the private committal ceremony that evening, it would happen once again as he symbolically scattered soil on his mother's coffin in the Royal Vault beneath St. George's Chapel.

Before the last hymn at the burial, the Imperial State Crown, scepter, and orb were removed from the Queen's coffin by the crown jeweler. As is tradition, the Lord Chamberlain broke his "wand of office" to mark the end of the sovereign's reign before placing the two pieces on her coffin. Cameras were allowed to capture these final moments for the first time

before Elizabeth II was lowered into the vault, but what happened beyond was kept private—all part of maintaining the mystery and intrigue of the royal family, perhaps the Queen’s last command. For a family so known for sharing some of their most private moments through back channels with the press, this was the one time they all universally agreed to keep the details to themselves.

Major Burns was also there to pipe for the monarch’s final act. The image of the lone piper was one that resonated the most with viewers around the world. As he played “A Salute to the Royal Fendersmith,” the haunting timbre of his bagpipes floated over the fields and gardens of Windsor, down to the River Thames, and out to the North Sea. Burns didn’t show it at the time, but he was deeply moved by that moment. Right before his final duty for Her Majesty, he learned of the Queen’s final act for him—ensuring his job was safe. The new king had assured his mother’s dear “Pipes” that he would continue the role under his reign.

Inside St. George’s Chapel, as the Queen was finally laid to rest in the King George VI Memorial Chapel, King Charles III wiped away his tears. In a 2011 speech at the Commonwealth Heads of Government Meeting in Australia, the Queen quoted an Aboriginal proverb: “We are all visitors to this time, this place. We are just passing through. Our purpose here is to observe, to learn, to grow, to love, and then we return home.” Now, resting by her “strength and stay,” Philip; her beloved parents, George VI and Elizabeth; and her sister, Margaret, she, too, returned home.



## 2

# Shaky Ground

The Queen Is Dead, the Monarchy Faces Trouble

*Above all things our royalty is to be revered, and if you begin to poke about it you cannot reverence it . . . Its mystery is its life. We must not let in daylight upon magic.*

—Walter Bagehot, *The English Constitution*

*The Queen is dead, boys. And it's so lonely on a limb.*

—The Smiths

**R**ight after his ascension to the throne, we got a snapshot of King Charles III as a sovereign who might prove more “in touch” and affable than his removed and dignified mother. Just hours after the Queen’s death, he ventured outside the gates of Buckingham Palace to shake hands with members of the public during his first walkabout as king. Chatting with those who were close by and smiling at others as they expressed their condolences, the newly minted monarch even allowed one woman to lean forward and kiss him on the cheek. It was a stark contrast to the Queen, whose arm’s-length approach might have seen her wave to well-wishers from the rope line but rarely permitted her to indulge in anything more during her seventy-year reign. Charles, on the other hand, genuinely appeared at ease and unafraid to embrace his fellow supporters.

But it’s not a stretch to suggest that this moment was orchestrated and planned by Charles and his team years ago. At seventy-four, Charles was the longest-serving heir apparent in the British monarchy’s history. He had decades to think about and strategize for his time on the throne—time to outline his vision for the monarchy and calculate ways to delineate his reign

from his mother's. And his vision is not a secret; he's continually designed and refined it over the years, even publicly addressed it on many occasions. Knowing full well how difficult it is to get an oversize, slow-moving institution to adapt, Charles has long championed a "slimmed-down" monarchy, one that is more modern, agile, and—more importantly for a public that helps foot the royal bill—cost-effective. More than just trimming the fat, the King, who as the Prince of Wales was known for his compassionate activism and progressive thinking (even if some of it resulted in his reputation as a busybody), has stressed to aides that he wants his version of a "modern" monarchy to be more palatable to younger generations. Where his mother brought a brisk, stately detachment, Charles has spoken about wanting a warmer touch. Perhaps he learned some lessons from the late Princess Diana, queen of people's hearts, both in the tragedy of her life and the genuine value of her work, or maybe his vision was simply born of frustration from a life following the rules and abiding by *the way things have always been*—a rigid code for living and working as a royal that led to countless struggles with his family, the institution, and the public. Or maybe this is just a way of channeling the passion he brought to his service as the Prince of Wales—his dedication to the environment, his desire to unite religions through interfaith initiatives, and his championing of organic farming—into the smaller window he'll serve as King.

But it can be said for sure that the long-suffering prince who now wears the crown has known for years that if the monarchy is going to survive, it will have to present itself to the world as—at the very least—a leaner, more tolerant, and more personable family and organization. And when the King went out to shake hands with his subjects for the first time on September 9, 2022, he was attempting to present just that.

Too bad the image didn't hold. Less than twelve weeks later, on November 29, Queen Camilla hosted a Violence Against Women and Girls reception at Buckingham Palace. It was a high-profile effort for one of Camilla's cherished causes and an issue for which she's advocated over the course of her royal tenure. Held during the United Nations' 16 Days of Activism Against Gender-Based Violence campaign, the event convened three hundred guests, including charity workers, domestic violence survivors, ambassadors, politicians, journalists, royalty (Queen Rania Al Abdullah of Jordan, Crown Princess Mary of Denmark, and Queen Mathilde of Belgium), and even a Spice Girl—Mel B. Declared a success

by many who attended, it was a reminder of what Camilla is capable of offering in her new role, and an event that signaled the Firm had the ability to stick its neck out to advance a pertinent, substantial, and brave cause (even if they don't do it often enough).

But the next morning a tweet by an attendee started a fire on social media. Ngozi Fulani, a British citizen born in London of African heritage and Caribbean descent and CEO of Sistah Space—a London-based charity that offers support to women and girls of African and Caribbean heritage affected by domestic and sexual abuse—noted that her experience was vastly different from the positive press surrounding it. “Mixed feelings,” she lamented on Twitter, revealing that within ten minutes of arriving, a staff member she referred to as “Lady SH” had touched her dreadlocks without permission and persistently asked where she was “*really*” from. That aide was Lady Susan Hussey, an eighty-three-year-old lady-in-waiting from Queen Elizabeth II’s reign who had recently been moved into a non-salaried position of lady of the household, a role that required her to attend Buckingham Palace engagements and mingle with guests. The daughter of the 12th Earl Waldegrave and a prim-looking baroness, Lady Hussey is also a close friend to many within the royal family, including Prince Harry, and one of Prince William’s three godmothers.

In a transcript shared by Fulani, she detailed how Hussey had pestered her about her background and asked at least *seven* times where she was from. After Fulani told her she was British, Hussey pushed back with a follow-up question: “No . . . Where do your *people* come from?” Even after she expressed exasperation and questioned the Queen’s former confidante, “‘My people’? Lady, what is this?” Hussey continued her offensive inquisition, exclaiming, “Oh, I can see I’m going to have a challenge getting you to say where you’re from. When did you first come here?”

This awkward and shocking conversation—witnessed by the leader of the British Women’s Equality Party, Mandu Reid—amounted to a privileged white aristocrat berating a Black woman about her origins while refusing to believe she was *only* a British citizen. Within hours it became world news, and, once again, the royal institution was in hot water for racist comments and retrograde thinking. Hussey’s casual racism (be it conscious or not) not only scuttled Camilla’s successful event, shifting the focus from a noble cause to controversy, it also came at a time when the royal family was still digging out from Harry and Meghan’s revelation in their March

2021 Oprah interview that “concerns and conversations” were had in the family about “how dark” the skin of their unborn son, Archie, might be.

Disgraceful and intrusive, the Hussey episode marred an otherwise meaningful royal engagement. “Standing there in a room packed with people while this violation was taking place was so strange, especially as the event was about violence against women,” Fulani shared. “That feeling of not knowing what to do will *never* leave me. Almost alone in a roomful of advocates.”

There was minimal stalling from Buckingham Palace, who were surprisingly quick to address the issue. “Unacceptable and deeply regrettable comments have been made,” a statement read. “We have reached out to Ngozi Fulani on this matter and are inviting her to discuss all elements of her experience in person if she wishes.” It went on to say that Hussey had stepped aside from her honorary role with immediate effect.

Despite the statement’s claim to the contrary, Fulani didn’t receive any official correspondence until almost a week later. The Palace also failed to explain why Lady Susan was put in such a role in the first place. An octogenarian and trusted advisor to the Queen, Hussey might have had respect from the family members, but it was unwise to put her in a public-facing position at an event with such a diverse crowd at a time when they needed to show some proof of modernization. Like so many at Buckingham Palace, she is from another era, and the mealymouthed excuses that rationalize this kind of behavior—well-meaning folks from that generation don’t know any better, for example—do not cut it. Large, exasperated swathes of the public are weary of these justifications, and our current cancel culture is hostile to them. The press offices in both royal households should be pumping out good news about the family, not countering allegations from their back foot and expending resources apologizing, fixing, and tap-dancing around scandals.

The fracas was a reminder that despite the promise of a more tolerant and forward-looking monarchy, this institution was still anything but. Repurposing six of the late Queen’s ladies-in-waiting, a feature of court life dating back to the Middle Ages, instead of allowing the women (all born in the 1930s and ’40s) to gracefully retire set the Firm up for disaster. Ironically, just days earlier, the Palace had made a show of Camilla’s “modern” decision to not hire her own ladies-in-waiting, instead bringing on informal “Queen’s companions.” Though they would not be required to

handle correspondence or administration like Queen Elizabeth II's right-hand women, these six would still be around to "support" her at official engagements. In other words, they're ladies-in-waiting with fewer duties—hardly any different to the past. And it was more evidence that, although Charles may have a vision for modernity, the reality is the institution is still entrenched in the past, often knowingly dragging arcane, extraneous traditions along with it.

This also points to a larger issue: modernizing a thousand-year-old monarchy that just lost its longest-serving sovereign in history is immensely challenging, particularly when the family is usually one blunder away from scandal. A royal source said that Charles knows that if he "pulls on the thread" of change too fast and with too much force, he may unwind the knot that holds it all together. It leaves him in the unfortunate position of resorting to virtue signaling and enacting half measures that may come back to haunt him and compromise the monarchy's future. Although King Charles has successfully retreated into the solemn sovereign space, the Lady Susan ordeal indicates that perhaps seventy-four years in a bubble of privilege isn't the most effective training for the top job, and that his decision-making isn't aligned with his own vision of how he wants this new royal chapter to read. The King should be prepared for a reign under a microscope: the press (at least those who aren't in his pocket), the public, and his foes will quickly and mercilessly critique everything he does, and they will be unsparing in their judgment. Because of her long service and her beloved stature in the national pantheon, Queen Elizabeth II was often spared this treatment, but Charles gets no such grace.

Despite the fact that Hussey is his godmother, Prince William was fast to denounce and remove himself from the ugly ordeal. Behind the scenes, William was "furious" and told his team that he needed to distance himself quickly. "There was just this feeling that it could have been easily avoided," said a source in his circle. "[William] asked, 'Why was she there in the first place?!'" Acting the same day the news broke, Kensington Palace spokesman Lee Thompson, who had taken on the job five months earlier, said, "This is a matter for Buckingham Palace, but as the Prince of Wales's spokesperson I appreciate [that] you'll want to ask about it. So let me address this head-on: I was really disappointed to hear about the guest's experience at Buckingham Palace last night." He went on to say, "Racism

has no place in our society. The comments were unacceptable, and it is right that the individual has stepped aside.”

This was a swift rebuke and a remarkably different PR response to what we’ve come to expect from the Palace. William’s decisive action on the matter demonstrates that he is willing to act independently and, added a source, is proof that he is unwilling to dither and defer to Buckingham Palace when a situation demands an immediate, resolute response. As the heir to the throne, he’s savvy enough to know these are moments he can leverage to show the public (and the institution) that he’s his own man, and one ready to be king. His father, said sources, didn’t share the same approach. “It was a rash . . . knee-jerk response,” a Buckingham Palace source remarked. “The feeling was they wanted to disassociate, instead of thinking as a team.”

This is quite a different position to the one the Palace adopted when Prince Andrew paid out millions to settle with his sexual abuse accuser, Virginia Giuffre, whose allegations Prince Andrew has always vehemently denied. During this royal cause célèbre, Palace aides told members of the press that Prince William and his father were in “lockstep” over the action to take away Andrew’s titles and military honors—a buzzword that then rippled through the media and one the Palace used to suggest that Charles and his son were joining forces to support Queen Elizabeth II at the tail end of her reign. A nice story, but behind the scenes a different one played out. Knowing the Queen’s soft spot for Andrew and his father’s fear of hurting his brother, sources said it was actually William who encouraged the Queen and Charles to strip the disgraced Duke of York. “William stepped up, but those close to the Queen briefed journalists that it was very much a joined father-son move . . . that’s where the term ‘lockstep’ came in,” said a source close to William. Regardless of the details, it worked, but, because it took so long to coordinate necessary action, it also came at great cost: the bad press was relentless.

So much for lockstep now, though. After the Firm’s painfully protracted management of the Andrew scandal and the aftermath of Harry and Meghan’s departure, Kensington Palace sources say William is keen to ensure his own image is no longer impacted by “poor decisions” made by others—be it his father, his uncle, his brother, or any other family member. The prince, said an insider, knows his father’s reign is little more than transitional, if only by virtue of the King’s age, and is acting accordingly:

“There was rarely a moment where [Charles] stepped on his mother’s toes . . . but it’s different with William. He’s eager to establish himself as his own man . . . He’s not giving his father the same space Charles did with the Queen. There’s no time for that.”

This father-son relationship was beginning to bristle with tension and one-upmanship, so William’s solo maneuverings around the Hussey trouble added force to the friction. William’s Kensington Palace and King Charles’s Buckingham Palace are now hives of competing agendas and different ideas about how to modernize. Behind closed doors, the King and the Prince of Wales are embracing very different approaches.

For William, this isn’t just about ego, claimed a source. Rather, it’s because the institution itself has always put its weight behind him, giving the prince the confidence required to stand apart from his father. This was evident shortly before the Queen’s passing. During June 2022’s Platinum Jubilee concert, it was William who had the biggest moment during the televised event in addressing the public and promoting his own efforts on finding solutions to environmental issues. Charles merely followed up with a short speech dedicated to his mother and the introduction of a comedy sketch starring the late monarch and Paddington Bear. As a Palace aide later remarked, “Nothing is ever a coincidence.” The tussle for the spotlight has only heightened since Charles became King, including the moment William chose to sit down for a rare interview with the *Sunday Times* scheduled for publication the day after King Charles’s first Trooping the Colour parade, essentially wiping any coverage of the special moment off the front page. It’s also why joint appearances or engagements have been few and far between during the King’s first year on the throne. “Though royal officials don’t like to talk about it, particularly after Charles’s ascension, behind Palace walls, William represents the monarchy’s true next stage.” Charles is the bridge to get there.

The prince’s unilateral response notwithstanding, the timing of the Hussey controversy couldn’t have been worse for William and Kate. The story broke on the morning the Waleses were preparing to leave for the United States to roll out the green carpet for his Earthshot Prize ceremony in Boston—a star-studded event at the MGM Music Hall at Fenway billed by a Kensington Palace aide as Prince William’s “Super Bowl moment,” whatever that was supposed to mean. Launched by William and Sir David Attenborough in October 2020, the Earthshot Prize awards one million

British pounds to five individuals or teams whose work offers “ingenious solutions to repair and regenerate our planet.”

After William widely announced Earthshot to the world, sources claimed Charles was quietly annoyed. For much of his adult life, *he* was the one who passionately pushed the environmental cause, often without any acknowledgment. “He had hoped that William would want to involve his father or at least credit him for inspiring him to take on this role, but instead it was as if [Charles’s environmentalism] didn’t even exist,” said a Clarence House source at the time. A glitzy affair for a good cause, the inaugural Earthshot ceremony in London generated a fair share of buzz. The following year’s event was shaping up to be no different, featuring celebrity guests such as actress Catherine O’Hara, football legend David Beckham, and actor Rami Malek, alongside musical performances by the likes of Billie Eilish and Annie Lennox.

But by the time they landed in Boston, the furor over Lady Susan was at full volume, drowning out much of the hoopla for the event. The couple flew commercial to make a point, but it was lost on a public already outraged by yet another royal race incident. Both former U.S. secretary of state and current Special Presidential Envoy for Climate John Kerry and the author, diplomat, and member of America’s “royal family” Caroline Kennedy, their chief guests, appeared to tap the brakes on joining the engagement—Kerry cited illness and Kennedy “disrupted travel plans” but in reality, it’s likely they both wanted to see how the scandal played out. (In the end, Kerry did attend the event, and Prince William later met Kennedy for thirty minutes at the John F. Kennedy Presidential Library and Museum.) On the second night, William and Kate attended a Celtics basketball game at TD Garden Arena, where, to their surprise, many fans booed and subjected the royal couple to chants of “USA! USA!” whenever they appeared on the jumbotron. In all fairness, Boston sports fans will boo just about anyone who shows up on their turf, but the latest scandal, along with all the other baggage William and Kate drag around as royals (including their treatment of Harry and Meghan, for one), only made the jeers louder. In fact, there appeared to be little excitement for the royal visit in general (especially compared to the huge cheers I witnessed when traveling with the couple to New York in 2014). When asked what it was like having the royals courtside, Celtics coach Joe Mazzulla retorted, “Jesus, Mary, and Joseph?” before joking he was familiar with only *one*



royal family and didn't "know too much about that [British] one, thank you."

Despite the promotional efforts and high expectations, the awards ceremony, by most accounts, didn't make the playoffs, let alone the Super Bowl. There was, however, halftime show entertainment courtesy of another royal couple. The first trailer for the Sussexes' intimate Netflix docuseries, *Harry & Meghan*, released that same day (an intentional move by the streamer, I'm told), promising the "full truth" behind the couple's departure. "There's a hierarchy of the family," Harry said in the clip. "There's leaking, but there's also planting of stories." It was all anyone could talk about.

As for the Earthshot ceremony, viewers were less than captivated, to say the least. In the United Kingdom, newspapers claimed the public "switched off" in droves within minutes of the BBC airing it, while the audience watching live in the United States via PBS's streaming platform fell to the hundreds at times. Despite certain celebrity guests flying in to the "green" event at great expense and using thousands of gallons of jet fuel (Beckham flew on a private jet from Qatar), the environmental award winners themselves were strangely forced to stay at home and appear via Zoom. Rather than buying a new outfit, Kate made a statement by renting her off-the-shoulder gown (a genuinely good idea, but one that has never been repeated at a royal event since). The green carpet the couple walked down at the start of the evening was repurposed from the previous year's ceremony, but the Palace refused to comment on the fact it was shipped halfway across the world to make the environmentally conscious statement. As for local media coverage, it focused mostly on the cost of the trip for the city (\$170,407) and how it would affect traffic.

For the first time in their lives, William and Kate now have to deal with image challenges of their very own. In the past, the institution and the public viewed them as the safe and relatively fun couple who toed the company line when required but successfully managed a balance between their private lives and their work responsibilities. Kate cut a popular figure in her fairy-tale role, lighting up rooms with her smile and elegant style, while William's awareness and vigor provided a much-needed contrast to older, stodgier family members. They worked within the system and coasted on their star power after their 2011 wedding and for much of their tenures as Duke and Duchess of Cambridge. But perhaps they coasted too

long. The higher they rise, the closer they get to the top jobs, the more difficult it has become to separate themselves from all that comes with it. With more pressure on the pair to increase their workloads and deliver more than just agreeable photos for the papers, the Waleses are finally facing more scrutiny from sections of the press and public now unleashed from their respectful relationship with the Queen.

\* \* \*

It's not like things were going *that* well for the Firm before the Queen's death. After Harry and Meghan shared stories of problematic behaviors and made some damning allegations, and Prince Andrew's slow-motion fall from grace (stemming from his long friendship with sex traffickers Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell) plunged the family into turmoil, the Palace was in frazzled damage control mode, and Charles—thanks to his plethora of money-related scandals—was doing little right. Even for the usually unscathed William and Kate, their disastrous eight-day Caribbean tour through Commonwealth countries Jamaica, Belize, and the Bahamas in late January 2022 for the Queen's Platinum Jubilee put them firmly in the firing line. What should have been a simple smile-for-the-cameras trip turned into a PR nightmare for Kensington Palace. And instead of solidifying the monarchy's presence in the Commonwealth realms (William's press aides openly billed it as a "charm offensive" when briefing journalists back in London), the tour ended up raising new questions about its future.

The problems began before the couple even arrived, with protestors in Belize voicing opposition to the royals' visit due to a dispute over "contested property" between residents of Indian Creek village and Flora and Fauna International (FFI), a conservation charity that William supports as patron. "Colonial legacy of THEFT continues with PRINCE & FFI" was just one of the many banners in view. Kensington Palace removed the village from their itinerary, but after flying into Belize (on a costly private jet), William and Kate ran into more demonstrations. One hundred people—including leading human rights advocates, professors, and lawyers—released an open letter with a less than celebratory tone. "During her 70 years on the throne, your grandmother has done nothing to redress and atone for the suffering of our ancestors that took place during her reign and/or during the entire period of British trafficking of Africans,

enslavement, indentureship and colonialization,” the Advocates Network wrote. “We encourage you to act accordingly and just ‘sey yuh sorry!’” continued the letter, which also called for reparations. It was then followed by protestors gathering in Kingston, Jamaica.

But instead of acknowledging the grievances—or taking the opportunity to meet those leading the growing protests—William and the Palace chose to ignore it all. I was one of just a few journalists who initially challenged the silence, pointing out the arrogance of flying into a country that had been colonized by Britain and the royal family yet again refusing to engage in conversation about it. My contention was only met with hostility from Kensington Palace aides on the tour. “I hope you’re going to set [Omid] straight,” a senior aide said to one of the traveling royal reporters. But there was little reason to—in less than twenty-four hours, the world’s media echoed the same points. Photos of William and Kate in Trench Town clutching the hands of young Black boys and girls through a fence that bore an unfortunate likeness to a cage set the tone for the rest of the trip. At best, it was an unfortunate snapshot; at its worst, it was proof that the all-white and undiverse Palace team was just not equipped to carry out such engagements. Their bosses, Prince William and Kate, then the Duchess of Cambridge, were equally oblivious to the poor optics. “If you were there, it wouldn’t have been as obvious that this was an entirely inappropriate visual to be sending out into the world. The couple wanted to meet as many people as possible and not ignore anyone,” a Kensington Palace staffer explained some months later. Perhaps, I suggested, it would have been avoided entirely if the couple’s team included people of color or those with more sensitivity to what would be appropriate and what wouldn’t. “*Maybe*,” they replied quietly.

The trip was organized months in advance, and all movements were determined by an earlier reconnaissance visit led by members of William’s team and the British Foreign Office. Even though the whole scene was drawn up and presented to Palace officials and the couple, no one found the staging of the pair standing in an old Land Rover to re-create imagery of colonial-era trips made by the Queen and Prince Philip a bad idea. The move—which saw the couple in all-white on a raised platform waving at the all-Black crowds below—was greeted with horror and widely mocked. Only after the world reacted to the photos did those around the couple attempt to distance themselves from the decision. “There were questions,

including from William, about whether it was appropriate,” admitted a Kensington Palace source. “The staging was all at the request of the Jamaican government, not the Palace. They were keen to include the Land Rover, which had been kept for moments like this, but absolutely we should have pushed back.” (Curiously, a spokesperson at the office of the prime minister of Jamaica said this version of the story did not ring true.) Still, a Foreign & Commonwealth Office source countered that before the tour, Kensington Palace officials were only “excited” about the itinerary—there had been no complaints or hesitation.

After all this, it hardly came as a surprise that just a day later, Jamaica’s prime minister, Andrew Holness, informed William and Kate (who was bizarrely dressed in the orange and white colors of the People’s National Party, the party in opposition to the prime minister) that Jamaica was “moving on” and ready to remove the Queen as head of state—to their faces. The pair awkwardly stood and smiled, saying little in response. Later that evening, William was said to be “frustrated and irritated” that he was so unprepared for the moment. So far, everything about the trip looked like a throwback to a bygone era of the British Empire. “Had this have been a personal tour, the itinerary would have been different, but this was a trip for the Platinum Jubilee and we had little say in how it would look,” said a Kensington Palace source.

The end of the royal family in the Commonwealth realms (fourteen of which remain at the time of this writing) has been in the cards for some time, as countries move to reclaim their postcolonial independence, but arriving in the Caribbean without anything to say on the matter showed that despite the Palace campaign to position William as a “statesman in the making,” he was not as ready for the role as the institution wanted people to believe.

As the tour neared the end, and global criticism stretched from the *Washington Post* to the *Independent* (whose race correspondent Nadine White called it “offensively tone deaf”), Kensington Palace attempted to fix the PR mess. “It needed swift action and, yes, there has been a tendency in the past to sit on these problems or just hope they go away . . . But the feeling at the time was simply ‘How can we make this right?’” said a Palace aide. William soon released a statement that claimed “you learn so much” on foreign visits. “I know,” he added, “that this tour has brought into even sharper focus questions about the past and the future. In Belize, Jamaica

and the Bahamas, that future is for the people to decide upon.” His words certainly cooled some of the coverage, but it was too late to save it. Their tour was already marred by ignorant slip-ups, mistakes, and indelible images that those in the Commonwealth still haven’t forgotten as many realms continue to power forth with their plans for true independence.

Following his statement, William’s private secretary, Jean-Christophe Gray, sat down with some of the press pack who traveled with the royal couple during the flight back to England. He briefed lines about the lessons learned by William and the “blueprint” for his kingship in the future. Moving forward, he said, the heir and his wife planned to do things “the Cambridge way,” which included abandoning the “never complain, never explain” motto favored by his father and grandmother. Aides also shared details about William’s own plans to modernize how he works when he succeeds his father as the Prince of Wales. From the outset, it was claimed, he would halve the estimated 137 staff Charles employed to create a more cost-effective and “less formal” team. “It is not a criticism of how it was done in the past,” a Kensington Palace aide told *The Sun*, which also reported that William wanted to “rip up” the royal institution’s rulebook. “But times are changing.”

Though he was not yet next in line, William’s remarks came across like a man just years from taking the throne. Charles (who allegedly derived some schadenfreude from his son’s recent missteps and public humiliation) was said to be furious over William’s effrontery. This kind of declaration was for either the Queen or the direct heir to make, not for the second in line. “It was disrespectful . . . Not only was he dangling the carrot of something his father could not deliver, but he also failed to address how he could actually deliver any of that,” an aide huffed. Another source added at the time that William was “out of order” and Charles saw this as a deliberate attempt to upstage him. The Duke of Cambridge screwed up, but he effectively leveraged the moment to tease the public that he could soon be able to bring change. As often envious of his own son’s popularity and favored status in the institution as Prince Charles was, this was already a sensitive topic with him, so this breach in royal etiquette, which he has never spoken about directly with William, apparently “left a mark.”

And this wasn’t the only bruise to Charles’s ego. While the trip was still in the planning stages, separate sources said he had advised his son to be “alert and prepared” to the growing calls for reparations. But, as those first

days of the visit proved, William ignored his advice, letting bravado obscure his judgment. Distrust and simmering animosity between father and son are nothing new to their working relationship. A source close to William said, “Though [Charles and William] share a number of passions and interests, their style of leadership is quite different.” An insider in Charles’s camp explained, “Contrary to public belief, [Charles] leads with his head and his heart. [William] is colder in that respect. He just wants to get the job done and has no problem taking prisoners along the way.”

Over the years, William has often rejected his father’s counsel, keen to avoid the controversial candidness for which Charles has a reputation. The King is a passionate idea man whose instincts, before he took the throne, often drove him into political matters—his climate crusades, his eco-friendly initiatives (such as his quasi-utopian model town project, Poundbury), and his opposition stances on several government policies. He was notorious in the 1990s and 2000s for lobbying with prime ministers and politicians on a plethora of issues. But this outspokenness landed him in hot water. As next in line (or applicable to any senior royal, for that matter), Charles was supposed to always be apolitical, even when he vehemently disagreed with a government position. Those who wear the crown should never express public opinions on political matters or policy, no matter how misguided or noxious they might be—it’s why no one ever knew, even posthumously, any of Queen Elizabeth II’s political leanings or opinions. For William, who always admired his grandmother’s example of political neutrality, “he doesn’t want to follow that same path [as his father],” said a source. “There is a lot he wants to do differently.”

Since his ascension, however, King Charles has at least proved more reserved than *Prince* Charles. But the question remains, will it last? Considering the ongoing drama in the Firm, it seems unlikely he will be able to rise above it all for long. The new king is still dealing with the fallout from his inability to convene and command his own family. His ineptitude surrounding the Harry and Meghan saga has effectively turned the couple into the disruptors they were feared to become in the first place. “And so much of it could have been prevented,” said a mutual family friend. “For so long Harry had made it clear that he and Meghan simply wanted to be heard. That they wanted the opportunity to sit down and talk through the past, from both perspectives, and find a way to move forward. For Harry, it was about seeking accountability and, where appropriate,

apologies.” Stubborn as ever, it was the one thing Charles refused to give them—even if it meant risking damage to the Crown. A former Clarence House staff member said Charles was encouraged by senior aides and, on at least one occasion, the Queen herself to swallow his pride. “Just tell him what he needs to hear . . . That’s what was said,” admitted the former employee. Instead, Charles chose to say nothing and turn the other way as the Sussexes shared their story via Netflix in December 2022 and Harry’s memoir a month later.

A record-breaking global bestseller on its release day, *Spare* revealed the full unvarnished story of the family’s fractures. After watching so many others (including myself) tell their story, Harry quite rightly wanted his turn to put his own voice on the historical record. And that he did, describing decades of simmering resentment between his brother and the true depths of their falling-out. Even more damaging to the Firm were the revelations about how his family, including Camilla, had leaked personal details about his life to save their own skin.

Despite the many opportunities to discuss his grievances ahead of the publication of the book, Charles instead chose to keep his distance for months. Harry and his father swapped a few words over Christmas 2022, but it wasn’t until after the January 10, 2023, release of the memoir that they had their first proper conversation. Encouraged by a close friend, the Duke of Sussex reached out to Charles by phone to try to discuss some of the unresolved issues between them. “It was an awkward conversation, but he knew if he didn’t make those first steps, there would never be any progress,” said a friend of the prince. “There were no raised voices, no arguments . . . but the King was cold and brief rather than open to any proper dialogue.”

With no significant resolution or outcome from the father-son conversation, Charles had once again wasted an opportunity to take the upper hand and let bygones be bygones for the sake of family harmony. “It’s complex, but there’s increasing frustration from some of the wider circle of family members that Charles won’t just fix things for the sake of everyone,” said a royal source. And the institution needs it. Just three months after the publication of *Spare*, the royal family’s approval rating fell to its lowest level in years: 47 percent, down six points since before the book’s launch. In fact, several independent polls have shown that all senior

royals (including the Sussexes themselves) have been affected by the fallout.

The responses to claims by Harry and Meghan have followed a pattern of avoidance and dissembling. I've repeatedly witnessed up close how Palace aides do their best to muddy the truths the couple shared with the world (be it with misleading briefings to newspapers or, in some cases, lies to inquiring journalists), but the issues they raised—from institutional cruelty to unconscious racial bias—still loom large over the monarchy. None of this was helped by the fact that the Sussexes remain as much of the royal story today as the day they stepped back from their roles. For most royal correspondents, the couple are still the only surefire way to get prominent headlines and online traffic, whether it was the months of “will they, won't they” stories about the couple attending the coronation or the breathless running commentary about the state of their various business deals in the United States. Instead of completely walking away from the Firm, they've unintentionally taken much of the royal spotlight with them to America. Determined to live their lives apart from the royal apparatus, they have managed to make their own way, enjoying a reasonable amount of support (and experiencing some missteps and failures) all on their own terms.

Both the institution and the family still can't seem to come to grips with that fact. Or move on. I've watched Kensington Palace and Buckingham Palace repeatedly get worried about being upstaged and derailed by the couple, and leak negative information on Harry and Meghan—a tactic that started before they even got married—during moments that could easily be focused on genuine royal news instead. Around significant birthdays, Palace aides are often eager to quietly provide one or two outlets with access to a select group of sources for quotes and background information to use in puff pieces celebrating the life and work of that royal. When Kate turned thirty in 2012, I was pleasantly surprised at how—only eighteen months into my time covering the young royals—Kensington Palace officials happily assisted me with exclusive details as I put together a special issue of *Us Weekly*. For William's fortieth in June 2022, the *Daily Mail*—a paper whose complex relationship with the Firm has shifted over the decades but is currently *very* cozy—provided one of the big birthday reads. With contributions from those closest to William (friends and aides who were given tacit approval), the “intimate portrait” promised the “true



story” of a king in the making but, in the end, mostly delivered a list of familial complaints about Harry. Instead of hearing more about William’s ambitious environmental plans, we were told in detail by royal sources that he “alternates between grief and anger” over Harry’s life decisions and feels his brother “has 100 percent crossed [a] line” by speaking publicly about his struggles within the family. And rather than share how William was preparing for his role as the Prince of Wales and taking over the Duchy of Cornwall, we heard from people close to him about how Harry has been “sucked into an alien world [in California] and there’s fuck all [William] can do about it.” Still, opined one close friend, “William is absolutely allergic to drama,” before proceeding to air his grievances about Meghan. Could have fooled me!

The article had an air of insecurity, and instead of showing a transformational prince at work, it inadvertently cast William as a petulant, grudging brother who is so consumed by Harry’s decisions (and his anger over making them all so public) that he, and those around him, are unable to even put it aside to seize his moments. It’s one of the many events that highlight William’s metamorphosis into what some have described as a hotheaded “company man”—an institutional champion who’s privately embraced the draconian tactics of an antiquated and often vicious institution, and an heir increasingly comfortable with the Palace’s dirty tricks and the courtiers who dream them up. Famously dubbed the “men in gray,” the institution’s Palace courtiers and private secretaries form a wall of hard-line establishment types who uphold and preserve the Crown’s interests, no matter the cost. With ties to the government and the shadow players who hold the reins of power, these men and sometimes women (though there are still very few in senior roles) are often the operators, strategists, and family confidantes running the show and managing the royal brand behind palace walls. They are both the lifeblood of the institution and, at many times, its most glaring fault line.

Already considered a throwback organization, the institution is increasingly caught up in a self-perpetuating cycle. Most of those who work there are plucked from a tiny minority of British society—white, privileged, and well-heeled. Recent statistics may suggest that Palace staff diversity is on the rise, but when you only look at senior-level aides—and not the junior household staff who check the diversity boxes—the lack of progressive hires has left minimal space for diversity of opinion or thought. They

adhere to what they know, and what they know is often outdated and ineffectual. Time and time again, the institutional operatives have demonstrated that they are incapable of managing the scandals that the family routinely throw their way. From the Diana debacle of the 1990s to Andrew's litany of disgraces and the current family feuds, the institutional operators rarely get in front of anything. They often find themselves in a scramble to fix and cover up, and then roll out shoddy PR techniques that stop way short of solving the problem. These over-rehearsed, lacking responses prove there is no learned wisdom—they make the same mistakes over and over again.

Their management of the Harry and Meghan saga is the latest and most glaring example. Back when Meghan married into the House of Windsor, the Sussexes joined William and Kate as representatives of the next generation of royals. Dubbed the “Fab Four” by the press, the two couples commanded global attention and gave the monarchy a new shine and allure. It barely lasted two years. William and Kate have done their best to keep some of that momentum going since Harry and Meghan's departure, and Kate is assuredly the last glamorous figure in the lineup as William assumes a more stolid role, but there is an unmistakable void. And one that is harder to fill than they ever expected.

A short-lived campaign to bring forward Edward and his wife, Sophie, to create a new dynamic foursome failed to inspire an indifferent public and did nothing to make young people interested. As a soft-spoken prince more at home in the West End or on Broadway than on the royal stage, Edward and his wife's quick dispatch to push the family out of the ditch after the Oprah interview did little to help get the show back on the road. Outside of the United Kingdom, few know of the couple, despite both being active working members of the family (they carry out an average of over 130 engagements each per year). In the United Kingdom, few follow them. “Oprah *who?*” the then Countess of Wessex said in a conveniently timed June 2021 interview and at-home-style photo shoot with the *Telegraph*. “You know, if you're not into chat shows, there's no reason why you should know who she is. Certainly not in this country, anyway.” The same could have been said about them. Whether it was a “joke” (as a source close to the couple later claimed it was) or not, the comments about the world's most successful Black woman and one of the biggest faces in entertainment made them seem stuffy or tin-eared at best, and casually bigoted at worst. Now

the Duke and Duchess of Edinburgh—Charles conferred Prince Philip’s title in March 2023 on the condition that their son, Viscount Severn, won’t one day inherit it—Edward and Sophie continue with their work, but the media isn’t paying much attention. When the couple was dispatched to the Cayman Islands, Turks and Caicos Islands, and the Bahamas in February 2023, the only outlets who covered their movements in the first few days were the *Cayman Compass* and Cayman News Service. As a top Fleet Street editor once told me, “I’d have more luck putting my mum on the front page.”

What may seem like a trivial episode by itself, Sophie’s Oprah gaffe is yet another page to add to the history of recent royal screw-ups. Put together, these miscues make up a dossier that could be used to prove that the institution is an anachronistic, intolerant organization steeped in bigotry and privilege. And an expensive one at that. In late June 2023, the Sovereign Grant Report, an annual document that outlines the royal family’s expenditures, revealed that spending had risen by 5 percent from the previous year to £107.5 million (the second time in history it had broken the £100 million mark). Despite Charles campaigning on environmental issues, reports for 2022 and 2023 also revealed that he still regularly travels by helicopter between his numerous royal residences at an average cost of £15,000 per flight. William and Kate’s ill-fated Caribbean tour cost £226,000 in flights and accommodation alone. For British taxpayers still in the middle of a cost-of-living crisis, the news was once again a tough pill to swallow.

Tone-deaf, racist, and financially reckless are three charges the Firm has had to deal with over the years, but when Queen Elizabeth II was at the helm she managed to keep much of it at bay. She was a unifying force for both the family and the institution—and the monarchy was still valued by the majority, despite its obvious struggles and mistakes. As a sovereign committed to a lifetime of service and duty to something larger than any one person, the late Queen disappeared into the role and allowed the public to project onto her whatever they needed to believe. She symbolized the heavy crown she wore.

By staying true to the old adage “never complain, never explain” and removing herself from her family’s unending dramas—sometimes to the point of seeming too distant—Elizabeth II sustained the enigma of the Crown. “She was never born to be Queen but from an early age she got the

understanding that when you abandon your duty or put yourself before your duty, bad things happen,” said biographer and *Queen of Our Times* author Robert Hardman. “She continued that level of dedication until the very end.” Despite the century’s upheavals and several anni horribiles, she kept a large part of the public on her side through her voice of perseverance, stability, and defiance against history’s pitiless forces. After the September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks, it was the Queen who said, “Grief is the price of love.” And during the relentless isolation of the Covid pandemic, she reassuringly reminded us, “We will meet again.” She always spoke with a dedication to endurance, no matter the obstacle.

Admittedly this is an almost impossible act to follow and one that may no longer even work in this day, but what we see already is a monarchy struggling to define itself in the reign of King Charles. Two men who had most of their lives to learn from the best are proving they’ve not learned nearly enough. With clashing approaches and opinions, Charles and William are playing out an increasing struggle between father and son in front of a global audience. The dysfunction goes way beyond parent and child, though. The institution and the family seem unable, even unwilling, to change with the times.

The Ngozi Fulani and Lady Susan Hussey scandal is proof that a monarchy so defined by its own superior, steadfast place in history lacks the agility and improvisational thinking to change with a rapidly transforming world. Seventeen days after the race scandal first made headlines, Fulani was finally invited to Buckingham Palace to sit down with Hussey for a face-to-face conversation. The pair, I’m told, “reluctantly” agreed to allow Palace officials to share a photo of their encounter with the media. According to a Palace statement, the meeting was “filled with warmth and understanding.” Lady Susan “offered her sincere apologies for the comments that were made and the distress they caused to Ms. Fulani. Ms. Fulani [has] accepted this apology and appreciates that no malice was intended.” For the charity boss, who endured weeks of online trolling, violent threats, and defamatory remarks from radical right-wing media outlets, it all did little to heal her pain. And despite Buckingham Palace’s claims that they, too, had apologized for the incident, Fulani revealed on March 8, 2023, that she never received a direct apology from the institution. “If you’re sorry, tell *me* you’re sorry,” she said. “I don’t see what is so hard to say, ‘I’m sorry.’ You sent me the invitation, so you know how to find me.

You know how to say sorry.” That same day, International Women’s Day, the activist announced she would be stepping down from her charity due to safety concerns and continued harassment. Meanwhile, Lady Susan returned to the royal fold, performing official duties on February 21, attending a memorial service of a courtier on behalf of Princess Anne. In June, she was seen laughing and joking with Charles and Camilla in the monarch’s box at Royal Ascot—firmly back in the royals’ inner circle.

Courtiers, ladies-in-waiting, meaningless PR stunts—they all point to the same problem. Hailing from an incredibly shrinking, old-fashioned world of land barons, polo fields, and posh formality, the royal family is finding it is debilitatingly out-of-touch, even expendable, with an increasing percentage of the public. Those within the institution are aware of the changing public opinion, a growing many of whom are either apathetic to or stand fiercely against the monarchy. The fear is how bad things will get when Queen Elizabeth II is all but a distant memory.

“It’s a worry that is discussed on a regular basis,” a senior aide who served the late monarch for more than a decade told me after I explained the premise of this book during a private meeting. “How we make that work . . . I’m not sure I have an answer for that yet.”

# 3

## “Oh God, I Hate This”

King Charles’s Premiere

*My days, which are at best but dull and hoary Mere glimmering and decays.*

—Henry Vaughan, “Friends Departed”

*I always admired virtue, but I could never imitate it.*

—King Charles II

Official duties were pressing. On September 13, 2022, just five days after Queen Elizabeth II’s death, the new King Charles traveled to Belfast’s magnificently Gothic St. Anne’s Cathedral for a remembrance service for his mother and to receive a motion of condolence from the Northern Ireland Assembly in nearby Hillsborough Castle. Following a moving memorial that included readings, hymns, a touching Gaelic blessing, and echoing blasts from St. Anne’s massive pipe organ, Charles made his way through the gentle slopes and scenic countryside of County Down to the village of Hillsborough. A Georgian mansion built in the eighteenth century, Hillsborough Castle sits at the center of a hundred acres of parkland, where its large walled garden expands out to the edge of a wood and trails meander to a picturesque lake. It is the King’s kind of place—a swath of cultivated refinement bordered by unspoiled nature. Inside there is fine art and gilded staterooms, outside an oxygenating forest, wildflowers, and bees.

But even in such a pleasant setting, with an audience present solely to commemorate the late Queen and honor their new sovereign, Charles couldn’t contain his frustration and legendary irascibility. While signing the

castle's visitor book, he suddenly lost his cool, throwing what can only be called a petulant temper tantrum. His target: a leaky fountain pen.

Caught on video, it was an amusing but revealing scene. Sitting at an antique wooden desk dressed up with a vase of lilies and a gold, royal accoutrement, Charles, already cranky from writing in the wrong date, now faced the calamity of a malfunctioning pen. Noticing the leaking ink, he blurted out, "Oh God, I hate this pen!" After he stood up and brusquely handed it to his Queen, who was equally irked ("Oh look, it's going everywhere!"), the new King grumpily wiped his fingers. He was almost to the point of stamping his feet when he said through gritted teeth, "I can't bear this bloody thing . . . every stinking time!" Shoving his inky handkerchief into his pocket, Charles left the room in a grumble while Camilla calmly sat down and signed the book. She did what most of us would have done in this situation—a simple solution, really: she used another pen.

Now, it's hard to blame him for his crankiness—tradition and duty required a grieving seventy-four-year-old man to tour the United Kingdom and work through an extensive list of "sadmin" just days after his mother's final hours and the traditional obsequies. And who among us hasn't cursed something for not working exactly how we want it to, reverting to peevish, childlike behavior, regardless of our age? The difference, however, is that this particular son who couldn't calmly handle a leaky pen also happens to be King Charles III, the new monarch of Great Britain, the next representative of a bloodline dynasty, and, for many, a symbol of British stability and fortitude. He is the head of state and the Commonwealth, commander-in-chief of the British Armed Forces, and the presiding supreme governor of the Church of England. Some composure is required and expected, especially so when your predecessor was celebrated as the living embodiment of grace under pressure.

A faulty pen is hardly a tragedy. With the world's eyes on him and question marks about his moral character and fitness to serve littering his first days on the throne, it's fair to say the new monarch should have known better. This little "episode" immediately went viral, and the next day nicknames like "Grumpy King" emerged, and news coverage naturally zeroed in on it. "I think in that moment everyone rushed to compare him to his calm mother," said a former Charles aide, "but they forgot that he's also Prince Philip's son, too . . . And that moment was *very* Prince Philip."

Added a close source, “The King can be great fun to be around, but he’s also a terrible grouch at times. I don’t think he knows how to hide it.”

This crotchety flare-up might not have piqued and amused the media and public to such an extent had it not been for another sour display of impatience just a few days prior. A mere forty-eight hours after the Queen’s death, while signing the historic proclamation of his new position as King in Henry VIII’s St. James’s Palace, Charles furiously gestured to his private secretary Clive Alderton to remove a tray of pens (*bloody stationery again!*) and inkpot (an old gift from his sons), baring his teeth in a grimace as he nearly pushed the lot off the desk. And, naturally, with little concern for optics, he did this with the world watching and waiting to see the new King in action. Online clips and headlines quickly followed. Despite the occasion’s solemnity, there was the new monarch publicly making a fuss over a triviality, bungling his special moment by flashing his temper during the official proceedings for his *own* ascension while signing his very first document as King.

Hadn’t the man had decades of training for this exact situation? Are the cosseted prince-cum-king’s worst instincts undeterred even by the gravity of history? Is he actually up for the job? These are worthwhile questions, and because of his testy display, they floated to the surface for many even during the deluge of royal pomp that was Charles’s first official act as King. The customary royal grandstanding designed to captivate and distort couldn’t efface the lasting image of a noticeably prickly Charles. The visual takeaway from his proclamation was an irritable new king passively berating an aide for overcrowding his desk. So, by the time the leaky pen set him off a couple of days later, cantankerous King Charles and his quick temper were ripe for criticism, cued up for memes and punch lines. The Queen hadn’t been gone even a week, and already the fragile mystique was cracking.

This was the inauguration of a new sovereign who spent decades waiting for the top job, but it immediately appeared as if Charles was ill-prepared for—and uncomfortable in—his new role as King and that the Palace failed to properly onboard their new CEO. It was a deflating, inauspicious start—insignificant on the surface and at the time, but consequential for the Firm’s long-term branding and optics campaign for the monarchy’s next iteration. And it was telling. It demonstrated that Charles and the institution still hadn’t grasped the power of social media



and the internet, a fact that, frankly, seems blindly incompetent at best. Think of it this way: Imagine if Apple had decades to roll out a revolutionary new successor to the iPhone, one they'd spent a great deal of time and money hyping up as an emblem of the next generation of communication, and then clumsily unveiled, with great fanfare, a throwback, temperamental flip phone riddled with software bugs. And doing so while *somehow* unaware that they were under a microscope and at the mercy of trends, unceasing opinion, and the new world order's outrage machine.

Royalist press brushed off the pen blunders as nothing but harmless gaffes, à la those of President Joe Biden, with one journalist at *The Times* calling them just "a bit of grouchiness," but it was more than that. "Those two moments made me realize we might have our work cut out for us," a Buckingham Palace staffer told me. "People were willing to overlook it because he was a son in mourning, but afterward there were conversations about how those situations can be best avoided in the future." Added another source, "It irritates him when he hears from those on his staff making comments like 'Well, the Queen wouldn't have done it that way' or 'The Queen would have done it like this . . .'" It didn't help that so early in his reign sources close to the King claimed he was already a little frustrated by the burden of daily red box paper shuffling and rubber-stamping—the executive work that Queen Elizabeth II relished and considered an anchoring component of her position. Right out of the gate, Charles was a little overwhelmed by it all, easily irked, and perhaps even a bit wistful for his former job as heir apparent and the freedom it provided. Although he had official duties as Prince of Wales, he was less restricted to express frustration or passion, and in some cases, he was free to crusade for issues like sustainability in the private sector and alternate medicines. As the new role transforms him, the job requiring quiet forbearance instead of vigorous debate (and resistance, in the case of the 2003 invasion of Iraq), the opinionated, activist prince must retreat behind the stately remove of the king's throne. Adopt, adapt, and *abide*, just like his mother did.

This is the expectation of those in the establishment and the institution. But Charles's shaky start proves that it is much easier to mold and coach a newly minted, young Queen than to administer and transfigure the longest-serving intern in the monarchy's history. Just a month after the media had their fun with "Pengate" (eye roll), King Charles's premiere hit another

snag in late October, one that presaged a difficult autumn ahead. Before resigning, Prime Minister Liz Truss formally requested that Charles refrain from attending COP27, an annual international climate meeting that the United Nations has organized since 1994 and one he had enthusiastically attended several times in the past. Two years earlier he had delivered the summit's opening address in Paris. The 2022 conference was held in the Egyptian coastal city of Sharm el-Sheikh during the first two weeks of November. Despite his lifelong campaign for a greener earth and his position as an outspoken, stalwart advocate for climate awareness—a cause and a passion that is now almost synonymous with Charles—the new King wasn't allowed to go anywhere near it. And the new prime minister who followed, Rishi Sunak, quickly reminded Charles not to pack any bags for Egypt. He “left [Truss's] request in place,” a No. 10 Downing Street spokesperson declared, adding that the climate summit was “not the right occasion” for the King to attend. Buckingham Palace aides told reporters at the time that he “unanimously agreed” with this request, but those close to Charles said that, behind closed doors, the King was frustrated. Because of his reluctance to completely steer clear of the conference, there was a tussle between Charles and the government, resulting in a compromise: government officials gave him the green light to host a November 4 pre-conference reception for many of the attendees at Buckingham Palace. The eco warrior was benched for the big game; the last-minute palace soiree was a chance for the King to hit the field for the warm-up—a way to signal his support from a safe and regal distance.

This flag up the pole from the gated palace was a far cry from Charles's usual (and expected) ardent participation at these gatherings. Standing down on issues near to his heart runs against the grain of his personality and counters his hard-earned legacy as a prince who freely wielded his (leak-free) pen and spoke his mind. As his long-standing biographer, Catherine Mayer, says, “One of the ironies with Charles is, when he was young, he felt that the Palace was blocking him from doing what he wanted to do at every turn, and that everything that he's done, he feels he achieved in spite of the Palace, not because of it.” But now, finally in the king's throne, he must assume the Palace position, embrace the established, government-approved point of view, don the requisite mask. The unbending royal system ever at work.

It's only fair to point out that this was also just a bit of bad luck for the new King, a chance turn of events that served as an early reality check. Mayer put it this way: "The very first thing that happens to [Charles as King] is that the whole ordeal around his attendance at COP27 becomes a political hot potato." Possibly stretching the metaphor too thin, it was a hot potato that gave him a proper burn. It was at this point, a source added to me, that Charles begrudgingly accepted that "he can no longer campaign, only highlight." Added another, "The glass-half-full take on that is he still has, and wants to utilize, the power to convene those who *can* campaign."

Later in November, just weeks after the COP reception at the palace, another pointed tête-à-tête with Prime Minister Sunak tested this disgruntled acceptance. During closed-door conversations, Sunak and his team pressured the Palace to rethink Charles's vision for a toned-down, cost-saving coronation, sternly advising them to go big and put on the full show. In keeping with Charles's overhyped conception of a slimmed-down monarchy—a drum that Charles thundered on for years in preparation for his reign—and "keenly aware" of Britain's distressing economic woes, the initial messaging out of the Palace in September 2022 was that Charles wanted a smaller, less grandiose coronation. Like his mother, who was also crowned during a time of great austerity and economic difficulties in 1953 (she even saved up her ration coupons to buy enough material for her wedding dress), Charles supposedly wanted to pay attention to the concerns of the nation. His wish, added the *Telegraph*, was a service that represented "good value." Sources explained that while he certainly wanted the nation to experience the grandeur and tradition of it all, he wanted a celebration that was within reason and in proportion to the intractable realities that plagued the country. "The King and Queen Consort and their advisers are keenly following the debate to ensure they are striking the right balance between this moment of celebration and something that can be done against a very challenging economic backdrop," added a source to the *Daily Mail*.

The country had emerged from the Covid crisis in a bit of a state. After public opinion and "the herd" in the Tory party pushed out Prime Minister Boris Johnson and his successor, Truss, barely had time to unpack her things at Downing Street before the same muttering flock forced her resignation, the government was floundering and in disarray. Twin crises strafed the economy: the Russian war on Ukraine, pandemic aftereffects, and a global supply chain crisis led to a full-on cost-of-living emergency,

while a backlog of millions of unbuilt homes, among other issues, precipitated what some argued was a long-gestating housing problem. Workers in various sectors went on strike, including teachers and National Health Service (NHS) employees. And the rippling effects of Brexit continued to rankle a large section of the population. Britain had shunted off the tracks, which further diminished the nation's standing in the world, and internal unrest fueled the country's instability.

Initially, Charles and officials on the Coronation Committee, comprised of privy counsellors, astutely recognized that a scaled-back coronation during these dire times would signal to the public that the monarchical institution wasn't completely out of touch and that the new King was also deeply concerned for the state of the nation. And let's be frank, the King and his team also recognized that a cut-rate coronation was a timely branding and messaging opportunity for the Firm—the new sovereign will do things *his* way; this is the dawn of a new regal era. It was a chance to demonstrate that he would be a more modern, compassionate monarch whose words about slimming down weren't just hot air. Leveraging crisis, in whatever way possible, and maximizing royal benchmarks is all in a day's work for the Palace.

Prime Minister Sunak and the government approached the coronation from the opposite position. While Charles wanted to downsize, Sunak and Whitehall (the government) envisioned a full-fat celebratory weekend—the full monty of carriages, a big concert, and national celebration. The Firm saw the coronation as a chance to exude importance through prudence and sensitivity, but the government wanted to distract and redirect by way of extravagance and ballyhoo. It was a two-for-one deal: a good, old-fashioned royal performance would divert public attention from the crises at home—the pre-coronation media hype would dominate the news cycle for months—and stimulate an image-repair process for Britain on the global stage. A source said it was the Queen's funeral that reminded Sunak and other ministers that a “proper” royal occasion draws an international audience like no other and puts a momentary gloss on reality. The government stance was to harness this moment—the country could use a bit of “Brand Britain” and the public some entertaining diversion. With the Wales children many years away from marriage and jubilees starting only at the twenty-five-year mark, they were also shrewdly aware that Charles's coronation would be

the last true royal spectacular for years. This, of course, the Palace agreed with.

Downing Street prevailed, and Charles ceded his vision for a leaner affair. In a later meeting, Sunak's cabinet publicly confirmed that the country would proceed with a full-scale coronation. A cabinet spokesperson said, "Obviously, there will be a great deal of attention on the United Kingdom at that time. It will be a moment for us to show the best of Britain in many different aspects." Immediately following that statement, Palace sources close to Charles backtracked on their earlier words and started to claim that the King rejected the idea of a cut-price coronation weekend. A spokesperson later told reporters in a briefing over Microsoft Teams that the coronation would be a "once in a lifetime" spectacle of glorious pomp and pageantry.

It was a humbling autumn for the new King as he discovered that, in some respects, his promotion occasionally felt like a demotion. He may wear the crown, but the system quickly disabused him of the notion that he could always have his way—the King could no longer act like a prince. The fall season was then capped off by an exceedingly cold and trying end to 2022. Charles's long December was a direct result of the *Harry & Meghan* documentary series, a media juggernaut that commandeered international attention and dominated the news cycle for weeks. Netflix dropped a teaser for the first three episodes on December 1, and, sure enough, hyperbole and screeching immediately followed. The *Daily Mail* reported that "allies" of William and Kate referred to the trailer as a "declaration of war." *The Times* claimed royal sources believed the Duke and Duchess of Sussex "deliberately torpedoed" the Waleses' U.S. visit during that time, while the front page of the *Daily Express* dramatically asked, "Harry, Do You Really Hate Your Family So Much?" Charles was aware that some in other royal quarters were briefing their thoughts and feelings on the series, but within his own court, he requested a wall of silence. "The King was genuinely sad about the entire situation," a family source said three months later. "He was angry but didn't want people to speak ill of his son in front of him, either. It was a brief moment where he paused and realized how bad things had become."

The King's sympathy soon disappeared, however, when it became clear the Harry and Meghan hubbub would overshadow his work, including his participation in a worthwhile cause that received little coverage. Charles

personally donated “substantial” funds to the Felix Project, a charity that redirects surplus food from farms, manufacturers, and supermarkets to food banks. A large chunk of their £1 million starting funding came from the monarch, a noble deed, but the Sussexes and Netflix were all the press could talk about.

While the papers and the circus of royal commentators were still condemning and salivating over the teaser clip, Netflix went ahead with a full-length trailer on December 5 before dropping the first trio of episodes three days later. Once again, the attention was diverted away from Charles, who was traveling to northeast Wales for an engagement his team thought would land him every front page. Set in the beautiful Welsh countryside, Wrexham had recently grabbed the world’s attention after actors Ryan Reynolds and Rob McElhenney acquired the local football team, Wrexham AFC—the oldest football club in Wales and the third-oldest professional football club in the world. The motivation for buying the team didn’t exactly come from an undying love of the game. After purchasing the Red Dragons for \$2.5 million, the two friends created a docuseries about the team, the town, and their first foray into club ownership. *Welcome to Wrexham* was a huge success, and as a result, the largely unknown town of Wrexham and its fifth-tier football team entered the zeitgeist.

Capitalizing on this media focus, Charles and Camilla ventured to Wrexham to celebrate the village achieving city status in a Queen’s Platinum Jubilee competition the previous year and to tour the Wrexham AFC stadium with McElhenney and Reynolds. For royal events, this one bordered on the flashy side as photographers captured the King and Queen on the field with the two Hollywood stars. Normally, this would have been fodder for prime, positive royal coverage and grist for the mill of royal watchers, but the spotlight was still on the Duke and Duchess of Sussex. The couple’s revelations in the first episodes enthralled millions (Netflix’s highest-viewed documentary ever), agitated royalists, lit up social media, and created a frenzy among the papers. The *Mirror*’s front page went with “Stop This Royal Circus,” demonstrating the paper has little or no self-awareness, considering it is often a ringmaster for said circus. The *Daily Mail* took aim at the docuseries’ description of the Commonwealth as “Empire 2.0” with the pearl-clutching headline “Palace Anger at ‘Assault on Queen’s Legacy.’” At the Palace, heads were in hands and migraines were brewing. “[The show] took the wind out of everyone’s sails,” said one

aide. “Here you have the King doing his damndest best and no one is watching.” Added a second source, “[He] went from not wanting anyone to talk about his son to openly criticizing ‘that fool.’”

It was a rousing mini soap opera within the world’s largest soap opera—a level of melodrama only the British royal family can produce. And it eclipsed King Charles at every turn, besting his attempts to highlight his own narrative and promote the monarchy’s new Carolean era. And his long December wasn’t over yet. In the middle of the month, Netflix released the final half of the series, in which Harry claimed he and his wife were victims of “institutional gaslighting” and revealed new details about how his family leaked stories about the couple to score points with the press and other powerful players. These were true bombshells, but, just as they had done throughout the entire Netflix ordeal, both Buckingham Palace and those working with William and Kate remained silent, offering no official statements, though complaining plenty to preferred journalists in the royal rota in the form of anonymous source quotes. Some of Meghan’s claims, including the fact that aides didn’t prep her for her job in the Firm, were “a total lie,” a royal source told the *Sunday Times*. A “friend” of William’s told the paper, “I reminded him to keep his rifle pointed at the target and not to be distracted, even though it’s all fucking tedious in every sense of the word.”

This silence might have benefited the institution, but it didn’t do the King any favors. Up until his first Christmas broadcast from Sandringham, Charles carried on with a few royal events, but he did so in relative obscurity and under a cloud of uncontested accusations and ceaseless media hype about his now excommunicated son. At the December 15 taping of Kate, the Princess of Wales’s *Together at Christmas* carol service at Westminster Abbey, Charles and Camilla joined other members of the royal family to present a united front against the damning allegations flying over on Netflix. (Curiously, most of the female family members wore matching burgundy coats, a move the *Daily Mail* called a “dig” at Meghan’s documentary claim that she was unable to wear bright colors during her years as a working royal, though a Palace source told me this is “ridiculous.”) And the following day should have been a big one for the new King. After attending an anti-hate crime meeting at the Jewish Community Security Trust in northwest London, Charles moved on to a nearby Jewish community center that serves all faiths. He brought along a

trunk of rice and canned tuna to donate over the upcoming Chanukah holidays, and, after touring JW3's facility, he joyfully danced with Holocaust survivors, including Anne Frank's ninety-three-year-old stepsister, Eva Schloss. His day out was evidence that he was taking some progressive steps as a monarch and that he hadn't entirely surrendered his passions to the demands of the throne. But in the fallout from Harry and Meghan's latest round of disclosures, few even noticed.

The King's prerecorded Christmas address from the quire at Windsor Castle's St. George's Chapel was perfunctory but heartfelt as he paid tribute to his mother, who was laid to rest in the same location. A few days of holiday rest at Sandringham—where the Wales family, the Wessexes, and Prince Andrew were among guests—were required because the new year was looking ominous. The early January 2023 publication of *Spare* was on the horizon and with it a collateral storm of revelations. Despite the absence of Prince Harry and his family at the royal family festivities, Charles chose not to reach out to his younger son. Instead, it was Harry who made the effort to wish his father well over the holidays. "Charles was cautious," a source close to the monarch shared. "He didn't want to engage in anything other than light chat . . . The message among the family about Harry was he is not to be trusted until they see what is in the book and what he says while promoting it. They all took that seriously." While some were sad to hear about Harry's experiences (Prince Edward was one of the few who felt Charles should "properly speak" with his son and try to move on), the majority were cross. While gathered at Sandringham, Princess Anne suggested to Charles that it was time he took away the Sussexes' Frogmore Cottage home and Prince Andrew's Royal Lodge residence. "He knew she was right," said a source, who noted that Anne's comments would have been related to the fact that Harry and Meghan, and Andrew for that matter, were no longer working royals, rather than a suggestion for punishments.

Ahead of *Spare*'s release, the Firm endured three days of a rapid-fire prepublication promotional blitz for the memoir. In an interview with journalist and friend Tom Bradby on January 8, the Duke of Sussex detailed his estrangement with his family and told the ITV news anchor he was not sure whether he would attend his father's coronation. The next day's interview with Anderson Cooper for CBS's *60 Minutes* was notable for two things: Harry's candidness and Cooper's on-air disclosure that the Palace demanded to see the full footage of the interview before making any



comments (aides also asked the same thing of ABC's *Good Morning America* later that week). Cooper reiterated for the millions watching that this was "something we never do."

The Palace stayed silent. But after its January 10 global release, King Charles made his feelings on the tell-all clear in private, despite not having read a page of the book (just as he refused to watch the Netflix series). The Sussexes' team received correspondence from Buckingham Palace's Keeper of the Privy Purse Sir Michael John Stevens, who informed Harry and Meghan that, as they were no longer working royals or based in Britain, they needed to give up the keys to their royal rental, Frogmore Cottage. Although there were reports to the contrary some months later, I spoke to a source close to the couple on the day they were informed, and there was a clear feeling of shock and disappointment as the news sunk in. Renovations at Frogmore had not only been repaid in full by the couple (£2.4 million in total), but they had also covered a lease on the property well into the future. Given that the couple was now banned from access to royal protection (even if they paid for it themselves), staying on the Windsor estate was the Sussex family's only truly safe option when visiting the United Kingdom, as the grounds are surrounded by armed guards. Several days later Harry spoke about the matter with Charles over the phone. "Don't you want to see your grandchildren?" the duke asked his father. His silence, followed by a half-hearted declaration that they would always have "somewhere" to stay didn't, according to a source, give Harry much hope. Sir Michael followed up with a note that Harry would have until early June to clear out the entire residence and return the keys.

The final blow came when the couple became aware that King Charles had offered the property to his disgraced brother Prince Andrew, who had spent the past twenty years living at the nearby thirty-room Royal Lodge. In 2003, the disgraced prince had signed a seventy-five-year lease on the property, renting it from the Crown Estate for the bargain price of just £250 a week on the condition he covered the costs of the many renovations it needed (believed to have reached a total of £7.5 million over two decades). Now that Andrew was no longer a working royal and didn't have any active financial endeavors bringing in money, there was talk that he could no longer afford to continue running the home, though he defiantly told anyone who asked that he had it under control. For Charles, the issue of Frogmore Cottage wasn't just about punishing his son, though sources say that

“undoubtedly” played a significant role; it was also part of the effort to streamline the portfolio of properties being used by members of the family. Slimming down the monarchy also means slimming down the privileges and perks enjoyed by family members. Officially, offering the smaller five-bedroom Frogmore Cottage to his younger brother was Charles’s way of reducing the number of “nonworking” royals paying discounted rent for grand properties, but the timing and the optics suggested this was also a punitive measure aimed at Harry and his family—one that smelled of bitterness and recrimination.

Nailing an eviction notice on the front door of Frogmore was unsurprisingly hailed as a “strong decision” by the usual chorus of reactionary royalists and royal reporters. But others in the media found Charles’s Frogmore move petty, including the respected former BBC royal correspondent Peter Hunt. “Instead of building bridges, the head of state is torching them,” he said. “The banishment of his son is cruel, unnecessary, and diminishes Charles.” Staying mum about Harry’s accusations and remaining publicly unconcerned for his son’s well-being while ending his family’s lease on a safe U.K. residence was not a decisive action by a resolute King; it was a cheap shot from a wounded father bound by an institutional system that is often intolerant of human emotion.

One all-too-human family complication that the King apparently has a blind spot for is the shameful burden of Prince Andrew and his fall from favor. Stonewalling and expelling his son came easy enough, but it’s a different story with his brother. Offering Frogmore is another sign that the King won’t completely banish Andrew from the picture. Taking advantage of Charles’s brotherly bias, Andrew continued to turn down the keys to Frogmore for months until Sir Michael stopped asking him about it. And despite knowing the uproar that would come from the public, he slithered into an ermine robe for the March 2023 service for the Royal Victorian Order, an event that occurs every four years in the medieval St. George’s Chapel at Windsor Castle, and continued the ceremonial role the Queen failed to take away from her son. Charles is aware that his brother wants to slowly step back into some sort of public role, even if it isn’t as a working royal (a ship that has long sailed). “He held his hands up and said, ‘I can’t stop him,’ but it felt as if he didn’t want to stop him,” said a family source of Andrew’s outing.

Many questioned the King's judgment, particularly coming on the heels of the Frogmore dustup. Pundits called out Andrew for his brazen audacity and impertinence, including the outspoken former Liberal Democrat politician Norman Baker, who said the Palace allowed Andrew to "play dressing up as a royal for the day when really he should be serving a long period of silence." Considering the depths of Andrew's disgrace, whether or not the King quietly approved or even made the final decision about the duke's appearance at the service is irrelevant. Andrew's mere presence in ceremonial royal garb was dramatically out of step with public opinion. More than that, it exposed Charles as weak-kneed when it comes to his brother (and his family in general).

His judgment came into question once again after he met with Ursula von der Leyen, the president of the European Commission, while she was in London to revise a post-Brexit trade deal between Northern Ireland and the Republic of Ireland. Given the controversial nature of the deal and the mixed feelings toward the monarchy in Northern Ireland (where praise for the royal family vies with disdain), Charles's decision to meet with the EU president on the very day Britain's prime minister signed the new agreement—curiously branded in a press conference as "The Windsor Framework"—was met with skepticism across the political spectrum. To many, this was a monarch sticking his nose into political matters. After outrage intensified, neither government representatives nor Palace officials clarified who decided the meeting between the two was a good idea in the first place. Buckingham Palace told me the King was acting on "government's advice," but Downing Street claimed it was the King's decision.

Circumvented by Netflix, overshadowed by his younger son, humbled by the government and the institutional system, and dragged down by his own poor judgment and that of his wayward brother, Charles often stumbled through his first hundred days as King, encountering one obstacle after another. It seemed he couldn't catch a break. But the monarch did just that at the tail end of an unusually rainy March. The King and Buckingham Palace officials were desperate to carry out the first international trip for the monarch and his consort—an ambassadorial mission to Europe. This was a chance for Charles to promote his new reign and underscore the monarchy's strength, despite the Sussex dramas and the void left behind after Queen Elizabeth II's death. Soft power was on the agenda, too. Part of his mission,

on behalf of the U.K. Foreign Office, was also to remind leaders that Britain was still standing tall after Brexit, Covid, and economic and governmental crises stress-tested the country's foundations. Though the tour was originally scheduled to stop in both France and Germany, anti-government protests in Paris and other French cities forced the Palace to postpone that leg until late September. No one's fault, but not the luckiest of starts. So with only Germany left, the pressure was on to knock it out of the park: no gaffes or slipups. The terrible timing and bad-luck traps that Charles knows so well were also set again. The Duke of Sussex was at the High Court in London alongside Sir Elton John and other claimants for an unlawful news-gathering lawsuit against the publisher of the *Daily Mail*, and, because it's Harry, this usually ignored type of hearing chummed the waters for yet another media frenzy.

Taking it in stride and perhaps pulling a page from his mother's handbook, King Charles left for Germany on March 28 showing all signs that he was undeterred, fully prepared, and buoyed by the Queen Consort's presence by his side. After arriving in Berlin with an impressive Luftwaffe escort, Charles and Camilla made their way to the historic Brandenburg Gate, where the German president Frank-Walter Steinmeier welcomed the couple with military honors—an unprecedented move that signaled Germany's strong support for the new King and the monarchy. The following day included another first. Charles shined as the first British monarch to address the Bundestag, the German parliament, with a speech that eloquently enforced the vital importance of both sides maintaining a British-German partnership. Charles further endeared himself to Bundestag lawmakers by speaking German during a portion of his address, one that went beyond the usual royal platitudes and strongly veered into politics with regards to Russia's invasion of Ukraine (and Germany's "courageous" move to give military support). It was a powerful address, and one that Social Democratic Party politician Jens Zimmermann claimed saw Charles send a "clear message" by speaking in the country's native tongue while in the parliamentary chambers. "It was very well-received," he added. "Much more political than you might have expected. It was very connecting."

On the last day of the royal visit, Charles and Camilla visited Hamburg, a city that was leveled by Allied bombs, particularly those dropped by the Royal Air Force, during World War II's "area bombing" campaign. Joined by President Steinmeier once again, Charles laid a wreath of remembrance

for all the victims of that war at the magnificently steeped St. Nikolai Church. Before the trip, the *Guardian*—a newspaper unafraid to criticize the royal family when necessary—ran an opinion piece about his symbolic visit to Hamburg with a headline that read, “For Hamburg, Devastated by Allied Bombing, King Charles’s Visit Is So Much More Than a Photo-op.” He proved that it was, not only in Hamburg but across his entire visit. After a rough start as King at home, Charles proved up for the job abroad. As head of state and a soft-power emissary, he was commanding and unifying—even daringly unconventional—when the situation demanded it.

Returning home to England a little lighter after a trip that was hailed as successful by both German and British media, Charles was bolstered and enlivened by his first mission abroad and relieved that his luck had turned. Foreign trips and mingling with leaders and dignitaries have always been two of Charles’s strengths, though it’s not known how often he will get to lean on those skills. Sources say that the King and Queen have received advice from doctors that big overseas working trips should be kept “on the shorter side” as a precaution, meaning those grueling countrywide tours of Canada, Australia, and New Zealand lasting ten to fourteen days might just be a thing of the past. For their winter 2023 visit to Kenya, sources say the schedule of engagements was devised with their ages and health in mind. As is the norm during any trip overseas, the monarch is, without fail, accompanied by a doctor.

Although Harry was still in the United Kingdom when he returned from Germany, Charles ignored a request to meet, instead instructing an aide to fob him off with a “too busy” excuse. As for the positive energy generated from his trip, it didn’t last long. Charles found himself in the news for the wrong reasons once again just six days later, during a trip to York for his first Maundy Thursday service as King. Commemorating the Last Supper on the day before Good Friday, the ceremony was adopted by the British monarchy back in 1210, when King John became the first sovereign to distribute alms (money, food, clothing) to mark the occasion. After King Charles II handed out new-minted silver coins in 1662, the alms were thereafter called “Maundy Money.” Duly obligated, the new King Charles carried on this ancient tradition by handing out two purses—one red, the other white—to 148 senior citizens (seventy-four men and seventy-four women) to recognize their service to the church or community. The white purse contained specially forged silver coins commensurate in value to

Charles's age at the time (seventy-four) while the red one held two commemorative coins, signifying the monarch's beneficence.

All in all, it is a rather harmless, if slightly condescending tradition, one that Queen Elizabeth II made her own as only she could do. It was always quite touching to see her perform the service, either as a young, wide-eyed English rose new to the job or a venerated, battle-tested Queen who embodied royal tradition. Charles performed his part of the service with requisite smiles and adequate respect, knowing that his mother especially cherished this event. But while greeting locals after unveiling a statue of his late mother, Charles experienced something that the late Queen never did at a Maundy Thursday service—eggs hurled in protest. Although smaller in number to those gathered in support, a group of anti-monarchy protestors at the engagement were active and loud, with one shouting at Charles, “This country was built on the blood of slaves!” Among them was twenty-three-year-old student Patrick Thelwell, who lobbed five raw eggs that narrowly missed the King and Camilla. As yolks spattered across the ground, some well-wishers tried to drown out the protestors' boos with chants of “God save the King!” The young man was quickly arrested and later sentenced to a hundred hours of community service. The King might have wowed audiences in Germany, but back at home he faced mixed reception, to put it mildly.

Three days after the egg missiles, Charles led members of the royal family into Windsor's St. George's Chapel for the Easter Sunday service. Practically front and center in the group was Prince Andrew. Glum but arrogant, the Duke of York strode tall next to his sister, Princess Anne, and one step behind King Charles. Prince William and Kate, the Princess of Wales, purposefully kept their distance, but Charles appeared unconcerned, still blithely unaware of the message this sends to the public.

The King seemed surprisingly comfortable dragging the baggage of the past into the monarchy's new era. As the Queen told Harry a few years earlier, “Your father always does what he wants to do.” Charles has finally got his chance, and only he can squander it.

# 4

## Remembrance of Things Past

The Ongoing Campaign to Make the Royals Great Again

*Though worlds may change and go awry  
While there is still one voice to cry!  
There'll always be an England . . .  
Surely you're proud, shout it aloud  
Britons, awake!*

—Ross Parker and Hughie Charles, from the popular World War II song “There’ll Always Be an England”

*An element of propaganda, of sales and marketing, always intervened between the inner and the outer person.*

—Julian Barnes, *England, England*

*June 2, 2022*

As far as royal moments go, it was picture perfect. Standing on either side of the Queen was the next chapter of the House of Windsor. Charles, Camilla, William, Kate, Edward, and Sophie, all gathered on Buckingham Palace’s iconic East Wing balcony—their children, including future king Prince George—waving and smiling and putting on a model regal display as planes from the British Royal Air Force, past and present, roared overhead. Trooping the Colour, the official parade for the Queen’s birthday, took place right in the middle of Her Majesty’s Platinum Jubilee celebrations, a four-day public holiday marking seventy years on the throne. From their privileged vantage point, eighteen members of the family looked straight down the length of the Mall, the 930-meter promenade that runs from the palace’s black and gilded wrought iron gates to bustling Trafalgar

Square, and skirts leafy St. James Park and Clarence House along the way. It's one of the most beautiful parts of central London—tree-lined, stately, and the only place in the city unbothered by painted lines on the streets (because who would want to spoil such a sight?).

The Mall looked particularly tranquil and grand on that celebratory June day. A stream of Union Jacks danced in the sixty-nine-degree breeze and a summer-blue sky darted in and out of passing patches of white clouds. A sizable crowd gathered there, too, despite the new, upended reality born from the Covid pandemic's global upheaval. Well-wishers, monarchists, and tourists were out in full force—some masked, most not, but all doing their bit to commemorate the Queen or to get a peek at history in the making.

It was hard not to be a little moved by the crowd's presence as they lined the fenced-off pavement in support. The day itself was positive, the family catching a much-needed break from the skies above. I've covered big-ticket royal occasions like that one many times over, and I'm always amazed at how these moments, be it the birth of a new heir or a royal wedding, can magically whip the unpredictably tempered British weather into producing a sun-soaked day that seems lifted out of time. As the Queen waved to her people and the Red Arrows aerobatic team streaked the sky red, white, and blue in perfect formation, I was reminded that *this* was the kind of showpiece moment the royal family had done so well during her reign. And, after a few stormy years, this sunshine was just what the Windsors needed—a cheerful occasion to repack and reissue the royal brand.

I was covering the event for ABC News, who partnered with the BBC for the official Platinum Jubilee coverage in the United States, and the two networks had exclusive access to every event. Throughout the four-day celebration, I watched as hundreds of workers and volunteers made sure everything was perfect. "When you're asked to perform for the Queen, you drop everything," Ed Sheeran said, smiling backstage on the day of the June 5 concert before he performed his song "Perfect" as a tribute to the monarch and her late husband, Prince Philip. It was a full-circle moment for the singer, who had been inspired by the Queen's Golden Jubilee concert twenty years earlier (and a showstopping performance of "Layla" by Eric Clapton) to start playing guitar and dream of pop stardom. He added, "There's no way I wouldn't be here for this . . . And to be able to pay tribute



to the Duke [of Edinburgh] is just the biggest honor.” Having overseen and participated in the planning of the commemorative events, one of the Queen’s communications secretaries was equally buzzing when I saw them. “It’s been a very proud moment for all of us,” they said with a smile.

There’s an almost school reunion–like atmosphere at big royal occasions such as this. It’s often the case that the last time you saw many of the journalists, producers, and TV crews, who flew in from almost every corner of the world, was years prior at the last wedding, birth, or major royal landmark. Even for more critical royal correspondents like me, it’s impossible not to get a little swept up in the spectacle of it all. These are huge moments in history to witness firsthand. And it’s big business—with the financial struggles most media companies are now facing, mega budgets for special coverage are more infrequent than they used to be. Though that was hardly noticeable over at *Good Morning America*’s plush pop-up studio outside Buckingham Palace. “I mean, this is what you guys do best!” one of the show’s anchors, T. J. Holmes, said to me as I was getting mic’d up for my contributions that day. “No one does pomp, circumstance, and all of *this* like the royals.”

Image advertising and reputational management are practices about which the royal establishment knows a thing or two—that much is certainly true. The family organization’s most famous face, Queen Elizabeth II, was no slouch when it came to crafting visuals to increase the monarchy’s core value to the public, and she assuredly left a messaging framework for Charles to build on. She also recognized that it was paramount to manage the family brand out of view and with minimal fuss, something with which her children and grandchildren haven’t had much success. The Queen and Prince Philip also famously eschewed going overboard on “strategy,” going so far as to half-heartedly embargo the word from the Palace’s working lexicon at one point. The Prince once grumbled to a busied Palace aide that “the only two people who talked more about strategy and planning than [the aide] were Hitler and Stalin.” But strategically or not, the Queen, with the help of Philip, who provided a fresh take on ideas, repeatedly demonstrated that she—perhaps instinctively—understood the importance of marketing, and that this was something she could effectively administer from her position above the fray. She would no doubt bristle at the phrase, but the Queen appreciated the colossal significance of the monarchy’s “value proposition.” To survive, the populace must buy into it.

The perception of the Firm unquestionably ebbed and flowed during the Queen's reign. Their image suffered from fate's normal slings and arrows, but it also experienced many crippling self-inflicted wounds, some easily avoidable (Andrew's idiocy and degeneracy come quickly to mind) and others devastating (Princess Diana). Then again, it often projected a healthy glow, conveying well-timed vim and resolve—the Queen's visit to Aberfan in Wales after the mining tragedy that took the lives of 116 children in 1966, and her invention of the “walkabout” during a tour of Australia in 1970, where she decided it would be better to stroll and meet more people rather than cruise past in a car. There were also the weddings of Charles and Diana, William and Kate, and Harry and Meghan—each of them a grand affair watched by hundreds of millions that elevated the royal family in front of the world.

And through it all, there was the Queen, doing her best to demonstrate the power of tradition and the value of duty. She protected her image and, by extension, the monarchy's, by consistently rising “over and above” all the squabbles and turmoil, even when problematic members of her family (oh, where do I start?) and some buffoons in the establishment (ahem, Boris Johnson) were doing *their* best to drag it all down. As a symbol, she was always there, though what she projected evolved over time. As a young monarch, she was a fresh face after the horrors of World War II; then, as a middle-aged Queen, she was a stiff upper lip in the Cold War; and, finally, in her later years, she was a regal grandmother and a sagacious, maternal comfort in an increasingly haywire world. But, unlike other royal books, I'm not here to tell you that the Queen was perfect. After all, a human being lived underneath that regal facade, but Her Majesty did a masterful job at selling the idea that she lived a life exceedingly close to it. It's one of the things that made her more popular than the monarchy itself. And some, me included, would even argue that her reign often helped mask Britain's relative decline.

For decades, the Queen and her institutional backers expertly maintained and sold this image of unflappable sincerity in a tiara while, behind the scenes, they quietly and steadily reinvented what the monarchy represented and reflected back to the public. As the sun set on the British Empire and the United Kingdom lowered the Union Jacks in the remaining colonies, Great Britain lost its tokens of power and the monarchy much of its luster. The government's focus increasingly returned to its own harbors

and the many crises it faced as a declining superpower, until war tempted the country into a different kind of foreign adventure altogether, with wide-ranging results. Margaret Thatcher's Falklands War provided a patriotic jolt, while Tony Blair's risky neoconservative interventions in Afghanistan and Iraq divided the country.

Brexit further split the British citizenry and more forcefully removed the country from the greater world. Excusing itself from the table of global power, the Great Britain of colonial expansion, World War II greatness, and European solidarity decided it was high time to refocus its energies on "Merry England" and other nation-first interests. The totality of all these changes meant a paradigm shift for the country and its royal establishment. Instead of waving to subjects from the backs of Jeeps in far-flung lands or dining out in black tie with European heads of state, senior members of the royal family found themselves more and more on country lane walkabouts greeting their own citizens.

Recognizing these historic shifts and then recalibrating was an essential task for Her Majesty and the Firm. On this front, there were both advances and retreats, but, over time, the Queen and her advisors transformed the monarchy's image from a regal manifestation of empire and preeminent influence to a domestic expression of continuity, civic obligation, and enigmatic "Britishness." The Queen became a national icon. "This was a role imposed on her [by an ancient constitution] that really only required that she simply existed, but she brought so much more to it, she made it her own," said former press secretary to the monarch Ailsa Anderson.

But mostly, she was committed to her title role as a fixed star for the nation and a token of traditional Britain and its "old ways" values. Over the years, however, as countries in the Commonwealth continue to make moves toward independence and Scotland grows more comfortable with republican ideas of its own, this royal emblem of "Britain" and "Britishness" has gradually become more of a totem of "England" and "Englishness." What it really seems to represent is what we might call a "British-Englishness."

To maintain their symbolic position in the British-English firmament, the royal family exhibited what the late author and political theorist Tom Nairn called a "glamour of backwardness" and embraced a "contrived timelessness." Backward because the family has glorified bygone aristocratic ways and means to great effect and sold it as national emblem,

and timeless in the way they increasingly joined their dynastic heritage with sentimental nationalism and communal longing for sepia-toned stability. This produced a portrait of a “great nation-family” meant to enchant the public and the press. And in many ways, it worked. Somehow staying both above it all and comfortably entwined with normal British life, the family settled into new roles as tourist attractions and tabloid stars. Their successes and blunders were ceaselessly reported on, and the family narrative emerged as a through line in the national story. As both national treasures (the Queen) and soap stars (the rest of the family), the royals mirrored the state of the nation: a mass-market culture nostalgic for a golden age and in search of itself in the tumult of new global realities.

Nostalgia is a potent energy, and the practice of harnessing that power to advance agendas and undergird isms is nothing new. Governments and social movements have been doing this for centuries—it’s now standard operating procedure. The Eton College– and Oxford University–educated Boris Johnson and his elitist chums exploited yearnings for the quaint, rural Britishisms of yesteryear to justify Brexit. And, of course, there’s Trumpism. MAGA crowds feverish with grievance and the fear of being left behind gobbled up Donald Trump’s platter of “America First” red meat to such a degree that die-hard Trumpists *still* believe that only this particular man of wealth, privilege, and dubious moral character truly stands for real American values; only he can restore the country to its former greatness. The list of those who have manipulated nostalgia for less than honorable purposes is a long one—it seems there’s a strong human impulse to practice this dark art. So, when it comes to capitalizing on nostalgia and the feelings that go with it, the royal institution often uses blueprints that history left by the palace gates. And, of course, they’ve also drawn up a few of their own.

When Elizabeth II was still in the picture, leveraging nostalgia was never a problem. Here was a woman whose life spanned a majority of the twentieth century and twenty-two years of the twenty-first. She witnessed—and worked through—almost a century’s worth of history’s seesawing—the glories and horrors of the first modern era and the convulsions and breakthroughs in the early hours of the second millennia. In her first radio address in 1940, then Princess Elizabeth, she comforted children around the Commonwealth during the initial spasms of World War II. She was a solemn and strangely comforting presence for many since then—she bucked up the nation when the chips were down and joined us as we

celebrated our collective successes and milestones. There's also the ubiquity of her image. For seventy years her visage and the royal iconography associated with her appeared on currencies, stamps, flags, postboxes, and all genres of art. And let us not forget the inescapable photographs: the Queen in her kaleidoscope of bright outfits to stand out from the huge crowds at engagements, Franklin D. Roosevelt-like moments by the fireplace at Windsor Castle, warm and cheerful at Christmas gatherings with her family, in a hat for a day at the races or a tiara for a state occasion, and white-gloved and elegant on the balcony for Trooping the Colour. For a woman we actually knew so little about, she was everywhere, and for a long time.

These photographs and royal representations helped create a type of folklore imbued with that "British-Englishness" redolent of heritage, convention, and fabled civility—the Great Britain of castles, misty green rolling hills, country parishes, afternoon tea, urbane Londoners, and stoic locals standing by the taps in low-ceilinged pubs. This is quite a magic trick when you step back to objectively take it in. Somehow, all at once, an image of the Queen manages to conjure up an assemblage of national myths, stereotypes, and cultural touchstones. She was fortitude in the trenches, Wellies in the English garden, and courtliness in the palace. Her Majesty, her family, and even their creaky system of birthright and superior lineage are bizarrely as essential to the nation's collective understanding of itself—its cherished past, its current decline, its stabilizing hope—as the chords of a Beatles song, the novels of Jane Austen, Big Ben's reverberating chimes, and Stonehenge's prehistoric circle of rock and mystery.

An iconographic transformation like this doesn't happen overnight, and as the royals have demonstrated, it has tremendous staying power, despite what the outside world violently hurls at the royal gates. Its *ancien régime* has been long associated with military conquest and colonial expansion, as well as the flag-waving and communal pride, whether warranted or not, that frequently accompany these national moments. Leveraging patriotism is tantalizing, low-hanging fruit and comes almost automatically for the Firm, especially when they need to roll out the pageantry to remind the public of their value. It's now *pro forma* for Union Jacks to come out *en masse* when there's a coronation, a royal wedding, a funeral, or a milestone like a jubilee.

It must be said that in the past, this patriotic expression for the royal family was often unpolluted by politically charged energies. Because the institution had largely kept the family business out of politics, the public spirit conveyed around royal occasions was generally a celebration of what the monarchy represented to its supporters regardless of their ideological allegiances—the intangibles that comprise national identity. And they waved flags to commemorate their Queen, a singular woman whose elevated, soft power healed and inspired, but always from a dignified distance. This was a preternatural, crowning achievement for the monarchy, given that politics now pervades almost every aspect of our lives.

But, as the saying goes, there's always a chance of having too much of a good thing. Maximizing on patriotic bursts and nostalgic yearnings became established practice for the Firm from the postwar days until the Queen's death to such an extent that the institution and the family started to rely almost exclusively on these national feelings to repair their image and underscore their *raison d'être*. Prince Harry found purpose in serving his country in the military, an unquestionably honorable thing to do, but it's worth mentioning that his time in uniform also gave his "bad-boy" tabloid image a much-needed "for the Mother Country" makeover. While Harry served, the Palace heavily leaned on the young prince's time on the battlefield in Afghanistan for a boost of its own. It was inevitable that the public would be curious about Harry's military experience, so, in the interest of stopping prying tabloids from putting Harry or his comrades at risk, Palace publicity gurus carefully released details through their own channels and the Press Association. The Firm considered it a PR win to have one of its own on the front lines. "There was a certain amount of pressure put on Harry by the institution to please the press in that situation," a source said. "It wasn't his choice to carry out interviews, but he was told it was the right thing to do." Thanks to those interviews, the world discovered that Harry personally killed several Taliban fighters, a revelation that made the front pages of every newspaper at the time. This moment of patriotic (even jingoistic) fervor saw the prince declared a national hero—and the royal family a pronounced symbol of wartime national pride. It also demonstrated just how entwined royalism and nationalism actually are.

The Firm has seized almost every opportunity to demonstrate the monarchy's value, and they have had quite a good run of moments in recent years. From the Queen's Golden Jubilee in 2002 until the Queen's death in

the fall of 2022, the monarchy had many major events to showcase their wares. For all these banner occasions, they spared no expense and played all the hits: street parties, extended holiday weekends, fireworks displays, splashy television specials, and concerts at the palaces.

While the family maintained a unified front (publicly, at least), and with the Queen still on the throne, this reliance on grandstanding kept the monarchy in the papers and front of mind, even if their patriotic swagger and homages to Merry England started to grow increasingly wearisome and transparent. As the Queen aged out of the spotlight and family infighting took its place, their lucky streak came to a discombobulating end. We are entering a potentially uneventful era like the one that endured after Diana's death until the wedding of the Cambriges fourteen years later. Another long winter is coming for the royal family, and it couldn't be at a worse time.

The reality is, King Charles III and his relatively short reign will never reach the national treasure status that his mother achieved, even with Union Jacks fluttering behind him. Aides on his current team say they are "fully aware" of the difference in popularity he holds. "No one is under any illusion that he has the same pulling power," a royal source confided. For Charles, he understands that his primary role is to secure the sail until the next in line can steer the ship into new winds. The institution, royalists, government officials, and media devotees (aka the establishment) are riding out the Charles and Camilla years with the hopes that William and Kate and their three children, particularly Prince George, will have what it takes to make the royals great again.

Just maintaining, however, is proving difficult work, considering the King is facing increasing opposition to his reign and—it must be said—his personality. The protest eggs hurled at Charles in Yorkshire represent more a precursor than an anomaly. More flew in the King's direction a month later while he was in Luton, a small town about an hour north of London. And while none of the eggs found their targets, and both King and Queen were unfazed, it's worth recalling because Queen Elizabeth II was never subject to the egg treatment in her home country. In fact, the only time she faced this kind of protest was during a tour of New Zealand in 1986, in opposition to a treaty the British Crown signed with the country's native Māori in 1840. "New Zealand has long been renowned for its dairy

produce,” she quipped at the time. “Though I should say that I myself prefer my New Zealand eggs for breakfast.”

As proven in recent surveys, there is evidence that a growing percentage of the public is losing patience with the family and respect for the monarchy. Many of the nation’s citizens could see themselves in the Queen’s representation of the monarchy, with its cohesion of national enchantments and values. With King Charles, well, not so much. With the country facing economic crises at home and reputational bruising abroad, large sections of the public are increasingly less tolerant of royal extravagance and family dramas. Even finding entertainment for his coronation concert at Windsor Castle proved a challenge for the organizers. The list of acts who declined the invitation to perform was long and included Sir Elton John, Harry Styles, the Spice Girls, Adele, Taylor Swift, and Ed Sheeran. Sources close to Kylie Minogue—a regular at royal events in the past and very much an honorary Brit—said she turned down the opportunity because of the growing republican movement in her home country of Australia. Contrast that with the lineup for the Queen’s Platinum Jubilee: Queen (with Adam Lambert), Alicia Keys, Sir Rod Stewart, Diana Ross, and, more than happy to clear his schedule for Her Majesty, even Sir Elton.

The coronation refusals may seem frivolous, and no doubt some were down to logistics, but the shrug-offs also suggest something deeper at work. Charles just doesn’t have the requisite gravitas, which is understandable, given he’s spent a majority of his life in the wake of the grand-class cruise ship of his mother’s reputation. In fact, positive opinion of the royal family in the United Kingdom dropped from 68 percent to 54 percent within four months of the Queen’s death. In our era of celebrity obsession and pop culture icons, if Elton and Harry Styles can’t be bothered, why should we be?

Speaking of Styles, there’s also the institution’s struggle to connect with or appeal to younger generations, particularly Zillennials, Gen Z, and the ones to follow. During their time as working royals, Harry and Meghan, as individuals and as a couple, put a new coat of paint on the House of Windsor and let some fresh air into the Palace. The couple’s generational awareness and interest in progressive social causes fostered a connection between the family and young people of all backgrounds. Three years after the Sussexes’ great escape, however, this connection is lost. As older



millennials in their early forties, William and Kate should still have some vitality to offer, but many of their overtures—such as their rather stiff guest appearances for BBC Radio 1 and its fifteen-to-twenty-nine-year-old audience—may start to come off as slightly contrived. An attempt to connect with a similar audience through a YouTube channel managed a brief buzzy moment in 2021 (racking up over 600,000 subscribers), but most videos posted these days barely reach 25,000 views.

\* \* \*

If recent cultural disruptions prove anything, it's that progressive millennials and Gen Zers are determined to remain awake to and aware of the world that lies beyond the borders prescribed to them. Pining for a glorious yesteryear and leaning on a love of country that is *partially* defined by long-ago wars and atavistic pride doesn't exactly jibe with the modern worldview. Ready to press reset and usher in a new age of well-informed inclusion, the up-and-coming generations are prepared to jettison the old national emblems in favor of creating a few of their own. When they celebrate their country, they're doing so for a new Britain they see emerging—one of openness, representation, understanding, and cultural fusion. In this light, the traditional royal family seems decidedly off-brand and the institution a dusty relic. British journalist and social commentator Afua Hagan says, "To many young people who hope to see Britain become a more diverse, equal, and tolerant society, the royal family—or more importantly what they represent—are not part of the picture. They are interested in true modernization rather than trying to force something from the past that is struggling to keep up in a space that has changed dramatically."

As much as the monarchy might like to shoehorn itself into this powerfully reconfigured national identity, it is increasingly unlikely to fully realize this. With the late Queen as the center of attention, it was a less challenging task. Her totemic power meant that a timely public address, staged photo op, or celebration could instantly bring the monarchy back into sharp relief.

Minus the late Queen, those showpiece events are already starting to feel somewhat *énervant* and over-rehearsed. Instead of starting on a new royal chapter, King Charles has simply become the causeway to get to one,

and to many, he is exhibiting what Nairn called “a willful failure to quit a darkening stage.” And William and Kate, who within the institution are considered the true future of the Firm, have thus far shown they, too, haven’t yet figured out how to project new purpose. They may strive to couple some of the old greatness with a fresher perspective, but it’s not going to be easy—the support structure below them is crumbling. Still, this won’t stop the next King and Queen from carefully choosing their moments to try to re-enchant the public. And to do so they will assuredly continue to play all the dusty hits. They’re the only tunes they know.

# 5

## Baggage

The Lingering Trials of King Charles

*At the age of eleven or thereabouts women acquire a poise and an ability to handle difficult situations which a man, if he is lucky, manages to achieve somewhere in the later seventies.*

—P. G. Wodehouse, *Uneasy Money*

*There's a lot of baggage that comes along with our family, but it's, like, Louis Vuitton baggage.*

—Kim Kardashian, *Keeping Up with the Kardashians*

There came a time when even Queen Elizabeth II reluctantly admitted she was slowing down. She was undeniably committed to the job until the end, but at ninety-five years old, Her Majesty didn't have the energy or health for every royal event and engagement. If it were solely up to her, she would have kept at it, but much to her chagrin, those around her—including private secretary Edward Young and right-hand woman and dresser Angela Kelly—wouldn't stop reminding her to take it slower. As a matter of practice, understudies Prince Charles, Prince William, and Princess Anne were already enlisted to fill in for her at investitures, events that required standing for long periods of time. After splitting up most of her travel appointments among senior royals starting in 2015 (after completing a final state visit to Germany), with Charles stepping in to lay the wreaths every Remembrance Sunday since 2017, it was pretty rare to see her away from Balmoral, Windsor Castle, or Buckingham Palace for more than a few hours. But it wasn't until spring 2021, toward the end of the pandemic, that the monarch quietly took another step toward relinquishing greater duties

by installing Andrew Parker, Baron Parker of Minsmere, as the new Lord Chamberlain, the senior officer of the royal household.

Like the Lord Chamberlain who came before him, Parker oversees the departments and staff that support the royal family and serves as a liaison between the House of Lords and the sovereign. A former British intelligence officer who had headed up the storied MI5 counterintelligence and security agency since 2013, Parker—a bespectacled, salt-and-pepper-haired gent whom one aide likened to a “friendly giant” due to his towering frame when standing next to the petite monarch—was a strategic choice. The Queen, whose health was worsening by the month, was nearing the end of her reign, and a slow transition into King Charles’s era was underway. A time of change like this required caution, diplomacy, determination, and sensitivity—essential qualities for a MI5 chief.

These are also qualities that Charles hadn’t demonstrated enough of over the years. Indecisive, temperamental, and often in the middle of sticky situations, Charles hadn’t exactly proven himself a port in the storm. In an early 2021 conversation with a senior family member, the Queen confessed that Parker would not only become the new Lord Chamberlain of the household but also, unofficially, and in her words, “my new CEO” of the Firm. A source added that “there was a slight lack of faith in her son . . . She needed someone who could be trusted to be her eyes and ears.”

The presence of a strong, commanding figure as the Lord Chamberlain is not without historical precedent. After the dingy 1970s, when the embattled monarchy’s popularity was at a low point, the Firm brought on David Ogilvy, the 13th Earl of Airlie, as Lord Chamberlain in 1983. A banker and businessman, Ogilvy delivered a bottom-line perspective and business acumen to the monarchy’s vision for subtle reinventions. It wasn’t exactly “out with the old and in with the new,” but more akin to “slow and steady wins the race.” Ogilvy and Palace officials transformed the Lord Chamberlain role from a predominantly ceremonial position into an active, participatory job. With the Queen at the helm as CEO, Ogilvy filled in as chairman of the board. He served as Lord Chamberlain until 1997, a guiding force through testing times. He was there for the Queen’s notorious annus horribilis in 1992. The Queen was already comfortable with outsiders and change-makers, and this time she was even ready to quietly hand over some of the reins. The previous Lord Chamberlain, Earl William Peel, had been in the position since 2006, and while trusted and respected by the

monarch, his close friendship with Charles, at times, saw him caught in the middle of the two. This time, however, the Queen and her team worked directly with Parker behind the scenes to create a strategy for the future and a vision for the monarchy beyond her life. She called on Charles for some of the more public-facing duties that she was ready to step aside from.

It was a long time coming, but on May 10, 2022, the then Prince of Wales—the oldest heir to the throne in nearly three hundred years—finally had his big moment when Palace and government officials invoked the Regency Act of 1937—Section 6, to be specific. It states, “In the event of illness not amounting to such infirmity of mind or body . . . the Sovereign may, in order to prevent delay or difficulty in the dispatch of public business, by Letters Patent delegate, for the period of that illness or absence, to Counsellors of State such of the royal functions as may be specified in the Letters Patent.” In this case, that meant Charles would step in to perform the ceremonial duty of reciting the “Gracious Speech” at the opening of the new parliamentary session. It wasn’t until the day before that Buckingham Palace announced that the Queen would “reluctantly” miss the event due to “episodic mobility issues”—a well-meaning euphemism for “too old for all that walking” and a convenient way to avoid going into detail about the greater health problems she was privately dealing with. In her seventy-year reign, she missed only two other state openings—those in 1959 and 1963, the years she was pregnant with her spares, Andrew and Edward, respectively. On those occasions, the serving Lord Chancellors read her speech and five Lord Commissioners helped open Parliament, but this time it was Charles’s turn. A man who’s craved validation and admiration from his family, the royal institution, and the British establishment for decades, the Prince of Wales finally got his solo turn in the spotlight.

Well, sort of. As it turned out, it was more a moment to showcase the monarchy as a powerful, lineal institution, not Charles as an individual or a king in waiting. Charles read the Queen’s speech, but not from her seat. Her Sovereign’s Throne was removed and replaced with the consort’s throne, the ornate chair the late Prince Philip used for occasions (which the Queen first fought to include in 1967). The Queen wasn’t physically there, but her presence was felt. Taking pride of place on the dais, Her Majesty’s Imperial State Crown rested comfortably on a crimson and gold velvet pillow exactly

where her gilt-wood, crystal-inlaid throne would normally command the room's attention.

Also present on the red and gold carpeted rostrum was Prince William, next in line to his father, who looked on from a "chair of state," strategically placed a few inches down from his father and the glittering crown. In the Queen's absence, two counsellors of state\* must be present to officiate. The Palace wanted the world to see this as a joint duty. With the two side by side, the vision for the era of transition was in full view. Camilla, soon to become Queen Consort to Charles, was seated nearby on a lower platform. Raffia-hatted, stately in navy, and laden with pearls, she rounded out a portrait of what the family would look like post-Queen Elizabeth II.

Even with a lifetime of training for this ritualistic occasion, Charles looked a little awkward in his down-size throne without his mother by his side. Decked out in his Admiral of the Fleet Royal Navy uniform, complete with medals and gold aiguillettes, the prince appeared deep in thought as he took his seat. He faithfully read a letter penned by the now-disgraced Prime Minister Boris Johnson, which outlined "Her Majesty's Government's" priorities. Charles delivered the pro forma speech without a hitch. He even looked commanding at times, as commanding as one can look while compliantly seated next to the boss's crown on a cushion.

As an anachronistic exercise in mise-en-scène pomp, the state opening was a success. Despite some ginned-up fanfare around the event and media fixation on a "Queen's speech without the Queen," the ceremony proceeded as normal and as expected, which is exactly what the institution and the establishment wanted from Charles. When Charles exited the House of Lords Chambers, a room so full of red—from carpet to benches, cushions to robes—one could mistake it for a set in Kubrick's *Eyes Wide Shut*, the soon-to-be King appeared ready for duty.

The preparation the day before the event tells a different story. To say he was calm, an insider later shared, "would be a lie." Sources in Charles's camp later revealed that chaos reigned during the planning stages. Boris Johnson didn't send over the speech until the very last minute, so an irritated Charles wasn't given ample time to practice reading it. ("Johnson has done everything he can to become the most unpopular prime minister the Windsors have ever known," an aide said with a laugh.)

Still, for all the stress, the Firm could count the day as a win. This small victory rolled right into the national holiday hullabaloo and outdoor

drinking sessions that accompanied the Queen's Platinum Jubilee. The recently besieged family business took a breath and enjoyed some time in the sun, free of its demons and setbacks. It was short-lived. Just three weeks after the Jubilee, *The Times of London* broke a story about Prince Charles accepting "bags of cash" equaling three million euros from former Qatar prime minister Sheikh Hamad bin Jassim bin Jaber Al Thani between 2011 and 2015. Known as "HBJ" in London's financial circles, the sheikh—a member of Qatar's ruling Al Thani family and chairman of Qatar Islamic Bank—is one of the richest men in the world. To some, he is also "the man who bought up London" thanks to his leadership of the sovereign wealth fund that invested billions into the likes of Harrods, London's Olympic Village, the London Stock Exchange, the iconic Shard building, and Canary Wharf. The optics weren't good, and news replaced the actual image of Charles reading the Queen's speech under the canopy of state with an imagined one where he's reaching out a greedy hand to take plastic sacks (from luxury grocer Fortnum & Mason, of all places) and leather duffels of crisp €50 bills.

The Palace immediately went into their version of damage control. The usual rationalizations and justifications followed as they released a statement to clarify that the money was deposited directly into the accounts for the Prince of Wales's Charitable Fund (PWCF). Clarence House also stressed that it wasn't Charles who physically accepted the bags of money, but an aide who then passed them straight on to the appropriate persons at the nonprofit. Even if this is the case, and there is no suggestion that Charles and the charity behaved improperly in any way, it was perceived to be a wildly irresponsible move for the future King to be casually accepting bundles of cash during a meeting with an official representing a country with an alarming record on human rights. Unconstitutional? Maybe not. Reckless? Most definitely. While Charles can point to documents as evidence that he followed protocol (guidelines state that members of the royal family are allowed to accept a check as a patron of, or on behalf of, a charity with which they are associated), the whole affair raised serious concerns about his judgment and motivations. To banish the story from the news, the Palace offered a half-baked apology, claiming Charles "will not accept bags of cash again," as if he were a child who had just been punished for breaking the rules.

To make matters worse, a month later, on July 30, *The Sunday Times*' Whitehall editor Gabriel Pogrund broke another story about Charles accepting cash. This time the transaction involved members of the forever tarnished Bin Laden family. Charles accepted one million pounds from two half brothers of Osama Bin Laden, Bakir and Shafiq (who had no connection or involvement with terrorism or other illegal activities), after an October 30, 2013, in-person meeting at Clarence House. The private appointment, sources later shared, was only for the purpose of making a donation. "Before the meeting took place, it was made clear that [Bakir and Shafiq] wanted to contribute," one revealed. "Despite the fact aides had told the Prince of Wales it would not be wise, given the family links, he chose to proceed regardless." Again, the Palace set the record straight posthaste, stating there wasn't anything ethically or legally wrong with doing business with Bin Laden family members who were not connected to any terrorist activity. A spokesperson from PWCF went as far as to tell BBC News that "the sins of the father" (in this case, Osama Bin Laden) shouldn't preclude other Bin Ladens from making donations.

The communications foot soldiers at Clarence House quickly put forward Sir Ian Cheshire, PWCF's chairperson, to take the heat off the royal household—highlighting the differences between Prince Charles's obligations and those delegated to the trustees. Cheshire issued a calibrated statement that removed Charles from the equation. At the time he emailed myself and other reporters that the donation was "carefully considered" with "due diligence," and "the decision to accept the donation was taken wholly by the trustees." It doesn't matter that Charles had nothing to do with brokering this donation; the whole sorry episode placed the heir back in the hot seat. To everyone but Charles—and some of those in his orbit of entitlement—it seems obvious that accepting cash from a family tainted by the terrorism of one of its members is not necessarily a smart move. And it begged the questions to even the most ardent of royalists: What the hell was he thinking? Where was his judgment? In only a matter of two months, Charles went from the positive spotlight of opening Parliament to the glaring light of the public's interrogation room.

The imprudence aside, the revelations about his financial affairs couldn't have come at a worse time. Charles's royal household was waist-deep in a cash-for-honors scandal that once again involved the community-focused Prince's Foundation. At the center of this controversy were Dr.



Mahfouz Marei Mubarak bin Mahfouz, a wealthy Saudi tycoon whom Prince Charles awarded a CBE (commander of the Most Excellent Order of the British Empire) at an unusually private Buckingham Palace investiture in August 2016, and Michael Fawcett, a former assistant valet to Charles who rose through the ranks to become the prince's senior valet. Curiously, the meeting was never declared on official records.

A leaked letter showed Fawcett offering to support Mahfouz in securing a knighthood and in his application for British citizenship, the infamous “golden visa,” in exchange for a sizable donation (reportedly £370,000 to help replace ninety-three windows at the Castle of Mey, the Queen Mother's former retreat on the north coast of Scotland now managed by the foundation). *The Times* broke the story in September 2021, which resulted in a press shitstorm and a bona fide criminal investigation. Under intense scrutiny, Clarence House press secretaries fended off speculation, stating that the “Prince of Wales had no knowledge of the alleged offer of honors on the basis of donation to his charities.” The blame fell on Fawcett, who resigned in disgrace shortly after.

This wasn't Fawcett's first rodeo. A ruddy-faced sixty-year-old man who squeezed into expensive suits, Fawcett spent nearly four decades rarely less than a few steps away from Charles. As a long-standing fixture in the prince's court, many believe he knows “where all the bodies are buried” and can point you to the skeletons in the closet. Choose your metaphor, but it is well-known and well-established that Fawcett was Charles's right-hand man, confidante, and fixer. His résumé is a testament to his loyalty and dedication to serving the Firm, and it reads a bit like a “made man” whose years of fealty finally earned him the title of consigliere.

In 1981, at the young age of nineteen, Fawcett joined the ranks as a footman to Queen Elizabeth II. After moving up to serve Her Majesty as first sergeant footman, Fawcett moved over to Clarence House, where staff inside Charles's camp claim he bullied his way into the position of assistant valet to the prince. After that, Fawcett became indispensable to Charles. He held this loyal insider position in some form or another—senior valet, freelance consultant, personal assistant, CEO of the charitable fund—for nearly forty years. His duties ran the full gamut, from laying out Charles's bespoke clothes for the day and managing the prince's social schedule to event planning and heading up fundraising efforts. Despite internal inquiries and controversy around his alleged bullying and racist remarks toward

another staff member in the 1990s, which forced a brief departure from his post (until an employment tribunal ruled that the Highgrove Estate was not guilty of racial discrimination), Fawcett and Charles were basically inseparable. Dickie Arbiter, former royal press secretary to the Queen for twelve years, revealed, “Fawcett has been there for so many years, so close in times of stress, knowing all the ins and outs and all the warts.” Several sources have confirmed that at one point, when Charles needed to produce a urine sample after breaking his arm in a polo accident, Fawcett traveled with him to the hospital and held the specimen cup. At some point during their long association, Charles reportedly remarked, “I can manage without just about anyone, except for Michael.”

In 2003, however, Prince Charles had to start learning how to do just that, at least on paper. Allegations surfaced that Fawcett, with Charles’s blessing, sold unwanted gifts from foreign dignitaries and was allowed to keep a cut of the proceeds. Those in royal inner circles knew about Fawcett’s practices—his nickname in the Firm at the time was “Fawcett the Fence”—but kept quiet. An inquiry found Fawcett innocent of any criminal offense, but the incident left a shadow over them. Employing an aide who was barely operating within the law proved too much for Palace officials, so the institution applied the requisite pressure. Against Charles’s wishes—it was even reported that he broke down in tears over his adjutant’s imminent departure—Fawcett soon resigned as the prince’s personal assistant.

Officially, Fawcett was no longer on the Palace payroll, but in a matter of weeks, he set up a new management company, Premier Mode, and Charles hired him as a freelance consultant. The institution might have wiped their hands of Fawcett, but Charles was far from doing the same. The prince not only brought his faithful servant back into the fold as a hired gun, primarily as a “party planner,” but in 2018 turned Fawcett the Fence into a chief executive. As head of the Prince’s Foundation, he oversaw the entire operation, personally leading many fundraising campaigns that brought in parcels of money (excuse the pun) for the foundation’s many initiatives, including renovating the Dumfries House Estate and offering education and training programs in construction and traditional crafts.

Fawcett was indispensable once again, until the leaked letter in 2021 that prompted the investigation into the alleged cash-for-honors deal with Mahfouz, the Saudi billionaire. After this debacle, the heir’s loyal aide-de-camp resigned as the Prince’s Foundation CEO, and a Clarence House

spokesman, as if on cue, trotted out a statement that read: “Michael Fawcett and [his company] Premier Mode will not be providing services to us in the future. We have all agreed to end this arrangement.” The criminal probe dragged on at a snail’s pace, with authorities confirming they had interviewed two men (one in his fifties, the other in his forties) under caution in September 2022 before proceedings went silent until the following year. Though there were suspicions that the case might conveniently disappear after Charles became king, the Metropolitan Police’s Special Enquiry Team went on to speak with a number of witnesses (though nobody from Buckingham Palace), obtained court production orders, and reviewed over two hundred documents. Among those was the 2016 letter from Fawcett, where he admitted that he was “willing and happy” to make an application to change Mahfouz’s honorary CBE into a knighthood because of his “generosity.” Still, a conclusion was announced in August 2023: no further action would be taken over the alleged “honors for sale” incident. As for Mahfouz, he is now a British aristocrat known as His Excellency Dr. Mahfouz Marei Mubarak bin Mahfouz, CBE, GCMLJ, FRSA, Baron of Abernethy.

After the Metropolitan Police launched the investigation into “honors for sale” offenses in February 2022, Charles faced questions about one of his other projects just five months later. A charity watchdog announced it was looking into the purchase of properties made by a company connected to a Prince’s Foundation trustee on land controlled by a subsidiary of the Prince’s Foundation. Between 2012 and 2017, the Havisham Group—partly owned by Lord David Brownlow, one of Britain’s richest men—spent £1.7 million on eleven houses at Charles’s sustainable village of Knockroon. Though Brownlow was on the board of the Prince’s Foundation between 2013 and 2017, it was alleged by *The Sunday Times* that the Foundation had failed to declare information about related-party transactions, despite it being a standard measure required by charity regulators. The Office of the Scottish Charity Regulator confirmed in a statement that “the work of Havisham Group and property transactions relating to [Knockroon] forms part of our overall investigation, work on which is ongoing.” Brownlow left his role at the charity in 2018 and was subsequently awarded a Commander of the Victorian Order (CVO), according to a Prince’s Foundation spokesperson, “in recognition of his role of chair of the charity the Prince’s Foundation for Building Community.”

A sequel to his Poundbury, England, green community, but this time in the craggy hills of Scotland's historic Ayrshire county, Knockroon was a disaster from start to finish. Charles acquired the land in 2007 after purchasing Dumfries House, a Palladian country home located in the town of Cumnock, which is managed by the Prince's Foundation. But what he had hoped would become a 770-home "heritage-led regeneration" of the area worth £15 million ended up with a final declared value of only £700,000.

Glasgow-based professor Alan Dunlop, a fellow of Scotland's Royal Incorporation of Architects and Royal Society of Arts, had warned that the project had limited appeal and impossible ambitions. "Ersatz Georgian and mock Scottish vernacular creations . . . and imported pastiche from past centuries" would not fly in the working-class area, he said. "I couldn't see how it could stack up from the start, from a development point of view. No one could understand how you could possibly make it work." Even with the help of the Havisham Group, only thirty-one homes were built over ten years.

To senior aides around the late Queen (and, per rumor, Her Majesty herself), this series of headline-grabbing stories about Charles's financial improprieties were another set of strikes against his name. Ambitious (and, as many would argue, unnecessary) endeavors such as Knockroon, and the predicaments they often led to, are exactly why some of the aides and insiders I spoke to for this book aren't convinced Charles will make a reliable or trustworthy King. "It's the same pattern over and over," bemoaned a senior Buckingham Palace courtier in the summer of 2022. "He starts off with his heart in the right place but makes rash, poorly thought-out decisions to make them [his ideas] happen."

The farmland on which Knockroon was supposed to find its success was part of a larger deal the Prince of Wales made in 2007 when he bought Dumfries House after falling in love with it. Owned by former F1 driver John Crichton-Stuart, the 7th Marquess of Bute, Charles *needed* the countryside home (complete with its original eighteenth-century paintings, artifacts, and Thomas Chippendale furniture) and its two thousand acres of land the moment he laid eyes on it. It was the perfect spot for him to plant a flag and make a statement—a new HQ for HRH Prince Charles, the Duke of Rothesay, the peerage title he uses while in Scotland. The only problem was this grand old manor was valued at an eye-watering £43 million. "I

remember trying for years before it actually came up for sale, I tried to find a way to help sort it out or find somebody who might help, a sponsor, a donor or somebody,” Charles told BBC’s *Hidden Heritage* in 2011. On a mission, the heir managed to raise almost half its value and, while some of his aides implored him not to do it, he took out a £20 million loan through his charitable foundation (he later admitted to his staff that this was a debt that kept him “awake at night”). Originally the bank had offered only half the sum but then doubled it after security for the loan was attached to blueprints for developing Knockroon on the land surrounding the house. News of the extortionate purchase raised the Queen’s eyebrows “into orbit,” joked one Palace insider. And with good reason. The last Prince of Wales with such a penchant for luxe property (George IV in the eighteenth century) nearly bankrupted the royal family.

Still, sleepless nights or not, Charles was confident he had made the right decision. “His Royal Highness was determined this wonderful asset should not be lost for future generations,” a Clarence House spokesman said in an attempt to convince the public of their boss’s vanity purchase. Since then, Dumfries House has become the base for Charles’s Prince’s Foundation and remains one of his passion projects. I remember asking him about it in 2014 and watching his eyes light up as he revealed how much local schoolchildren love to visit the newly renovated farm and stables there. “Some of his charities, such as the Prince’s Trust, are clearly doing amazing things,” said Gabriel Pogrund, who led the string of scoops on Charles’s financial messes. “But [Prince Charles should] ask the question, does he need all that money and to do all these things? Does he need to be raising millions of pounds for Dumfries House? He needs to rethink what he spends his money on. The role of his charitable work should be reassessed.”

At a time when Prince Charles should have been making news as an heir to the throne who was ready to assume his future role, he was, instead, in the spotlight for questionable judgment. It was an unfortunate reminder that the King who replaced the untouchable Queen is an error-prone man dragging some heavy baggage as he attempts to fill his mother’s shoes.

As much as Charles would like to move past all of this, these issues aren’t going away. First, there’s the question of Fawcett. He’s no longer working for the King, but the two remain in regular contact. Palace sources have expressed concern that he may have his eyes on a return to the King’s

fold. And there's also the question of who was leaking information about Charles's financial affairs in the first place.

While I was writing this book, a rumor circulated in royal circles that some of these leaks might have come from a party deep inside the establishment who wanted to give Charles a knock before he officially took the throne. Though such rumors are verging on conspiracy theory, the timing makes sense. On June 11, 2022, news outlets revealed that Charles had privately criticized the British government over their plan to deport Rwandan asylum seekers back to their home country. A source (in this case, one of his senior staff) was given permission by Charles to brief *The Times* and the *Daily Mail* that the future King "was more than disappointed at the policy" and "thinks the government's whole approach is appalling."

For a royal, particularly the incoming King, to comment on government policy or function is strictly verboten (even if his empathetic view on the matter was particularly refreshing to hear from a senior royal). Keeping quiet means rising above, and, in a strange twist that only the British monarchy can produce, rising above provides a clear path to maintaining power. Only weeks after opening Parliament in the Queen's stead, Charles opened his mouth on a political matter when he shouldn't have. Sources say he wanted his views on the controversial asylum policy to be heard ahead of the Commonwealth Heads of Government Meeting in Rwanda, where he would represent his mother, later that month.

Charles brings to the throne his deeply held, often vocalized opinions and a lifetime of experience operating outside the rules—written or otherwise—that dictate the life and work of the sovereign. As a successful entrepreneur, philanthropist, and eco warrior, Charles had to play politics, and voicing enthusiastic opinions and generating new ideas that sometimes challenged the status quo were all part of this self-appointed position. The intentions were good, but for someone who should be observing the constitutional rule of not having an opinion on pretty much anything, he should have never entered the conversation in the first place.

His ambitions and dogged persistence have led to some overreach and meddling. During his time as prime minister, Tony Blair complained to the Palace about Charles's interference on several New Labour issues, including the 2001 invasion of Afghanistan led by the United States and the United Kingdom (the prince famously asked to "halt" the invasion to honor Ramadan, claiming, "But Americans can do anything!"). In 2004, he

famously wrote to then environment minister Elliot Morley that protecting Patagonian toothfish must become a “priority” so that endangered albatross could feast on them for survival. In her biography *Prince Charles: The Passions and Paradoxes of an Improbable Life*, Sally Bedell Smith recounts how, at the height of her austere measures in 1985, Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher sternly reminded the prince *she* was in charge after he complained that because of her Tory policies, he would “inherit the throne of a divided Britain” (like Prince William today, Charles was conjuring up his reign long before it was even close to his turn). The Iron Lady’s riposte? “I run this country, not you, sir.”

Charles’s exhaustive history of interfering in political processes and lobbying was laid bare in May 2015 when his “Black Spider memos” (a reference to his spiderlike penmanship) were released to the world following a ten-year freedom of information battle by the *Guardian*. From his calls for homeopathic treatments to be made available via Britain’s National Health Service and a 2004 missive calling for Blair to cull badgers to help the country’s “lack of self-sufficiency” in producing meat and vegetables, to lobbying for the replacement of Lynx military helicopters (because U.K. troops lacked “necessary resources” in the Iraq War, he claimed), Charles has had an opinion on *everything*.

His busybody campaigning tapered off in his final years as the Prince of Wales, but those who pull the levers will not hesitate to remind Charles, overtly or perhaps in underhanded ways like leaks to the press, that he is far from welcome in the government’s legislative process or the establishment’s power-brokering. In other words, as King, there’s no seat for him at the table in the back room. And when he made those comments about Rwanda, there would have been plenty of figures within the political landscape eager to remind him to keep his apolitical beak out of their business—through whatever means necessary. Charles knows the rules but often still appears divided between what he can and cannot say.

Conspiracies over damaging leaks also extended to his own personal bubble. When some details of private written correspondence between Charles and daughter-in-law Meghan appeared in the *Telegraph* on April 21, 2023, there were worries that the tip-off had come from within. Though fingers of blame are often pointed in the Sussex direction, this was an exchange that *both* parties wanted to keep confidential—letters addressing Meghan’s concerns about unconscious racial bias in the royal family in the

wake of the Oprah interview. The newspaper's vague reporting, mostly centered on the existence of the written communication, made no mention of the damning details within them, but, said a Palace insider, "there was certainly discussion amongst [the team] that it could be a warning shot from someone . . . something to shake the King up ahead of the coronation." Though they were personal messages, some Palace aides—one of whom later left on less than amicable terms—also caught sight of the letters as they were sent and received.

Charles had initially reached out to his daughter-in-law in spring 2021 to express his sadness over the huge distance between the two parties and his disappointment that the couple chose to go so public with their words. But what had upset him the most was Meghan's disclosure that "several conversations" were had in the family, away from herself and Harry, that featured "concerns" over what color their unborn son Archie's skin might be and "what that would mean or look like [for the Firm]." When speaking with Oprah, both Harry and Meghan chose to refrain from sharing who was involved in this exchange. (A representative for the couple would only go on to clarify that it was not the Queen nor Prince Philip.) "I think that would be very damaging to them," Meghan said. But in the pages of these private letters, two identities were revealed. Laws in the United Kingdom prevent me from reporting who they were.

The King, said sources, wanted his response to make clear to Meghan that he felt there was no ill will or casual prejudice present when the two people had spoken about his future grandson. "He wanted to clear up something he felt strongly about," said a royal insider. For Meghan—who had never used the words *racist* or *racism* in her descriptions of this event or in the letters—her bigger concern was, added the insider, "the way in which these conversations were had . . . Their tone . . . revealed lingering unconscious bias and ignorance within the family that needed to be addressed." The letters, described a second source, were "a respectful back and forth" but "serious." They added, "I don't know if either saw completely eye to eye in the end, but there was at least a feeling that both had been heard." Since then, said a source close to the two families, the pair have had pleasant, if occasional, exchanges. "There are no hard feelings about this specific incident, but there is distance, and everything else remains unaddressed," said the source. For the Sussexes' part, though communication with Charles—who declined an invite to granddaughter



Lilibet's March 3, 2023, christening in California due to scheduling conflicts—is infrequent, they “still keep him in the loop on their family life, sending new photos of the children.”

\* \* \*

Charles's divided nature sits at the heart of his many family issues. As a child, he was considered a sensitive soul—a quiet boy who preferred books and art to sports and pranks. The age-old story applies here: because of his sensitivity and dreamy nature, Charles was bullied and teased at the strict and demanding Gordonstoun school in Scotland, where he boarded for five years. As a young man, he emerged from his cocoon a bit of a playboy. He took to the finer things in life, happily accepting the boons that his privileged position afforded him. He cut a figure on the social scene, wearing only the finest clothes—Turnbull & Asser shirts, bespoke Savile Row suits, and Anderson & Sheppard tweed. Not an athlete by any stretch, Charles, in an effort to complete his courtly image, stepped out of his comfort zone and took to the polo fields. It is here where Charles met the love of his life, Camilla Shand.

Enter sixteen-year-old Diana Spencer. A darling of the aristocracy who intrigued anyone who caught a glimpse of her, the on-paper version of Diana was perfect for Charles, who was twenty-eight at the time. The institution got one look at her and quickly decided they could easily transform her into what Dame Hilary Mantel later called a “royal body . . . carriers of a blood line.” The monarchical machine rejected Camilla and slotted Diana into the system to produce a proper princess for their narrative and approved her as the next delivery mechanism for the royal genes.

This sent Charles into decades of internal conflict between matters of the heart and the demands of duty. His heart wanted Camilla, but the heir's role demanded Diana. The young prince decided to have both. Sometime after saying his “I dos” to Diana at St. Paul's Cathedral in 1981, Charles initiated a decades-long affair with the woman the institution dismissed. The affair became the Firm's worst-kept secret and everyone knew it was wrong. Charles and Diana's tortured marriage was front-page fodder, but for all its luridness, it did result in the required heir and spare. Diana's work was done. Those in power wanted her to step in line, tone down the

glamour, and get out of the spotlight. A devoted mother and the “queen of people’s hearts,” she would go on to do anything but that.

Charles’s reputation never fully recovered. Although he has occasionally made forays into the public’s good graces, recent polls still reveal that large swathes of the public continue to have a negative opinion of him for how he treated his former wife during their union and her short life. It’s why his second marriage to Camilla passed by so quietly. No fanfare, no televised nuptials, just a private 2005 civil ceremony at Windsor Guildhall in the presence of their families. Because of her dedication to her role as the head of the Church of England (which discourages divorce), the Queen felt it was best not to attend the ceremony. Her one bit of advice to her son ahead of the April 9 nuptials was simple: don’t rub it in people’s faces.

The leaks about his finances and ongoing charity scandals only compound the resentment and disapproval expressed by many about his role as King. As for the institution and the establishment, there are some within it who still see him as a waffler and a dilettante. He remains a question mark to the bureaucrats and éminences grises who privately and publicly run Britain’s economic interests and maintain the country’s social order.

Even though the heir played a role in Prince Andrew’s royal demotion, he is torn here, too. Understandably, he cares for his brother, so much so that a close source said that during the most heightened moments of Andrew’s downfall, Charles was tearful over fears for the shamed duke’s mental health. Charles has long advocated for a slimmer monarchy with fewer working royals, but he didn’t imagine it would become a reality as a result of two things beyond his control: his brother’s public humiliation and his son’s exit. What could have been a powerful opening gambit for the new King now simply looks like a resigned defensive move to protect what’s left on the board.

And what’s left on the chessboard, with the exception of the Waleses, isn’t much of a side. The older generation have less energy, but the bigger problem is their removed air of entitlement. At the helm of the crew of working royals—Queen Camilla, Princess Anne, the Duke and Duchess of Edinburgh, the Duke of Kent, the Duke and Duchess of Gloucester, and Princess Alexandra—is the King himself, who as the heir was saddled with the unfortunate sobriquets “Prince of Wails” and “Pampered Prince.” The

latter nickname emerged after staff complained to various journalists about Charles's outrageous service demands and his extravagant lifestyle. The King lives a life of luxury and comfort that is even alien to other members of the royal family—a throwback to monarchs of the past. Those who know him, serve him, and write about him often compare him to Louis XIV, the French monarch who transformed a hunting lodge into one of the most extravagant palaces in the world. Versailles's enduring opulence is testament to the Sun King's commitment to living large. Charles may not own anything to rival Versailles, but Dumfries House (one of six multimillion-pound homes he owns across Britain) is no country cabin.

The details about the cosseted King's habits and way of life suggest a disconnect. Even his late mother, once one of the wealthiest women in the country, repeatedly complained about Charles's extravagantly luxurious lifestyle. We all know he's a man of taste, but some of the particulars leave many gobsmacked. His repair-and-rewear approach to dressing may be the height of eco-friendliness and sustainability, but the multiple changes during the day that four valets prepare for him and help him put on is far from humble. You may have already heard how he likes his soft-boiled eggs *just so* (four minutes—no more, no less, or they'll be sent back to the kitchen in infantile fury), but did you hear about the one-thousand-thread-count bed linen (that *must* be perfectly steamed) he insists on traveling with? There have been reports of temper tantrums at night as well: if the prince's pajamas aren't pressed, sources have claimed, there is hell to pay. Every dandy loves his shoes, and Charles is no different. The King has the same environmentally conscious approach to his footwear as his clothes (never throw them out, always have a cobbler bring them back to life), but his particularness about their shoelaces is a little more unique. When laces get even the smallest bit threadbare, a staff member must quickly switch them out with a fresh, *ironed* pair. There is even a rumor (one that, surprisingly, sources have confirmed) that Charles likes to have someone squeeze exactly one inch of toothpaste onto his toothbrush for him ahead of his bedtime routine. Paging Michael Fawcett! But it doesn't end there. The cherry on top of this ridiculous extravagance: the toothpaste must come from a "crested silver dispenser."

In an attempt to lower the chances of further embarrassing coverage, Charles has laid new groundwork for even friendlier media relationships during his reign. Leading up to his ascension, Charles and Camilla never

stopped ingratiating themselves to media figures and journalists, leaning on aides to leak stories to maintain a positive image in the press. Hiring a former co-deputy editor of the *Daily Mail* (and, before that, the *Mail on Sunday*) to lead the Palace's in-house media team was no coincidence. Tobynd Andreae may have had zero PR experience before taking the job of head of communications, but with twenty-five years working on tabloids, he quickly ensured that the likes of the *Daily Mail* and *The Sunday Times* have had a steady feed of positive stories pumped their way since the beginning of his tenure in July 2022.

Charles has no problem doing the job himself, either. In February 2020, he invited a handful of trusted royal reporters to Dumfries House in Scotland for an overnight stay, a grand dinner, and plenty of schmoozing. With a chance to tour his sprawling estate, Charles hoped the trip would help keep Britain's most influential newspapers onside during the drama surrounding Harry and Meghan's exit from working royal life.

As expensive bottles of Laphroaig whisky (from the only single malt distillery with a Royal Warrant) were poured and laughter echoed down the historic house's Pewter Corridor, Charles winked to one of the media guests and said, "This is all off the record, of course." Knowing full well this is never really the case when dealing with most royal correspondents (there's a pattern of sticking it in one's back pocket and then putting it in a story as a "royal source" after enough time has passed), he went on to pull aside one of the guests to explain his position on the Sussexes, who had moved to North America just a month earlier: "I made sure they were taken care of [when they left] . . . Their stubbornness doesn't make it easy." While this was hardly a bombshell, anecdotes like these are just the kind of nuggets needed to court favor and find their way into positive articles about him.

With a series of strategically placed "off the cuff" remarks during that period of time, Charles and his aides did their bit to help ensure he emerged from the public family drama unscathed. Shortly after the media get-together (and no, I was not invited—at this point the Palace was already getting jitterish about the release of *Finding Freedom*), details about how much money he was giving his younger son and how he had done all he could for the Sussexes made their way into the papers. Mission accomplished.

Charles may be adept at wielding the media to settle his scores, but it's evidence that he's bringing old habits and coarse practices to the top job—a

refined one that the Queen emphatically insisted was to remain untarnished from such scheming. We may have heard snippets about her life from aides and friends over the years, but it was extremely rare to hear her thoughts and feelings via source quotes. (As a friend of the late monarch once told me, “Many of the ‘sources’ you see in the papers claiming to know her innermost thoughts are clearly made up.”) It also demonstrates a recklessness on the King’s part: a logrolling relationship with powerful players in the media is a treacherous one. Depending on prevailing trends, capricious opinions, and, of course, ratings and viewership, the very same media he uses to prop himself up can just as easily bring him down if it guarantees clicks and views.

This points to a single important issue when it comes to King Charles. While it was never controversial to support the Queen, it’s not the same with Charles. After a long life in the public eye, and one made up of some questionable decisions, Charles was never going to have an easy reign. For much of his adult life, he has been at the center of controversies, both fairly and unfairly. The duplexity of the man intrigues and confounds. His messy trials and tribulations are all too human. The new King, who is supposed to stand above to represent the royal family’s solidarity, is in a heartbreaking war with his own son. The reality is that to many who watched as Charles was anointed with holy oil on May 6, 2023, to confirm him as the head of the Church of England, the man in front of the Archbishop of Canterbury was still a philandering husband and an unwise collector of bags of money.

# 6

## The Fall of Prince Andrew

Scandal, Shame, and Silencing Jane Doe

*I admit fully my judgment was probably colored by my tendency to be too honorable, but that's just the way it is.*

—Prince Andrew, 2019, *Newsnight* interview

*I never wonder to see men wicked, but I often wonder to see them not ashamed.*

—Jonathan Swift, *Miscellanies*

*Nervous, frustrated, and like shit* were the terms a former aide used to describe the disgraced Duke of York's state of mind as he made the fifteen-minute car ride from his Royal Lodge home to a meeting with his mother on the frigid morning of January 11, 2022. For Andrew—who appeared gaunt and exhausted in his rumpled suit behind the misty windshield of his Range Rover—the rainy journey to Windsor Castle was another chapter in what can only be described as an unfortunate series of events for the royal. After decades of humiliating headlines and disapproval from Queen Elizabeth II, the sixty-one-year-old was finally facing some consequences for his personal failings, particularly his friendship with Jeffrey Epstein, the wealthy pedophile with powerful cronies whose criminal, contemptible legacy continues to swallow up his victims long after his 2019 suicide in prison.

Andrew's subsequent legal entanglements with Virginia Giuffre, née Roberts, a woman who alleges the duke sexually assaulted her when she was seventeen years old (an allegation that Andrew continues to deny), brought further shame to himself, his family, and the Crown. The court of

public opinion had already chastised him, but the punishment from the House of Windsor had, so far, been light—the Firm simply asked him to step away from his royal duties in November 2019, leaving all his royal perks intact. This time, however, Andrew knew the jig was up. Sternly summoned by the monarch without explanation, Andrew was en route to an “official” meeting where the country’s head of state would finally strip him of his HRH title, his military honors, and (almost) all his official royal roles.

“He knew it was coming,” said a family source. “But given that he also needed to be saved from embarrassment in the courthouse, it was a small price to pay.” Five months earlier, Giuffre had filed a civil lawsuit in New York, claiming that she was forced to have sexual encounters with Andrew when she was a minor. Though his lawyer tried to dismiss the case, it now looked like Andrew was going to offer some kind of financial settlement to avoid appearing in court. With few assets of his own, the prince knew he would soon need his mother’s deep pockets to help bail him out. Her punishment was something he literally couldn’t afford to run away from.

As he pulled up to Windsor Castle, the crunch of the gravel didn’t evoke the usual warmth he felt when arriving to meet his mother. At the appropriate entry point to Her Majesty’s quarters, an awaiting courtier instructed him to enter the building alone. Andrew had brought his longtime and trusted criminal defense lawyer, Gary Bloxsome, in the hopes that he could help negotiate with his family, but the Queen’s aide made it clear that the criminal defense solicitor should wait in the car. Bloxsome’s glass-half-full attitude and tendency to focus only on the best-case scenario always put the prince at ease. He was also one of the last remaining close aides on Andrew’s team. His private secretary Amanda Thirsk had walked out in 2020 (with a handsome payout), less than ten weeks after Andrew’s catastrophic *Newsnight* interview. Now, as he walked toward the Queen’s private apartment, he was forced to face his humbling alone.

For many in the family and institution, this day was too long in the making. Though the Queen was the official face of Andrew’s reckoning, it was Prince William who set the wheels in motion. William was keenly aware that the horrific allegations, the fallout from the embarrassing interview, and now the prospect of an out-of-court settlement involving money from the family’s private wealth were all damaging the monarchy’s reputation. “Someone needed to be the firm hand in that situation, and he felt the family [was] being too soft,” said a source close to the prince. “The

whole thing was casting a long shadow over the entire institution . . . over all of them.” Up to this point, the family hadn’t done much to mitigate the crisis or make any public moves, even after at least fifty other charities and organizations severed their ties with Andrew, including patronages with the likes of the Children’s Foundation, Royal National Institute for the Deaf, Royal Navy, and Royal Marines Children’s Fund.

William’s snapping point came days before military leaders chimed in on the matter via an open letter to the Queen. Signed by 152 veterans of the Royal Navy, Royal Marines, and Army, the missive called on the Queen as the head of the British Armed Forces to remove Andrew’s twelve honorary ranks and titles. They asserted that not only was Andrew’s position “untenable,” but it also brought shame to the services and “were this any other senior military officer, it is inconceivable that he would still be in post.” Considering Andrew is a career naval officer and a Falklands veteran, this was a harsh rebuke from a normally supportive wing of the establishment. The fact that military leadership had joined the already outraged public in questioning the Firm’s lack of action was proof that if William had left his intervention any longer, the ordeal would have spiraled to the point of no return.

In a meeting with his private secretary, Jean-Christophe Gray, or “JC” to colleagues—a by-the-numbers, amiable bureaucrat with an impressive résumé who was known to many insiders as a “bean counter” and fiscal hawk—William made preparations for Andrew’s ouster, taking the initiative when others suffered from inertia. Even though several working members of the family wanted to see Andrew curtailed, neither Charles nor the Queen appeared ready to take him to task themselves. While Charles openly detested Andrew’s indiscretions, he didn’t want to be the one to break his younger brother. “You’d find it hard to believe, but [he] has [lay] awake many nights worrying about him,” a source close to the then Prince of Wales revealed. Charles’s reluctance baffled William, who didn’t have much confidence in his father to do the right thing anyway. A source close to the prince said at the time, “William [doesn’t] think his father is competent enough, quite frankly. Though they share passions and interests, their style of leadership is *completely* different.”

As for the Queen, William admitted to Gray that he understood it ultimately came down to the monarch to drop the gavel on Andrew. But he felt she would remain “soft” on his uncle if he didn’t forcefully express his



concerns to his grandmother. As the Queen's reportedly favorite son, Andrew has historically received a pass from his mother. In 2011, Andrew was pushed out of his U.K. trade envoy position over concerns about his friendship with Epstein. But the Queen wasn't actively involved—it was Lord Christopher Geidt, her then private secretary, who urged action on the matter. The Queen eventually turned to her stalwart husband, Prince Philip, who outsourced the job to Downing Street, who promptly sacked Andrew with no questions asked. “She always believed in his innocence,” a former aide to the Queen said.

Unable or unwilling to admonish her son, the Queen often appeared curiously aloof about the whole affair. Courtiers and royal observers long referred to her spoiling of Andrew as her only notable blind spot. Though her other children may have experienced a stricter side (particularly Anne and Charles), Andrew, said a family friend, “was the one who would make her laugh, keep her company, and, because he was always a little bit lost, she coddled him.” As one former member of staff said to me in early 2022, “If anything, her sense of duty means she sometimes turns a blind eye or buries her head when it comes to bigger family issues. The Duke [of Edinburgh] would be the one to take those matters into his own hands.” Known as the pillar of the family, Prince Philip was the person they most feared. A gruff but committed, decisive consort who spoke his mind, Philip did not suffer fools, even if the fool was part of the fold. According to a former aide, “*Everyone* would listen to him.” His death at ninety-nine on April 9, 2021, prompted the usually Palace-friendly *Times* newspaper to declare, “Without Prince Philip the royal house of cards is falling.”

When it came to private family matters, Prince Philip's steady hand was missed by many in the family. While the Queen demonstrated powers of restraint like no other, it was Philip who didn't hold back when it came to toeing the line—especially with their children. “The Queen was the boss, but *he* was the head of the household,” said author and family friend Gyles Brandreth. He could also be an exceedingly stubborn man. Those who spent considerable time with him in private described him as a far from easy character. *Thank you* was not a phrase that he often uttered (needless praise was irritating), and anyone expecting an apology from the duke is likely to still be waiting for it. But there was also a sensitive side to the man that the family cherished and counted on. Though very reserved (the modern, emotionally in-touch world was too soft for his taste), his resolute actions of

support revealed that he was also thoughtful—in his own particular way, of course. Extracts from letters he wrote to Princess Diana show that he was a caring influence within his family at a time when few were showing any concern for the late princess. He was not a great fan of Camilla at the time and wrote to Diana, “I cannot imagine anyone in their right mind leaving you for Camilla.” There were moments, however, when he got it wrong. During discussions about whether William and Harry should walk behind Diana’s coffin, it was Philip who nudged the young boys into taking on the mammoth task. “I think you should do it,” he reportedly said. “If I walk, will you walk with me?” In 2017, Harry said of the traumatic experience, “I don’t think any child should be asked to do that, under any circumstances.”

Prince William knew that if his grandfather were still around, Andrew wouldn’t have stood a chance. Without Philip there to take charge, it was a different story, so William told Gray he was ready to deal with “the Andrew problem” head-on. He just needed to coax the Queen. In the days leading up to this personal meeting, sources say the “determined” prince was unwavering in his belief that it was time to take out insurance on the Firm’s biggest risk. William arranged an appointment with the Queen via Edward Young, her private secretary. Young, too, was keen for the situation to be resolved quickly and efficiently. So, in early January 2022, William met with his grandmother in her residential quarters at Windsor Castle.

Decorated in her own style with items that reflected her passions, the monarch’s private living room was less of a stateroom and more of a refuge. Any visitor would struggle to miss the airy room’s tall windows or the large, William Morris–style japanned cabinet filled with cherished items, trinkets, and personal photographs. It was the space where William often met his grandmother for tea when she was staying in Windsor, and also a forbidden play spot for him and Harry when they were children. This time, however, it was all business, and the two discussed the Andrew situation for more than an hour, according to sources.

Later that day, the Queen spoke on the phone with Charles, who was in Scotland at the time. The monarch made it clear to her eldest son that it was time to strip his brother of all his titles and duties. A family source described her decision as a “genuinely sad” moment for the monarch and another “gut punch” to the family, particularly coming on the heels of Prince Philip’s death. The Queen was distraught over how the media and the public had so quickly turned against Andrew, but, now aware that more

drastic action needed to be taken, she was decisive. Charles, on the other hand, didn't want any part of it. On the phone call, he agreed with his mother that now was the time to act, but he left the tough work to her and William. Of course, this wasn't the narrative that aides at Clarence House were cooking up for the press. They soon spun the story that Charles and William acted together from the outset. They were, as many reports cited, in "lockstep" with each other concerning the Andrew predicament. When I spoke to a Charles source regarding this, they said the notion that William took charge of the situation was "off the mark" and part of a personal agenda. "William, or his staff, I should say, will always be quick to play up his efforts," they said. "There is an almost frenzied push for William to be seen as ready for the throne, despite an entire generation coming beforehand."

Two days after Andrew's aforementioned fateful meeting with his mother at Windsor Castle, Buckingham Palace issued a statement, confirming that the Duke of York was to lose his military roles and his ability to use the "His Royal Highness" styling before his title, and be stripped of all remaining royal patronages. They would, said the media release, all be "returned" to the Queen. I had follow-up questions for the Palace communications team: Why didn't the Queen take away his Order of the Garter role? And would the British taxpayers continue to cover his security? "Those will have to be directed to his private office," the press secretary responded. "Private office" meaning "he's not one of us anymore." They wanted nothing more to do with him.

It took them long enough. By this point, Andrew's relationship with Jeffrey Epstein had been in the press for more than a decade. "Andrew has never felt the need to explain himself," said a York family acquaintance. "Entitled, spoiled, and immature. No one in his life has ever called him out on anything, including Fergie [the Duchess of York]." Despite divorcing in 1996, Andrew and his ex-wife have been living together since 2006. Though they have never publicly said much about their unique living arrangement, the pair—who multiple sources confirm are not romantically involved—are closer than ever. Living under the same roof is also about convenience, family, and support, said a source. Plus, both have experienced financial issues, so cohabitating at his cavernous Royal Lodge home (on a seventy-five-year lease for just £250 a week) is a cost-effective arrangement. Andrew, said sources, was Sarah's "rock" after her breast

cancer diagnosis and mastectomy in the summer of 2023. Sarah, who now cares for the late Queen's corgis, Muick and Sandy, told *Good Morning Britain* in April 2023, "[Andrew] is a kind, good man, and I think the spotlight needs to come off of him and let him get on with his life to rebuild."

Easier said than done. When Epstein pleaded guilty in June 2008 to procuring a child for prostitution and was sentenced to eighteen months in prison, most of the American financier's horrified friends jumped ship. Andrew, however, stuck around. A former business associate of Epstein's told me that his first arrest was the breaking point for most people who socialized with him: "My wife and I cut things off there and then, almost all of us did . . . Andrew didn't. That was a stupid decision and one, for the life of me, I can't understand. No one can be *that* stupid."

But they were. Despite Andrew's claims that he saw Epstein only once after the horrific conviction (with the "sole purpose" of saying it would be "inappropriate" to be remain friends), court documents reveal that the pair kept in regular touch. In June 2010, while Epstein was still under house arrest—and federal officials had at this point identified thirty-six girls, some as young as fourteen years old, who had been groomed and abused by the businessman—Andrew allegedly visited the criminal's Florida mansion for lunch. Then, six months later, after Epstein's controversial plea deal, Andrew raced to his pal's side, where the pair were photographed deep in conversation in New York's Central Park. On that particular trip, he spent four days at his friend's Upper East Side mansion, the largest in Manhattan. American media called this residence the "house of horrors," where taxidermy animals and sexually explicit artwork adorned the walls (years later police seized drawers filled with CDs containing child porn), but for Andrew this was a home away from home.

On the duke's first night in town, Epstein threw a huge party for his guest of honor, hosting a soiree full of marquee names and celebrities, including director Woody Allen, comedian Chelsea Handler, and news anchors Katie Couric and Charlie Rose. That week, Epstein's former pal and famous literary agent, John Brockman, spotted Andrew receiving foot massages from two young Russian models. In fact, for the entirety of his stay, the entrance to Epstein's Seventy-First Street townhouse was a revolving door of young women. "To Andrew, he never saw Epstein as a bad man . . . The side of him he knew was a kind, intelligent friend and—

just like he ignores tabloid rumors about his own family and friends—he did the same when it came to what people said about [Epstein],” a source close to Andrew told me in late 2021.

These were way more than rumors, but Andrew defended his decision to keep Epstein as a friend during his infamous *Newsnight* interview in 2019. The result was a mess, to say the least. The show was full of difficult-to-watch moments as Andrew evaded and parried from the moment he opened his mouth. There were his laughable excuses: he couldn’t have been at a nightclub with Virginia Giuffre because he was at a Pizza Express an hour outside of London with his daughters earlier that evening; and that it was impossible for him to have “sweat[ed] all over” Giuffre, due to a post-Falklands War medical condition that prevents him from perspiring. And then there was his complete lack of empathy toward Epstein’s victims, evident in his tap-dancing answers to journalist Emily Maitlis’s questions. “A ridiculous, misguided, pathetic attempt at fixing his own damaged public image that absolutely blew up in his face,” a senior Buckingham Palace courtier vented. “He went in completely unprepared and came out even more of a fool.”

Before the public’s allergic reaction to the interview finally registered, Andrew bizarrely thought it was a personal win. “This is how far removed he is from reality,” a source said. “He thought it did him good.” After the interview’s taping, Andrew marveled about how well it went to a flabbergasted set crew. The show’s producer, Sam McAlister, revealed, “He was in an invidious situation of his own making, but . . . he wanted to vindicate himself, like most interviewees. Everybody thinks they are going to give a good interview.”

This lack of awareness and basic common sense is partly why he got sucked into Epstein’s world in the first place. Easily influenced and a total pushover when it came to those with impressive credentials or attractive business propositions, Andrew saw not just a mentor in Epstein—whose estate was valued at approximately \$600 million—but someone who could help him make wealthy friends and influence others. It was a mutually beneficial relationship: while Andrew used Epstein for his financial connections, Epstein leveraged his connection with the prince to enjoy the trappings and clout that supplements a friendship with a senior royal. Andrew regularly invited Epstein to royal residences and events. Pictures of Epstein and his now imprisoned pimp and sidekick, Ghislaine Maxwell, at

one of the Queen's private log cabins during a 1999 Balmoral vacation are proof that he made it as far into the inner sanctum of the royal family as possible. "Within a year [of meeting], Andrew and Epstein had developed their own strong friendship," said a family source. "He always had a peculiar group of friends, so nothing really stood out in the early days . . . What was strange was that no one told him to distance himself when all the news came out about what Epstein had done."

It was during the early part of this alliance when, on a night out in March 2001, a forty-one-year-old Prince Andrew met the seventeen-year-old Virginia Roberts, just one year after she, too, was swept up into Epstein's world. As a runaway teen and child sex abuse victim, Giuffre was already vulnerable by the time Maxwell offered her a job—at just sixteen—to work for Epstein as a traveling masseuse, providing massages and sexual services for the multi-millionaire and his business associates. For two years, it was a life of private jets, manipulation, and, as Giuffre has later described, a devastating time of being passed around Epstein's associates "like a platter of fruit." In 2007, the FBI identified her as one of Epstein's victims and, after six months of hesitation, she agreed to cooperate with their investigation. Two years later she anonymously filed a lawsuit as "Jane Doe 102" against Epstein, and, in 2010, she shared the details about her encounters with both Andrew and Epstein with the public. She then spoke with the *Mail on Sunday* for a piece that also disclosed a photograph of herself and Prince Andrew and Maxwell at Maxwell's house.

By now, you most likely can recall the image from memory—standing at the top of a stairwell, Andrew has his arm wrapped tightly around a young-looking Giuffre as they both smile for the camera with Maxwell grinning in the background. Without the backstory it looks fairly innocent, but with the gaps filled in, it's stomach churning. Those few who remain in Andrew's corner have long denied the picture's credibility (which has only been seen in the press as a photograph of a photograph). In 2019, Andrew instructed trusted aides to tell friendly journalists at the *Telegraph* and *Evening Standard* that some shadowy figure created the image using digital trickery (the girth of his fingers being the dead giveaway, apparently). Even Maxwell, who previously admitted the image taken at her London home was genuine, now says (from her prison cell, where she's serving twenty years for child sex trafficking and other offenses) that it is fake. This is all distraction and fabrication, of course—the FBI had already confirmed the

authenticity of the four-by-six original, noting that the time stamp on the back of the print proved Giuffre had it developed in a store near her former home in Florida, three days after she returned from her 2001 trip to London.

After the picture made its rounds in the media, Andrew still hoped it would all just go away, knowing Epstein had the means to pressure and stall. A coterie of aggressive lawyers working for Epstein dissuaded some mainstream media outlets from covering the story through various means: a five-figure donation to a *New York Times* reporter's preferred nonprofit at one end of the spectrum, and a severed cat's head in the front yard of *Vanity Fair*'s editor in chief at the other. The royal institution also did its bit to protect Andrew, spending a small (private) fortune on lawyers to work with the prince on his initial defense and making sure certain communication aides were prepped to handle the world's interest. Giuffre, said close sources, was "fearful" about going against one of the Queen's children. "She felt afraid about speaking up," said a source. "It was drilled into her that bad things would happen if you do, that you don't want to get on the wrong side of the institution. And indeed, she was reminded that, like Diana, it could turn on you."

In 2015, Buckingham Palace officials warned media outlets that "any suggestion of impropriety with underage minors is categorically untrue." It's worth noting that the age of consent in Britain, New York, and the U.S. Virgin Islands—the three locations Giuffre alleges Andrew sexually assaulted her—are sixteen, seventeen, and eighteen, respectively. Buckingham Palace still had a shield up for Andrew in 2019, telling journalists, including myself, "It is emphatically denied that the Duke of York had any form of sexual contact or relationship with Virginia [Giuffre]. Any claim to the contrary is false and without foundation." But Giuffre confidently countered, "He denies that it ever happened and he's going to keep denying that it ever happened, but he knows the truth and I know the truth." To this day, Andrew repudiates all allegations.

The journalists who wanted to report further details about Epstein and Prince Andrew also found it difficult to do so. During her time as a *Good Morning America* anchor on ABC, journalist Amy Robach conducted an hour-long exclusive interview with Giuffre that never aired. "The Palace found out that we had her whole allegations about Prince Andrew and threatened us a million different ways," an unguarded Robach admitted during a hot-miked off-air clip that mysteriously surfaced online

(supposedly leaked by an “ABC insider” in November 2019 to far-right activist group Project Veritas). “We were so afraid that we wouldn’t be able to interview Kate and Will . . . I tried for three years to get it on to no avail.” Robach backtracked on her comments a year later while still working for the network, explaining, “I was caught in a private moment of frustration. I was upset that an important interview I had conducted with Virginia Roberts didn’t air because we could not obtain sufficient corroborating evidence to meet ABC’s editorial standards about her allegations.” It would be wrong to assume that this might have been all the work of the Palace (sources at ABC News, where I continue to work as a royal contributor, have said that approaches were also made by lawyers acting for Epstein), but it’s impossible to discount this aspect of the story. Even after Giuffre filed a defamation suit against Ghislaine Maxwell months later, putting many of her further allegations officially into the public domain, Robach’s interview remained unseen.

A former Buckingham Palace staff member who worked with the Duke of York claimed that many inside and close to the Firm spent “at least four years” actively nudging trusted or easily influenced members of the press away from negative Andrew stories, claiming that “those who could be convinced it wasn’t worth dealing with all the legal issues were helped in other ways.” This certainly tamed some of the coverage and criticism of Andrew. And soon enough the British media’s obsession with the Sussexes pushed Andrew’s disgraces further back into the pages of some papers. It’s also impossible to ignore that retrograde cultural attitudes around young women and girls being taken advantage of by older white men in power have also played a role in how the story has (and hasn’t) been covered.

Still, no amount of media massaging could soften the blow that came from Giuffre’s August 2021 decision to launch a civil lawsuit in New York against Prince Andrew, accusing him of “sexual assault and intentional infliction of emotional distress” and seeking unspecified damages. Andrew wanted to fight it. “This is a marathon, not a sprint, and the duke will continue to defend himself against these claims,” one of his legal representatives told me at the time. Added a royal source, “He felt there were enough holes in Virginia’s story to knock her down. But there was pressure from others [within the institution]” to steer clear of a legal battle and the media circus that would accompany it, especially if it made its way to a courtroom.



It was time to settle, no matter the cost. These pressures primarily came from Sir Edward Young, the late Queen's private secretary; Sir Clive Alderton, Charles's private secretary; and Sir Michael Stevens, the Keeper of the Privy Purse and the monarch's accountant. After considering this position, the Queen came around and agreed to cover the cost. The huge sum of £12 million (approximately) was paid directly to Giuffre's Victims Refuse Silence organization, a nonprofit she started in 2014 to help survivors of sexual abuse and victims of sex trafficking. Even with the rushed sale of his Swiss chalet (also bankrolled by Mummy some years earlier), Andrew didn't have the funds to settle by himself—the Queen's financial support was his only way out.

The case was settled on February 15, 2022, just before Andrew's scheduled seven-hour court-ordered deposition. Giuffre's lawyer, David Boies, explained that it "was never a case where I think he could have afforded to go to trial." He added, "[The] evidence was too strong . . . [The] photograph made it clear that he could not say he hadn't met her. People, when they start to lie, go so far and they make statements that are demonstratively untrue. He could have said, 'Yes I met her, yes I danced with her, but no, there was never any sex.' That's something that may have been hard to disprove. But when he says, 'I've never met her' and you've got that photograph . . . well."

Andrew later pushed staff and friends to inform friendly journalists that he only agreed on a settlement to ease the burden for his mother and the institution, not because he lacked confidence around proving his innocence. On the record, though, the prince stayed silent. As part of the settlement deal, both he and Giuffre agreed to refrain from any public comments regarding the case. This period conveniently encompassed the Queen's Platinum Jubilee (during which Andrew had a fortuitous case of Covid) and, by happenstance, King Charles's coronation. Before her death, the Queen told some of those close to her that she believed Andrew could eventually repair his image through philanthropic endeavors. The rest of the working family—though they predominantly believe in his innocence—would beg to disagree, with some hoping he remains firmly in the background for their sake.

If Andrew has been attempting his mother's style of repair, however, he's off to a strange start. In June 2020, he sent pizzas (not from Pizza Express) and boxes of dates to a charity that helps human trafficking and

sexual exploitation victims. Though few want him to, Andrew hopes to one day ramp up his charitable efforts to creep back into the public eye. “William finds this quite extraordinary. The man is a ticking time bomb!” said a Kensington Palace source.

The bomb started ticking years ago. Prior to his Epstein troubles and his official defrocking, Andrew had already proved he was a one-man PR disaster in the making, even as a sideshow to Charles’s 1990s humiliations and front-page troubles. Described as an inveterate “tits and bums man” with a penchant for “schoolboy humor” by a close associate, the “Playboy Prince,” also previously known in the tabloid press as “Randy Andy,” went on a bit of a tear after his divorce from Fergie. Andrew caused a stir because of his associations with a string of glamorous women, including actress Angie Everhart and model Caprice (who, on a 2000 date to Buckingham Palace, Andrew let sit on the Queen’s throne). A model ex-girlfriend he dated in the 2010s told me, “I liked him. He’s charming, funny, and quick to put his foot in his mouth. Pretty women and money . . . those are the things that he lives for.”

That love of money and finer things resulted in a history of poor judgment firmly rooted in debts and financial woes. His fondness for despots, which he fully took advantage of while touring the world as the United Kingdom Trade & Investment special envoy, was also another weakness. At the 2008 World Economic Forum in Egypt, Andrew was heavily criticized for dining with Kazakhstan’s autocratic president, Nursultan Nazarbayev, a controversial figure who headed up a family and group of cronies who had just forked over more than a billion dollars for properties in New York, Switzerland, and London. Palace aides initially defended Andrew for “just doing his job,” but the chorus of support quieted down when it was reported that Nazarbayev’s son-in-law, Kazak billionaire Timur Kulibayev, generously paid \$5.6 million over the asking price for Andrew and Fergie’s abandoned and collapsing mansion, Sunninghill Park, as a favor.

Then there was the story about convicted gun smuggler Tarek Kaituni, who gifted Andrew’s daughter Princess Beatrice a \$37,000 necklace for her eighteenth birthday after he and Andrew socialized during a 2008 visit to Tunisia. That same year Andrew dined in Libya with dictator Muammar Gaddafi, a man responsible for the Lockerbie terrorist bombing, among a

litany of other crimes and human rights abuses. A year after this trip, the United Kingdom picked up a lucrative oil deal in the region.

Andrew carried on with this brazen behavior and willingness to meet with oppressive regimes long after he was forced to resign as envoy. In 2014, reports surfaced that Andrew was planning a trip to Azerbaijan to meet with billionaire tyrant leader Ilham Aliyev, despite the fact that Aliyev was accused of stealing elections and violently persecuting journalists and political opponents. Sources initially claimed it was a onetime meeting but, as it turned out, the pair had met in secret eleven times prior.

There are believed to be dozens, if not hundreds, more unwise connections to uncover from Andrew's years in the role. Just don't expect to find answers at Britain's Department for Business and Trade. While records of who joined Andrew on his decade of international travel for the government division should be kept on file, Freedom of Information requests hit a brick wall (believe me, I tried). The Foreign Office claim that the documents won't be available until 2065.

Blurring the lines between his personal and professional lives is a repeated pattern for Andrew. His ten years as an envoy saw him live life large, with "travel expenses" and security costing taxpayers an estimated £22 million. With little regard for the public purse, Andrew would settle for nothing less than five-star hotels (the embassies on offer were rarely good enough for him) and first-class or private flights. Up until 2011, he also used his trade missions to plug the work of his friends and associates. According to a trove of emails, internal documents, and regulatory filings, the duke acted as an unofficial "door opener" for financier David Rowland and his secretive bank for the super-rich in Luxembourg, Banque Havilland S.A. Thanks to Andrew's royal connections and envoy role, he was able to pitch the bank's services to potential clients from the ranks of the high-net-worth elite. Rowland even brought Andrew on an official visit to China. In return he had access to a Bombardier Global Express jet and a virtually limitless credit card—Rowland even paid off a £1.5 million loan Andrew owed to his bank.

Now that King Charles *finally* cut off the Duke of York from his £249,000 annual allowance from the Duchy of Lancaster in April 2023, money—particularly how to earn it—is still very much on his mind. Until he figures that out, his big brother continues to provide private financial support. Charles is even footing his seven-figure annual private security bill

—a move that surprised Prince Harry after Charles had no problem cutting him off from all financial aid and paid protection when he stepped away from his royal role.

But the close association may end up coming back to bite the King and the monarchy. With the gag order from her settlement with Andrew now expired, it's just a matter of time before the royal family hears from Giuffre again. In early 2023, the thirty-nine-year-old signed a major deal to publish her first memoir. And, though Epstein may be dead, stories from the past—including his friendship with Andrew—continue to trickle out. Still, with Charles's brotherly support, sources say Andrew has been quietly focusing on how to clear his name once and for all, and that discussions with his legal team about contesting his settlement with Giuffre have already taken place. Giuffre's lawyer, David Boies, finds this hard to believe. "He would just be putting himself back into the same dangerous position again, facing the same deposition," he said with a laugh. "But if he wants to go through all of that, his lawyers have my number!"

While King Charles has, so far, shown no inclination of conclusively stopping his support of his wayward brother, Andrew would be foolish to think that William will unquestionably support his uncle in the same way. It's fair to say, the next King is the one in the family who inherited Prince Philip's assertiveness when it comes to protecting the Crown. Until then, though, Andrew remains a wild card and one that can still inflict considerable damage to the monarchy. A source close to the family said, "One would be foolish to assume that Andrew won't bring further shame . . . it's his specialty. For his brother—the *King*, for Christ's sake—to be blindly supporting him, despite the great risk he poses to this entire thing, is crazy."

# Race and the Royals

Institutional Bigotry and Denial

*Perhaps you notice how the denial is so often the preface to the justification.*

—Christopher Hitchens, *Hitch 22: A Memoir*

*For while we have our eyes on the future, history has its eyes on us.*

—Amanda Gorman, “The Hill We Climb”

You could practically hear the eye-rolling in her voice. “Well . . . we could already guess what someone like *her* would be like. I saw it coming from *miles* away.” At a March 2021 meeting in her Kensington Palace apartment, Princess Michael of Kent—wife of the Queen’s first cousin Prince Michael of Kent—couldn’t stop herself from indulging in gossip with an aide about Meghan. Princess Michael has never been much of a fan of Prince Harry’s wife, and as she busily chattered on about the Sussexes’ prime-time Oprah Winfrey interview, she let her drawling emphasis on certain words do all the talking. The seventy-seven-year-old former interior designer had just spent most of the week with publishing contacts to discuss a proposal she was working on at the time, so she spoke freely and with confidence when she said: “[Meghan’s] made it *all* about race because that’s all everyone does these days.”

Her remarks didn’t surprise those within earshot, including my source. This is the same royal who, at a 2017 family Christmas lunch, arrived at her first meeting with biracial Meghan Markle wearing a blackamoor brooch pinned to her coat lapel. Blinded by unconscious bias or just callously indifferent, it’s hard to say, but she certainly failed to recognize the cultural

insensitivity of wearing a brooch featuring a highly exoticized bust of a Black man in servant regalia, much less how others might react to such a thoughtless choice. She later apologized for the indiscretion (though never directly to Meghan), but, according to sources, the princess still shrugs and wrinkles her lip when the subject comes up. “I don’t think she particularly cared,” a senior royal source told me.

Princess Michael wasn’t alone in nonchalantly deciding the resulting outcry over her blackamoor accessory, a style first popularized in the seventeenth century, was “over the top.” The same source revealed that “some in the family rushed to comfort her afterward. They didn’t feel the [media] onslaught was fair.” Meghan, I’m told, did not receive any such overtures. But then, failing to recognize racial or cultural insensitivities is a common theme among certain members of the royal family and a number of those working for and around them. This was but yet another example of ugly, systematic racism bubbling to the top.

During my years covering the royals I have regularly been surprised by the Palace’s blasé attitude when it comes to anything to do with race, racism, or the issues that impact those from minority backgrounds. After Minneapolis police officers murdered George Floyd and the resurgence of the American-born Black Lives Matter (BLM) movement spawned international protests against systemic, racially motivated police brutality, unrest hit the streets of London in May 2020. A global civil rights issue was forcing change around the world, but the royal family chose to completely ignore it.

As often as I emailed or phoned the Buckingham Palace communications team (more than weekly during the height of the BLM marches), my requests for on- or off-the-record guidance on whether we may see family members acknowledge this hugely important moment went noticeably unanswered—they responded to other queries I had, just not that one. The Palace famously stays away from anything it considers political, but unlike the political intricacies involved with the movement in the United States, BLM support in Britain simply meant standing up to and against racism. Leaders, activists, and public figures in the United Kingdom all spoke out on the issue (as did other royals in Europe), so the British royals’ silence—which followed almost four years of racially charged coverage of their only biracial family member—was hard to ignore.

With Covid still gripping the country, face time with Palace aides was practically nil and almost all engagements were held virtually. I didn't receive any answers about the BLM movement until meeting with a senior aide at a hotel bar in August 2021. "We didn't [reply] because it felt like you were trying to get a headline, quite honestly," they told me. "You would have turned [the family not saying something] into a story." It *was* a story, I argued. To me, it was bizarre that an institution that supposedly works for and strives to reflect modern and diverse Britain—one that now includes a biracial family member who has endured years of racial attacks since joining—couldn't see the importance of speaking out against racism.

The aide added that an op-ed I wrote in my role as royal editor for *Harper's Bazaar* on the Sussexes' allegations surrounding family concerns over the skin color of their son, Archie, was too "pointed" for the family's liking. Titled "Stifling, Toxic, and Racist—Duchess Meghan Never Had a Chance," it underscored the outdated posturing and institutional prejudices that forced Harry and Meghan to make a change. After all the deafening silence on race issues, I wanted it to be pointed. "You called us white supremacists," the aide whispered to me with more than a little exasperation. This wasn't entirely accurate. Here's what I wrote: "If it's not considered appropriate to acknowledge racism or racial ignorance when aimed at a mixed-raced senior royal, then how should the 54 countries of the Commonwealth and its predominantly Black, Brown, and mixed population feel about the realm's figurehead belonging to an institution that claims to celebrate 'diversity' but in practice appears to uphold white supremacy?"

\* \* \*

But let's pull back for a little history lesson and take a look at the big picture, as ugly and uncomfortable as it is. In the United Kingdom, racism takes a different shape to the United States and other parts of the world. Although sometimes adopting pernicious form in economic policies and political dog-whistling, racism in America, for the most part, is not hidden. It often loudly announces itself in Trumpism, police brutality, the education system, deep-rooted white privilege, and viral "Karen" videos online. In Britain, racism furtively shape-shifts, and it lurks in the shadows as casually accepted discrimination, coded language, and systemic oppression, often

revealing itself in conversations about class, crusty colonialist thinking, and well-worn stereotypes. You don't have to dig deep into those aspects of U.K. life that many consider traditional and quintessentially British to unearth some racist roots—post-Brexit, the mawkish Union Jack and St. George's Cross flag-waving often conjures up a yearning for the golden age of empire.

It's often so undercover that many Brits will quickly and confidently tell you, "This is not a racist country," and that Britain is the least racist place in Europe. The latter half is technically true. A 2019 European Union report on race and ethnic disparities found that an average of 21 percent of people of African descent in the United Kingdom had reported or experienced racial harassment in the last five years—in Finland, for comparison, the number is 63 percent. Germany and Italy stood at 41 percent.

But being the "least" racist country doesn't mean there isn't racism. Black women in the United Kingdom are statistically four times more likely to die during childbirth, largely due to wider cultural and structural biases, and young Black men are nineteen times more likely to be stopped and searched by police. The number of non-white people who died from Covid was 50 percent more than their white counterparts, due to factors such as type of work and the toll that living in the crosshairs of racism takes on the body (it has been linked to heart disease, obesity, diabetes, high blood pressure, and kidney or liver disease). It's a similar contrast when applying for jobs. On average, people from minority ethnic backgrounds still have to send 60 percent more applications to get a positive response from an employer compared to a white person of British origin, according to a University of Oxford study.

Many of the issues affecting people of color in the United Kingdom originated in the heart of the British establishment—the institution of the monarchy. It was Queen Elizabeth I who legitimized slavery in 1562 when she allowed naval commander John Hawkins to kidnap Africans in his ship's cargo hold and sell them in the Caribbean. And, during the reign of King Charles II, the Crown financed the African slave trade by founding and maintaining the Royal African Company of England, a trading operation that shipped more enslaved African men, women, and children than any other single institution during the entire period of the transatlantic slave trade. In 1712, Queen Anne landed an exclusive contract for the British nation to provide enslaved people for the Spanish West Indies for



thirty years. When the government later sold the contract, Anne received a 20 percent cut of a £7.5 million deal, which equals approximately £355 million in 2023.

By the time British Parliament abolished the slave trade in 1807, more than twelve and a half million enslaved people had been transported from Africa to the Americas and Caribbean. Twenty-six years later, the government paid out a total of £20 million (the equivalent of £17 billion today) to compensate around three thousand British *slave owners* for the loss of “human property.” The freed, formerly enslaved didn’t receive a penny, nor has the government disbursed any monetary reparations to their descendants.

The murderous and destructive impact of the royal family’s role in slavery is rarely covered in British schools to this day, but the remnants of it are all around us, from the man-made canals running through the towns and cities of England and Wales (which transported goods cultivated by enslaved people, including indigo, tobacco, rice, cotton, and sugar) to the striking civic and commercial buildings built with money from the commodities that enslaved people produced. And then there are the dozens of statues confidently associated with the transatlantic slave trade that still stand tall across the country. The sculpture of the political figure and slave owner William Beckford, for example, remains in London’s Guildhall, despite the fact he made his name and fortune on the back of the slave trade. To address the BLM protests, City of London officials decided to “retain and explain” the statue. A plaque next to Lord Beckford now “contextualizes” the life of a man who owned fourteen Jamaican sugar plantations and approximately three thousand enslaved Africans.

The history of slavery also explains certain attitudes toward immigrants and foreigners that still persist. When King Charles II financed the African slave trade, the justification of the colonial project was validated by the notion that, other than the West, the rest of the world was corrupt and backward. It was this reasoning—and the widely pushed rhetoric of Black and Brown people as barbarians that accompanied it—that introduced much of the racism and “otherism” that still poisons today’s culture. This type of exceptionalism is a seam that runs deep through Britain’s politics. Case in point: Brexit and the narrative surrounding refugees, asylum seekers, and migrants (particularly those who are not from the fair-skinned Ukraine). Of course, these policies do not speak for an entire nation. Compared to other

parts of Europe, Britain has managed to grow into a diverse and more tolerant country. But while racial prejudices and learned behaviors are still deeply ingrained into British culture, a lot of it is subconscious.

On my travels with the royals to former British colonies like Singapore and India, I've had the opportunity to talk with Palace aides about the monarchy and race. Almost reflexively, the responses dance around the same theme—that it's unfair to lump the weight of the colonial past on the current crop of family members. They are simply people born into the institution they serve and into a history that was determined long before they entered this world, one senior official told me. Myopic at best, willfully ignoring the issue at worst, this position glosses over the fact that the monarchy they represent—one that emphasizes bloodlines and hereditary power and was built on the backs of others—still profits from untaxed slave-era inheritances. A lot of the £652 million estate inherited by King Charles from the Queen, all untaxed, can be traced back to the slave trade and empire.

And the response to all this? Resolute silence. The family has had plenty of opportune moments to publicly engage in conversations about their past, but instead we have seen a herculean, strategic effort to avoid it. At a 2021 ceremony to mark the transition of Barbados from a constitutional monarchy under Queen Elizabeth II to a self-governing parliamentary republic with a new president, Charles became the first royal to touch on the topic. He declared that the “appalling atrocity of slavery” had “forever stain[ed] our history.” But what followed was not an apology for the monarchy's role in the “darkest days of our past,” but rote platitudes about how the country's journey had brought Barbadians to “this moment not as your destination, but as a vantage point from which you can survey a new horizon.” Charles offered little remorse on the institution's behalf but seized the moment to “reaffirm . . . the close and trusted partnership” between Barbados and Britain. The elephant in the room, of course, was this was Barbados's moment to cast off the label of “Little England,” and finally sever ties with the country that turned it into a slave society. And everyone knew it. After the ceremony, protest organizer David Denny, general secretary for the Caribbean Movement for Peace and Integration, told reporters that Charles “shouldn't be here at all” and that the country should ask the royal family to pay reparations.

With much of the public ill at ease with the royal family's ties to the dark history of slavery, the Firm should be doing more than vaguely admitting there is an ugly past. The family's inability to offer a head-on admission that issues to do with race still linger in the corners of the present-day institution is disingenuous, particularly after Harry spoke so candidly about his own unconscious bias in his memoir and in interviews around the book's publication. Vile prejudices are not ancient history for the family. Let's take a minute to recall Prince Philip's comments about "slitty-eyed" Chinese people, the moment he told the traditionally dressed president of Nigeria that he looked "ready for bed," and the time he asked a group of indigenous people if they still "throw spears at each other" (lines that the British media routinely dismissed as "gaffes" or "quips"). The Queen Mother also had a history of making insensitive remarks (she once told a lady-in-waiting that "the Africans just don't know how to govern themselves . . . what a pity we're not still looking after them"), and Prince Charles thought nothing of nicknaming a South Asian friend "Sooty" because he thought his dark skin supposedly looked like soot. And lest we forget, the Duke of Windsor's disturbing friendship with Adolf Hitler and the infamous images of Elizabeth II as a young, no doubt innocent girl giving the Nazi salute—an image the institution is still desperate to bury. The royal family spent much of the twentieth century dealing with, and often trying to cover up, race scandals.

And the twenty-first century has, so far, been much of the same. From Princess Michael of Kent yelling at Black diners in America to "go back to the colonies" (she later defended herself against accusations of racism, declaring, "I'm not a racist—I even pretended to be a half caste") to Prince Andrew's casual slurs (in 2012 he allegedly used the n-word while talking about a senior political aide to Prime Minister David Cameron), and even Prince Harry's own past, which saw the royal caught on video in 2009 calling fellow Sandhurst military cadet Ahmed Raza Khan "rag-head" and "Paki," the House of Windsor may never talk about racism, but their prejudices—conscious or not—have often been on display and speak volumes.

Behind the scenes it's no different, if not worse. In 2001, Elizabeth Burgess, a Black secretary of ten years at Highgrove, told an employment tribunal how Prince Charles's valet Michael Fawcett called her a "fucking n\*\*\*\*\* typist" in 1996. The tribunal ruled the claim against Burgess as

unproven and Charles went on to promote Fawcett to senior valet, but it should have been an opportunity for the Palace to raise their awareness level as a signal that they are listening. It would be careless not to mention the 1968 memo against hiring “coloured immigrants or foreigners” to a number of important roles at Buckingham Palace. Documents in the British National Archives reveal that, at a time when government ministers introduced laws making it illegal to refuse work to an individual on the grounds of their race or ethnicity, the Queen’s former chief financial manager informed civil servants that it “was not, in fact, the practice to appoint coloured immigrants or foreigners” to clerical roles in the royal household, although they were permitted to work as domestic servants. It’s unknown when the ban was lifted (Buckingham Palace still refuses to engage in conversations about the matter), though records on racial backgrounds of employees from the 1990s do show that the institution hired individuals from ethnic minorities for previously unavailable roles.

“I would be lying if I said it’s not a difficult environment to be a person of color,” a non-white member of royal household staff told me on the condition of anonymity. “I have not witnessed outright, explicit racism but I have certainly experienced, and seen others experience, microaggressions and prejudice at work. This place still has a long way to go when it comes to *everyone* working here being able to feel completely comfortable.” A former member of staff, who worked for more than two members of the royal family during their tenure at the Palace, said, “The ignorance and casual racism is as bad as you think it is. It felt like another era sometimes.”

I, too, have experienced and witnessed some of that ignorance and bias. Like the time a seasoned aide who—commenting on my clear English accent—told me, “I never expected you to speak the way you do.” Or the staff member who casually called a less developed part of London we were visiting on a royal engagement “the ghetto.” Or the senior courtier who hollered, “Oh my God. What a legend!” when they heard that a photographer had commented that Meghan should “be more Black and wear some African garb . . . let her Afro out” at an engagement linked to Nelson Mandela.

A Palace spokesperson previously declined to comment on the views of past employees but admitted to me that there is still “much work to be done.” The work to be done is evident in the stubborn avoidance around the issue, even when incidents provide them with perfect opportunities to make

amends. Whether it was Lady Susan Hussey's display of racial ignorance toward Sistah Space's charity founder Ngozi Fulani, or the misogynoir-laden bile from *The Sun*'s columnist Jeremy Clarkson, who wrote that Meghan should be "paraded naked through the streets of every town in Britain while the crowds . . . throw lumps of excrement at her," their continued silence is deafening and, perhaps more tellingly, exposes some of the institution's noxious ways and means. Days before the former *Top Gear* host's acerbic rant (which prompted Amazon Prime Video to decline a contract renewal with Clarkson and cost him a presenting gig on ITV's iteration of *Who Wants to Be a Millionaire?*), Camilla, the Queen Consort, was hobnobbing with him at a Christmas party in central London. The pair consider each other dear friends, and, despite public pressure on Camilla to condemn his column and sexually violent language, she remained quiet on the issue. She wouldn't, I was told by a Palace source, "be wading into any culture wars."

Several weeks later, Camilla gave an impassioned defense of free speech and the right of writers to express themselves at a Clarence House event for her Queen's Reading Room book club. Her words followed news that some offensive or outdated terms had been altered or removed in the latest British editions of *Charlie and the Chocolate Factory*, *Matilda*, and other books by Roald Dahl. But it was also considered, particularly by the right-wing press, a rallying cry in the face of the "woke, snowflake culture" she famously detests and has publicly derided.

Other failed opportunities include the number of ignored Black History months—every single one of them up until 2022. You may remember when Prince Edward and Sophie, then the Countess of Wessex, were bizarrely dispatched to pose with alpacas at a city farm in 2021 (the urban farm was marking the start of the annual Black History observance). And who can forget when the same couple was sent to Antigua and Barbuda, Saint Vincent and the Grenadines, and Saint Lucia just one month after William and Kate's flop Caribbean tour? It was the perfect opportunity to patch and correct the mistakes of the March 2022 trip but stopped way short of achieving this. The couple smiled, waved, and danced their way across the islands and in front of campaigners demanding apologies and reparatory justice. A disinterested Edward went on to offend Antigua prime minister Gaston Browne as he guffawed in response to the prime minister's suggestion that the Wessexes should use their "diplomatic influence" to

help provide “reparatory justice” for Caribbean countries that were colonized by Britain. “You may not necessarily comment on this issue as you represent an institution that doesn’t comment on contentious issues,” said Browne. “Our civilization should understand the atrocities that took place during colonialism and slavery, and the fact that we have to bring balance by having open discussions.” Edward’s response? “I wasn’t keeping notes, so I’m not going to give you a complete riposte. But thank you for your welcome today.” Later that day the couple’s scheduled trip to Grenada was canceled at the last minute following advice from the country’s government. The move came just hours after new reports revealed that Britain directly owned hundreds of enslaved Black people in Grenada during the eighteenth century.

Slow progress has, unsurprisingly, not been helped by the majority of the mainstream British newspapers, who—just like the institution of the monarchy—run in the opposite direction when faced with the subject of race. The majority of the country’s print media remains lenient and evasive when it comes to conversations about Britain’s history of slavery or the accusations of racism in the Palace (racism *anywhere*, for that matter). Spend enough time around certain journalists or outlets and you will find yourself hearing the hard-to-believe argument that the royal family has actually *helped* eradicate the colonial ties of the past. Using an apologist’s lens, some commentators have also claimed that over the years the Queen did more to “eradicate” racism while in pursuit of an equal society than any other monarch or politician in British history. There’s also the belief that Queen Elizabeth II’s years of traveling the length and breadth of the Commonwealth helped modernize the ties between the nations and to move past the fallout from the fall of the British Empire. “She was ahead of the curve,” said historian and professor of imperial and military history at King’s College London Ashley Jackson. “Unlike many of her ministers and indeed her British subjects, she discerned the need to avoid ‘old’ ideas of imperial loyalty or Anglo-Saxon superiority and instead to embrace new members. She emphasized the importance of common history, ideas, and values—theoretically shared by the diverse people of the Commonwealth, even if not by their leaders.”

And while, yes, the Queen did oversee a decolonization process that played out around the world, she also took her colonial role seriously, sending the following message to “peoples of the British Commonwealth

Empire” while still a princess in 1947: “I declare before you all that my whole life, whether it be long or short, shall be devoted to your service and to the service of our great imperial family to which we all belong.” That imperial family was, of course, almost exclusively white—its prosperity secured by disposable Black and Brown lives.

When historian and professor David Olusoga claimed on the Sussexes’ *Harry & Meghan* Netflix series that the palaces are still filled with “racist imagery,” a number of royal commentators rushed to exonerate the monarchy. “Clearly they have never been [to the palaces],” one ranted. But when you look for yourself, the imagery is irrefutably noticeable. Though the royal art collection has more than 7,500 works, it was seventeenth-century Dutch landscape painter Aelbert Cuyp’s *The N\*\*\*\*o Page* that hung on the wall of William and Kate’s formal drawing room at Kensington Palace when President Barack Obama and First Lady Michelle Obama visited in April 2016. The *Mail*’s resident art critic (yes, they have one!) praised the choice, suggesting that the image “featuring a black servant boy . . . would particularly appeal to a History of Art graduate such as Kate.” But the critic failed to point out the giant lamp and plant pot that were hastily plonked in front of the 1660 painting to obscure the brass plate featuring the painting’s offensive title. I was one of two journalists covering that private engagement, and at the time, Kensington Palace was keen for the art incident to go unreported. Having inside access to the engagements (which, unlike members of the British media-only royal rota, is not guaranteed to any members of U.S. press), I was being careful not to be cut out and regrettably agreed to exclude the incident from my otherwise positive coverage of the meeting.

Take a peek into Camilla’s Ray Mill House in Wiltshire, and you can’t miss the giant blackamoor statue in the entrance hall—a four-foot muscular Black man holding a lightbulb and lampshade high into the sky. A Palace source says it has been removed “in recent years.” It was a similar tale for blackamoor sconces hanging on the walls at Clarence House. When the Google Arts & Culture platform gave the world a look inside Charles’s London residence in 2018, eagle-eyed netizens spotted the offending items and officials quickly took them down (both the photos and from the residence).

Removing offending objects are steps in the right direction, but they don’t go nearly far enough—many more symbols of slavery, whether in art

or jewelery, remain in royal households and in public view. The Royal Collection Trust published a catalog that featured more than forty uncensored uses of racist slurs, including the n-word, in its artifact descriptions. It took complaints over fifteen years before the Trust finally removed *Ancient and Modern Gems and Jewels* from circulation in July 2023. And, despite calls from campaigners for a redesign, one of Britain's highest-honor medals bestowed by King Charles to ambassadors and diplomats for distinguished service still features a depiction of St. Michael, a blue-eyed white angel, standing on the neck of Satan, portrayed as a chained Black man.

More glaringly, looted wealth is visible everywhere. The Kohi-Noor diamond in the crown last worn by the Queen Mother has only belonged to the monarchical institution since 1849, the year it was stolen from Lahore, India. And the Cullinan Diamond, a showpiece three-thousand-carat artifact of British imperialism incorporated into the Crown Jewels, including the sovereign's scepter, was taken from South Africa in 1905 and "gifted" to King Edward VII by the government of the British Transvaal Colony. Calls for the Koh-i-Noor's return have grown following the death of Queen Elizabeth II. And Camilla's decision to have Queen Mary's crown reset with the Cullinan III, IV, and V diamonds for her May 2023 coronation ceremony reignited questions about the royal family's involvement with the development of diamond resource exploitation in southern Africa. "If the Koh-i-Noor is a symbol of East India Company plunder imperialism in India, the Cullinan is a symbol of a different kind of British racialized settler colonialism in southern Africa—and the royal family and their literal crowns and regalia are one place where these two strains of imperialism come together," said Danielle Kinsey, a professor of history and nineteenth-century Britain at Carleton University in Ontario, Canada.

Revealingly similar to the way in which the Firm avoided the Black Lives Matter movement, Queen Elizabeth II mostly stayed mum on the progress in racial matters during the banner days of the civil rights movement. When Rev. Martin Luther King Jr. requested an audience with the monarch during a visit to London and invited her to his sermon at St. Paul's Cathedral, he received no response. When he was shot dead a little more than three years later in Memphis, though Buckingham Palace made no comment at the time, the Queen did later go on to shape the theme of her 1968 Christmas speech around brotherhood, stating, "Mankind can only



find progress in friendship and cooperation.” As social psychologist and author Dr. John Petrocelli pointed out, “With a world stage and powerful voice that was inherited by her very position, it could have and should have been the Queen’s greatest contribution—she had nothing to lose and most everything to gain by being the real champion she is now ballyhooed to be.” British activist, lawyer, and author Dr. Shola Mos-Shogbamimu added, “She was a colonial Queen—monarch of an estate which owned the biggest empire in human history. She was the head of state of the British Empire at the start of her reign. You can’t divorce the Queen from the institution that she represented and the institution she represents has one of the strongest known links to the start of, and the pain of, slavery and colonialism.”

In other words, it’s like saying Pope Francis doesn’t represent the Catholic Church.

\* \* \*

*This* was the backdrop on which I based my comments in my aforementioned article that referenced white supremacy, and I stand by that piece today. The Palace aide who admonished me at the time said, “Your statements have huge consequences.” It’s why, he added, the Buckingham Palace communications team made the decision to exclude me from a media briefing about the funeral of Prince Philip shortly after that article came out (although, after kicking up a stink, the Palace did backtrack and accredit me for Windsor Castle access days later). “If you say things like that, of course you’re going to be at the bottom of the list.” So much for a free press, I gruffly replied.

I knew this environment, both present and historical, would make it almost impossible for Meghan to flourish in the royal system. And the signs were there even in the earliest coverage of her time in the royal orbit, when news outlets used loaded terms like *narcissistic*, *social climber*, *exotic DNA*, and *straight out of Compton* (despite her not growing up anywhere near it) both to describe her, and to establish a narrative. Just eight days after the *Sunday Express* revealed their relationship to the world on October 31, 2016, Prince Harry felt compelled to write a statement, released by his head of communications, Jason Knauf, condemning the “racial undertones” and “wave of abuse” and harassment coming from the media.

“It was something new to all of us,” Knauf told me in early 2020. “Harry led the push [against that], but there were others who didn’t agree.” Though retrospective rumors incorrectly suggested it was his brother, Prince William, who pushed back against Harry’s communication efforts, several sources have since confirmed that it was Charles who felt taking on the papers “so aggressively” was a “terrible” idea. However, this came after the fact. Prior to the statement, Harry’s father was kept completely in the dark, because his son had little faith in him to stand on the right side. “[Harry] knew Charles would try and stop him because he’s so afraid of the press and damage to his own [media] relationships. Everyone involved had to keep it secret, including William,” a senior Palace aide said. Sadly, it was not just his father who was disappointed in Harry’s actions. Key members of staff—across all three royal households—thought Harry’s “hoo-hah” (the choice phrase of the Queen’s then deputy private secretary Edward Young, apparently) was much ado about nothing. Putting his foot down about paparazzi was one thing, but calling out racism in the press? The institution just couldn’t see the benefit of publicly addressing the sensitive issue.

As tabloid op-eds and online hate increased, so did the level of denial from Palace aides, who claimed they couldn’t really see any racism in press coverage. In the upside-down dimension, some expressed sympathy for those in the press instead. A communication staffer at Kensington Palace comforted royal correspondents whom Twitter users had accused of being racist in their articles or commentary. “I do think the Duke of Sussex and his office will bear some responsibility if a journalist is harmed as a result of that ill-judged statement,” tweeted *Daily Express* royal editor Richard Palmer. “But, without naming names, I can say that one of [the Palace aides] is telling royal reporters to ignore the racism nuts.” Harry, who monitored Twitter closely back then, noticed the journalist’s remark. The Kensington Palace team “would much rather have the media’s back than mine,” he told a friend.

As the level of online abuse Meghan received increased during her burgeoning relationship with Harry, Kensington Palace struggled with the new reality of their household Instagram account getting swarmed with slurs and hate speech. “You know you can block specific key words from appearing in the comments, right?” I said to one junior aide at the time. The office was aware, they said, but one of its higher-ranking aides felt that at the time it would be “inappropriate” to start censoring comments left for a

publicly funded institution. “They just don’t think you can start censoring people and it’s better to manually take care of anything bad.” As a result, thousands of daily comments loaded with the likes of the n-word, as well as monkey, banana, or dagger emojis, steadily appeared, many of them visible for days and weeks before they were deleted. Fans and public supporters of the couple—a movement that had quickly taken on the Sussex Squad moniker—were often the ones trawling through comments and reporting offending items.

“If you’d seen the stuff that was written and you were receiving it . . . the kind of rhetoric that’s online, if you don’t know what I know, you would feel under threat all of the time,” Neil Basu, former head of counterterrorism for London’s Metropolitan Police, said. “We had teams investigating it and people have been prosecuted for those threats.” Due to the tabloids’ ridiculous suggestions that I was essentially an extended member of the couple’s team (we’ll get to that shortly), threats like the ones aimed at the duchess came my way, too—from disturbing descriptions of violent acts and graphic images, to racial slurs and warnings of physical harm at public engagements. I regularly passed all of these on to the authorities.

In March 2019, Kensington Palace finally ramped up its social media safety efforts, after turning to Twitter and Instagram’s owner, Facebook, for help and dedicating a budget for online resources. “We ask that anyone engaging with our social media channels shows courtesy, kindness and respect for all other members of our social media communities,” a message posted on the royal.uk website read. “We reserve the right to hide or delete comments made on our channels, as well as block users who do not follow these guidelines.”

The efforts were necessary, but pretty late in the game. Meghan was just two months away from giving birth to Archie, the first multiracial child in the family. One British-based YouTube account, a channel dedicated to conspiracy theories about Meghan faking her pregnancy, among other wild tales, had even encouraged followers to try to “pop” the duchess’s “moon bump” at a future public appearance. “She’s living in fear . . . not just for herself but for the baby. You can’t expect anyone to live like that,” one of the couple’s most senior staff told me at the time. But the fact that Archie faced more security threats than other royal children did not translate to additional safety measures. Hierarchy still took precedence, and as seventh

in line to the throne at the time, Archie was not considered a particularly high priority. The Cambridge family had a bigger security team—a point that Harry was very aware of. “No one is thinking about the fact that my wife is biracial, my son is mixed race . . . None of this registers to anyone,” Harry told an aide that summer.

In fact, minimal thought ever went into race-related issues when it came to the Sussexes. This is the same institution that suggested that Lady Susan Hussey (yes, *that* Lady Susan Hussey) help biracial Meghan acclimate to Palace life and navigate the royal system. The duchess turned down the offer, probably having already sensed that it might not be the best idea.

When Palace aides later told reporters, including myself, that they “bent over backwards” to make Meghan feel comfortable at Buckingham Palace, this included a follow-up suggestion that perhaps the Queen’s Ghanaian-born household cavalry officer Lieutenant Colonel Nana Kofi Twumasi-Ankrah should be the one to help Meghan. Though a charming and intelligent man, it stood out like a sore thumb to Meghan and her friends that, due to a lack of Black or other non-white staff, let alone women, in relevant senior roles, the Palace had to turn to someone who was the Queen’s attendant. “I doubt Kate was offered an equerry [for guidance],” a pal said to Meghan.

As for Harry and Meghan’s wedding, aides from Charles’s Clarence House office put themselves forward to help with the planning for the big day, but Harry, knowing from experience how quickly things leak, especially from his father’s camp, put the kibosh on the idea. “Far too big for her boots,” one of Charles’s staffers—a regular *Daily Mail* source at the time—moaned about Meghan. “Who does she think she is?”

Just who does she think she is? This was a running theme throughout Meghan’s time as a working royal. Here was a woman who, in the eyes of many within the institution (consciously or unconsciously), wasn’t considered good enough to be part of it—be it because of her class, her family, her ethnicity, or her career history. Or maybe just because she wasn’t sufficiently reverential and thankful for the opportunity, a haughty opinion that also stinks of prejudice and privilege.

“Meghan came in and did the work, but she wasn’t in awe of her surroundings. It was like taking on a new job, one that came as a prerequisite with her marriage to the person she was in love with,” said a close friend of the duchess. “She took it seriously, but the fact she wasn’t

saying, ‘*Wow*, this is the greatest thing on earth’ made people feel like she wasn’t grateful, that she didn’t deserve what she had.” To some at the Palace, here was a woman of color who was allowed into an entitled, exceedingly white space, so how dare she not show an abundance of gratitude. The fact that later she would choose to step away from it, essentially rejecting the hallowed space she was “lucky” enough to have entered, emerged as the sore point for many.

In the weeks that followed their May 2018 nuptials, the couple embarked on a successful seventy-six-engagement tour of Australia, New Zealand, Fiji, and Tonga. Their popularity grew so big that, according to several Palace staffers I have spoken to over the years, there was intense jealousy over the couple’s growing star power among senior courtiers and other family members. “It’s a tricky place to be when you’re sixth in line but up there with number one [the Queen] in terms of popularity,” one of the couple’s press secretaries told me that summer. “They’ll probably want to bring them down a peg.”

And so, the Palace permitted the press to do their bidding. A month after the couple returned to England, negative stories trickled out. “Kicking up a stink” was the *Daily Mail*’s November 30, 2018, headline, which reported on Meghan’s alleged “dictatorial” request to place air fresheners inside St. George’s Chapel before her wedding ceremony (of course, when Kate filled Westminster Abbey with Jo Malone for her wedding, it was “sweet”). Then the *Telegraph* reported the now well-worn story about Meghan making Kate cry at a bridesmaid fitting (which, not even three years later, we heard was actually the other way around). The same paper also used a report to claim a community kitchen Meghan was working with, run by a group of mostly Middle Eastern and North African women, was linked to terrorism—simply based on research carried out by an “anti-Islam” think tank that “suggested” the mosque it was housed in may have been attended by three terror criminals a decade prior. And there was *The Sun*’s reporting that Meghan rejected the wedding tiara the Queen offered because she preferred a different design. “What Meghan wants, Meghan gets!” Harry reportedly ranted to the monarch’s dresser, Angela Kelly. A fatuous and erroneous story from start to finish, but it had remarkable staying power in the press (again, never publicly denied by anyone in the Palace). A week later, the same outlet reported that an “angry” Meghan had “bollocked” a member of Kensington Palace staff. This was around the

same time as a *Telegraph* story about the “garbage patch” Marks & Spencer tights she berated an assistant for buying instead of a pair from upmarket brand Welford. Like most of these tales, this was not true. In fact, a bemused Kensington Palace staffer even showed me their text message exchange with Meghan, who had thanked them for rushing out to High Street Kensington to buy tights from M&S. As the only reporter close to the people working directly with the couple at the time, it was easy for me to see the manipulation for exactly what it was. As I was completely fine with calling it out, my daily reporting often differed from what was in the papers, which quickly put a target on my back, too.

This period was the birth of “Duchess Difficult”—one of the many nicknames given to Meghan by the Palace and tabloids over the years. “Megain” (because it’s all about “me,” a royal insider told society bible *Tatler*), “Narcissistic sociopath,” and “Degree wife” (this one supposedly by a senior royal because they felt her marriage would only last the length of a British university degree—three years) are a few others. Inside the Palace was no different to a school playground, except this time the bullies had reporters on speed dial.

For women of color, particularly those of African or Caribbean heritage, the trope of the difficult, angry, emotional woman is a familiar one. The repeated use of “Duchess Difficult” in tabloid reports is typical behavior by large sections of mainstream media, which often use divisive and inciting language—such as *drama queen*, *diva*, *gold digger*, *aggressive*, *bully*—to describe Black women, particularly those who have found success. Just ask the likes of Beyoncé, Michelle Obama, and Serena Williams, who have all been described in the press using similar terms over the years. These labels are why their life experiences, no matter how awful, are often met with little or no sympathy. “Calling someone the b-word, labeling them as difficult, it’s often a way to insult and dismiss someone,” Meghan explained in her 2022 Spotify podcast, *Archetypes*. “It becomes a way to take their power away, keep them in their place. A lot of times it’s tied to the very women who have power and agency.”

Palace officials had every opportunity to mitigate some of the attacks and defang some of the dog-whistling in the press, but instead they stayed silent. It was worse behind closed doors. Some aides and staff found the name-calling funny—a few even believed Meghan got what was coming to her. One former aide shared with me that a colleague told them Meghan

“kind of deserved it . . . for making our lives hell” during the wedding planning. By “hell,” the former Palace employee explained, “they basically meant she had opinions. People didn’t like that. They wanted Meghan to just go with everything that was suggested and not create any additional work. It was a combination of her not conforming with how women marrying into the family are expected to behave and certain individuals just being lazy.”

The destructive symbiosis between the Palace and the press grew worse with time. Joining the growing list of negative stories about the duchess were new reports about issues with staff. The departure of Melissa Toubati, a Kensington Palace assistant for both of the Sussexes, was the first of many. A report in the *Daily Mail* in October 2018 revealed that the thirty-nine-year-old was leaving her post after just six months. It was accompanied by anonymous quotes (provided by a Kensington Palace aide), which told the paper, “Melissa is a hugely talented person. She played a pivotal role in the success of the Royal Wedding and will be missed by everyone in the Royal Household.” When later reports suggested that Meghan had reduced Toubati to “tears” and she’d been driven out of her job, Kensington Palace, including Jason Knauf, refused to comment to anyone on or off the record.

When I wrote in detail about the assistant’s departure in *Finding Freedom*, it was intriguing to see how quickly and thoroughly the Palace defended her, from the Palace’s positive briefings all the way to a call I received in March 2021 from a senior Buckingham Palace communications aide, after I reported details of the Sussexes’ side of the story on air. “Omid, I need you to remember that there is a human being at the other end of these claims,” they said. “Melissa has been very upset . . . Please remember that words have very real consequences.”

Words do indeed have consequences, but it felt slightly rich coming from the same institution that tacitly permitted cruel nicknames and did little to protect one of their own from a deluge of hateful and damaging reporting. As the racism and threats escalated, I was stunned by their inability to pick up the phone and ask the many journalists, “royal experts,” and columnists who were attacking Meghan what had been asked of me.

The pile-on took Meghan to a place she had never been before—contemplating suicide in early 2019. “I just didn’t want to be alive anymore,” she said. “That was a very clear and real and frightening

constant thought.” But when she turned to the institution for help, potentially at a facility, she was told it would not be a good look for the Firm and was instead advised to lie low so the papers would give her a break. She responded that she’d left the house only twice in the previous four months.

Her supposedly “private” meeting with Samantha Carruthers, the Palace’s head of HR, surfaced as Palace gossip within a matter of weeks. Various staff at Kensington Palace, Clarence House, and Buckingham Palace all tittle-tattled about Meghan’s personal crisis, and the chatter even reached some of the reporters in the royal rota. There were few who were sympathetic, and even fewer who did or said anything to help. “The feeling was that she needed to develop a thicker skin,” a former Palace staffer recently told me.

The institutional response was regrettably predictable. Instead of lending a hand, they gave her the company line, requiring her to demonstrate some of that clichéd stiff upper lip and suffer in silence, all part of a compulsory effort to protect the company brand. The direction from the Palace was, “Don’t say anything,” Harry said in the *Harry & Meghan* docuseries. “As far as the family was concerned, everything she was put through, they were put through as well. Like, ‘My wife had to go through that, so why should your girlfriend be treated any differently, why should you get special treatment?’ And I said, ‘The difference here is the race element.’”

The Palace’s obvious indifference to Meghan’s predicament sent an undeniable message to people of color everywhere. Even a person of color like Meghan—an admittedly white-passing, and privileged biracial woman—is still subject to racial bias and gaslighting in a publicly funded institution that is globally celebrated by leaders and kingmakers. The royal establishment’s reluctance to speak out against the racism, or to at least protect a victim of it among their own ranks, indicates how retrograde thinking still poisons the heart of this often-revered family operation.

Contrary to ridiculous reports and endless internet gossip, Meghan and I didn’t know each other before she entered stage right into the royal family drama. Other than a brief red-carpet encounter at a fashion event in 2015 (one I doubt she would even remember), she knew as much about me as she did the rest of the royal press pack. Though I had enjoyed covering the royals for more than five years before Meghan’s arrival, the majority of my



work was largely focused on the family's philanthropic endeavors and picture-worthy milestones. I was an *Us Weekly* editor at the time, and the American appetite for glowing coverage of the House of Windsor's younger members meant that I devoted acres of pages to William and Kate's exciting new lives and Harry's journey as a young royal. Given that I wanted to maintain strong access to their world and work, this approach suited me just fine. Back then, the royal family—alongside the Kardashians—were the outlet's number one franchise for its millions of readers. It's why at one point more than a quarter (all positive) of its fifty-two annual covers was dedicated to the royals. And Kensington Palace loved the arrangement, too, always helping me with reporting and even working closely on a number of standalone spin-off publications.

It was the arrival of *Suits* actress Meghan Markle that increased my personal interest in the next chapters of the royal story. Here was a smart, accomplished biracial American woman, every bit the confident, optimistic Californian, joining a thousand-year-old family of hereditary power and a staid institution not exactly known for its openness and tolerance. As a younger, U.K.-born mixed-race journalist who covered the royals day in, day out, I knew this was a significant moment in British and royal history and that Meghan's journey was going to be fascinating and far from easy. A fairy tale this was not.

As I observed many British outlets turn a blind eye or struggle to recognize the thinly veiled racism and bigotry that ran rife through their newspapers and magazines, and as I watched the Palace stand by and say nothing in response, I decided to cover Meghan's journey more objectively, but also from a vantage point closer to her reality on the ground. Hers was an important story to tell. And thanks to connections in the entertainment industry, her former world, I had sources on both sides to provide deeper insight—something the reporters at the papers didn't have at the time. Working only for American media outlets (a decision I made early on in my career), from *Good Morning America* to ABC News to *Harper's Bazaar*, also meant I was lucky enough to be part of more diverse and inclusive teams than one would find in most British newsrooms (only 8 percent of the country's journalism workforce is non-white, and the majority of those aren't in senior positions). These were colleagues who consistently understood and wholeheartedly supported my approach to the job. Back on home shores the response was vastly different. My coverage offering both

sides of the story—and an empathetic approach to the journey of a mixed-race woman in the royal institution—was met with criticism and attacks from the press. The likes of the *Mail*, *Telegraph*, and *Express* hastily resorted to name-calling (*mouthpiece* and *cheerleader* being two of their many favorites), and it soon became clear that the presence of a journalist offering a different take enraged them. While other royal reporters quietly got on with their jobs, I found myself dealing with tabloid reporters digging into every possible aspect of my life and, more disturbingly, harassing my family. This type of bullying had two main aims: to diminish my journalistic credentials (and therefore the strength of my reporting) and get back at me for calling out misleading and racially insensitive coverage.

My reporting on Harry and Meghan's story radically and quickly shifted my own social media landscape, too. As a journalist I was no stranger to a heated letter or negative comment here and there, but this was the first time I was the target of regular racially motivated hate. The day the *Daily Mail* started referring to me as "British-Iranian" (despite having never pointed out the ethnicity of other royal correspondents), the personal attacks gassed up, initiating daily tweets that told me I had no right to be speaking about "our" British royals. And as the online vitriol toward Meghan got worse, so did it toward me:

*"Fuck off back home paki"*

*"MI6 should keep an eye on this terrorist"*

*"Needs to be driven through a Paris tunnel"*

*"Show respect to the monarch who let you stay in this country in the first place"*

*"Camel jockey who needs to worry about his own country"*

This is just a minuscule slice of the daily tweets, direct messages, and online comments I receive. I won't bore you with the hundreds of variations of messages from furious royalists telling me to kill myself.

As for Meghan, even in the early days, the ugliness was inescapable. In January 2018, the partner of a right-wing populist political party leader was exposed for sending racist text messages about Meghan. In leaked WhatsApp messages, Jo Marney—girlfriend of U.K. Independence Party leader Henry Bolton—claimed Harry's "black American" fiancée will "taint" the royal family with "her seed" and pave the way for a "black king." She continued, "This is Britain. Not Africa." Other extremists shared similar sentiments, many emboldened by the stream of subtle digs in newspaper opinion pieces and on daytime television. Six former

Metropolitan Police officers, including one who went on to be employed by the British Home Office, were charged with sending offensive and racist messages, including slurs about Meghan, in a private WhatsApp group they started in August 2018. And a British court also heard how two white-supremacist podcasters said Prince Harry should be “judicially killed for treason” for marrying Meghan, and called their son, Archie, “an abomination that should be put down.” The Welshmen, who have since been convicted of terror offenses, claimed their *Black Wolf Radio* podcast comments were simply “freedom of speech.” That old chestnut.

By the beginning of 2019, Meghan had become the most trolled person in the world. As she pointed out on an episode of the *Teenager Therapy* podcast, for eight months of this grim period she was pregnant or on maternity leave. “What was able to just be manufactured and churned out, it’s almost unsurvivable,” Meghan said. “That’s so big you can’t think of what that feels like, because I don’t care if you’re fifteen or twenty-five, if people are saying things about you that aren’t true, what that does to your mental and emotional health is so damaging.”

Again, the Palace did virtually nothing to help, either behind the scenes or in their public communications. During the peak of it in late summer 2018, I received a call that I thought was from the couple’s head of communications at the time, Sara Latham. We had been texting back and forth about an upcoming royal engagement. “Hi, Omid!” a female voice chirped. It was different to Latham’s northwestern American accent. “It’s Meghan.” I put my iced coffee down, not quite sure if the call was a prank. “We saw your name keep coming up on the phone . . . and I just wanted to say hi, see how you’re doing.” Sara had mentioned to her that I was dealing with my own online harassment and threats.

Though I appreciated the conversation, it was also deflating. Here was someone checking in on a journalist she still only really knew through a byline, when so many of the people in her royal orbit—including those on payroll—wouldn’t do the same for her. It said so much about the state of the Firm—their ineptitude at protecting one of their own and their failure to comprehend the scope of the damage done because of their silence.

Later that same day, I spoke with a senior member of their team, and they were brutally honest about Meghan’s situation. “She will give you the impression that all is fine but it’s clearly taking its toll . . . It’s really bad,

Omid,” they admitted, almost tearful themselves. “Without support there’s little I can do, either.”

The Firm’s protective shield—so often used when royals are in crisis, including Prince Andrew’s never-ending ordeal—was never offered up for Meghan. And the system wields that shield whenever it’s deemed necessary. It’s impossible to forget the time Kensington Palace issued an official statement in defense of Kate after a plastic surgeon had suggested to a newspaper that she, then the Duchess of Cambridge, had “baby Botox” injections to reduce wrinkles. And when Charles and Camilla received a barrage of negative comments on Clarence House Instagram posts after the premiere of the fourth season of *The Crown*, aides wasted no time in switching off the ability to comment on posts.

“They didn’t see Meghan as important enough to care for—simple as that,” said a friend of the duchess. “No matter who asked, no matter what was pointed out, no matter how loudly she told them, or we told them, that she was struggling . . . she was expected to shut up and deal with it quietly.” And Harry said, “I thought my family would help but every single ask, request, warning, whatever, got met with total silence or total neglect. I felt totally helpless.”

It’s revealing that the one family member who has emerged as the most informed and honest about the Firm’s racial issues—and his own—is the one who left the institution altogether. Prince Harry’s racial awakening has its own story arc, but it’s worth remembering that he is the first royal in history to sincerely acknowledge their white privilege, their ancestral role in racial injustices, and, most importantly, their continuing bias and racism, unconscious or not. It was a journey that started the day he met Meghan but one that took on significance and meaning after he left the confines of the palace.

He also called out his own family for not taking on the racist attacks hurled at their own, even linking this institutionalized reticence to Britain’s long history of imperialism. “For us, for this union and the specifics around [Meghan’s] race, there was an opportunity—many opportunities—for my family to show some public support,” he has said.

Support did come from less expected areas. In October 2019, a Labour party political candidate, Holly Lynch, drafted an open letter regarding the racial attacks on Meghan that was later signed by seventy-two female politicians. With no illusions, it resolutely stated: “Stories and headlines

have represented an invasion of your privacy and have sought to cast aspersions about your character, without any good reason as far as we can see . . . We are calling out what can only be described as outdated, colonial undertones to some of these stories.” After hearing news of the letter, Harry told a friend, “It’s more than my family ever did . . . The silence disappointed me.”

The Firm has yet to fully learn how to become more initiative-taking when faced with race-related allegations, particularly after Harry and Meghan left Oprah Winfrey speechless over certain family members’ “concerns and conversations” about Archie’s skin color. The issue may have later been briefly discussed between Meghan and Charles over letter (and this is why the incidents were not repeated in the Sussexes’ 2022 Netflix series or in *Spare*), but the Palace’s initial response was not a swift one—they would instead wait until the interview’s U.K. broadcast aired the following day before planning anything. The family, a Palace aide told me, was keen to hear what the nation thought and see which way the wind was blowing in the court of public opinion. If the Sussexes—whose overall popularity in the country had been on a downward trajectory since they stepped away from their roles—received minimal sympathy from the British public, they would get minimal from the institution, too. After morning television hosts mocked Meghan’s stories, newspapers called the couple liars, and a nationwide poll found that more than a third of Britons (36 percent) had more sympathy with the royal family (compared to just 22 percent for the Sussexes), the Palace issued a carefully worded statement to mirror the public’s mixed reaction. “The issues raised, particularly that of race, are concerning,” Buckingham Palace included in a sixty-one-word riposte issued on behalf of the Queen. “While some recollections may vary, they are taken very seriously and will be addressed by the family privately.”

Those three words, *recollections may vary*, artfully submarined the issue by casting it as a he said–she said situation, effectively throwing the hounds off the scent without any mea culpas or promises of investigations. With a large swathe of the public instantly taking the side of the royal family, it felt like mission accomplished for Prince William’s then communications secretary Christian Jones and private secretary Jean-Christophe Gray, who helped devise the caveat during multiple drafts of the statement. They worked closely with Charles’s chief press aide, Julian Payne, on the perfect response “to plant that seed of doubt in people’s

minds,” said a former staffer, who was also involved in communications efforts at the time. “The last thing they wanted was for people to start pointing fingers at the bosses [William and Kate].” Someone else also keen to protect the family’s reputation was Kate. Years later, *The Times*’ royal correspondent, Valentine Low, reported that the then Duchess of Cambridge was the one to suggest that the statement needed something to reflect how the institution “did not accept a lot of what had been said . . . [She] clearly made the point, ‘History will judge this statement and unless this phrase or a phrase like it is included, everything that they have said will be taken as true.’” A source later told me, “She was really passionate about defending the family.”

Two days later, when confronted by a reporter outside an East London school, Prince William helped reiterate the statement’s point, telling TV cameras, “We are very much not a racist family.” It was an unplanned response, but William—who admitted to a press secretary earlier in the day that he was “nervous” about stepping out—was keen to avoid any finger-pointing.

More than two years on and, other than Charles, no one in the family has spoken about the Archie conversations with the Sussexes. Meanwhile, the Palace has been on a mission to shift itself away from the perception they represent a racist institution. Less than three weeks after the Oprah interview, “royal sources” (in this case, Buckingham Palace’s head of communications speaking anonymously) confirmed plans to appoint a diversity chief, with the “full support” of the family. It was the first time that the royal establishment came close to admitting the important need for the institution’s inner workings to be diverse and representative of modern-day society. “We are listening and learning to get this right,” I was told at the time.

Unsurprisingly, it turned out to be lip service. Just three months later—after sharing a below-average employment diversity statistic in their 2020–2021 financial report (the first time such information had been publicly shared)—the Palace admitted it would be shelving plans for the diversity role. Though the position has not been completely ruled out for the future, a Palace source revealed that all staff were instead emailed a link to a “diversity survey” with tasks such as ranking (on a scale from “Strongly Disagree” to “Strongly Agree”) statements such as “This organisation really values diversity” and “I feel I am respected by my colleagues.” A former

household employee scoffed, “Lord only knows what was done with the results . . . We never heard about it since.”

Change is not impossible. In recent years the Dutch royal family has led by example when it comes to addressing their own uncomfortable histories. In 2022, King Willem-Alexander of the Netherlands commissioned independent research into the role of his family in the country’s colonial past. The royal personally hired three Dutch historians and a human rights expert to spend exactly three years on the study, including tracing links to the Dutch West India Company, which operated ships that trafficked an estimated six hundred thousand people into slavery over centuries. In tandem, the Dutch government apologized for the country’s role in slavery from the seventeenth to nineteenth centuries and devoted €200 million to a fund promoting awareness of the colonial power’s role in slavery and €27 million to open a slavery museum. The king followed up with a powerful speech with his own apology on behalf of the family.

In April 2023, King Charles took the British royal family’s first baby step toward acknowledging the British monarchy’s own role in the slave trade by “supporting” a research project investigating the family’s ancestral links with transatlantic slavery. It followed the *Guardian*’s publication of a previously unseen document from 1689 clearly showing that the slave-trading Royal African Company transferred shares in the company to King William III. The collaborative doctoral partnership between the University of Manchester and Historic Royal Palaces (a charity that manages unoccupied royal residences) is allowing historian Camilla de Koning access to specific archives for a PhD thesis on the subject. Though de Koning’s collaborative work, which began in October 2022 and will conclude in 2026, would have happened with or without Charles’s support, his public show of interest is a start.

As I finished the pages of this book, a spokesperson for King Charles said the institution is still “committed” to improving diversity among household employees, particularly at the senior level. The monarch has, for example, heavily leaned on his former press secretary, Eva Omaghomi, who is now the director of community engagement, to work more closely with minority groups in the United Kingdom and across the Commonwealth. Charles, too, said a source, is planning to do more community-focused work. In August 2022, Charles guest-edited *The Voice*—Britain’s only national Black newspaper—and spoke about the importance of “unity

through diversity.” In a letter properly acknowledging Black History Month in the United Kingdom, he wrote, “My hope is that we can consistently preserve and celebrate the histories of people of African, Caribbean and Asian heritage in Britain, and to expand this beyond Black History Month. Doing so will recognize the rich diversity of cultures and different minority ethnic groups that make this country so special—and in many ways unique.” While criticized as “hollow words” by some of its readers, Charles does have a history of supporting minority groups in Britain. In 1976 he launched the Prince’s Trust, which has gone on to give thousands of marginalized young people, many from Black communities, financial grants to set up their own enterprises and fulfill their potential. Before they found success, entrepreneurs such as menswear designer Ozwald Boateng, actors including Idris Elba and David Oyelowo, and many Black-owned businesses received support and grants from the charity’s various programs.

But it would be hasty to unreservedly believe that real change is on the horizon for the wider royal establishment just yet. In 2023, it was reported that 9.7 percent of employees in Buckingham Palace were from ethnic minority backgrounds (up from 9.6 percent the previous year) and Kensington Palace employed 16.3 percent (up from 13.6 percent). The numbers appear to be ticking up in the right direction, but a closer look at the senior staffers around royal family members reveals a predominantly white lineup (exclusively, in the case of communications team members and private secretaries at William and Kate’s household). It depressingly shows that the majority of non-white employees are at junior levels or working in more service industry-type positions (such as the hundreds of housekeeping staff helping maintain royal residences). There are also very few women in senior roles across both royal households. As for the Lord Chamberlain’s committee, the five department heads who form the core of it (the Lord Chamberlain, the King’s private secretary, the Keeper of the Privy Purse, the Master of the Household, and the office’s comptroller) are all older white men.

It’s a deep-seated problem, one that has gone unrectified for centuries and one that will take a long time to change. In the twenty-first century, baby steps aren’t enough, and incrementalism won’t appease recent cultural demands for revolutionary-size change. And it all starts by taking a hard look in the mirror and recognizing all the subtle and insidious ways racism rots away at the center. “Everything they said was going to happen hasn’t



happened,” Harry commented in a January 2023 interview. “I’ve always been open to wanting to help them understand their part in it . . . For me, the difference is unconscious bias and racism, but if you are called out for unconscious bias you need to make that right, and you have the opportunity and the choice to. But if you choose not to, then that rapidly becomes something much more serious.” To put it another way, consciously ignoring or trying to brush away the once unconscious bias is, in and of itself, inherently racist.

The Firm’s incapacity—and seeming disinclination at times—to initiate substantive change or even take a truly committed and objective stance on their own history shows a disregard for what the twenty-first century’s unstoppable currents demand: cycle breaking and transformation. It demonstrates an unwillingness to truly accept, embrace, and protect what the Duchess of Sussex’s inclusion stood for beyond palace walls—how important it was for the millions of Black, Brown, and non-white people throughout Britain and the predominantly non-white Commonwealth to finally see a little of themselves represented in the monarchy because of Meghan’s presence, her background, and her union with Harry. Her role in the royal story symbolized a crack in a glass ceiling that many thought was impossible to touch. But instead of helping her when she needed it most, the Palace discounted her trauma, claiming in a calibrated, well-timed statement that when it comes to Meghan’s experiences, well, “recollections may vary.” Her story didn’t matter.

If Meghan’s presence didn’t alter anything within the royal family or the institution of the monarchy, then perhaps nothing will. The Firm doesn’t like to be told what to do—acclimation and change are not practices and values they have historically embraced. And a deferential press let them get away with it all, and, at times, has made it worse. The family’s past will forever discolor their legacy, and their refusal to comprehensively address much of it only deepens the stain. By their very existence, the royal family as a symbol perpetuates the notion of empire and the class system. As a result, it’s almost impossible to separate the three. To do so would require a full-scale operation geared toward redressing the Firm in modern colors and populating the institution with diverse opinions and forward-thinking ideas, including a new governing transparency. It’s a tall order for a monarchy that stretches back to 1066, and one that desperately relies on tradition, mystery, and memories of the grand old times for its survival. There are just too

many blackamoor pieces and tainted historical artifacts that can be neither retained nor explained.

# 8

## Gloves On

Prince William, Heir to the Throne

*If you're not careful, duty can sort of weigh you down an awful lot at a very early age and I think you've got to develop into the duty role.*

—Prince William, 2016, BBC News interview

*"I am growing up," she thought . . . "I am losing some illusions . . . perhaps to acquire others," and she descended among the tombs where the bones of her ancestors lay.*

—Virginia Woolf, *Orlando*

A crusader is born. After the Sussexes' allegations and William and Kate's Caribbean debacle exposed the systemic discrimination within the royal institution, Prince William took the mantle in the Firm's effort to distance itself from the continued assertions and presumptions that the royal family is a racist one. Immediately following the bigoted remarks of his godmother, Lady Susan Hussey, at Queen Camilla's domestic violence event in November 2022, William hastened to rebuke her insensitive comments, even leapfrogging the Palace's response to do so. Motivated by both justified anger and atonement for the monarchy's recent blunders, William has now taken the campaign beyond palace walls to admonish and correct in other areas to set himself apart.

On March 18, 2023, he penned a letter to address disturbing claims from a youth football league manager in the north England town of Bradford. The manager had written to the national Football Association (FA) that many of his players—some as young as seven—are routinely subjected to racial abuse and threats of violence from adults on the

sidelines, and he asked that the association do something about it. After an internal discussion, board members decided that William, the FA's president-designate of seventeen years (an honorary title more than anything else), should be the one to publicly press the association's executives to take action. The Prince of Wales wrote that he was "deeply concerned" and demanded that those involved "must be held accountable." Not missing an opportunity to use the proverbial megaphone, William declared in his letter that "racism and abuse [have] no place in our society" and "abhorrent behaviour of this nature must stop now and all those responsible be held to account."

It's not the first time William has called out racism on the pitch. On three occasions he has advocated for eliminating racism in football, mainly at the higher levels of Britain's Premier League and on international fields. In 2021, he joined a global chorus that condemned the racial abuse of England players after the team's defeat in the Euro 2020 final, saying he was "sickened" by it and demanded it stop. As president of BAFTA, the British version of the American Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences, he also used their 2020 awards ceremony to decry the lack of diversity in the world of film and television: "We find ourselves talking again about the need to do more to ensure diversity in the sector and in the awards process—that simply cannot be right in this day and age." His reproach, along with those of many other public figures, hit the mark—the 2021 BAFTA nominees were slightly more diverse (although in 2023 it was criticized for falling behind once again, with a winners' list dominated by white cast and crew members). While the royal institution has an embarrassingly poor record overall when it comes to racial issues, these organizations in which William holds honorary roles can't afford to be seen as uninterested or unengaged—meaning the prince can't sit back in silence like other family members.

Plus, said a Kensington Palace source, William is keen to be seen embracing his role as the young, forward-looking heir to the throne. As a close confidante permitted to speak for a 2021 *Sunday Times* profile said, William believes "the public look to him to keep royal work looking modern . . . [He is] carving out his relationship with diverse communities . . . as a way of doing things now that will help a smooth transition when the time comes." It's why in the past year his royal engagements have included a focus on often-overlooked groups, such as

visiting the Hayes Muslim Centre in West London to support (and personally donate to) Britain's earthquake relief efforts for Turkey and Syria. In terms of public opinion and optics, it's a win-win for the next king.

While William is certainly solicitous and tolerant in his public role, a more complicated portrait emerges from his private life. What makes his recent civic outcries on racial issues look a tad opportunistic is the fact that he has yet to clear the air with his own brother regarding those cratering accusations of unconscious bias within the family. When the world watched Prince William proclaim "We are very much not a racist family" after the Sussex-Oprah sit-down, no one knew that, behind closed doors, some of the accusations his family was dealing with came from conversations about the Sussexes' unborn son that he and his wife were well aware of. Privately, the issue had been addressed by Meghan and Charles in the letters they exchanged in the aftermath of the interview, but the King also felt the Duchess of Sussex should discuss her feelings with the Waleses, too. Two years on and neither Harry nor Meghan has received any word on the matter from William or Kate, whose reported push for a "recollections may vary"—style clause to be added to Buckingham Palace's public response suggests the princess in particular may not agree with the Sussexes' words. "The silence has caused a lot of confusion and upset," said a source close to the family.

William's handling of the situation reveals a deep divide between his personal life and his approach to the role of heir to the throne. The precarious duality of a high-profile public figure is, of course, nothing new or original to Prince William—a private self often struggles with the public mask, particularly when under duress. With the heir, it's the stark differences between William, Prince of Wales, and Willy, husband, brother, and friend, that place his divided nature in such high relief. Composed on the pitch but unpredictable off, the prince has always had a wall between his observable life and his often very different private one.

In recent years his public persona has taken the hardest hits from persistent online rumors about his private life, which hound him to this day. Although this particular scuttlebutt continues to find its way back as a trending topic on social media, has been tweeted about by multiple public figures, and surfaces as speculation in U.S. tabloids, few British outlets—and zero royal books—have actually delved into the rumors surrounding the Waleses and the Marchioness of Cholmondeley.

Until proven otherwise, rumors are just rumors, but anatomizing the handling of this gossip reveals how hearsay can shape and distort the future king's story. As we know, tittle-tattle has long played a significant role in the history of the royal family. If it weren't for the false tabloid tale that Charles "snuck" a nineteen-year-old Diana onto the Royal Train in 1980, Prince Philip may not have joined the push to get his son—who barely knew the young Spencer at this point—to commit so quickly. The blonde spotted stepping into the carriage was, in fact, the wife of one of Charles's staff who was traveling with the heir, but the mere perception that the innocent, young (and virginal) Spencer was sneaking around to cavort with the Prince of Wales was deemed mortifying by the Palace. The edict came down: either they were a proper couple or nothing at all.

Up until early March 2019, the gossip about Rose Hanbury was restricted to media circles, royal press pens (when aides weren't around, of course), and the society scene. But on March 21, *The Sun's* executive editor Dan Wootton broke the carefully worded news that the Duchess of Cambridge had "fallen out" with her "glamorous best friend" Rose and instructed William to "phase her out." The article, which referred to the British peeress as Kate's "rural rival," cryptically reported, "It is well known that Kate and Rose have had a terrible falling out. They used to be close but that is not the case anymore." Not included in the final edit for legal reasons, a former employee at the paper told me, was a host of other details. "It was all the newsroom could talk about," says the former staffer.

To royal followers, Rose was a somewhat familiar face. Long connected to aristocracy, her grandmother Lady Rose Lambert was a bridesmaid at her childhood friend Queen Elizabeth II's 1947 wedding to Prince Philip. After a stint as a model and political researcher for Conservative politician Michael Gove, it was announced in June 2009 that she was marrying film director (and former Prince Andrew classmate) David Rocksavage, better known as the 7th Marquess of Cholmondeley. The pair, who are twenty-three years apart in age, enjoyed a whirlwind romance and quickly welcomed twin boys four months after their wedding, and then a daughter in 2016. Home for the family of five is the palatial 107-room Houghton Hall in Norfolk, just ten minutes' drive from the Waleses' Anmer Hall residence (William's thirtieth birthday gift from the Queen). The neighbors soon became close friends.

In 1990, when Rocksavage was just thirty, he inherited the title of Lord Great Chamberlain, making him one of the six “great officers” of state present at the annual openings of Parliament and major royal ceremonies. In July 2017, Rose was photographed in an impressive tiara next to Prince Harry at a Buckingham Palace banquet for Queen Letizia of Spain’s state visit. The media’s interest in her and the rest of the couple’s Norfolk social set—a tight-knit community with generational ties and unimaginable wealth, including pals William and Rosie Van Cutsem; Tom and Polly Cook, the Earl and Countess of Leicester; Laura Fellowes (William’s cousin on Diana’s side of the family); Lady Laura Marsham and James Meade (an old Eton pal of William’s)—quickly saw them nicknamed the “Turnip Toffs.” *Turnip* because most of the set own patches of arable farmland across England and also because Norfolk (where they all have homes) is well-known for its turnip crops; *toffs* is British slang for a group of upper-class types.

It was *The Sun*’s story that prompted a blaze of Twitter gossip, but the *Daily Mail* threw a little water on the flames just two days after. The paper’s Palace-friendly columnist, Richard Kay, reported that Kate had not fallen out with Rose and was “the real victim of aristocratic dinner party gossip.” The “extraordinary” rumors were simply “grist to the mill for the cause of republicanism, bringing a glow to the hearts of anti-monarchists everywhere.” He went on to claim the gossip threatened to “disrupt [the couple’s] domestic tranquillity.” William, Kay added, bears “all the hallmarks of a contented man” thanks to Kate. In other words, nothing to see here. Move on.

At this time, Christian Jones, the former press officer to the chancellor of the exchequer (Britain’s equivalent to the U.S. secretary of the treasury), was the head of communications at Kensington Palace, a role he served for both the Cambriges and the Sussexes when they were still sharing an office. I was deep in the middle of *Finding Freedom*, and Jones was helping with some of the information for that book. As the rumors began to spread, he called me, worried about how out of hand the gossip was getting. “Oh my God, I actually had to ask if they were true,” he said. Jones had raised the issue in person with the prince and his private secretary, Simon Case, in a closed-door meeting at Kensington Palace. William, he said, was furious when the question came up, and he vehemently said it was not true.

By March 26, hashtags were trending on social media for the fourth day in a row. And things were about to pick up steam when British columnist and *Times* staff writer Giles Coren—coincidentally a close friend of Camilla’s son, Tom Parker Bowles—tweeted in reply to someone who had asked about the *Mail*’s recent coverage that the rumors were true. “Everyone knows,” he tweeted. He deleted it within two hours, after he had been put under “pressure,” sources said. (Coren didn’t speak about his loose-lipped comment until three years later, when he wrote in his newspaper column, “Can I please just say that, while it was far from being the worst thing I have ever tweeted, I was JOKING . . . I’d had a boozy lunch talking to fellow hacks about the story and in the cab home went online to blurt.”)

Less than a week after Coren’s tweet, U.S. tabloid *InTouch* ran a story that took the gossip one step further. The magazine has never been known for its credibility (in its twenty-one-year lifetime, Jennifer Aniston has been “PREGNANT WITH TWINS!” or “BACK ON!” with Brad Pitt about fifty times), but it opened the floodgates for other lowbrow publications and gossip. “It’s really bad isn’t it,” a worried Jones texted me. Palace lawyers at Harbottle & Lewis sent letters out to a handful of newspapers, including *The Times*, stating, “In addition to being false and highly damaging, the publication of false speculation in respect of our client’s private life also constitutes a breach of his privacy pursuant to Article 8 of the European Convention to Human Rights.”

To many royal watchers, the British media’s unusually cautious approach to the story was extremely out of character. It’s fair to say that if there were wild rumors about Prince Harry, they would have remained front-page news and fodder for commentary for weeks—even if there was no proof to back them up. (In fact, in July 2023, when the unreliable gossip site Radar Online claimed that the Sussexes’ marriage was “on the rocks,” many U.K. outlets jumped on the story without even asking the couple’s representatives for a comment.) The institution would have handled them differently, too. “It’s inevitable,” a former Kensington Palace staff member reflected. “There is a greater level of protection around the heir than the spare or any other family member, other than the monarch. It’s just the way things go.”

For William, there was no “take it on the chin” advice like Meghan received during her media onslaughts. In fact, behind the scenes, William



remained in the loop. A senior Palace source said at the time, “We *have* to make this stop.” And it did, briefly. As journalists did their best to find details that could possibly back up the rumor, Rose’s name stayed out of the press for two months. Even when she attended the June 2019 state dinner at Buckingham Palace for President Donald Trump, headlines merely focused on her outfit. Kate, claimed sources, ignored it all but was “uncomfortable” with the ongoing chatter.

At that moment in time, *The Sun* was less favorable in their royal coverage. On June 13, the paper published a carefully worded update, alleging the cause of Kate’s “fallout” with Rose, which they claimed “started because [Rose] had one or two suppers with William in Norfolk when Kate was away. But it was hardly as if they were meeting behind Kate’s back—of course she knew they were getting together. And Kate was grateful that a good friend and neighbour like Rose was there to entertain William.”

Although the print edition of the paper was out in the wild, the online story didn’t remain unaltered for long. Ten minutes after going live, the article was updated with the additional words added to the end of that final quote: “. . . as a platonic friend.” Palace lawyers then contacted the tabloid, and within a few hours the two sentences about those alleged dinners were erased. A week later, the entire story was removed. This was the last time the tabloid tried to cover Rose and Kate’s fallout. Too difficult, a former editor there told me. Plus, they added, “there was a nice stream of Harry and Meghan stuff coming in, so [the editors] are happy.” In fact, it was during this run of Rose stories that the Sussexes—who started their own, separate office at Buckingham Palace in the middle of the gossip run—noticed an uptick in negative or revealing stories about themselves in the *Mail* and *The Sun*. “Funny how [it’s] back on us,” one of the couple’s Palace staff told me at the time. Harry even wondered if someone at the Palace had helped move certain journalists on to other stories—and away from the Rose gossip. He would later find out he was right.

Fast-forward to 2023 and rumors like these still do the rounds, most recently resurfacing as a trending topic after it was announced that Rose’s son Lord Oliver Cholmondeley was going to be one of King Charles’s pages of honor alongside Prince George at the May 6 coronation. But despite internet lore, there is no “super injunction” on unreported details and there is no proof of unreported information being out there. “It’s a

reminder that while certain media allies can be controlled, the internet is a whole beast of its own,” said a former Palace staffer.

A friend of the Prince of Wales sympathized: “Dealing with nasty, untrue rumors . . . wouldn’t you be filled with rage? It’s been very difficult for him. And for Kate. But I truly believe these things make you stronger.”

The public-facing William appears levelheaded and confident, often to the point of staged—he shows up at the optimal time, asks the right questions, and gives carefully considered answers. A calm and collected character is what the system demands of the heir to the throne, particularly after all the recent turmoil and change, and the Prince of Wales plays it to a tee. As the heir, he’s finally fully embraced his roles and responsibilities at Royal Family, Inc. Many people I’ve spoken to who know him believe William comes by this honestly. It is said that after maturing into his position in the Firm, the prince now aims to follow in the Queen’s footsteps. A source within his team at Kensington Palace says that, as an adult in his forties, the former Duke of Cambridge has “fully embraced the path that he’s on. Just like the Queen he has learned the importance of duty coming before anything else.” The counter to this is that the Firm incrementally institutionalized Prince William—the unyielding pressure from the establishment wore him down into a stoic acceptance of his fate as the next great hope for the monarchy. The truth is probably somewhere in the middle, but, regardless, for public consumption, the system has churned out a disciplined king in waiting.

It’s a different story when the stage lights go down, however. While William is a lot like the late Queen in the way he outwardly embodies the institution, when his temper flares behind closed doors, he more closely resembles his famously ill-tempered father. “William is a man that likes to get things done, done quickly, done efficiently . . . In the process of making that happen he can definitely be sharp,” said a former aide. Another former Kensington Palace staffer agreed: “He’s capable of having constructive conversations, to receive criticism but . . . there’s a spikiness when dealing with him, too.” Added a third, “You don’t want to be the bearer of bad news around him. He’s quick to get fed up and blame.”

Biographer Robert Jobson wrote in his 2022 portrait of the prince, *William at 40: The Making of a Modern Monarch*, “[William’s] fiery temper can blow up at any time—usually when he’s frustrated or when it comes to issues regarding his family. Even senior members of his circle will ‘check

which way the wind is blowing’ before becoming too self-assured in his presence or raising problematic issues that might be better addressed at another time. Other insiders confide that William can be an emotional character who is, on occasion, ‘difficult to handle.’”

As the next King, a role that requires mental balance and a phlegmatic disposition, William’s emotional volatility could be one of his greatest challenges. Much of Queen Elizabeth II’s success was her ability to administer a firm grip on her emotions and compartmentalize when necessary. William certainly values this, and he has long championed mental health awareness as one of his anchor issues. Alongside homelessness and environmental causes, he’s taken on the cause as a token of how he’ll modernize the monarchy as the next sovereign—virtue signaling for his upcoming reign and, once again, delineating his own style and values system from that of his father.

In 2016, William, Kate, and Harry launched Heads Together, a charity that aspires to “change the conversation on mental health.” The lightbulb moment occurred during drinks together in 2015. The three landed on it, and Kate wrote the idea on the back of a cigarette packet (although the Palace *loathes* this version of the story, preferring to say it was a paper napkin). Heads Together set out to destigmatize the hush-hush notion around talking about mental health and, largely down to Harry’s own candid confessions during its first year, succeeded in this. Although the organization—which falls under the Waleses’ Royal Foundation umbrella and is a partner with eight charities—is technically still up and running, it’s been more heads apart since Prince Harry’s 2020 departure. After all, it’s not lost on the public that Heads Together’s remaining mental health ambassadors, William and Kate, haven’t publicly or privately expressed any empathy for the Duke and Duchess of Sussex.

All this points to a marked change in Prince William. As he gets closer to the top job, in addition to his temper, there’s a colder side to him that some friends and also his brother, Harry, have described. For those who have followed him on the royal beat over the years, even his face tells the story—there is less smiling, and his frequently set jaw suggests inner storms could be occluding his sunnier side. My own experiences with William bear this out. Since meeting him in 2011, I’ve gone from being a friendly face at the many impersonal royal events and a welcome presence on long trips to being a perceived member of the enemy camp. In the early

days, on overseas trips, it was William who would often walk over to say hello or make jokes (such as ribbing me for my poor French skills in Canada). “I like the fact that you’re present [in the moment], that you’re clearly enjoying it and not over it like some of the others,” he confessed to me on a 2014 trip to Singapore. And I enjoyed covering his work. Professional, always “on,” and willing to make time for everyone, back then William was enjoyable to be around. But while my professional relationship with the Sussex team grew stronger, my Cambridge connection became fractured. There was a noticeable shift after the households divided and Harry and Meghan set up camp at Buckingham Palace in April 2019.

That summer, Christian Jones—who remained at Kensington Palace to oversee all the Cambridges’ media efforts—messed me out of the blue to say it would no longer be appropriate to socialize. Another aide later told me that William had requested this. As we approached 2020, I felt the growing strains on my working relationship with Kensington Palace, who were also much more guarded when it came to their own communication with the Sussex team at Buckingham Palace. I was still invited to the private briefings and announcements but, two months after returning from an October tour with the Sussexes in southern Africa, one of William’s aides revealed that William felt “uncomfortable” with my relationship with the Sussex team. The papers would often refer to me, incorrectly, as Harry and Meghan’s “pal,” another lie largely created to delegitimize the details I was sharing from sources close to the couple that often went against narratives that tabloids were reporting. This didn’t help the situation. A Kensington Palace aide said to me privately, “I’m not saying you need to pick a side, but you need to accept that there are sides in this.” When William and some of his aides then begged to see certain passages from *Finding Freedom* ahead of its August 2020 release and were told no, I could sense that this was a relationship past breaking point.

Because of the pandemic and the long run of virtual royal engagements, it had been almost eighteen months since I had been in the physical presence of the future King. But in July 2021, standing inches from the front end of his Range Rover, there we were, virtually eye to eye. I had just wrapped filming in Kensington Gardens for *Good Morning America* and, out of all the people, it was William’s moving car that I almost walked into outside the gates at Kensington Palace. It was my fault for being so engrossed in my phone, and I think both of us were a little surprised. I

mouthed an apology but his unimpressed stare from the driver's seat gave little away as we both paused for a very long second, though his perfunctory apology quickly brought an end to any awkwardness even if it was just a brief smile and a mutely mouthed "Sorry."

Uncomfortable encounters aside, stories about the real William are becoming more common, especially after Harry pulled the curtain back on his own experiences. William's combustible anger reached a boiling point when he physically assaulted his brother in 2019—an allegation from *Spare* the heir refuses to comment on. Harry recounts the moment when William shows up "piping hot" at the snug and storied Nottingham Cottage, a redbrick "grace-and-favor" residence on Kensington Palace grounds where Harry and Meghan lived until they relocated to Frogmore Cottage. According to Harry, William, in full "heir mode," was there to "lay down the law" about Meghan and her "difficult" behavior. Since its release, book reviewers and the media have pored over what happened next, but it's important to note that when Harry describes William grabbing him by the collar and knocking him to the floor, where bits of a smashed dog bowl lacerated and bruised his back, he prefaces it with "it all happened so fast. So very fast." Evidence of a smoldering fury turned violent, this lightning-quick assault rattled Harry to such an extent that he immediately called his therapist after ordering William to get out. What troubled him more than the violence was the look in William's eyes. "He wanted me to hit him back, but I chose not to," Harry later shared. "What was different here was the level of frustration, and I talk [in the book] about the 'red mist' that I had for so many years, and I saw this red mist in him."

As expected, many royal correspondents and Sussex haters (there are a lot of them!) rushed to paint William's attack as nothing more than "brothers being brothers." This may be true with children, but one doesn't expect this kind of behavior from the future King and head of the Church of England, who was thirty-seven at the time. "Far from seeming cold and unfeeling, William's desperate collar-grabbing bid to get through to Harry [showed] just how much love he has for his little brother. It made him look *edgy*," wrote the *Telegraph*'s royal editor Camilla Tominey, bizarrely sounding like the excuses of domestic abusers everywhere. Imagine if it were the other way around? People would be calling for criminal charges to be pressed against Harry or for his Sussex title to be taken away.

It would take a highly trained psychoanalyst to get to the bottom of Prince William's anger, but there are some well-documented triggers. Obviously, his ruptured relationship with his brother tops the list. "I actually love having him around," William once told me about Harry at a private Kensington Palace drinks reception (one of many that took place behind the scenes with the royal press pack). Being forced to walk behind their mother's coffin in 1997 surely solidified a connection between the two—they had to be there for each other in demanding situations like this, especially because their own father wasn't always looking out for them. William once said that he and Harry were "uniquely bonded because of what [they] went through" after their mother died. In a 2019 ITV documentary, Harry spoke about this fraternal bond, stating, "Look, we're brothers, we'll always be brothers. And we're certainly on different paths at the moment, but I'll always be there for him, as I know he'll always be there for me." He went on to say, "As brothers, you know, you have good days, you have bad days." Lately, it's been only bad days for the two, and it's a run that started years ago.

Though there had always been rivalry between the pair (not just as siblings but as members of the royal family), true cracks began to appear in 2016, when Prince Harry brought the California sun into the gray skies of his royal life. Meghan Markle's arrival was a jolt to the system, but William soon expressed concerns that Harry was moving too fast with someone who had lived a life so far removed from that of his brother. For William, Meghan was the living embodiment of an "outsider," and he believed Harry was swept up in her glamour and American *joie de vivre* to the point that he was refusing to acknowledge the rules and risks of managing a relationship within the institutional apparatus. At the expense of the family image, it was felt that Harry was rushing into something that had serious blowback potential.

As Harry continued to feel unsupported by William and the institution, the brotherly relationship went steadily downhill during the months that followed, and the more incendiary moments made headlines thanks to Palace leaks. By 2018, their father reportedly stepped in briefly to referee after Harry accused William of not doing enough to welcome Meghan into the family after their wedding. Charles convinced William and Kate to host the Sussexes for Christmas at Anmer Hall that year (their only holiday invite in the years they lived in the United Kingdom). The Band-Aid didn't

hold for long. Over time, William increasingly complained about Meghan to aides and family members. He didn't like how opinionated she was, how she spoke to his staff, and how much of her Markle family dramas were in the press. "William shifted away from acting like a brother and became more like someone only focused [on the Crown]," a source close to the Sussexes said.

Just more than a year later, in January 2020, the Duke and Duchess of Sussex announced they were stepping back from their royal roles to pursue private opportunities in North America, of all places. It was reported in *The Times* that William had "bullied" Harry out of the family. A joint statement denied the story and called out the allegations as false remarks. "For brothers who care so deeply for the issues surrounding mental health, the use of inflammatory language in this way is offensive and potentially harmful," the statement read. Reporters said it was a sign that the brothers could still come together, but the reality was Harry didn't even know about the statement. "I'm so pissed," one of their most senior aides told me the day it was released. "We were completely bulldozed."

For William, the many fractures split wide open when Harry went public with his grievances against the family and the institution—first with Oprah in 2021, then on Netflix in 2022, and then again in his memoir the following year. Harry's sustained offensive was too much for William. In his first post-exit interview, Harry asserted that William (and Charles) are "trapped" in the system—there is no exit for the next in line. While this is objectively true, a source close to William told me that the heir feels "far from [trapped] in *any* system." But we do know that there are persisting reports that William has been—and always will be—envious of Harry's freedom to "break away" from the royal establishment. Couple this slow-burning resentment with William's outright anger at what he perceives as Harry's relentless selfishness in his war against the two institutions he blames for his ills, and it's easy to see why William's fury is bubbling to the top.

The king in waiting believes Harry and Meghan blindsided the family, even the Queen, with their public complaints and their "*oh so California*" self-importance (an opinion he has repeatedly voiced in various ways to friends and aides during the past two years). Convinced Harry's been brainwashed by an "army of therapists," William says he no longer even recognizes his own brother, a source said. Before the family raised the

drawbridge and enshrouded the Palace in silence as a response to Harry's incriminating revelations, there were leaks to reporters that William and other family members, including Camilla, covertly sanctioned. The *Independent* claimed that the family feels Harry was "kidnapped by a cult of psychotherapy."

They say deaths and births can bring battling families back together, but neither have helped the Prince of Wales and the Duke of Sussex. In the wake of the Queen's death, the brothers remained in their own separate corners. Over the Christmas holidays that followed, not a single message was exchanged (though gifts were sent by the Sussexes to George, Charlotte, and Louis). And even when Harry came to the United Kingdom in March 2023 for a pretrial hearing in his battle against *Daily Mail* publisher Associated Newspapers, William and Kate kept their distance. "The Waleses are not in Windsor for the [Easter] school holidays," their spokesperson said. Not that Harry had asked to meet.

\* \* \*

William's reactions to Harry's newfound freedom and justice-seeking campaigns to change the British media landscape are certainly more institutional than they are brotherly. At one point in his life, William hated the U.K. newspapers as much as (or maybe even more than) his brother. Which points to another source of William's frustration—the "company man," the monarchy's next sovereign, must fall in line, even when it means eschewing his own brother. Harry and William's estrangement in many ways resembles another sensational fraternal feud in the royal family, but in reverse. Nearly one hundred years ago, Edward VIII contentiously abdicated the throne to his younger brother George VI (Queen Elizabeth's father), because the family and the establishment wouldn't allow him to marry the love of his life, the American divorcée Wallis Simpson. After Edward's abdication, the family was never whole again. The two brothers were effectively ripped apart by institutional duty and personal desire. Different royal players on a different stage, but the storyline is strikingly familiar.

At the center of both morality plays is the monarchic institution. After Harry's trinity of revelations and what a 2023 episode of *South Park* mocked as a "worldwide privacy tour" (both William and Kate supposedly



found the show's send-up of the Sussexes "hilarious"), House Montecito's stance on the institution is crystal clear: it's a system of overlords and buttoned-up Machiavellis in cahoots with a tabloid cabal who are all hell-bent on upholding the Crown no matter the human cost. With William, however, it's murkier and more complex. His current positions on Harry, Andrew, and the state of affairs in the outside world certainly suggest that he's in full compliance with the system, that he's accepted his role with few reservations, and that he's prepared to captain the monarchy when called upon.

But let's not forget that a mere six years ago it was a different story. Back then, the prince was not exactly known for his work ethic when it came to royal responsibilities, and the nicknames "Workshy Wills" and "throne idle" followed him, which in March 2017 was to the ski slopes and nightclubs of the Swiss Alps. While on a "boys' trip," the prince skied by day and partied by night in the chic resort town of Verbier. Photographs sold to *The Sun* showed him on the dance floor with an "Aussie beauty" who was most certainly not Kate. William was heavily criticized, of course, but what stirred up the Palace and Fleet Street enough for them to send up the flares was the fact that he was noticeably absent for the Commonwealth Day service, Britain's largest interfaith gathering, held at Westminster Abbey every year, that took place during his trip. It's harder to imagine now, but Prince William was AWOL, and at a time when Queen Elizabeth II was discernibly slowing down. He had already been skating on thin ice when it came to work, with even the likes of aging Prince Philip carrying out a vast amount more royal engagements than him (128 more, to be precise). A former communications staffer said William was "extremely reluctant" to fully focus on work. "There was a marked difference between William then and William now. There were long periods of time when it was only possible to get one sit-down meeting a month with himself and Kate for forward planning. It didn't feel like his priority."

This isn't to suggest William was work-shy in other areas. Leading up to and after he tied the knot with Kate, William worked at his "day jobs" for several years. In 2010, he signed up as a Royal Air Force search-and-rescue pilot on Anglesey, a large island in northwestern Wales known for its charming rural villages and natural beauty. William and Kate made their home on Anglesey for three years, completely enamored of its sea-swept location surrounded by rolling verdant farmlands, rocky beachheads, and

soaring limestone cliffs. White-washed stone on the outside, rustic beams and cozy fireplaces in the inside, and topped with a roof made of locally sourced slate, Bodorgan Hall is an eighteenth-century five-bedroom farmhouse situated on an estate near the Irish Sea. It is here where a baby Prince George spent the first few months of his fairly normal-looking life, where Kate could easily pop out to the nearby Waitrose in the town of Menai Bridge to pick up frozen pizzas on nights she didn't feel like cooking or bags of Haribo candy to stuff in the side pockets of their car. Considering the location of his first home, his meaningful RAF work, and the glow around his new family, it's no surprise William shied away from his royal duties during this time. "It's where they are at their happiest," the couple's former press secretary Ed Perkins told me at the time.

The Firm planned for William to engage in a few years of service before taking on the lion's share of his royal duties, but what they didn't expect was for William to keep extending it. In 2015, William joined the East Anglian Air Ambulance charity, a helicopter emergency medical team in the eastern county of Norfolk, England. Both Charles and the late Queen supported his decision, but it's now known that a handful of senior courtiers pushed against it. From their view, not only was it time for William to buckle down into his role in the family business, but they also believed this "middle-class job" was beneath the future King. Swooping in with the RAF was one thing, but choppering around with "ordinary people," a source told *The Times*, just wasn't in the royal paradigm. But he forged ahead anyway, and, to his credit, William stuck it out for two years, all the while fending off pressure from Palace busybodies and a nosy press. It was tough work, and he would later discuss how traumatic it was for him at times. I spoke to the prince about his role just a few months after the birth of his and Kate's second child, Princess Charlotte, in May 2015. "Extremely tough," he said of the twenty-four-hour shifts he would sometimes have to carry out, but one of the "most rewarding things I have ever done."

William was motivated by his own individual value system (the Firm's would have to wait), and by his husbandly and paternal instincts to keep his wife, son, and future children out of the media's relentless gaze. He learned the hard way, but it didn't have to be that way for Kate and their kids. After paparazzi continually harassed their children in public and a photographer was even found in the trunk of a car waiting for Prince George to surface at a playground near their home, William worked with his head of

communications Jason Knauf on a 1,073-word plea that was then sent out to every editor in the country. The extreme and dangerous lengths certain individuals were resorting to to obtain new pictures of their children *had* to stop.

There were legal threats, too. William and Kensington Palace officials decided that to take away the value of these long lens pictures, they would release their own photos instead. Since then, the couple has released new portraits for each child's birthday, as well as family holidays, Mother's Day, Father's Day, and other milestones, such as first days at new schools. It was a smart move. "He would do anything to keep those children safe," one of his aides shared with me at the time. "And he's not just doing this for himself, but also for others in the family. One day Harry will have kids of his own."

Two years later, William stressed the point when he said, "My mother did put herself right out there and that is why people were so touched by her. But I am determined to protect myself and the children, and that means preserving something for ourselves. I think I have a more developed sense of self-preservation."

For a few years, this impulse for self-preservation served him well. William managed to successfully resist the expectations of others and carve out a private space for family life, all the while reporting for duty when necessary. But, eventually, the institutional demands placed on an heir proved impossible to skirt any longer. In January 2017—following increased pressure from the public, press, and institution, and at a time when an aging Queen Elizabeth II needed more support from other senior family members—he announced the end of his career as a pilot and reported to "Monarchy HQ" for his full-time position in the Firm. "Following on from my time in the military, I have had experiences in this job I will carry with me for the rest of my life, and that will add a valuable perspective to my royal work for decades to come . . . I have loved being part of a team of professional, talented people that save lives every day," he said. And with that, William, Kate, George, and Charlotte left their country enclave in Norfolk to make Apartment 1A at Kensington Palace in London their full-time royal residence.

Since embracing his full-time duties, he's quickly moved up the ladder. In just six years, his job title has already changed once, and it is only a matter of time until he steps into the Firm's top position. William's eleven

years as the Duke of Cambridge lasted until the Queen's death in 2022, at which point he automatically became the Prince of Wales—the Duke of Cornwall in England and the Duke of Rothesay, Earl of Carrick, Baron of Renfrew in Scotland. With this promotion and mouthful of titles, William also inherited the private Duchy of Cornwall estate, a massive land and property portfolio that covers nearly 140,000 acres and was created by King Edward III in 1337. Prince Charles's entrepreneurial efforts (and passion for farming) throughout his fifty years as a prince helped one of Britain's oldest and largest land parcels to grow in worth to somewhere in the neighborhood of £1 billion. Its annual net surplus (£24 million for 2022–2023) is reinvested into the Waleses' charitable endeavors and helps fund the family's public and private lives.

Since William became its proprietor, Kensington Palace hasn't shared much news about his Duchy of Cornwall role, but fully taking over his father's position there was always the plan. Even in 2019, Prince William was already a frequent visitor and a smiling face to the tenants and employees on the rural estate. Having shadowed Charles there on several occasions, the prince became more involved in the business behind the duchy and educating himself on the challenges it may face under his watch. "I'll never know as much as he does, but I'll try my best," he said in October 2019. "I've got the interest and the passion. The countryside is deep in my heart . . . My interest isn't really appearing yet, but it will do in the future." Now that he's the boss (who received a private income of £6 million in 2023), Kensington Palace sources say he plans to do things "his way," cherry-picking from some of the ways his father, grandmother, and grandfather managed estates over the years.

Lee Thompson, his current communications secretary, says William is keen to integrate more of his charitable interests with relevant areas of the duchy, which also covers urban areas. First up is an ambitious plan to build social housing on the estate as part of a longer mission to "end homelessness." It will start small and then scale up if all goes well. The plans tie in nicely with a Royal Foundation initiative he launched in June 2023. Homewards will develop housing and resources for the homeless in six locations across Britain. William says he wants to reach its goal over the next five years and "give people across the U.K. hope that homelessness can be prevented when we collaborate."

The Prince of Wales title and the next-in-line status certainly brings its fair share of perks, but it's also brought more responsibility and pushed William further into the public eye—the same penetrating stare from which he mightily protected his family from just a few years ago. The public-facing Prince of Wales embraces the footlights the institution has switched on for him, but the private William—the son, the husband, the father—remembers his mother's struggles on this very same stage. William's confidence in his role, his slot in the system, and his place in the long line of British kings and queens is visible—he looks every ounce a man of the institution, a king in waiting comfortable calling the shots, doing things his way. But the flip side of this is indifference and harshness and the way he continues to stonewall Harry when all his brother wants from his family is honest conversations and accountability. One is left to wonder if William of Anglesey or William the air ambulance pilot would have left his sibling out in the cold in the same way.

And as the saying goes, it's lonely at the top, or, in William's case, just shy of the top. After Harry's exit, William is considerably more alone in the battle of his two selves. Even though they were always on different paths, Harry and William once shared an office, worked on the same foundations, and wanted to protect their families from the things they both feared. Proximity once allowed them to be each other's sounding boards, particularly in times of crisis, and that “unique bond” William so highly praised tied them together when everything else was pulling them apart. The Queen's death amplified all this. Charles vanished into the sacred Crown's engulfing orbit, leaving William to face the royal family's new chapter and the institution's increasing demands without his brother close by, the one person in the world who can empathize with all that's in store for him. As a friend close to William is quoted as saying, the heir is “definitely feeling the pressure now [that] it's all on him—his future looks different because of his brother's choices; it's not easy.” As for how he feels about Harry since the release of *Spare*, a source close to the prince told me, “There's a huge amount of anger there. He feels betrayed and sad about the situation. But he also doesn't agree with the things his brother feels he has done. He feels he has lost Harry and doesn't want to know this version of him.” That version, countered a Spencer family source, is simply “Harry being a man who has stepped outside of the institution and sees things in a different light. They will never see eye to eye at this point. They're on

completely opposite sides . . . that won't change." Time does heal wounds, but it also hardens grudges, particularly when you've got an entire institution to validate and back your resentment and anger.

Strangely enough, this institutional support has proven problematic and yet another source of frustration for William. For most of his adult life, Palace officials, senior courtiers, and even the Queen herself have paved the way for the future King William. They've envisioned it, planned for it, and, during more private moments, even discussed the fantasy of skipping Charles altogether and installing William as King at the end of the Queen's reign. This support of—and excitement about—William has not gone unnoticed by Charles over the years. In his new kingship, Charles is empowered to prove everybody wrong, and time will tell. Though they grew closer while William learned the ropes for his Duchy of Cornwall position and, added a source, "they have been united in their frustrations with Harry," an emerging narrative between father and son is only just taking shape: two men serving the same institution but with very different visions for how that establishment will run. The Palace may have once pushed the narrative that the two are perfectly aligned, but the reality is William is eager to make his own unique mark. "He respects his father, but he also sees him as a transitional monarch, paving the way for *his* arrival," said a source close to the Prince of Wales. "Their views, their outlooks, are very different, and I can see that becoming an issue over the years ahead."

To avoid repeating this pattern of father-and-son strain and tension with his own children, William has made a concerted effort to be a more involved and protective father. Evidenced by his initial instincts to begin his work life in the private sector to shield his firstborn, George, from the system and the swarming tabloids, this remains an essential condition for William as a father and as a senior member of the Firm. In Anglesey and Norfolk, William drew up plans for a different kind of life for his children, sending a message to the public and the institution that he demands a level of peace and familial security for his children that wasn't afforded to him during his own upbringing. His former private secretary Miguel Head said that after William started his own family, he displayed a "visceral determination to give them a life of consistency and privacy."

In the summer of 2022, the family of five left behind Kensington Palace and moved twenty-four miles outside the capital to Windsor. Adelaide Cottage, a "modest" (only by royal standards) four-bedroom property, is

giving the family the opportunity to live a more “normal” life, their team has said. Kensington Palace served them well but the parents to the second, third, and fourth in line to the throne felt it was time to find something less in the middle of everybody else’s business. At times, one of the couple’s senior aides told me in 2016, Kate commented that it made them feel “a bit like caged animals,” due to its heaving central London location and the fact that it was surrounded by tourists in one of the city’s busiest parks. Adelaide isn’t a permanent home (the couple have their eyes on Prince Andrew’s Royal Lodge residence in Windsor Great Park—if he ever gives it up), but Windsor’s quiet, rural environment is exactly what they were looking for. The royal estate, said sources, provides the children with plenty of safe space to run, cycle, and play in privacy, and all three have settled into their nearby Lambrook School (to which Mum and Dad still do the school runs themselves most of the time). During the days, William often uses workspace at Windsor Castle itself, with staff there now more familiar with the sight of the future King making his way back and forth between home and the castle (reportedly by e-scooter). Perhaps on a deeper level this is a way to re-create some of the quiet life they started together in Anglesey.

Sitting down with one of William’s former aides, who spoke to me for the purpose of this book, I asked if the release of Harry’s memoir—which went into unprecedented detail about the difficulties of being the spare to the heir—has had any impact on how the Waleses plan to raise their own two spares, Princess Charlotte and Prince Louis, the latter of whom was born in April 2018. William, they claimed, has not read it. Hard to believe, I pressed. “He’s read passages but not the full thing . . . Harry’s experience is very different to [that of William’s] own children.” One hopes that remains the case.

Of course, William navigates all of this with his wife. Despite the challenges ginned up by persistent rumors, sources said William’s marriage to Kate remains solid. “It’s a partnership, an alliance, and a lifetime commitment,” said a royal source. “They work as a team.” And, they added, William remains “incredibly proud” of Kate’s growth as a senior working member of the family. “It’s all about support, and both feel supported by one another,” said a family friend. Indeed, for William’s milestone projects over the years, including the Earthshot Prize, Kate has been by his side.

His public role has, however, continued to have slipups along the way, largely down to a premature rush from Kensington Palace to reposition

William as a “statesman” within just a year of the prince leaving his pilot job to become a full-time working royal. The much-mocked 2022 Caribbean tour is one of the most notable examples. And there have been the many other false promises along the way. When he visited Israel and the Occupied Palestinian Territories for five days in 2018, Palace aides were quick to brief the press that peace in the Middle East would become the heir’s “lifelong mission.” In a speech, William told the people of Palestine they “have not been forgotten.” Since then, however, there has not been a further word from the prince or his team on the matter, even though violence between the two groups continues to escalate.

In March 2023, William made a surprise visit to Poland to personally thank British and Polish troops for supporting Ukraine and to emphasize Britain’s support for Ukrainians in their fight against Russia. Admirable enough, but casually dressed in a black puffer jacket, William conjured up the images of Paul Wolfowitz and Donald Rumsfeld, who wore military-style boots with a jacket and tie when visiting troops during the Iraq War. The usual royal press took the bait. *The Sun*’s cover headline declared, “WILLS THE FREEDOM FIGHTER,” but his platitudes about “defending our shared freedoms” were also a reminder that in this apolitical and unelected role, there is not much he can actually accomplish on this front. And then there is the fact that when he took on the title of the Prince of Wales, his first solo visit to his new namesake country wasn’t exactly a hit. Locals there—some of whom have campaigned for the title to be abolished due its holder having no true connection to the country—were less than impressed with his inability to speak more than a few words of Welsh, despite having had years to prepare.

“He’s doing his best,” said a Kensington Palace source, “but he is also just a human. There is a lot to learn along the way.” Indeed, as a father of an heir and two spares, and as a king in waiting, there are mounting stresses and obligations in both his official life and his private one. This requires some delicate maneuvering and a highly functioning on-off switch. The Queen managed this high-wire duality with aplomb, but with William, it’s too early to tell.

I’ll never forget a conversation I had with William when he was still an air ambulance pilot. He told me that after a long day’s work in emergency situations that demanded everything he had in him—a rigorous mix of hard and soft skills—he often had to take some time at home “to decompress . . .



watch TV or have a cry” before reentering the family world as a husband and father. It was one of the few moments over the years I’ve witnessed a more vulnerable side of William. Here was a person who, like many, struggles with unrelenting work-life balance and the letting go of one part of yourself to be fully present in the other. It dawned on me that this is the royal predicament in a nutshell—the juggling of inner and outer lives, ambitions and obligations, personal desire and duty. For a moment, when William, whether intentionally or not, left his formal royal persona behind, I saw a glimpse of the man behind the facade. I can’t help but wonder whether the system will ever allow the public to see this side of the Prince of Wales and the future King, or whether, seven years on, that side of him still exists. If the Queen or many of those before her are any indication, the chances are slim. His recent posturing and dedication to the institutional cause suggests the carefully curated royal persona is here to stay, a crusader for a Crown.

## 9

# Gloves Off

Prince Harry, Man on a Mission

*For what matters in life is not whether we receive a round of applause; what matters is whether we have the courage to venture forth despite the uncertainty of acclaim.*

—Amor Towles, *A Gentleman in Moscow*

*I was summoned to provide backup, distraction, diversion and, if necessary, a spare part. Kidney, perhaps.*

—Prince Harry, *Spare*

As the morning sun rises over Santa Barbara, bathing the steep Santa Ynez Mountains, and the Pacific Ocean sparkles with California's trademark glow, the sprawling Sussex compound in the wealthy enclave of Montecito is already popping. With Meghan already preparing a family breakfast in the kitchen, Prince Harry is busy getting the couple's children, Prince Archie and Princess Lilibet, ready for nursery school and toddler playgroup, respectively.

Despite the staff on hand to help during the daytime, when Harry and Meghan shift into work mode, the Sussexes keep their mornings as time "for the family only," said a source—no staff. As hands-on parents, the pair take turns doing the school drop-offs and pickups every day.

Once the kids are settled, the couple switch into their own prework morning routines. Their Tuscan-style villa (its number of bathrooms an obsession to the British press, who cite the stat in almost every article about the couple) includes a fully equipped gym they both make the most of before joining their first meetings of the day. For Harry, working out and

staying healthy have become regular parts of his life in California. Sessions with his personal trainer, hikes, bike rides, acupuncture, and ice baths have all become essentials. “Spending time with Harry lifts you up,” said a friend. “He’s positive, happy, and motivating. He’s in a great place.”

It’s a place a world away from the life in Britain that Harry officially left behind in January 2020. When he and Meghan announced a joint decision to step back from their royal roles, after their “half-in-half-out” working model was rejected by Queen Elizabeth II and her advisors, they had to restart from scratch. Now, the couple’s calm life in California is an existence that, at many points during their working royal years, and even those first months after moving, they dared not even imagine as a possible reality.

Both openly admit that the journey to get here has been tough. Family relations were tested and ruptured (permanently, in some cases), some commercial deals were made in haste to secure sufficient money to guarantee their safety long into the future (and a home of their own), and the pressures of a watching world prodded them to go full throttle when it came to launching their own projects. “Not one step ahead could be predicted . . . they were flying by the seat of their pants at times,” said a friend of the couple. “Those first two years outside of the U.K. were scary, stressful, and, while full of hope, incredibly draining. It took a long time to be able to just sit back and think, ‘Phew, we’re going to be okay.’”

As stressful as it was, their more recent experiences back in the royal bubble have confirmed that leaving it all behind was exactly the right thing to do for them. Even though they live completely separate lives from the royal family, key moments have seen brief returns to the chaos. Some, such as the Platinum Jubilee celebrations, were anticipated, while others—particularly the death of the Queen—unexpectedly pulled them back into the institution’s whirlwind of games and manipulations, the same vortex that had hauled them toward its dark center for four years.

When the couple left their children in California with Meghan’s mother, Doria Ragland, and a nanny to visit the United Kingdom and Germany for five days of engagements in September 2022, neither knew that the quick-fire trip would result in a two-week return to royal drama. Neither did I. During this visit, I joined some of their engagements and watched as Meghan gave a speech to teenagers and young adults at the One Young World summit in Manchester. In the post-pandemic world, Harry and

Meghan wanted to remind people that they hadn't lost touch with the organizations and causes they were involved in before their departure. There was talk of visiting the Queen in Scotland, but her schedule, the couple was told, was already packed. Any rumors about Her Majesty possibly being in her final days had certainly not made it as far as California. With the imminent releases of their Netflix docuseries and *Spare*, family members and Palace officials were also doing their best to keep the couple at arm's length and out of the loop.

The couple intentionally kept to themselves while staying at their Windsor base, Frogmore Cottage, with no plans in place to visit family and zero room in their schedule for socializing. Plus, they were eager to get back to Archie and Lilibet as soon as their work was complete. The only private time they took was a visit to Althorp, the resting place of Princess Diana. They had never been as a couple, and Harry had long wanted to bring his wife to his late mother's grave.

Frogmore Cottage was once a home filled with promise, but after they moved overseas in 2020, their British base (which Charles wouldn't take away until the following year) didn't feel quite so cozy anymore. By the time of their last scheduled engagement—the WellChild Awards on September 8—they were more than ready to head back home, just in time to celebrate Harry's thirty-eighth birthday as a family. Still, the two of them were looking forward to the WellChild event, which celebrates the inspirational qualities of Britain's seriously ill children and the professionals who help care for them. The charity was one of Harry's first royal patronages, and he crafted a heartfelt speech for the ceremony.

As it turns out, he never got to read that speech. The night before the WellChild event, doctors for Queen Elizabeth II advised the monarch to clear her calendar and rest. Though it did not involve a hospital stay, the fact that Buckingham Palace had made an official announcement about it confirmed growing fears that her decline in health was getting worse. The news rattled the Sussexes. Just four days prior, Harry had spoken with his grandmother on the phone. She had mentioned not being well enough to attend the Highland Games, but her working schedule was still full of appointments. The monarch was, as sources said at the time, positive and upbeat.

By the next morning, the Sussexes had no idea that Buckingham Palace was already planning for the Queen's final hours and the first days of the

monarchy's new era—until the duke's phone started ringing. An unknown number. He usually ignored those. "You should answer it," Meghan told him. He tapped accept just before it stopped. Harry hadn't spoken to his father much that year, but this was not the time for any father-and-son tension. Charles told him he and Camilla were about to leave Dumfries House for Balmoral, where Princess Anne was already by the Queen's side. He told Harry to make his way to Scotland immediately. William, whom Charles had just spoken to, was supposedly working on arranging travel. Harry sent a text message to his brother asking how he and Kate planned to get to Scotland and whether they could travel together. No response.

With no further information from other family members or Palace aides, the Sussexes and their team had to operate in the dark. Harry was informed that William had already secured a flight with his uncles Andrew and Edward (and Edward's wife, Sophie), but he couldn't get in touch with anyone about joining that flight. "It was upsetting to witness," said a source close to the Sussexes. "[Harry] was completely by himself on this." Buckingham Palace released a further update: "Following further evaluation this morning, the Queen's doctors are concerned for Her Majesty's health and have recommended she remain under medical supervision. The Queen remains comfortable and at Balmoral." Harry knew it was happening, and happening fast.

With the world's media now rushing to Aberdeenshire (and most flights and train tickets selling out within minutes), travel options dwindled. Another call came through from Charles, who instructed his younger son to come alone. Despite already publicly confirming that Meghan would come with him (always the plan if they were traveling from California for this very situation), he reluctantly agreed, after Charles assured him that Kate would not be there, either. Charles had cited "protocol," but the reality was that Kate chose to stay back to pick up the children from their first day at a new school. "They just didn't want Meghan there," said a former Palace aide. Meghan, a friend added, "could sense she wasn't wanted."

Harry sent another text to his brother. Nothing. Though there were available seats on William's chartered Dassault Falcon private jet, which was leaving in less than an hour, Harry was left to fend for himself. "William ignored him," said a family source. "He clearly didn't want to see his brother." Princess Eugenie reached out to Harry to see if he had any

more information about their grandmother. She had heard from another family member that it was “time” but knew little more.

The Sussex team clamored to find a flight for Harry, ratcheting up the pressure on what was an already stressful situation. Meanwhile, an hour later than originally scheduled, William, Edward, Sophie, and Andrew’s flight took off from an airfield just nineteen miles away from Frogmore Cottage. With no invite forthcoming from any of the family members, Harry eventually located an available option—a private charter costing £30,000 from Luton Airport, a forty-minute drive from Frogmore without traffic.

And with that, Harry started his own race to Scotland. Though rumors of the Queen’s passing were rife at this point, Harry had no way of knowing whether it was true. His father doesn’t carry a cell phone and his brother wasn’t acknowledging his existence. When William and the others landed at 3:50 p.m. to discover the news that the Queen had passed away at 3:10 p.m., Harry still had no idea what was going on when his own plane finally took off at 5:35 p.m. And, as his phone service cut out after takeoff, he remained in the dark for the duration of his seventy-minute flight.

Back on the ground, there was a tug-of-war between the Sussexes’ team and Buckingham Palace over whether to announce the news without Harry being informed. With Her Majesty’s death already confirmed to the prime minister an hour before Harry left, and all other senior family members now gathered in Scotland processing the news, royal press secretaries were ready to share the news with the world. The Palace claimed Charles tried to call Harry (sources later told me there was never any proof of this), and that there was no more time left to delay. “His team literally had to beg for them to wait for his plane to land and they reluctantly agreed to hold the statement back for a little bit,” confirmed a close family source. But as stormy weather over Aberdeen International forced Harry’s plane to circle the airport numerous times before landing, patience at the Buckingham Palace press office wore thin—they could wait no longer and the announcement went live at 6:30 p.m. When Harry’s plane finally touched tarmac twenty minutes later, he received a text from Meghan urging him to call ASAP followed by a breaking news alert via the BBC News app with the announcement of the Queen’s death. Palace “sources” later briefed certain papers that Charles had personally shared the news with his younger son, but this was just a move to save face. “Harry was crushed,” said a

friend of the duke. “His relationship with the Queen was everything to him. She would have wanted him to know before it went out to the world. They could have waited just a little longer, it would have been nothing in the grand scheme of things, but no one respected that at all.”

During the one-hour car ride to Balmoral, the silence in the security-driven BMW gave the now fifth in line to the throne time for the news to sink in. Despite the ups and downs of his royal life, Harry and the Queen were consistently close. “Granny, while this final parting brings us great sadness, I am forever grateful for all of our first meetings—from my earliest childhood memories with you, to meeting you for the first time as my commander-in-chief, to the first moment you met my darling wife and hugged your beloved great-grandchildren,” he wrote in a statement. “I cherish these times shared with you, and the many other special moments in between. You are already sorely missed, not just by us, but by the world over.”

When he arrived at Balmoral, Princess Anne warmly greeted him and led him to the Queen’s room, where he spent a quiet moment privately paying his respects. He had hoped to see his father—who had made it to Balmoral Castle in time to see his mother alive—to express his sympathies, but he was informed that Charles, William, and Camilla had already left for Birkhall together. Again, no invite was extended to Harry. That night after eating he retired to his room, exhausted by the day’s emotional roller coaster. He was glad to have had a private moment to say goodbye to his grandmother, but there was no point in sticking around. With no offer to return with William and the others in the morning (all of his texts, including a thoughtful message about the loss of their grandmother, continued to be ignored), Harry booked his own British Airways ticket on the first available departing flight.

During the days ahead, Harry and Meghan kept a low profile, praying the press wouldn’t turn their attentions to them but remain rightfully focused on the loss of a beloved monarch. “There was an incredible sense of sadness,” said a family source. “For them, the Queen was one of their last strong links to the family. She always made them feel welcome. Without her . . . it will never be the same.”

Other senior members of the family were already meeting members of the public, and questions surfaced about whether the nation would see the Sussexes doing the same. Charles spoke to Prince William on September 10

to discuss his plans. The public, said the new King, needed to see the *entire* family putting differences to one side. “Essentially, he told William to swallow his pride and invite his brother and sister-in-law to join them when they greeted mourners and well-wishers in Windsor that day,” said a Palace source. “William wasn’t keen. This was *his* moment with the public, but the King put pressure on [him].”

With around forty minutes left before he planned to step out on Windsor Castle’s Long Walk with Kate, William sent his first text message in months to Harry, suggesting it would be “good” if they came along, too. The couple wanted to do what was right, but time was short. Meghan, in sneakers with her hair pulled up, had only just come back from a walk. The couple’s head of communications, Ashley Hansen, gave the couple a pep talk. “It doesn’t matter how little time you have, just get out there and do it,” she told the couple. And, with that, the Sussexes quickly got ready and made their way to the courtyard of Windsor Castle. Though they had seen William and Kate since their big exit, including at the Platinum Jubilee celebrations, this was the first time the couples had to actually talk as a foursome. The silence as they climbed into the same car (a decision made by Lee Thompson, William and Kate’s press secretary) was very noticeable. Given the tension between the brothers and zero communication between Meghan and Kate, the 150-second car ride to the Long Walk felt like two hours as they muddled through light small talk. And then a feeling of discomfort and reluctance set in as Harry and Meghan caught a glimpse of the photographers and video cameras ready to capture their arrival as a group of four. They knew there would be members of the public gathered, but this was the first time they knew of an official media presence. Kensington Palace, they later found out, had tipped off a select group of people.

Of course, once out of the car, all four were consummate professionals. Walkabouts are a staple of working royal life, and all of them have discovered their own ways to shine in this type of setting. Just like the old days of the “Fab Four,” they agreed to split up and each take a different side of the Long Walk. Though appearing composed, sources said Meghan was “extremely nervous” about being in front of the crowds. By this point, the couple’s rapidly declining popularity in the United Kingdom was an inarguable fact. The level of vitriol aimed at Meghan in particular, whether online or in the newspapers, was worse than ever. Armed royal protection officers were on high alert, and so was she. Some supporters gathered in the



crowd didn't hide their animus toward the duchess. "Of course we would get stuck with her," moaned one woman within earshot of Meghan. Another was seen on camera grimacing after shaking the duchess's hand, while others refused to put their hand out. "When I saw the videos of Meg, I could see she was doing her best to hold it together; she looked terrified," said one of her close friends. When a fourteen-year-old fan stopped to chat with Meghan, their hug choked the duchess up. "I just wanted to show her that she's welcome here and wanted to hug her after everything that's happened," said the teen.

Kate reportedly found the outing just as difficult. Close sources told King Charles's biographer Robert Jobson that she admitted to a family member that "it was one of the hardest things she ever had to do" because of the acrimony between the two couples. Harry spent much of the walkabout speaking with well-wishers about his grandmother, recounting memories of her life. "I still think of her being in [Windsor] Castle when I look over at it," he said to one family, who had told him they were thrilled to see him back in Britain. The moments outside were a reminder that, despite the slanted media coverage, Harry still had some steady support in his home country. After wrapping up their forty-two-minute walkabout, William orchestrated a somewhat forced photo of the four together. Newspapers later cited Kensington Palace sources who revealed the decision to put on a show of unity in Windsor was William's idea, but sources in both Buckingham Palace and the Sussex camp deny this version of the tale. "Sounds like a grab for positive press," snarked a Charles aide.

Over the days that followed, communication from the Palace to the Sussexes remained minimal—mostly text messages from press aides keeping the couple's team abreast of basic information. On September 17, the Palace arranged a fifteen-minute vigil for all the Queen's grandchildren at Westminster Hall, where the Queen was lying in state. Harry was initially told he was not permitted to wear his military uniform, despite his status as a decorated war veteran. He knew his grandmother would have wanted him to, but it took a number of emails and conversations before King Charles relented and gave special dispensation for Harry to wear his Blues and Royals, Number 1 dress attire. But when the uniform arrived at Frogmore Cottage, it was incomplete. The shoulder epaulettes were missing the Queen's "ER" initials (only official aides-de-camp are allowed to wear them, and this was a title he had confiscated) and the ornamental braided

cord, known as an aiguillette, had been removed by someone at Buckingham Palace. To rub salt in the wound, Prince Andrew had also been given permission to wear his military uniform for a vigil by his mother's coffin two days earlier, complete with the Queen's cipher and aiguillettes. Heated phone calls were made, but Palace officials refused to make any changes. "Some of these people are determined to make him feel like shit, determined to continue punishing him for leaving, it's bullying," a family source later told me. So incensed by the way aides and Palace officials were treating him, Harry considered wearing a regular suit to the vigil that evening, but after word had come from another aide that William would remove his aiguillette to make things a little more equal, he changed his mind. It was a rare show of support from his brother and one a source said he appreciated.

But the support ended there. For the duration of their time in Britain, the Duke and Duchess of Sussex were on the receiving end of snubs and brush-offs. At the state funeral Camilla, Kate, and Sophie noticeably went out of their way to ignore Meghan outside Westminster Abbey. "They did their best to remain focused on the importance of the trip and honoring Her Majesty, but being dragged into the royal fold again was an unpleasant experience. So little has changed, the same old power trips and dancing around various protocols. Having to deal with the insanity of the media coverage, which on many days revolved around them, made it even worse," said a source close to the couple. Indeed, newspaper articles and royal commentary ranged from cruel to completely made up. One commentator, well known for her fictitious ramblings and out-of-pocket conspiracy theories, used a Sky News broadcast about the Queen's life to falsely claim the couple would be wearing microphones and secret cameras to record their encounters with members of the royal family for future Netflix projects.

The ongoing fictionalization of the Sussexes' lives continues to be a national sport for large sections of the mainstream media. Despite him opening up his life to the public in interviews, television specials, and even a 125,000-word memoir, the caricature most of the papers draw of Prince Harry is barely recognizable to anyone who actually knows him. It's one of the many reasons why the Duke of Sussex is on a mission to reclaim his story, his life, and his image from the media and the public's fantastical

accounts. And, through a series of high-profile court cases, he has slowly been able to claw some of it back.

From the libel case against the *Mail on Sunday*—which incorrectly cited “informed sources” in 2020, claiming the prince had turned his back on the Royal Marines and British Armed Forces (a legal fight for which he received substantial damages and a printed apology)—to the ongoing action against the same outlet for defamatory coverage about his security battle with the Home Office (over its refusal to allow him to personally pay for official police protection while in the United Kingdom), the duke has made it clear he’s not afraid to dispute and correct the disinformation out there about his wife and him.

And it extends beyond his personal issues with the press. Emboldened by his distance from the royal institution and its fiercely protected relationships with Britain’s top media barons, Harry is now free to fight a much larger issue that has quietly plagued the media landscape for decades—illegal news-gathering practices. In 2023, three legal actions for phone hacking and other unlawful intrusions directed at Harry and his inner circle continued to gather momentum in London’s High Court: one directed at the *Mirror*’s publisher (MGN) for phone hacking between 1996 and 2011; another for the same allegations at the *Mail* group (Associated Newspapers) for a slightly longer time period; and a third aimed at Rupert Murdoch’s News Group Newspapers (NGN), which is the parent company of *The Sun* and the now-shuttered *News of the World*. All three had preliminary hearings in spring of the same year. The MGN case was a full trial of liability for a sample of thirty-seven articles (out of a list of over one hundred) believed to have come as a result of phone hacking and other illegal methods. News Group’s hearings mostly revolved around arguments over whether Harry should be allowed to get around the statute of limitations, as he didn’t find out about the publisher’s alleged unlawful activities until years after they had taken place (because, his lawyer argued, the newspaper hid them so well). In the end, though, the judge determined that only Harry’s claims of illegal information gathering can proceed to trial, not the the phone-hacking claims.

His battles haven’t gone down well with members of the royal family and their aides, who seemingly did all they could to tamp down Harry’s pursuit of justice during his years as a working royal. In their view, fighting the media puts the monarchy at risk. “In short, him wanting to take on these

papers posed a threat to all of them,” said a former Palace aide. “No one in the family, particularly [Charles, Camilla, and William], wanted the solid media relationships they had formed to be rattled by a family member gone rogue.” One of those beneficial relationships was exposed in his case against *The Sun*’s publisher, after Prince Harry’s April 2023 witness statement alleged that in 2020 Prince William privately agreed to a “very large” settlement (which sources claimed was over one million pounds) with Murdoch’s publisher for not formally suing them for hacking into his private voicemails hundreds of times (later described by Harry as a “favourable deal in return for him going ‘quietly’”).

This highlights just how different the brothers have become. Before the 2018 rebranding of William as “statesman in the making,” the pair were aligned in their plans to put claims against *The Sun*’s publisher and even took first steps down that path together. But Harry alleges that at some point before 2013, Charles’s household struck a “secret agreement” with senior Murdoch executives (made without William and Harry’s knowledge) that promised that royal victims of phone hacking, including the brothers, would receive a settlement and an apology when all the publisher’s other major phone-hacking cases had concluded. A few years later, and irrespective of any “deal” between the two sides, the Queen gave permission for two of her aides to help the brothers get their apologies (with multiple attempts being made to speak with evasive executives at the publisher), but when the monarch’s private secretary Lord Christopher Geidt was pushed out in 2017, any such efforts slowly came to a halt.

After Edward Young took over Lord Geidt’s role, both he and Clive Alderton (Charles’s private secretary)—a man described by insiders as Young’s “partner in crime”—did their best to thwart anything that might anger the Murdoch papers. A source close to the family said, “[Charles’s office] has very much ruled the roost when it comes to the relationship with the media . . . [The Queen] was doing her best to ensure that everybody was working in harmony, but Clarence House had a long-term strategy.” In his witness statement, Harry described that strategy as a bid to “keep the media onside in order to smooth the way for my stepmother (and father) to be accepted by the British public as queen consort (and king respectively) when the time came, and anything that might upset the applecart in this regard (including the suggestion of resolution of our phone-hacking claims) was to be avoided at all costs.” Harry added that when he finally issued his

hacking claims against both the *Mirror* and *The Sun* publishers in October 2019, he was “summoned” to Buckingham Palace, where Young, Alderton, and Charles promptly demanded that he drop the legal actions because they had an “effect on all the family.”

Following Harry’s legal actions, the retaliatory media coverage against the Sussexe reached new levels of negativity and aggression as the industry circled the wagons. Harry remained defiant. “I’m one of the few people that is able to take this the whole way, rather than worrying about my reputation,” he told a friend. “But I’ve got to see this through.” The media coverage centered around the prince “attacking” his family (a favored phrase by the tabloids) in the buildup to King Charles’s coronation. “The reality,” a source close to Harry added, “was that he just wants to protect his claims. The secret Charles/Murdoch agreement was made way above his station, and he only found about it years later. That’s why his action has come at this time.” For his part, Charles was aware of Harry’s court appearances ahead of the coronation and told his son he “understood” why he needed to see it through. Unlike William and more than one thousand other victims of unlawful press intrusion by News Group who settled out of court, largely down to the astronomical legal costs required to take a case to trial and the generous damages offered without admission of liability. Harry is not one of these—he is determined to have his days in court.

It’s a bold move to make, one that is fortunately enabled by his deeply lined pockets, due to several commercial endeavors and private investments he’s made since moving to California. By entering witness statements into the British legal system and joining forces with other high-profile people (Sir Elton John, David Furnish, Liz Hurley, and more are going against the *Mail* group), Harry has actually made Britain’s most powerful publishers feel threatened. The efforts to expose the widespread culture of phone hacking during the 1990s and early 2000s, plus other illegal practices that are suspected to continue today, have also seen some journalists and prominent media figures join these class action cases. For full disclosure, I also testified in the phone-hacking trial against Mirror Group Newspapers, sharing my experiences as a college intern in the publisher’s newsrooms, where I witnessed conversations about phone hacking by senior staff, including the *Mirror*’s editor in chief at the time, Piers Morgan. Hundreds

of victims have launched civil lawsuits since 2012 and the publisher has, so far, paid out on well over six hundred claims.

Harry himself entered the witness box for the *Mirror* group trial on June 6, 2023, breaking with royal protocol as he became the first member of the family to be cross-examined in court since 1891. During his eight-hour testimony at London's High Court, the prince stated there was "hard evidence" that he was illegally targeted by MGN, who had gone to "extreme lengths to cover their tracks." Along with telling the court that many of his past relationships had failed because of press intrusion (citing an incident when he found a tracking device on the car of his then girlfriend Chelsy Davy), he stated that the way the tabloids reported on Meghan "disgusted" him and provided the motivation for his decision to take on the *Mirror*, *Sunday Mirror*, and *Sunday People* newspapers.

Andrew Green KC, the *Mirror*'s barrister, accused Harry of indulging in "total speculation" and pointed out the prince had "no evidence" his phone had been hacked by journalists working for MGN. However, invoices suggesting the *Mirror* made payments to a range of private investigators in the United Kingdom and the United States were submitted to the court and show that these PIs accessed ex-directory phone numbers, social security details, and financial records of public figures, including Harry. Appealing directly to the judge, an offended Harry responded, "My lord, my whole life the press have misled me, covered up their wrongdoing. To be sitting here in court knowing that the defense has the evidence in front of them, and Mr. Green saying I'm speculating . . . I'm not entirely sure what to say about that." By the end of his testimony, Harry appeared emotional when his barrister David Sherborne asked how he felt after the proceedings. "It's . . . a lot," he quietly replied.

In an interview in early 2023, Harry described his campaign to change the media as his "life's work." It's a statement sources say he would like to revise. "I plan on making sure this does *not* take over my life . . . I want to see it through to a conclusion," he told a friend. In fact, the prince hopes for resolutions on all cases by the end of 2025. "This is a tough commitment, but he has the balls to take them all on . . . He's never going to back down," said a source close to Harry. "He spent ten years in the military and finds it very hard to turn a blind eye to injustice. He is determined to see this through." He is not, however, naïve enough to think that even winning these cases will change how the media writes about him. "I don't see any version

of pulling back or settling in the hope that they might leave us alone,” he told a friend. “That’s never going to happen. Unfortunately, we sell them too many newspapers and too many clicks.”

An outcome he does hope for is change at a higher level. “His goal here is not to destroy the media for the sake of it, but to encourage the creation of a more ethical and reliable press,” said a source close to the duke. “Destroying them for revenge won’t get anyone anywhere. In fact, doing that just leaves a vacuum . . . and who’s going to fill that? Probably Murdoch again.” Harry hopes that his actions will simply lead to finding some solutions for improving media practices. That at some point, those in the British government, including the Department for Digital, Culture, Media & Sport, will push for a substantive overhaul. With a switch to a Labour government looking likely in 2024 (after the Conservative party—largely supported by media barons who control most of the country’s papers—have been in power since 2010), that could happen. It would also be an achievement far greater than anything he could have done as a spare.

In other aspects of his work, Harry’s plate is full. His input on the *Harry & Meghan* docuseries and his memoir took up the majority of 2022, but now he’s finally focusing on projects that will demonstrate he is moving away from his past. Sources close to the prince confirm that “royal revelations” are now over, and rumors of additional chapters or updates being added to *Spare* are false (the book will remain unchanged when it eventually comes out in paperback). Instead, Harry will focus on production efforts, following the positive feedback received for *Heart of Invictus*, a documentary based on his long-running and successful Invictus Games sporting competition for wounded, injured, and sick veterans and servicepeople. The Sussexes’ production company is working on two scripted projects for Netflix that Harry and Meghan acquired the rights to in 2023, including an adaptation of novelist Carley Fortune’s *Meet Me at the Lake*. And he will continue his own charitable endeavors, particularly in the military space. “[That] is where he comes alive,” said a spokesperson for the duke. “There is so much he plans to do for the community over the years ahead.”

The decision to look ahead rather than backward will be music to the ears of the Palace. It will also serve the couple well. After two years of tell-alls about their royal story, the Sussex brand ended up synonymous with drama by the start of 2023. For a couple who hoped to carve out their new

U.S. lives as global philanthropists, the soap opera-style narrative that followed them everywhere certainly wasn't the plan. "For setting the record straight, it was absolutely important to share those stories and experiences the way they did," lamented a source, "but such projects take a considerable amount of time to complete, and it kept them immersed in an old chapter of their lives during the new one for longer than was ideal. They're more than ready to move on."

As with any new operation, it has taken a while to find the perfect rhythm. Building a three-piece organization (Archewell Foundation, Archewell Audio, and Archewell Productions) during a pandemic was certainly not the ideal start-up environment. A mix of rushed decisions and hires also meant that earlier PR efforts were far from polished. An out-of-the-blue statement in January 2022 announcing that unnamed sources would no longer speak for the Sussexes is a prime example. The claim was that "only the official communications team at Archewell" will comment—or not—on any stories concerning the couple. An impressive feat if pulled off (especially given that the entire royal bubble thrives on anonymous briefing), but the pledge came across as bizarre to the public and the media, including myself, especially when just a week later (and beyond) unnamed "sources" continued to speak for the couple. Since then, the couple have reconfigured their approach to media strategies and hired a new head of communications, a former media executive at the Universal Film Entertainment Group, Ashley Hansen. And while the confusing guidance about sources is something their team has yet to properly address, it seems this type of cross-communication is already a thing of the past.

Still, mixed messaging such as this causes some distrust in the public—who have often been unclear whether information briefed by the couple's own aides is accurate. When Harry and Meghan experienced a distressing two-hour paparazzi chase around Manhattan in May 2023, additional details shared by their team on background (and cited in articles as "Sussex sources") were dismissed by even some of the couple's most ardent fans, who, as they often do, rushed to point out that "sources don't speak for the couple anymore." Years of British newspapers attempting to poke holes in the couple's every word and action has also strained the Sussexes' credibility, and sources said both Harry and Meghan reluctantly accept it's an area that needs serious improvement.



The rush to sign commercial deals after the royal institution cut them off from all funding and security in 2020 led them to sign some lucrative deals they might have thought twice about had they not been under so much financial pressure. When the couple signed a contract worth up to \$20 million with Spotify to develop podcasts, neither of the two expected executives to turn down so many of their ideas. The streamer, said a company source, was only interested in paying out for juicy goods that could generate major headlines and bring in subscriptions. In the end, Spotify only commissioned one Archewell Audio Christmas special and twelve episodes of Meghan's *Archetypes* series—a podcast that explored widely used labels that hold women back. Only a portion of that \$20 million was ever paid out and the two parties “mutually agreed” to part ways in the summer of 2023, although a damning review from one of Spotify's podcasting executives, Bill Simmons, who called the couple “grifters,” suggested that it may not have been as mutual as implied. “There have definitely been a mountain of lessons learned when it comes to the business side of things,” a source close to the couple admitted.

It was a shaky start for the couple's charitable foundation, too. They launched the Sussex Foundation in the summer of 2019, but a source working on the project later told me that plans for the nonprofit were ultimately shelved as Harry and Meghan didn't want to focus on providing grants, an effort that requires constant fundraising. The Archewell Foundation's launch in October 2020 came with grand ambitions to provide something different, but as the months went by they realized again that grants would become the ballast for this foundation as well. No shame in that, and the money given out has gone on to do great things, such as helping move eight thousand individuals out of Afghanistan with the Human First Coalition and providing additional resources to the tech-focused civil rights advocacy organization Color of Change. For a couple who want to create change around a myriad of issues, it makes sense that they have so many irons in the fire. But at the time of this writing, two and a half years into the foundation's life, the true purpose and mission of their charitable vehicle is still not completely clear. A lot of everything, but little in terms of major anchoring projects.

As it turns out, the grant work they avoided at first has taught them how to support small charities and build new partnerships. Now, said the head of the foundation and former Kensington Palace aide James Holt, a

“significant change” in direction will become more visible over the next two years. Moving forward, programs are being developed with a key thread in all three areas of the foundation’s work—mental health. It starts with the couple’s efforts to build a better online world, which includes a project and partnership with the Social Media Victims Law Center and families who have suffered the most extreme impacts of social media.

Linking back to Harry’s media battles, Archewell is also seeking ways to “restore trust in information.” As well as looking at structural reform, a spokesperson added that they want to use their platform to “promote and highlight media organizations they think are doing the right thing.” And the third area is uplifting communities. Picking up from Meghan’s work supporting victims of the 2017 Grenfell Tower fire tragedy in London, who came together to prepare food for displaced residents and the wider community, the foundation is introducing the sentiment and drive behind the Hubb Community Kitchen to communities across the United States. By mid-2023, ten projects were already quietly in pilot phases (from sewing groups to cooking clubs), with a focus on women-led initiatives supporting Afghan immigrants who fled the Taliban.

Archewell’s decision to work with William Morris Endeavor (WME), a powerhouse agency headquartered in Beverly Hills, has also helped the duke and duchess accelerate some of their charitable work. “It takes a long time to build a lasting legacy but *this* is their life’s work,” said a Sussex spokesperson.

As for Meghan, following the release of the *Harry & Meghan* docuseries in November 2022, the duchess noticeably distanced herself from the dramas and labels associated with the royal family. By February 2023, Archie’s fourth birthday was cited as the primary reason she would not be attending the coronation of King Charles, but sources later told me that her strong feelings about not getting hauled back into royal dramas also played a “significant role.”

During that low-profile year, she appeared in public for only a handful of key moments, such as receiving a Women of Vision Award for her advocacy for women and girls. Meghan kept her head down to focus on building her own business. Though there were rumors that she might follow in the footsteps of Gwyneth Paltrow’s Goop or revive her lifestyle blog *The Tig* (both tempting options), a source said Meghan is building “something more accessible . . . something rooted in her love of details, curating,

hosting, life's simple pleasures, and family." Added a friend of the duchess, "Meghan is busy working on creating something safe and timeless. And something that won't be accused of riding on the back of anything royal."

The couple's decision to enjoy a more relaxed summer in 2023 allowed them to retreat a little from the public eye for the first time since stepping back. Naturally, the quieter moments provided a perfect opportunity for the press to fill in the gaps with their own narratives. Britain's *Telegraph* wasted no time in suggesting that the couple's "frazzled, fraught and lacking romance" relationship was in trouble. Meanwhile the couple—who used to focus on all the coverage about them—remained unconcerned and, at times, blissfully unaware at home in California. "Closer than ever," said a close friend of the couple. "They're genuinely happy."

At times it seemed like the couple would never find complete happiness after leaving the royal fold. Some events of the past still hurt today, particularly those involving their children, Archie and Lilibet. Although convention dictates that the two should have automatically become prince and princess when the King acceded to the throne, it took Buckingham Palace six months to finally confirm the title changes. Charles had initially avoided the subject but eventually told Harry in early 2023 that he would "make it official" if they wanted it (they did), but uttered no further word on it until his press secretary casually informed the couple's team a month later that a change would be made. Officials finally updated the royal line of succession on the Palace's website—the children's "Master" and "Miss" stylings were replaced with "Prince Archie of Sussex" and "Princess Lilibet of Sussex" (sixth and seventh in line, respectively). The Palace blamed the delay on the site's periodic update schedule but refused to explain why they didn't just change the children's titles at the same time as publishing William and Kate's new Wales titles in September 2022. "They see the way their children are treated differently and that's hard to feel comfortable with," said a friend of the Sussexes.

As for Harry, who started the year claiming in interviews that he was hoping for reconciliation with and accountability from his family, he dramatically shifted after his father and brother actively continued to avoid conversations about their part in the difficulties that the Sussexes experienced. In February and March, the prince turned to a mutual friend back in London to try to set up a conversation with his brother, but the

attempts were ignored. Harry, said a source, chose to “keep focused on the future, not the past.”

As the duke left California on May 5 for King Charles’s coronation—a decision he had made because “it was the right thing” to support his father on such a big day—his emotions were a world away from how he felt landing in London with knots in his stomach for the Platinum Jubilee just a year earlier. “Though he hasn’t found closure with his family, he’s accepted that things are unlikely to change, particularly with his brother—who refuses to even properly talk with him,” said a source. As Harry later explained to a friend, “I’m ready to move on past it. Whether we get an apology or accountability, who knows? Who really cares at this point?”

# 10

## The Men (and Women) in Gray

Royal Courtiers and the Struggle for Power

*The courtier's final aim is to become his prince's instructor.*

—Baldassare Castiglione, *The Book of the Courtier*

*A prince's court*

*Is like a common fountain, whence should flow  
Pure silver drops in general, but if't chance  
Some curs'd example poison't near the head,  
Death and diseases through the whole land spread*

—John Webster, *The Duchess of Malfi*

When the showy, obsequious courtier Osric appears in Shakespeare's *Hamlet*, Prince Hamlet inquires whether his friend and confidante, Horatio, knows the young Palace aide. As Osric ingratiatingly introduces himself, Hamlet, in a wry aside, asks Horatio, "Dost know this waterfly?" Osric then shares the details of the King's wager—a duel refereed by Osric that eventually causes Hamlet's death—while the prince haughtily toys with the courtier, forcing him to agree with everything he says, despite intentionally contradicting himself. One minute Hamlet says he's hot, the next he is cold, and Osric zealously concurs both times. With a touch of a sneer, the prince scolds the aide for not wearing his hat like a proper courtier: "Put your bonnet to its right use. 'Tis for the head."

Shakespeare's gentle mocking of Osric would have easily landed with his Elizabethan audiences. During Queen Elizabeth I's reign in the sixteenth century, the stereotypical courtier dressed extravagantly to signal their wealth and position in the court. The women literally assembled their

outfits, attaching puffy sleeves to bodices and draping elaborate skirts over hooped petticoats known as farthingales. With long, frizzy hair swept up from the forehead into hair helmets and elaborate buns, necklaces, and dangling earrings, female courtiers dazzled like cockatiels. But they were often outdone by the men. Adorned in cloaks, decorative doublets with ruffled collars (think: a gaudy, snug jacket topped by a frilly dog collar cone), ballooning knee-length trousers, tight hose, and, of course, a flamboyant hat, male courtiers were the peacocks of the Elizabethan court.

Colorful, noisy, and always hovering, Queen Elizabeth's advisors and hangers-on were also the insects of the House of Tudor, hence the bard's reference to a waterfly. Like Osric, they buzzed around the monarchs and their advisors, flitting here and there from situation to situation like bugs, carrying messages, refereeing duels, and doing their bosses' bidding. They were the waterflies who dropped in to deliver troubling news; the butterflies who fluttered through the palace, with whispers and scandal providing the uprush of air for their wings; the bees who pollinated the rumor mill and guarded the nest; and the flies who fed on the waste from their devious schemes.

Minus the doublets and farthingales, a courtier's work profile and behavioral traits haven't changed all that much over the centuries. To this day, modern courtiers retain similar responsibilities and perform comparable tasks to their sixteenth- and seventeenth-century predecessors. Current members of the court still diligently guide, protect, and serve their monarchs, often with great skill and even some of that old Elizabethan flair. But instigating and umpiring Palace duels also remain part of the job description, though leaks and press releases have now replaced daggers and swords. The flashy capes may be gone, but Palace advisors still operate in cloaks of secrecy and often trade in gossip and favors. You may not see a courtier donning a feathered bonnet or carrying a scrolled message in the twenty-first century, but King Charles and Prince William continue the tradition of dispatching loyal aides to announce, arrange, fix, and, at times, provoke. Now they're professionally trained and, in some cases, groomed for the job. Today's Osrics sport office attire from Savile Row and have earned their stripes in the creative but wily realms of public relations and communications.

Palace advisors and aides may now come tested and highly qualified, but one royal family member still refers to them as mere insects. In *Spare*,

Prince Harry singles out three courtiers—without ever naming them—for the bug treatment, dubbing them “The Bee. The Fly. And the Wasp.” Beyond Harry’s zoological monikers, courtiers have been subject to an array of nicknames over the years. Queen Elizabeth I referred to her top consultants as “Spirit,” “Eyes,” and “Elf.” One of these, Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, was purportedly her lover, so it’s fortunate for him that she labeled him Eyes instead of Elf. Both Prince Philip, who often butted heads with members of Queen Elizabeth II’s court, and Princess Margaret called them the “Men with Mustaches.” A long-serving courtier for both King George VI and Elizabeth II, Sir Alan “Tommy” Lascelles, wore a rather sizable ’stache and did in fact routinely clash with both Philip and Margaret. In *The Crown*, Lascelles is portrayed as a rigid, assiduous member of the old guard—an emblem of establishment order and duty to the monarchy—and the show’s Prince Philip character derisively calls him the “dreaded mustache.” Princess Diana’s well-known tag for the courtiers in her orbit was “the Men in Gray,” because of their ubiquitous gray suits; the Duchess of York, Sarah “Fergie” Ferguson, jumped on Diana’s train and referred to them as the “Gray Men,” while Meghan and her friends privately called them “Palace Vipers.”

But who are these men, and now women, in gray, these wasps and mustaches? And what exactly do these courtly bees and elves get up to? Full disclosure: it’s a vast and intricate subject, one that is beyond the scope of one chapter, though I will hit some highlights. One could write an entire book about British courtiers and their powerful positions in the monarchy. In fact, some have, including historian Lucy Worsley’s *Courtiers: The Secret History of the Georgian Court* and royal reporter Valentine Low’s *Courtiers: The Hidden Power Behind the Crown*. Low’s book mostly looks at major players from the House of Windsor, which came into being in 1917, including the scornful and “unhelpful” Commander Richard Colville and the modernizing Lord Altrincham, a man who daringly told Queen Elizabeth II and her family that they were out of touch, and then, later in his tenure, let some fresh air in on what he considered an over-stuffy institution buzzing with too many upper-crust drones. Worsley’s book pulls the curtain back on the eighteenth-century court, revealing how it’s often not just senior officials who wield enormous power in the Palace. King George I’s Turkish valet, Mohammed, not only helped dress the King (and treat the

monarch's, erm, hemorrhoids) but, because of his intimate access, was considered as important and influential as a government minister.

Centuries later, similar was said about Elizabeth II's personal assistant and senior dresser of three decades, Angela Kelly, whom the late monarch confided in more than any other aide or family member. Discreet and trustworthy, Kelly (nicknamed by some staff as "AK-47" because of her easily triggered temper) knew all Her Majesty's secrets. She was one of the first and few to know about (and keep) the secret of the Queen's health diagnosis and related struggles (revealed by family sources after Her Majesty's death as myeloma, a form of bone cancer). Kelly was also a shoulder to cry on, often sitting with the Queen for hours at a time after the death of her husband, Prince Philip. Charles is said to have never trusted Kelly and, after his mother's death, made one of his first acts as king to evict the sixty-five-year-old from the Windsor grace-and-favor home the Queen had gifted to her. "He wanted to keep her at arm's length and away from the goings-on in Windsor," said a source. And so Kelly was moved four hours away to a property in Yorkshire. Even that came with a condition. After publishing two books about her life working with his mother (with Her Majesty's blessing), the *Mail on Sunday* reported that Kelly was made to sign a new NDA with Charles promising that any future commercial projects don't include the words *King* or *Palace*.

Lowly or high ranking, emblematic or modern, these individuals worked in a position that goes back thousands of years. The 1528 book *Il Libro del Cortegiano* (*The Book of the Courtier*), essentially a how-to guide for aspiring courtiers, described court life as one that "revolved around the monarch or prince it served"; it is a world that has existed since the first monarchies. "Whenever there is a monarch, there is a court; and whenever there is a court there are courtiers," said Low.

The line of British monarchs stretches far back into the mists of time. Sometime during 924–939, Saint Dunstan served as an influential attendant at the court of King Æthelstan, a sovereign whom many consider the founder of the English monarchy. Dunstan was the King's favorite until other jealous courtiers hatched a sabotaging plot: they started a rumor about Dunstan to disgrace him (some things never change). After convincing Æthelstan that his chosen courtier practiced black magic and witchcraft, the King sent him packing. On his way out, his rivals attacked him, threw him



in a cesspool, and left him to die. He survived and later joined a monastery. One can hardly blame him.

Two hundred years later, Sir William Marshal transformed the role. As a knight and soldier, he broke the mold of the mere court attendant, becoming King Henry II's most trusted advisor and influencer. An exceedingly powerful courtier who joined military crusades and signed on for administrative posts, he shaped medieval English politics and society in the process. A fellow knight who eulogized him said he was "the best knight who ever lived" and Sir William's legacy is a lasting one—a statue of "the Marshal" was unveiled at Pembroke Castle on the rugged southern coast of Wales in 2022.

Sir Nicholas Carew's legacy is not so grand. As a master of the horse—a top position in the royal household that remains a ceremonial title to this day—Carew was an important figure at the court of King Henry VIII, a transforming but execution-friendly monarch who reigned and terrorized in the early to mid-1500s. Letters between Carew and a fellow conspirator revealed there was a movement afoot to depose the King, and somehow these ended up in Henry's possession (it appears there were leaks then, too). Carew was tried for treason and beheaded on the infamous Tower Hill on the north bank of the River Thames in 1539.

The influential, trailblazing Duchess of Marlborough, Sarah Churchill, kept her head, but she did experience a steep fall from being Queen Anne's favored courtier in the early 1700s. Churchill was Queen Anne's right-hand woman and a quintessential gatekeeper—those who wanted to sway the Queen or sought favors from the monarch approached the duchess first. Anne rewarded Churchill for her loyalty and counsel by promoting her to Keeper of the Privy Purse. Churchill was the first of only two women to hold this powerful position. The second to hold the royal purse strings was her challenger, Baroness Abigail Masham, an ambitious protégé of the duchess whose rise to power eventually eclipsed her boss's, leading Queen Anne to outright dismiss Duchess Churchill from her court.

Although modern courtiers won't find themselves face-to-face with a hooded executioner or at the bottom of a cesspool (not literally anyway; metaphorically the list is long, with finding oneself floating in the sewer of British politics at the top of it), they, too, are often overlooked, plotted against, and caught up in political beef and family feuds. This has much to do with the nature of their work. The label of courtier is synonymous with

“Palace aide,” and it broadly applies to those who work in royal communications or serve as private secretaries, estate managers, equerries, event coordinators, ladies of the household, dressers, valets, and much more.

More narrowly, though, the term *courtier* is most often linked to press officials and private secretaries. When royal correspondents or talking heads reference courtiers or aides (including quoting them anonymously), chances are they are referring to those Palace staff who manage and offer advice to working royals or those in the communications offices who strategize engagements and release calibrated information. Toiling behind the scenes, they also advise, consult, and, like their ancient predecessors, finagle—surreptitiously directing and promoting their bosses (and, in theory, the Crown) whenever an opportunity presents itself.

Working so closely with the family members puts them in a tough spot. Courtiers must tread carefully to achieve a certain balance. If they are too fawning, principals (the term commonly used by courtiers when referring to their boss) and other influential Palace staff may grow weary of them and discount them, but if they are too direct, their bosses may quickly show them the door. And while they’re walking this tightrope, they often have the odious task of persuading monarchs to do some things they might not want to do, like, for instance, stripping Prince Andrew of his titles or disallowing Princess Margaret to marry her beloved Captain Townsend. The hours are long, the pay is often nothing to write home about (after all, it mostly comes from the public purse), and it can be a thankless position with minimal job security. Some stick around for years, but for many it’s a brief stint—a springboard to a well-paid job elsewhere.

But underestimate courtiers at your peril. As the historian and royal biographer Robert Lacey says, “[The] courtiers in the British system are the rulers of their masters and their mistresses, they’re not really underlings.” This is an overstatement, as the monarchs always have the final say, but courtiers are most certainly powerful players. The system promotes a hierarchy and, as a result, aides look for ways to exert their own power to consolidate it for their bosses. This sometimes requires hush-hush dirty work and brutal machinations. Being adjacent to power can be an intoxicating if sometimes corrupting position. Courtiers are the ultimate institutional insiders who—invisibly but with great influence—assist their principals with strategies around work and family complications, and they

do what it takes to keep ugly stuff out of the media's relentless gaze. They help them navigate the churning waters where the rivers of their personal lives meet the wild, expansive sea of public opinion.

In this respect, courtiers have played key roles in pivotal moments throughout the monarchy's history, acutely so in more recent times. The information age tore up the ledgers and rule books and reformatted the cultural layout, even scrapping the entire design in some cases. It engendered "truthiness" and introduced multiple platforms for consistent messaging and content overload or campaigns of disinformation.

Through all this change and rearrangement, an ancient monarchy has hung on and stayed relevant—at least enough to survive anyway, both as an institution and a cultural attraction. They've done this by serving the tyrannical notion of image and practicing "brand management"—work that primarily falls under the purview of the courtiers. Essential to the royal brand is the reputation of the monarchs, so courtiers are responsible for managing and repairing the reputations of the family, both individually and collectively. When it's going well, the marching orders are promote, promote, promote! In times of duress or when under attack, it's defend, defend, defend! Or sometimes the edict is to simply stay silent. Either way, the brand must be maintained, the image upheld at all cost, and senior courtiers are on the front lines of these efforts.

Sometimes they do this ethically and responsibly, and sometimes they do not, which leads to the more important questions about senior courtiers: How do their practices and ploys impact the royal family, both as a family and as a brand? Do their ethics and values always reflect those that the monarchy is supposed to uphold? This brings us back to Harry's insects.

"The Bee" is Queen Elizabeth II's former private secretary, Sir Edward Young. A former banker and advisor to Conservative politicians, Young looks the part of both. An "oval-faced" (Harry's words) middle-aged white man with neatly parted salt-and-pepper hair, he looks like two different people depending on whether or not he is wearing his glasses. Bespectacled, he's all business administration with a touch of the professorial; without, he appears a little softer around the edges and slightly lost. But don't let the latter look fool you. Following a three-year stretch as head of communications for the Granada media conglomerate (now ITV plc), he joined the royal household in 2004 as an assistant private secretary to the Queen until Her Majesty promoted him to the head job thirteen years later.

Dedicated to his role, he was fiercely protective of the late monarch, particularly during the engulfing drama of Harry and Meghan's departure. Harry's contention is that Young abused his gatekeeping power, gaslighting him when it came to passing along important messages about his lawsuits against the media, and then prohibiting access to his grandmother when Harry needed her the most, all under the guise of "protecting the sovereign."

I first wrote about Young's tactics when revealing the final hours of preparations for the Sussexes' exit from Palace life at the start of 2020. After the couple announced that they were stepping back from their royal roles (and initially blocked by Young from talking to the Queen about it with a lie that her schedule was "full"), Palace officials planned the "Sandringham Summit," a boardroom-style meeting sold as a discussion to determine the Sussexes' future in the monarchy. On the agenda at the January 13, 2020, gathering was whether Harry and Meghan would be granted the "half in, half out" working model they pitched (keep their security, perform royal work to support the Queen, and fund their own charitable projects with commercial endeavors), or would be granted a clean break ("full severance," which meant the Sussexes would lose their entire security detail, and their royal obligations and responsibilities would come to a complete halt).

Edward Young and the Queen joined Harry (with his short-lived private secretary Fiona McIlwham), William (who brought private secretary Simon Case), and Charles (who arrived with his private secretary Sir Clive Alderton) for an hour of discussion, before leaving only the family members for the final talking points. Soon after, the institution made the call: *full severance*. Harry argues, however, that the "fix was in" from the start—his family went into the discussion with their minds already made up. For the Duke of Sussex, proof of this was that Young had brought along a copy of a drafted press release for only this one particular scenario and not for the others that were also discussed. Young told Harry the office printer was broken. "Is this some kind of joke?" he asked with a laugh. He expected an open and honest conversation with his family but received a premeditated verdict from the Firm instead.

The prevailing opinion on Young is that he was an uninspired private secretary who lacked imagination. Critics pointed to the fact that when Meghan first joined the family, Young was slow to help find patronages and

active roles for the newly minted Duchess of Sussex. Sources say he “dithered” for eight months before nudging Queen Elizabeth II to appoint Meghan as the royal patron for the National Theatre, a no-brainer considering her years as an actress. This initial failure to help Meghan create a suitable lane as a working royal ushered in a pack of problems for the Sussexes, who ended up taking matters into their own hands when it came to carving out their roles (and we all know how that ended). As a result, Young is often blamed for a portion of the Sussex vs. Palace fiasco.

The countervailing opinion is that Young was a skilled liaison between the Queen, the government, and those who seek her favor, and that he was a committed, undaunted protector of the monarchy’s interests. It is widely believed that Young was the driving force behind the Queen releasing her own personal statement following Harry and Meghan’s Oprah interview rather than let communication aides speak on behalf of the institution. Though he was less than keen on the Kensington Palace–concocted “recollections may vary” response to the couple’s race-related allegation (a sentence he felt could perhaps come back to cause problems for the Queen and provoke the Sussexes to reveal even more), his decision to employ the word *family* three times in the statement helped to subtly remind the public that this was a family affair. While there were many hands involved in the official response, it was Young and the Queen who had the final say before hitting the send button on what many believe is a PR triumph of evasion and measured incredulity, packaged and sold as concern and love—truly a coup de maître of deflection, whether you agreed with it or not.

As for pressing buttons, Charles’s private secretary, Clive Alderton, aka “the Wasp,” was instrumental in the plot to convince the Queen to green-light the ouster of Young’s predecessor, Sir (now Lord) Christopher Geidt. An establishment figure par excellence and a former military intelligence officer, Geidt was a favorite of the Queen’s. He ran a tight ship, exercising prudence when necessary and forward-looking vision when modernizing pressures demanded it. Once described by a former colleague as “suave and charming, very proper, clipped and British with a regimental tie, but also with a touch of the spook about him,” Geidt was discreet, professional, and plugged into the circuit board of British politics. A bald and calmly assertive middle-aged white man (a reflexive choice for the Palace), Geidt earned the trust of those around him—including Princes William and Harry—as a decisive but aboveboard leader. His colleagues insisted he could “see

around corners” and considered him the eyes and ears of the Palace. He was an effective manager of complicated people and complex situations, and many in the Firm approved of and lauded his work ethic, judgment, and penchant for making himself invisible at the right time.

Prince Charles, however, was decidedly not in this camp. The relationship between the then Prince of Wales and Geidt had deteriorated over the years, but it totally collapsed in 2017. The Queen was ninety-one at the time and Charles was pushing for more involvement in sovereign duties in preparation for his own reign. According to royal sources, Charles and his aides were eager to “accelerate” his activities and visibility by his seventieth birthday in November 2018. Insiders called it “Project 70,” and the goal was to further position Charles as the king in waiting and show that a transition of power was already underway. Even the Palace guard and a man of caution, particularly about matters concerning the Queen, Geidt—who didn’t personally believe the heir had what it takes to be a worthy successor to his boss—stood firmly against the project.

Further infuriating Charles, around this same time Geidt called a staff meeting to announce Prince Philip’s retirement without conferring with Charles’s aides beforehand (their opinions weren’t particularly valued or wanted). It was all too much for a prince itching to be King. With Alderton’s help, Charles enlisted Prince Andrew (not exactly the most dependable of siblings, but the one person who always had their mother’s ear) to convince the Queen to remove Geidt from his post. Andrew had his own issues with Geidt. Like so many others, Geidt had long envisioned a slimmer monarchy as the key to a secure future for the Crown, and he believed one way to get there was to cut back on funding for the problematic Duke of York and his family—in particular, monies for Princesses Eugenie and Beatrice. Though Andrew knew Charles also wanted to cut his family out when his turn on the throne arrived, he felt it would be one fewer obstacle if Geidt was no longer around. The brothers’ united front against the Queen’s man eventually worked, and Geidt stepped down in July 2017, allowing the Firm to promote Edward Young to the head position. The effort involving both royals and their courtiers, a Buckingham Palace insider said at the time, was like “something out of monarchies in the middle ages.”

The backroom maneuver irked Prince William, who thought the whole stunt reeked of unprofessionalism and personal grudges run amok. The

press would later call this the result of a “Palace power struggle,” the climax of increasing tensions between Buckingham Palace and Clarence House. Some, including Princess Anne and Prince Edward, believe that letting Geidt go was the worst mistake of the Queen’s later years. Looking back, many in the family and households are certain that Geidt would have steered the monarchy through the Harry and Meghan dramas with much more control and forethought. “He just wouldn’t have allowed it to get so out of control,” a longtime Palace staffer who worked with Geidt said. “He would have listened to both sides and worked hard to ensure that everyone was happy, looked after, and, more importantly, [the Crown] would not get tainted.”

Participating in a palace coup was not out of character for Alderton. Some behind palace walls have referred to him as the “hatchet man” for his expertise in delivering bad news to his principals. This may be the case, but he certainly doesn’t look like a man comfortable wielding a deathly axe. Tall and poised, with an older but cherubic face and floppy, sand-colored hair, Alderton looks like a preparatory schoolboy all grown up. Like Charles, Sir Clive is a sharp dresser, perhaps a stylish instinct honed while working in the Foreign Office, Britain’s version of the United States Department of State. It was there that Alderton started his career in 1986 and over the years held diplomatic posts in France, Belgium, Singapore, and Poland. He joined Charles and Camilla’s team at Clarence House as a deputy private secretary in 2006, but jumped ship to take on two ambassadorships, one in Morocco and the other in Mauritania. He rejoined Charles’s inner circle in 2015 as the then Prince of Wales’s private secretary. By all accounts, Alderton is intensely intelligent, and he also likes to charm and schmooze. A former colleague says he “thrives” on his adjacency to power but is also a social butterfly who is enjoyable to be around. In terms of his relationship with certain senior members of the press, he’s “always up for a drink,” one longtime royal reporter told me.

Resilient at the pub, but also in his job. Recognizing that Geidt was the primary obstacle for Charles’s play for power, Alderton and Charles initiated a fight against an exceedingly strong opponent and won. This obvious power grab required thick skin, strategic thinking, and persistence, three essential qualities for a modern courtier. If Charles ever doubted Alderton’s loyalty or his capabilities, his willingness to go the distance to install the more pliable Edward Young surely banished any concerns. And it

solidified Alderton's position. Nine months after the Queen's death, Young retired with honors (appointed as a Lord in Waiting) and was given a £150,000 "compensation payment," but Alderton stayed on and now serves as the King's principal private secretary.

Of course, it would be wrong to assume that all courtiers at the House of Windsor are ruthless manipulators. Over the decades there have been some senior aides who have successfully managed to support the Crown, climb the company ladder, become universally liked by staff and royal family members across all households, *and* leave with their ethics and values intact. During her seventeen-year rise at Buckingham Palace, Samantha Cohen achieved just that. Starting in the communications office before reaching the role of Queen Elizabeth II's assistant private secretary for eight years, Australian journalism graduate Cohen quickly earned herself the nickname "Samantha the Panther" within palace walls (and the press) for her feisty spirit and no-nonsense attitude. She was one of the few colleagues to speak up at the appalling treatment of Lord Geidt in 2017, and the late Queen greatly valued her quick thinking and strong opinions. Prince Harry felt the same way, too. When his much-loved private secretary Ed Lane Fox (or "ELF" to those on friendly terms with him, though not as friendly as Queen Elizabeth and her Elf) left in 2018 after five years, Harry turned to Cohen to fill the role. He had known her since he was a teenager and always felt she was one of the "good eggs." The Queen thought it was a "marvelous idea," said a source, and encouraged Cohen (who at this point was ready to leave the royal fold for greener pastures) to stay on and serve as a stand-in until the Sussexes could find a permanent replacement. Many credit Cohen for the success of the couple's 2018 tour of Australia, New Zealand, Fiji, and Tonga, having helped meticulously plan a diverse itinerary that highlighted the Commonwealth, the Queen, and the couple (not an easy feat, as more recent tours by other royals have proven . . . ahem).

In 2019, Cohen was ready to continue her journey elsewhere. A royal source said that Cohen was fond of Harry and Meghan but found the pair "a bit like teenagers" at times. The Sussexes attempted to keep her on but, seeing the stormy seas ahead, the senior aide felt like it was the right time go. Cohen—who was awarded a Royal Victorian Order in 2016 for her services to the monarchy—remains a trustee of the late Queen's



Commonwealth Trust, a charity that supports young leaders across the Commonwealth.

While some courtiers shine like stars in the royal orbit, others are more comfortable in the gutter. This brings us to “the Fly.” Harry had this to say about Simon Case: “[He’d] spent much of his career adjacent to, and indeed drawn to shit. The offal of government, and media, the wormy entrails, he loved it.” It’s a damning portrait, but many behind the gates of the Palace and Parliament would argue that it is also spot-on. At the age of forty-four, Case has a résumé that already reads like that of an establishment stooge, a political player who’s been in the game for much longer than he actually has. He started his career in civil service in 2006 as a policy advisor in the Ministry of Defence. After a few years of working in the Northern Ireland Office and the Cabinet Office, Case went to work at Downing Street under then prime minister David Cameron. Here he retreats further into the shadows. In 2015, Case signed on as a director of strategy for the Government Communications Headquarters (GCHQ), an intelligence and security apparatus based in “The Doughnut,” a circular fortress-like hive of offices (think a round version of the Pentagon) tucked away in Cheltenham. Seemingly always buzzing from one influential post to the next, Case then joined Cameron as his principal private secretary. He continued on in the same position for the first year of Theresa May’s short stay on Downing Street, before Prince William poached him in 2018.

Case’s appearance matches his résumé. Practically born in a suit, these days his combed and parted brown hair accompanies a meticulously trimmed beard and rimless glasses. Many consider the GCHQ a spy agency, and Case does resemble a spy in the pulp thriller sense—slick but normal enough. There is something about his eyes that conjures up a comparison to a weary politico who can’t unsee what he’s already seen. Having enjoyed a positive working relationship with William’s previous private aide—the affable and skilled Miguel Head, who was in the role from 2012—I didn’t feel so positive about my first in-person encounter with Case during the summer of 2018. There was just something about him I didn’t trust—and most of it was in his eyes. “I look forward to hearing more about your book—I trust it will all be glowingly positive,” he said with a chuckle. With cracks already in the relationship between the Sussexes and Cambridges, we both knew that would not likely be the case. A political operator dressed up as a civil servant, Case is intelligent and undaunted by difficult jobs. In a

short but revealing BBC News profile, a cabinet minister described Case as a “fixer by nature,” and a former university tutor claimed Case is a natural “keeper of secrets.” A Tory colleague was less guarded with their words: “I like Simon, but he’s a snake.”

Prince William brought Case on in March 2018, just a couple of months before the Sussexes’ wedding. Harry and William’s relationship was already on the skids, their “divergent paths” growing further apart but still a year away from becoming front-page news. Case, said several sources, saw an opening in this deteriorating relationship, a chance to elevate his “principal.” Despite the obvious difference in the line of succession, Harry and William were publicly on equal footing at the time. Before Meghan’s arrival, William, Kate, and Harry were a unified trio on their chosen causes and I always saw them smiling and laughing together at engagements. This was largely thanks to Miguel Head, who regularly encouraged the brothers (and Kate) to find ways to work together, not apart. Case was different—he saw the cracks, and his actions helped widen them. To change the narrative for William and move him away from his work-shy image to that of a resolute and industrious second in line, some drastic measures were required. His plan: reposition William, the heir, as the responsible one, the adult in the room, while casting Harry, the spare, as the wayward one, the selfish brother with a competing agenda.

Harry’s wedding was an ideal event for Case to kick off his campaign to elevate William. A source told me that Harry was unwavering in his decision to have a close friend be his best man instead of William, with whom he was already becoming at odds. In *Spare*, he reveals he asked “old mate” Charlie van Straubenzee to take on the role. Recognizing that the optics—and the headlines to follow—of Harry passing over his brother for the role would certainly be detrimental to William’s image and, by extension, problematic for the Firm at large, Case made sure that at the very least the media received word his boss was selected for the task. Harry’s aides were instructed not to correct the inaccurate reports that followed.

In late August 2019, Case sniffed out another opportunity for PR gamesmanship. That summer the Duke and Duchess of Sussex were under fire for flying on private jets so soon after Harry announced his new sustainable tourism initiative, Travalyst. By their fourth private jet trip (in eleven days)—this time to Nice, France, on a plane that belonged to their host, Sir Elton John—sections of the press were calling out the couple’s

hypocrisy. The argument was that it contradicted Harry's public stance on the environment. Given that private jets consume ten times more fuel per person than commercial jets, it was not one of Harry's wisest decisions from a public image standpoint. Even his communications secretary Sara Latham had advised him to reconsider his jet travel plans for a solo Google Camp appearance in Italy the previous month. But, for this particular family trip, the media failed to account for the Sussexes' growing security concerns, particularly when traveling with a newborn. Sir Elton ended up defending his friends and tweeted that he and his husband, David Furnish, paid for the trip for safety reasons and that they always offset their carbon emissions with donations to environmental groups.

Reasonable arguments on both sides resulted in a reasonable outcome. Harry and Meghan had valid reasons for flying by jet but privately acknowledged that the criticism served as a "lessons learned" moment. As for the complaints that they were in France instead of visiting the Queen and Prince Philip in Balmoral during their summer stay (they hadn't been explicitly asked, but all family members had an open invite), their answer was simple—they felt four-month-old Archie was too young for all the hunting, shooting, and fishing that fill up the family itinerary at the Highland getaway.

But Simon Case had another idea. Seizing this moment, which he perceived as a highly embarrassing one for Harry, he took another step in his PR long game for his boss. Just days later, William, Kate, and their three children were spotted boarding a commercial budget airline flight from Norwich to Aberdeen for a trip to Balmoral. Although there were no photographers on the tarmac, a conveniently captured phone video popped up in the press showing William, Kate, and their children casually making their way off the plane at the airport. Palace-friendly papers were quick to report that their seats on the Flybe aircraft cost only £73 per adult, adding that the cheap travel proved William and Kate were entirely comfortable taking their children on a commercial flight. Champing at the bit to compare and contrast, the *Daily Mail* (who, like some other papers, was given a heads-up about the trip by a Kensington Palace aide) reminded readers about the recent row over Harry and Meghan's trips before breathlessly reporting how Prince William was "looking like your archetypal family man on holiday . . . [and] can be seen clutching a number

of bags while George, six, and Charlotte, four, run excitably alongside him.”

A premediated publicity setup; this was all Case’s handiwork. A stroke of backhanded artifice, it was a successful stunt—at first, anyway. As *London Evening Standard* royal editor Robert Jobson said at the time, “It’s a shrewd move by the Duke of Cambridge and great for the public . . . and if they can fly budget then surely Harry, Meghan and their child are able to as well.” He added, “A lot of people are claiming the royals are costing too much at the moment, and William is putting his money where his mouth is by going budget.” His commentary was exactly the kind Case was hoping for—a perceived stark contrast between the brothers and an elevation of William at the expense of his brother.

Of course, all is not always as it seems and, unknown to the public at the time, William and Kate’s casual trip wasn’t quite as environmentally friendly or spendthrift as it first appeared. After a Kensington Palace aide discussed their plans (and the fact that photographs would likely end up in the papers) with a Flybe executive, officials at the company made some moves of their own. As it turns out, there wasn’t a plane emblazoned with corporate branding at William and Kate’s outgoing airport—the daily flight from Norwich to Aberdeen is operated by Loganair for Eastern Airways, a franchise of Flybe. So as to not miss this golden advertising opportunity, the Flybe team decided to fly over an empty, properly branded aircraft from their headquarters in Humberside, a coastal town 123 miles north of Norwich. The plane also returned empty to Humberside after the Cambridges and other passengers disembarked in Aberdeen. All told, the two empty flights released upward of four and a half tons of carbon emissions. Kensington Palace claimed they knew nothing about Flybe’s switcheroo, but the whole farce turned it into a fail for all involved regardless. Their perfect family trip was exposed for what it really was: a showy publicity stunt. Even in this early stage of his Kensington Palace post, some officials in the other households were less than impressed with Case’s stratagems. A Buckingham Palace aide (who was no fan of the private secretary) laughed to me at the time: “Nice try, but in the end, they looked like even bigger hypocrites than the couple they were trying to show up.” Added another communications staffer at that time, “I feel like it’s a new era with [Case]. I’m not sure if it’s a good or a bad one.”

In retrospect, as the crevasse between the brothers deepened to the point that reconciliation still seems like a long shot, even Case's PR gambits can now be viewed as successes for Kensington Palace. The results are in: William is firmly in the role of a decisive king in waiting and Harry has been cast by the Palace and the press as a perceived lost soul. This so-called success came at an exceedingly high cost. While other circumstances—some unforeseen, but many of them devised—hammered on the wedge between William and Harry, Simon Case's moves activated a chain of events that have helped damage a brotherly relationship beyond repair. "That was a dark time," a source close to the family told me.

Similar sentiments were shared when Charles and Camilla's longtime press secretary Julian Payne left in 2021. Never afraid to get his hands dirty ("he's the resident playground gossip," a senior aide of the Queen once said to me), Payne happily shared tales about family members, including Harry and Meghan, to other staff and preferred media allies who wrote favorably about his bosses. He also gave details about Charles's relationships with Harry and his grandchildren for *Finding Freedom*, although, prior to publication, I found out that some of the information (such as how regularly Charles would visit Prince George, Princess Charlotte, and Prince Louis) was not accurate.

As for "the Fly," well, he buzzed off back to the intestinal system of British politics, joining former prime minister Boris Johnson's team as cabinet secretary, the youngest to ever hold the position. He survived Johnson's ugly resignation and his successor's short tenure, and Prime Minister Rishi Sunak kept him on as his cabinet secretary. But it wasn't a successful journey for Case. He was implicated in the "Partygate scandal" and its swarming allegations that Johnson and staff flagrantly violated Covid-19 lockdown restrictions by hosting social gatherings at 10 Downing Street and other locations during the pandemic. Loyal only to himself, it seems, Westminster watched as Case seemingly threw his former boss under the bus. Johnson revealed he was advised by Case that Covid protocol was followed for the rule-breaking get-togethers, but Case later told an investigating committee that he said no such thing.

The Firm needs to look no further than the example of Simon Case as a reminder that Svengalis ultimately seek to control and exploit, and gurus tend to fall from grace. Waterflies never hang around for long. Lest we forget the messy situation that Charles's former right-hand man Michael

Fawcett found himself in. Even Niccolò Machiavelli, the Renaissance diplomat and philosopher whose name is now synonymous with calculating plots and ruthless power grabs, was eventually arrested and banished. In the end, relying on deception and trickery ultimately leads to destruction. Image control is a fool's errand. And it should be obvious to the royals by now that when it comes to family, truth always outsmarts cunning.

## Ghost at the Feast

Princess Diana and Revisionist History

*Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold . . .  
Can such things be  
And overcome us like a summer's cloud,  
Without our special wonder?*

—William Shakespeare, *Macbeth*

*Body. People kept using that word. It was a punch in the throat, and a bloody lie, because Mummy wasn't dead.*

—Prince Harry, *Spare*

**H**ounded as she was into a subterranean darkness, Princess Diana's life was cut short on August 31, 1997, by excessive speed, shattering glass, and twisted metal. After her chauffeur Henri Paul was blinded by a “major white flash” from a paparazzi photographer on an overtaking motorbike, he lost control at sixty-five miles per hour and collided with a concrete pillar in the Pont de l'Alma underpass in Paris. She was thirty-six. Her journey from a spirited young woman to a “royal body” to a corpse in a French morgue was devastatingly brief. Into a tunnel and then gone.

But her story, tragic ending and all, her time as the “people's princess,” and her élan endures—and continues to inspire the public and haunt the monarchy. In some ways, it's as if she never left. This is especially true for Prince Harry, who avows in *Spare* that he grappled with the reality of her death from what was left of his splintered childhood through his turbulent teenage years into early adulthood, often tricking himself into believing she was just in hiding and would soon come back for him and his brother. Who

of us wouldn't, at his age and in his circumstances, surrender to this kind of magical thinking?

Harry kept up these wishful fantasies until he was twenty-three. After a driver drove Harry through Pont de l'Alma at the exact same speed as his mother's car, he internally acknowledged that no escape plans were executed, that his mother was not, in fact, in hiding. Speeding through the tunnel, watching the spectral zone lights ratchet up the windshield, he finally accepted that his mother was gone. "Closure" is a powerful influencer, one that steered both brothers to the scene of their mother's death. After Harry recounted his trip to his brother, he and William then went through the tunnel together. It's an experience that led both to conclude that the police inquest into her death—which depicted the tunnel as a bumpy death trap and laid much of the blame at the chauffeur's feet for drinking—was a joke. We don't know how William reacted or if he found any solace, but for Harry, it did bring closure, as he claimed, "I got it in spades." However, instead of stopping the pain, it brought "Pain, Part Deux." As novelist Andrew O'Hagan points out in a *London Review of Books* essay, over the course of his four-hundred-and-sixteen-page memoir, "Harry never says that his mother is dead, only that she has 'disappeared.'"

He still feels her presence, especially in the hinge moments of his life—his wedding, the births of his children, and when he absconded to California to protect his family from the British press and the realities of his untenable situation within the Firm. During the publicity sprint after the book's publication, and in the years leading up to this moment, Harry often cited in interviews that a fear of "history repeating itself" (Meghan meeting a horrific end) was the prime motivator for leaving the royal bubble, saying goodbye to all of that. Harry believes his mother was undeniably there for him, revealing the tidal force Diana's story exerts on her younger son. In a *Good Morning America* sit-down, Harry told host Michael Strahan that he "felt the presence of [his] mum more so in the last two years than [he has] in the last thirty." He trusts she's still out there, in spirit form, leading him as he reinvents himself beyond the strictures of royal life.

Diana's indelible presence may serve as an attending spirit for Harry, but for other members of the royal family and the institution behind them, her legacy is a haunting narrative, one with which they must continually contend, and another tragic episode they are doomed to never forget. Diana's absence and the press coverage it receives is an inextricable part of



the royal story. There is incessant reminiscing from the global media, which has created a niche industry of Diana nostalgia that the business at large relies on and the royal institution leans into—when convenient. The flip side of this for the monarchy is that it never goes away. Diana created a visual brand for the family, and when the outside world pictures the Firm, Diana is still present.

A web of its own making, the saga of the late Princess of Wales was not a *fait accompli*. The Palace effectively installed her and then manufactured the gilded cage she never stopped rattling. Queen Elizabeth II and her backers rejected Charles's choice, Camilla Parker Bowles, and helped groom the young Diana Spencer for the role. And, wow, did she ever tick their boxes: young, elegant, and, most importantly for them, slim, virginal, and aristocratic. Born into nobility—the youngest daughter of Viscount and Viscountess Althorp—Diana, along with the rest of her family, ran in the same circles as the royals for decades. Just as the Queen selected her thoroughbred racing horses, the Firm chose Diana for her pedigree and her usefulness. They trusted Diana would bring home the big prize to Windsor—an heir and a spare.

The system had a blueprint for Diana as a vessel for hereditary power, but when it came to Diana as a human being, the Palace was completely unprepared. As she matured, she proved to be all things the monarchy was not—modern, vital, mercurial, savvy, and, to the institution's eventual dismay, wildly popular. Some of this attractive but unpredictable dynamism was expected, even planned for. The Palace knew that adding Diana to the roster would boost their public profile. She would, as former *Guardian* royal correspondent Stephen Bates put it, “enliven it, rejuvenate it, refresh it and be glamorous, and [serve as] proof that the family were not stuck in the mud.”

She certainly brought the glamour, but she also brought empathy, sensitivity, and a worldly outlook. To borrow a cliché, she wore her heart on her sleeve, something that is categorically *un-royal*. The “people's princess” was more approachable and sincere. Often to the frustration of Palace aides, who furiously watched the clock as they regularly ran over a precise schedule, she always made time for others during her royal walkabouts, clasping the hands of well-wishers as she attentively listened to their stories. The public responded to this new personable royal style, which left other working royals looking cold and stiff. The Palace took notice and

eventually adopted her approach as a matter of company policy, and then other family members followed her example (and have been ever since). Even King Charles, a man not raised to be outwardly warm, now physically embraces members of the public when he's on walkabouts. After his mother's death, a time of undeniable personal grief, he allowed members of the public to hug him and hold his hands in theirs. (Some haven't quite managed it, though—Prince Edward still famously avoids most physical contact with the great unwashed. “He's a massive germaphobe,” a royal source said.)

Diana's unfeigned warmth was infectious to everyone around her. But like anyone managing the distortions of fame and the exigencies of family life, she did live a somewhat double existence: she had a public identity and a private self—one that her biographer and confidante Andrew Morton once described to me as “a little immature . . . and a little stubborn”—and these selves were often at war. But on the public stage she predominantly came across as unaffected and assured, particularly as she grew more comfortable in her role. She was real, she was genuine, and she wasn't afraid to show it. Diana passionately took on the thorny issue of HIV and AIDS research, even though, at the time, Charles deemed it an inappropriate cause for royal participation. For her good works and authenticity, a global public embraced her as one of their own, similar to how they did at first with Meghan.

Days into her life as a working royal, Princess Diana's popularity was already eclipsing that of her husband. The woman who should have been the submissive wife in the heir's shadow quickly became Charles's biggest competition, and this further irritated an already inflamed marriage. Charles's long-standing affair with Camilla, Diana's depression, and the strain of the insatiable British tabloids all led to the epic royal crisis that was the couple's three-year separation and their hyper-publicized divorce in 1996.

And so, the fairy tale came to an end. Diana's popularity no longer served the royal cause, and, as a result, the system—led by Queen Elizabeth II herself—commanded the divorce. Embarrassed by the self-perpetuating circus of Charles and Diana's imbroglios and exasperated by the fact that the couple was now airing their dirty laundry in the public arena, the Queen issued her decree via separate letters to her son and his soon-to-be ex-wife. “After considering the present situation, the Queen wrote to both the Prince

and Princess earlier this week and gave them her view, supported by the Duke of Edinburgh [Prince Philip], that an early divorce is desirable,” a December 20, 1995, Palace statement read. And to make sure the public knew God and Country approved, the statement went on to claim, “The Archbishop of Canterbury, senior prelate of the Church of England, which British sovereigns head, and Prime Minister John Major were both consulted and agreed with the Queen’s action.” All of this was just official gloss for Her Majesty’s decision—that she’d had enough of the couple’s dramas and the damage it was inflicting on the monarchy’s image.

So much of the couple’s messy, human ordeal led to the Queen’s “Basta!” moment, but it was Diana’s November 20, 1995, BBC *Panorama* interview with Martin Bashir that pushed the late monarch into the red zone. It was a sensational prime-time special that twenty-three million people in the United Kingdom tuned in for, and the source of Diana’s famous line, “There were three of us in the marriage, so it was a bit crowded.” The interview’s many intimate disclosures are well-trodden history, and chances are you know them well. But it should be noted that for a member of the royal family—or any public figure back in the sanctimonious 1990s—to discuss her struggles with depression, self-harm, bulimia, and extramarital affairs so openly was extraordinary. It’s hard to fathom now in our social media age of oversharing and grievance gorging just how explosive and astonishing Diana’s raw honesty was. This was a time when the royal family was still adhering to the dictum of “never complain, never explain.”

Finally breaking free of her royal cage, Diana directly addressed her issues, many of which were verboten for discussion—not only by the royal institution, but by the culture at large. Sweeping under the rug was a national (and royal) pastime—you just did not talk about certain things. But Diana did. And she did it head-on and without any rote tap-dancing. After it aired, the interview was lauded by some but mostly disparaged in the press, and her candor seemed reckless to many, considering she had two small boys to protect. But one thing was indisputable: in fifty-four minutes, Diana had wrested her story (and life) back from the royal system that had been shaping and defining it for her. She had taken control of the narrative in front of the camera for the very first time. *Her* very own “Basta!” moment. And she was immediately punished. Just a month after the interview, the Queen issued the letters that ordered the divorce.

But Diana didn't own her narrative for long. Just a year later, as she attempted to find happiness outside of her old life, the princess sped off into the unknown with her forty-two-year-old lover and Harrods heir Dodi Fayed, their fatal crash an awful denouement that only deepened the complexity of her short but stormy life. So, it was a feeding frenzy of others making sense of it, trying to package her "life and legacy," airbrushing out the untidy reality. First came the international spectacle of grief and mourning and the mountains of flowers; then the reactive finger-pointing started. The first target: media giants and the shutterbugs who did their bidding. American royalty quickly weighed in. Tom Cruise indignantly informed the mourning public that the media was guilty. "It was harassment," he told CNN. Then it was the royal family's turn in the crosshairs, particularly after the Queen, accused of cold disinterest, remained in Scotland after Diana's death was announced to the world, also refusing to break protocol and raise the royal standard flag at half mast over Buckingham Palace to honor her passing. *The Sun* ran the headline "Where Is Our Queen? Where Is Her Flag?"

Mass catharsis often requires a sacrificial lamb. In this case, the complexity of truth was hauled up to the altar. Blaming was easy; understanding was hard. Following a preferred narrative was undemanding—and more beneficial—than taking responsibility or simply admitting that things were more complicated than they seemed, that Diana was more than just a princess, that she was more than just a victim. Her tragic death was the result of a young, modern woman entering an unforgiving, archaic system that failed to protect her, a mother caught between loving and hating the glare of the celebrity spotlight, and an ordinary human being facing extraordinary pressure. But this entanglement of facts? Who benefits from that? Where's the money in that? That narrative is too untidy.

So the Firm and the media have been cherry-picking Diana's legacy ever since. Palace officials, media outlets, movie and TV makers, and "royal experts" continually cannibalize her life and death to limn a caricature-like portrait to suit their needs—casting Diana as an impossibly perfect saint, reducing her to a reckless adulteress, or, in the case of the Palace, attempting to erase her suffering to avoid the blameful fingers being pointed.

The media is the media—we've come to expect this from an enterprise hell-bent on creating necessary narratives for their bottom lines. But it is

truly bewildering to watch the royal institution speak out of both sides of its mouth when it comes to Diana. Knowing that she continues to be one of the most talked about members of the family to this day, the institution still shamelessly leverages her popularity. I recall the feeling of slight horror when a former Kensington Palace staffer told me how a senior aide encouraged the then Duke and Duchess of Cambridge to make more nods to the princess on an overseas tour, from restaging iconic photographs taken on her travels to Kate mirroring her sartorial choices during poignant moments. During the past thirteen years, Diana cosplay has become a royal staple. Both the current Princess of Wales and the Duchess of Sussex (during her working royal years) regularly replicated her iconic looks, complete with accessories once owned by the late princess. Considering they are both married to Diana's sons, the connection makes sense. But while finding a trend untouched by Diana's iconic style is almost impossible, the huge amount of effort that goes into channeling her exact look sometimes goes beyond the pale. "Those decisions were always discussed with [William or Harry], so much work and time goes into outfit choices," said a source who had worked with both royals. "Were there gentle pushes from others? At times, yes. It had been known for someone to go back and pull images of Diana at a certain place or time for ideas."

At the right moment this can be a sweet gesture, but there is also a slightly queasy feeling when you realize it's often orchestrated within the same system that contributed to her living misery, an institution that still wants some of Diana's shine to rub off on them. And then there are the money-spinners. "Diana: Her Fashion Story," a collection of clothes, photographs, and glossy expositions on her life displayed at Kensington Palace from 2017 to 2019, attracted tourists in droves. The tasteful curation of gowns and accessories was a fascinating and comprehensive chronicle of memories, but not a single one of the accompanying museum labels acknowledged the darker or more difficult sides of her story. It was Diana's life—before, during, and after her marriage to Charles—presented how the institution of the monarchy would like you to remember it: glamorous, dutiful, and very happy.

Put on by Historic Royal Palaces, visitors to the Kensington Palace exhibit could also pick up replicas of jewelry worn by the late Princess of Wales, including a £150 version of the sapphire-and-pearl choker she wore to dance with John Travolta, a £24.99 "Princess Diana faux sapphire

brooch,” and a £50 “Spencer tiara ring.” All thirty-two items were available to purchase in a gift shop a stone’s throw away from the apartment she once lived in and were marketed in time for events commemorating two decades since her passing. (A spokesperson for HRP argued at the time that, as an independent charity receiving no Crown funding, the retail sales were essential for the organization to maintain certain unoccupied royal residences across the country.)

Because the institution’s health is so heavily reliant on script and image, the Palace has historically tussled with two occasions when Diana shared her real story: Andrew Morton’s book *Diana: Her True Story*, first published in 1992, and, of course, that unforgettable *Panorama* interview. “These two events have been the two times the Palace lost complete control of the narrative,” Morton said. Instead, they became heavy-stitched threads in the public tapestry of her life. Morton’s biography was incendiary when the independent Michael O’Mara Books first published it—staunch royalists burned copies in the streets, and the tabloids (some of whom accused the young journalist of making up reporting in the book) set up paparazzi outside his London home for weeks. But it was nothing in comparison to the firestorm that ensued after the British author updated it for a new edition just two months after Diana’s death in 1997. After denying for five years that Diana contributed to the book, claiming to have spoken only with friends and family, Morton finally acknowledged that the Princess of Wales was the main source. He changed the subtitle to *Her True Story—In Her Own Words* and included an eighteen-thousand-word transcript of the tape recordings that she gave him for source material. “If she was still alive today, I would still be saying my sources were her friends and family,” he said.

Predictably, bedlam followed the bombshell news. Deep in version control hell and losing their grip on the story they had desperately tried to shape, the Palace threatened to have the book banned. Diana’s brother Charles, Earl of Spencer, even sought legal counsel regarding the ownership of the tapes. Morton was singled out and pilloried for “cashing in” on her death by the very same media establishment that made millions relentlessly covering her separation, her divorce, and her sad end.

In more recent years, Morton claimed the newer edition reflected Princess Diana’s belief in openness, honesty, and clarity. Suffice it to say, these values are not exactly highlighted in the monarchy’s playbook. To

stay afloat, especially when their brand is challenged, the institution rolls out the opposite: reticence, truthiness, and distraction. It's why journalists who help pump out the Palace narratives are often rewarded with the best access. Biographer Penny Junor, for example, has spoken and written about Diana as a bad mother, volatile, narcissistic, and violent. She has also enjoyed top-tier access to Charles and Camilla for intimate, and mostly positive, biographies. These knocks to Diana's character, however, can achieve only so much. Diana's story—the closest we will ever come to her memoir—was already out there.

Along with Morton's tome, the *Panorama* interview remained a go-to source for Diana's "true story" for twenty-seven years. It was everywhere—until it wasn't. After a BBC-led and royal family-supported 2020 investigation restated that journalist Martin Bashir committed "deceitful behavior" and used unethical practices to obtain the interview, the BBC outright banned it, announcing in July 2022 that the corporation would never air it again.

For the institution and King Charles, removing *Panorama* from the public eye was a long time in the making. "They had no control over the Morton book, but this was something they hoped people would forget about," a family source opined. "This investigation was the only way to secure that. They had no interest in doing it for Diana; it was all about removing what continues to be incredibly damaging to the monarchy from the public domain."

The process started in 1996, when Earl Charles Spencer, and others in Diana's family, began to question Bashir's tactics to land the interview. An internal investigation at the time saw Bashir admit that he forged bank statements to convince Diana and her brother that Rupert Murdoch's News International and U.K. intelligence services were bankrolling a surveillance operation on her and other members of the Spencer family. In his quest to land the unprecedented interview, Bashir went as far as to tell the earl that his own head of security was in on it and had accepted payments from a shadowy offshore account in the Channel Islands. For a family on edge and a princess already convinced that operatives in the institution were spying on her, this was the spark that lit the fire. After Earl Spencer relayed to his sister that he had the smoking gun—bank statements that showed their security team was in on it—she agreed to Bashir's interview proposal,

despite the fact that he was a relatively junior, little-known reporter at the time.

Bashir confessed to this deceit, but the BBC let him off with a slap on the wrist. Case closed. The story all but vanished, and Bashir went on to have a successful career at ITV, NBC, ABC, and then back in the saddle at the BBC as a religious affairs correspondent in 2016. But Diana's brother was not done fighting. Just a month prior to the twenty-fifth anniversary of what was still referred to as the "interview of a generation," the earl wrote a letter to the BBC director-general, Tim Davie, formally asking for the public service broadcaster to open an inquiry into this matter alongside a dossier of new evidence illustrating the underhanded methods adopted by Bashir to win Diana's trust. "I have to leave you in no doubt—because I want to be absolutely clear, not to threaten: this is all going to come out now," he signed off rather ominously in the November 2020 note, which was also shared with the *Mail on Sunday*.

Threat or not, the BBC took notice and hopped to it. For his part, Bashir quit before he could be fired, citing "health issues." The corporation's board appointed Lord Dyson, former justice of the Supreme Court of the United Kingdom, to reinvestigate the circumstances around the interview. Completed in May 2021, Dyson's inquiry found that Bashir was in "serious breach" of BBC guidelines and, even more damning, that the BBC "covered up in its press logs such facts as it had been able to establish about how Mr. Bashir secured the interview" and "fell short of the high standards of integrity and transparency which are its hallmark." It wasn't the misdeed but the cover-up that heaped on the trouble.

For the Palace, apologies were not enough, considering the reputational damage from the interview. This was a golden opportunity to stop it once and for all. Prince William personally contacted BBC executives to take whatever steps were necessary to ensure that the interview never again sees the light of day. With the help of Diana's older son, they finally had the chance to remove her voice from the record. Without hesitation, the BBC agreed. The one small caveat would be that in certain circumstances ("for journalistic purposes"), it may be justified to use a short clip. But "these will be few and far between and will need to be agreed at Executive Committee level and set in the full context of what we now know about the way the interview was obtained," the BBC said in a statement. The disappearance of Diana's interview has prompted Andrew Morton to find



archives outside of Britain to store the tape recordings Diana made for his book. “She did only two interviews and now there is only one left, so it’s important to protect her voice,” he told me.

Already at odds with each other, Prince William’s and Prince Harry’s official responses were as far apart in tone as their locations in the world. The Duke of Sussex’s written statement issued from California reminded the public that his mother was “an incredible woman who dedicated her life to service” and someone who was also “resilient, brave, and unquestionably honest.” Harry went on to share his concern that the “ripple effect of a culture of exploitation and unethical practices [that] ultimately took her life” still thrives and devastates. “Our mother lost her life because of this, and nothing has changed,” he wrote. “Let’s remember who she was and what she stood for.” To Harry, a friend of his later told me, the purpose of the duke’s brief and targeted response was to acknowledge the outcome but also protect his mother’s legacy and her words. “This wasn’t about wanting to silence her . . . He knew that what she said in that interview was how she felt at the time. The means used to convince her to do it were ugly and unethical, but if it wasn’t Bashir it would have been someone else. His mother just wanted to be heard.”

In a white shirt, tie, sweater, and jacket, William personally opted to read his statement in front of a camera at Kensington Palace. He did not prevaricate as he said, “It is my view that the deceitful way the interview was obtained substantially influenced what my mother said.” He also claimed that the BBC “made lurid and false claims on the royal family which played on her fears and fueled paranoia . . . [The] BBC’s failures contributed significantly to her fear, paranoia, and isolation that I remember from those final years with her.” With conviction and force, in an almost officious tone, he added that the interview “established a false narrative” and the program “should never be aired again.”

The differences in the brothers’ statements are stark. Both expressed understandable outrage over Bashir’s duplicity and the BBC’s moral and professional failures. But while Harry stopped to acknowledge and honor Diana’s strengths, despite the whole fiasco, William reinforced the counternarrative that his mother was paranoid at the time. While there is no doubt that William’s rebuke came from a place of love, sources explained he was also keen to toe the company line without any concessions to what his mother said during the interview itself. To write his statement, William

turned to a number of aides within the royal household, including former private secretary Simon Case, who had left a month earlier for his new role as cabinet secretary for then prime minister Boris Johnson. He embraced the institution's version that, because Diana was duped, the interview was null and void as a result—even if what she said was completely in line with what she had previously expressed in Morton's book. By disparaging Bashir's trick and by extension the entire interview, William ended up discrediting a large part of his mother's own story. To make his points, he did not remind the public that his mother was candid and truthful, despite Bashir's dirty work, but, instead, maintained the royal version that she was emotionally fragile and thus easily manipulated, and therefore her claims are not to be trusted.

It was more proof that the institution leveraged this ordeal as a way to wipe the interview from the collective consciousness, to get rid of a source of inconvenient truths, to finally free itself of a haunting narrative that just won't go away. And to do so, they sent out the good son, the heir to the throne, to make it official.

William was convincing in his lead role, but a source close to Harry believes William may have felt some pressure to word his statement as he did, speaking not just for himself but on behalf of the institution. Either way, it demonstrates just how far the brothers have drifted apart, even though they once promised to never allow the institution to come between them and their feelings toward their mother. Harry's statement was a missive from exile issued from the heart of his crusade to reform a press establishment that he believes caused his mother's death. And he wasn't shy about bringing it up again. Just over a year later, Harry allowed and encouraged director Liz Garbus to use a clip from his mother's *Panorama* interview in Netflix's 2022 docuseries *Harry & Meghan*. "I think we all now know that she was deceived into giving the interview but at the same time she spoke the truth of her experience," Harry says in an episode. William was said to be "infuriated."

Let us also remember that it was in this interview that Diana suggested Charles might never be ready for the throne, claiming that such a "suffocating role . . . would bring enormous limitations to him, and I don't know whether he could adapt to that." Charles is now on the throne, and the Firm no doubt appreciated the opportunity to bury this insightful candor from a woman whose legacy and popularity still eclipses their own. The

hard truth in all of this: we'll never know for certain whether Diana would have agreed to the interview and shared everything she did without Bashir's trickery. But the fact remains that she had already risked it all for Morton's book. "That interview was simply an amplification of what she had already said to me," said its author. Even in Lord Dyson's damning report, the judge states that he believes Diana probably would have agreed to the interview without Bashir's unscrupulous inventions (a fact conveniently sidestepped by some newspapers). Published as part of the investigation was an authenticated handwritten note from Diana on Kensington Palace stationery that read, "I consented to the interview on *Panorama* without any undue pressure and have no regrets concerning the matter."

Bashir also wanted to get something of his own on the record. After the Dyson report, he issued a statement that claimed mocking up the bank statements was "a stupid thing to do" and an action he "deeply regret[s]." But, he added, it is "saddening that this single issue has been allowed to overshadow the princess's brave decision to tell her story, to courageously talk through the difficulties she faced, and, to help address the silence and stigma that surrounded mental health issues all those years ago." The sanctimony is perhaps a bit much from someone who faked their way into fame, but he makes a good point. The melodrama once again occluded Diana's all-too-real human story: her suffering and bravery under fire, her vanity and guile. Distraction upstaged a knotty truth. Now *this* was straight from the Palace playbook.

For the royal establishment, the timing of all this couldn't be better. As the family continues to transform their shape with King Charles and Queen Camilla at the head and Prince William waiting for his turn, it proved an opportune moment to derail the Diana narrative. And with Harry and Meghan's own storyline out there dredging up similar issues, particularly the institution's indifference when it comes to women and mental health, this is a propitious moment for the Firm to, at the very least, rewrite this one notorious chapter. By casting Diana as a paranoid dupe in this fabled interview, they can pave the way for others (particularly the onside press) to raise issues about every other Diana story out there. Well, was she of sound mind when she said that? Who was pressuring her at the time? Questions about anything Diana-related that troubles the family brand can be raised. Meanwhile, the version of Diana they are comfortable with, the one that still brings in money and boosts their image, *that* one they'll be fine with.

“Harry has experienced something very similar after sharing his own experiences and truth,” said a source close to the duke. “He understands exactly what his mother went through because it’s happening to him, too.”

It was a masterful snow job from the Palace. In one go they delegitimized a disquieting narrative, laid blame on the media, and, once again, sidestepped any responsibility for Diana’s misery. In a campaign of mass distraction, Diana’s story was buried under a barrage of statements and reports primarily issued by powerful men. Her voice was almost lost to a mostly male echo chamber of opinion, interviews, and “findings.”

When it was the Duchess of Sussex’s turn for her own *Panorama*-style moment, a prime-time interview with Oprah Winfrey in March 2021, the royal institution had learned its lesson. This time, a campaign was activated before Meghan’s words were even broadcast. And certain aides had just the ammunition that was required. After members of the royal household, past and present, worked closely with a British journalist, Meghan’s reputation took a hit five days before *Oprah with Meghan & Harry* aired on CBS. On the front page of the March 2 edition of *The Times of London*: “Royal aides reveal Meghan bullying claim before Oprah interview.” Inside, a lengthy dossier-style reportage featured a number of allegations from sources and insiders all claiming Meghan had “bullied” and “humiliated” staff during her time at Kensington Palace. According to the newspaper’s royal correspondent Valentine Low, aides chose to “hit back” at the duchess, fearing “that only a partial version” of her two years as a working member of the royal family would be shared in the prime-time special. “They wanted to give their account of the turmoil within the royal household from Meghan’s arrival,” Low claimed, with details of how Meghan reportedly drove two personal assistants out of their jobs and undermined the confidence of a third staff member. One of them, he reported, told a colleague, “I can’t stop shaking,” before a meeting with the newly minted Duchess of Sussex. Others, the article added, were “reduced to tears.”

Spearheading these claims at Kensington Palace was Jason Knauf, who at the time of the story’s publication was CEO of William and Kate’s charitable umbrella but was previously the communications secretary for both the Sussexes and Cambridges. He first expressed concerns about Meghan’s bulldozing behavior, including her treatment of his friend and Sussex assistant Melissa Toubati, with the Palace’s head of human resources, Samantha Carruthers, back in October 2018. Knauf told

Carruthers he was worried that “nothing will be done,” then followed up by emailing Simon Case.

“I am very concerned that the Duchess was able to bully two PAs out of the household in the past year. The treatment of [name one, redacted] was totally unacceptable,” he wrote in the memo, which was passed on to *The Times*. “The Duchess seems intent on always having someone in her sights. She is bullying [name two, redacted] and seeking to undermine her confidence. We have had report after report from people who have witnessed unacceptable behaviour towards [name two, redacted].”

Interestingly, despite claims that the former “tormented” staffers were keen for their stories to be heard before the Sussexes’ special aired, several sources confirmed to me that two of the “victims” mentioned in *The Times*’ piece had actually rescinded their stories. “When they heard Jason had raised [the issue], they did not want it to become an official HR complaint,” said a former member of the Kensington Palace team. Regardless, Knauf went ahead with internal conversations, including, a second source confirmed, several meetings with Prince William. “William wanted the story out there at the time . . . but it was tricky; it would have meant potentially putting members of staff who didn’t want to be identified or part of this in a vulnerable position.” It should come as no surprise then that, ahead of the Oprah interview, William was happy to overlook any prohibitive terms in staff members’ employment contracts before email communication between Knauf and Case was shared with *The Times*.

Essentially, this was your classic “oppo dump,” no different from when a political candidate collects information on their opponent and unleashes it in the final stages of an election or campaign to weaken them. Inside *The Times*’ explosive report were a number of other unrelated claims, including the fact that Meghan had worn earrings gifted from Crown Prince Mohammed bin Salman of Saudi Arabia, the same royal who U.S. intelligence agencies say approved the murder of the journalist Jamal Khashoggi. Surprisingly, the duchess chose to wear the jewels three weeks after his killing at an October 2018 dinner in Fiji hosted by the nation’s president. But a Sussex source claimed that the earrings were a wedding gift from the entire Saudi royal family and presented at Buckingham Palace on March 7, 2018, where the Sussexes weren’t present and that the earrings “remain property of the Crown.” Another allegation in the report suggested that Meghan ditched a visit to an initiative run by U.N. women on the same

Fiji trip because of reservations about the organization (a biographer, briefed by the same former Palace aide, later added that Meghan took issue because they failed to make her an ambassador). “Ridiculous!” a staff member on the tour, which I was also on, told me. “We had to end the engagement early because there were security concerns at the market [where the engagement was at], which was quickly getting overcrowded. She was pregnant and security pulled the plug.”

The timing of the allegations was obvious to even the most die-hard royalists. Team Sussex was given the opportunity to comment a few days before the report, and the couple was devastated. Harry felt certain that the institution was behind it. “Let’s just call this what it is—a calculated smear campaign based on misleading and harmful misinformation,” a spokesperson for the couple pointed out. “It’s no coincidence that distorted several-year-old accusations aimed at undermining the duchess are being briefed to the British media shortly before she and the duke are due to speak openly and honestly about their experience of recent years.”

Meghan’s London-based lawyer, Jenny Afia, later explained, “What bullying actually means is improperly using power repeatedly and deliberately to hurt someone, physically or emotionally. The Duchess of Sussex absolutely denies ever doing that. Knowing her as I do, I can’t believe she would ever do that.”

From the time before the couple’s wedding to their January 2020 departure, I was deep into the reporting for *Finding Freedom* and in regular contact with the majority of Palace staff working for the Sussexes (sometimes several times a day). And though I was aware of how tense and fraught the atmosphere was for all on that team, largely down to the couple’s increasingly fractured relationships with the institution and members of the royal family, there was never a word uttered or overheard about “bullying” or anything that resembled such behavior. In fact, it wasn’t until Meghan’s final week in Britain as a working royal that I first caught wind of potential staff hostility on the horizon. “Don’t write that the staff were sad to see her go,” one of the couple’s aides said to me a couple of months later. This was after I had watched two team members wipe away tears as they bid farewell to the duchess. “Not all of us are or want to be portrayed as such.” That aide went on to help at least two journalists with stories about the couple, particularly Meghan.

Even though there were no definitive examples of the alleged bullying (to this day, neither Low nor any other reporter has shared an account or anecdote involving bullying), Buckingham Palace made the rare move of going public with their response, announcing in a statement sent to global media outlets that a full investigation would take place. “We are clearly very concerned about allegations in the *The Times* following claims made by former staff of the Duke and Duchess of Sussex,” read a statement issued less than twenty-four hours after the report ran, adding that the Palace’s HR team would be investigating the article’s allegations, and that staff from that period of time, including those who have left, would be invited to share their experiences. “The royal household has had a dignity at work policy in place for a number of years and does not and will not tolerate bullying or harassment in the workplace.”

At a time when she was about to share her royal experience with the world, Meghan’s new image as a bully was the reputational hit the Palace needed. Three people connected to those involved in the fiasco tell me that it was intentional to launch it just before her big interview. “I think some were worried that they would come out looking bad and no one was prepared to let Meghan have the final word,” said a former Buckingham Palace staffer. “To some, they truly believed Meghan was these things . . . but to others it was about revenge. It was their way of putting her in her place in the final hour.”

And it worked. When Meghan spoke about her difficult times working in the institution, media coverage in Britain still focused on the bullying allegations, and some used them to suggest she may have been to blame for the treatment she received. Behind the scenes, the Palace made a half-hearted attempt at conducting interviews (only a handful of people were ever approached) and carried out light investigative work. “It wasn’t a thorough investigation,” said the ex-staffer. “There really was never any intention to go much further with it. The claims served their purpose.” Indeed, as the months went by, so did the memories of the investigation.

Sir Michael Stevens, the Keeper of the Privy Purse, told reporters during a July 2022 Sovereign Grant Report briefing, “I can confirm though that it was a review of the handling of the allegations aimed at enabling the royal households to consider potential improvements to HR policies and procedures. The review has been completed and recommendations on our policies and procedures have been taken forward, but we will not be

commenting further.” A Buckingham Palace spokesperson adds that conclusions were kept private to protect those taking part. It was an unsatisfactory outcome for all, including the participants of the investigation and the Sussexes, who—through their lawyer—filed a twenty-five-page report in early 2022 to Buckingham Palace’s HR department to refute all the bullying allegations. To this day, details of the institution’s report remain unknown to the public, unseen by the Sussexes or their lawyers, and somewhere in a vault at Buckingham Palace.

Harry, said a source, “was gutted that his family would watch this kind of dirty game play out.” During a conversation just hours after the September 19, 2022, funeral of Prince Philip, Harry confronted his father and brother about why nothing was done on Meghan’s behalf. “You must understand, darling boy, the institution can’t just tell the media what to do!” Charles told him.

In both Diana’s and Meghan’s cases, the institution showed it can be masters of PR sleight of hand, but it comes with tremendous fallout. Royal Family, Inc., does not exactly have a spotless reputation for how it treats the women who enter into the family business. Discrediting Diana’s account and posthumously labeling her as overly suspicious and unstable won’t help. Before her death, Diana was ordered to suffer in silence. Though now back in the fold, Sarah, Duchess of York, spent years being punished for speaking up after her divorce from Prince Andrew. She spent almost thirty years shunned and unforgiven for allowing someone to suck her toes five months after their separation, despite the depravities of her former husband, which have forever disgraced the entire organization and himself. As for Meghan, the full story is *still* emerging—the Oprah interview, the Netflix docuseries, and Harry’s memoir all revealed a shocking amount, and there are still things the couple has not shared. Maybe they never will. When it comes to Meghan’s grim experiences behind palace walls, the royal family may stand by “recollections may vary,” but it is now accepted truth that, at the very least, the institution ignored Meghan when she was in pain.

It’s a dismal record, and with William now openly claiming his mother was essentially too paranoid to speak the truth, it proves the institution still operates under the principle that women not born into the family are, ultimately, disposable. Kate, of course, counters this, but then she’s never challenged the system with public struggles or oversize aspirations. Comfortable in her role, willing to bring the requisite smile and elegance to



her duties as princess, Kate glides under the radar. For now, anyway. It doesn't hurt that she is the wife of the heir to the throne and mother to the next in line. In many ways, Kate is protected in a way that other unrelated women were not. Norman Baker, who is not shy about criticizing the Sussexes, said that he was told by the boss of the major national newspaper he was writing for at the time, one with close ties to the royal family, that he could "say what I want about Harry and Meghan, but I had to lay off William and Kate. That was the instruction from the editor."

In the Sunken Garden at Kensington Palace there now stands a commemorative statue of Diana. It tastefully adorns one end of an ornamental pond that serves as the terraced garden's centerpiece, attracting tourists far and wide. On a sultry July 1, 2021, morning, William and Harry temporarily set aside their differences to unveil the bronze Ian Rank-Broadley-designed sculpture for its first public viewing. Many hoped this reunion would signal a thaw between the brothers, that this occasion to honor their mother would somehow bridge the widening gulf between them. Instead, it proved just a polite photo op that is now inconsequential in comparison to the transfiguring events that followed in the coming years. Harry left less than fifteen minutes after the photographers got their shot, exchanging only a few pleasantries with his brother.

Now, visitors can stroll the gardens and "reflect and celebrate" the life of Princess Diana, hopefully also spending a little money in the nearby Palace gift shop (complete with Diana-related memorabilia) or the on-site Orangery where you can indulge in afternoon tea overlooking the grounds where she once walked and chatted to gardeners. As for the brothers, we are unlikely to see them visit this site together anytime soon, if ever again. Not even her legacy can fix that.

But her human suffering, her impact, her eminence as a pattern breaker, these will never leave the many of us who lived through her time in the sun. And they're also stamped on the history of the royal family, whether they like it or not. An inverted mirror image, her statue's reflection in the palace pond is a reminder of how, depending on the light, her true story briefly vanishes but always reappears.

# 12

## Skilled Survivors

Camilla and Kate, Windsor Women

### Part I: Camilla

The Transformation of a Mistress

*The two most powerful warriors are patience and time.*

—Leo Tolstoy, *War and Peace*

*I feel as if I have been blessed to undergo a transformation from “gangster” to “redeemed sinner with gangster proclivities.”*

—Cornel West, 2016, *60 Minutes* interview

**R**esting in the rugged but fertile valleys that stretch between Crete’s majestic Mount Psiloritis and the towers of sun-bleached limestone that make up Mount Spathi, the Lyrarakis Winery is a family-owned business best known for its first-rate wines and commitment to sustainability and environmental stewardship. It was a natural spot for Camilla, then the Duchess of Cornwall, an earthy woman who shares her husband’s zeal for eco-friendly ventures, to stop for a tour and taste some wine during the couple’s 2018 visit to Greece. Dressed in a flowy cream and white outfit fit for a sunny day in the mythologized Greek countryside, Camilla walked the dusty vineyard paths, visited the vine museum, and tasted several of the Lyrarakis wines.

A photographer snapped the requisite photos as Camilla raised a glass to toast her hosts, claiming, “I [have] never had Greek wine before, but it is

delicious. I will certainly have it again.”

With that it could have been job well done for Camilla—a natural end to the engagement and time to pack up and move on to the next leg. But, with time to spare, Camilla stuck around and enjoyed the views from the winery’s taproom—and got to know Robert Jobson, a royal correspondent of nearly thirty-five years. As luck had it, Jobson was the designated journalist from the royal rota covering the engagement, and he was also gathering reportage for his book on the then Prince of Wales, *Charles at Seventy*. The heir and his team gave Jobson unrivaled access during this time, so Camilla was well aware that he was in the thick of it. An old hand at working rooms, Camilla called Jobson over. “Do you want to join us doing the wine tasting, Robert?” she asked with a smile. Alongside Camilla’s private secretary, the trio relaxed and chatted under the watchful gaze of her protection officer Inspector Mark Andrews as they sampled wines with a selection of cheeses. “I thought, that’s a very kind move, and a smart one, too,” said Jobson. “I didn’t see it as her trying to be manipulative or an attempt to suck up to a journalist. It was just a relaxed atmosphere and something any normal, considerate person would do. And it was great wine; neither of us needed the spittoons!”

This is *modus operandi* for Queen Camilla—schmoozing and delighting come naturally. Speak to anyone who has spent more than a few minutes with her and they’ll talk about how charmed they were by her sense of humor and her ability to hold a conversation. Much of that is down to her personality, but it also comes from how she was raised. Camilla was brought up old-style near the picturesque rural village of Lewes in East Sussex; her parents, Major Bruce and Rosalind Shand, were both considered charming aristocrats from a bygone era. Major Shand was a handsome World War II hero who was well-versed in wine, fox hunting, and conservative politics. Before she married the debonair major, Camilla’s mother mixed in society circles as Rosalind Cubitt, daughter of the 3rd Baron of Ashcombe. Rosalind, the debutante of the year in 1939, was a radiant beauty who was comfortable holding court among that era’s beau monde. In *Palace Papers*, former *Vanity Fair* editor in chief Tina Brown wonderfully describes her as “generously bosomed, vivacious, and witty.” She was known to puff on small cigars, but she was strict about manners when it came to her children. Rosalind embodied old money and all the trappings of aristocratic life. Her triple great-grandfather was Thomas

Cubitt, a famous nineteenth-century builder who oversaw construction of many of the mansions that still grace London's tony neighborhood of Belgravia, as well as the iconic east front of Buckingham Palace. On the other side of Rosalind's family tree, her grandmother, socialite Alice Keppel, was King Edward VII's favorite highborn mistress and illicit plaything of twelve years. It seems even the inclination to become a royal paramour was passed down the family line to Camilla.

On the edge of the undulating green and chalk hills of East Sussex's "magical" South Downs, Camilla's childhood home, the Laines, is a study in "rustic elegance." A former rectory made of brick and timber in the Georgian style, the seven-bedroom estate oozes country charm. It features rooms that are at once spacious and cozy, rambling flower and vegetable gardens, fruit trees, and a Gothic-style orangery with wrap-around windows. By all accounts, the Shand family filled this bucolic home with familial warmth and affection. Major Shand passed on his love of horses and hunting to Camilla and her two siblings, Mark and Annabel. Rosalind taught Camilla the ways of the garden. And there were of course grand dinner parties and lively drinks in the orangery, times when the Shands turned on the charm and their country home glowed with bonhomie and social dazzle. In one of her many interviews with the *Mail on Sunday*, Camilla joked that those gatherings prepared her for life as a royal. "We used to complain and say, 'Can't we stay here and watch the television over fish fingers?' and [my mother would] sit us down at the dinner table and the minute there was a silence, she used to say, 'Talk! I don't care what you talk about, talk about your budgie or your pony but keep the conversation going . . .'" And so I've never been able not to talk. It's in the psyche, not to leave a silence."

When it was time for school, Camilla got a good dose of the city. From the age of ten until her late teens, Camilla attended the exclusive Queen's Gate School in London's South Kensington. There, social training came first, academics a distant second. At the time, the school focused on preparing upper-crust girls for a life of socializing and administering to a big, grand house. Instead of formal higher education, Camilla attended a Swiss finishing school next to the shimmering waters of Lake Geneva, and then went to the capital of France, where she studied French literature (naturally) at the University of London Institute in Paris. Much of this traditionally patrician education took place during the sixties, a decade that

was swinging and full of flower power and protest, one that eschewed convention and patriarchy. But there was Camilla studying the blueprint for the bluebloods, dutifully learning how to mix and mingle and drop a perfectly timed French phrase, while many young women of her generation were burning their bras as part of an effort to dismantle the system that prized this sort of old-fashioned behavior. (Today, Camilla stands for women's equality but, interestingly, hates it when someone suggests she is a feminist.)

Camilla was fine with her outmoded upbringing then, and she's proud of it now, a fact that is both admirable and a little troubling, considering where we are as a society two decades into the third millennium. Looking back, Camilla says she's grateful to have been "brought up with the grounding of my parents, and taught manners. It sounds, especially in this day and age, sort of snobbish but . . . nobody went on to university unless you were a real brainbox. Instead, we went to Paris and Florence and learned about life and culture and how to behave with people, how to talk to people." Not snobbish at all. You won't hear the likes of Hillary Clinton, Michelle Obama, or even Catherine, the Princess of Wales, espousing the virtues of elite, erstwhile social training. And while her royal understudy, Kate, spent a "gap year" abroad at the British Institute in Florence, she followed that up by working as a deckhand in Southampton for £40 a day that same summer. This is all before she went on to the University of St. Andrews to earn a degree in art history. In Camilla's defense, she was part of the last generation of upper-class women who were born into these antiquated practices—it was expected of them, and deviations from it were frowned upon. "This was very ingrained in my upbringing and if I hadn't had that, I would have found royal life much more difficult," she has said.

You could say Camilla was born to play the part the royal system demands of its actors, and she demonstrated these skills from the very start of her long and twisting love affair with Charles. From the chrysalis of her loving but privileged childhood and her debutante-styled education emerged a dazzling, self-assured social butterfly who was not only trained to flit to and fro as prescribed, but also ready to face whatever circumstantial winds blew her way. Camilla might not have stood on the barricades in the sixties, but she did enjoy the sexual freedoms ushered in by that radical generation. Over the years, some who knew Camilla during this time have told various authors and journalists that the young Ms. Shand was known for being

“raunchy and randy” and the sort to “throw her knickers on the table.” This reputation is one of the reasons why Queen Elizabeth II and the Firm rejected Camilla as a spouse for Charles, alongside the fact she was a “commoner” (the air around her family home not rarefied enough) and an “experienced woman” (read: not a virgin).

The result of this Palace meddling: Camilla married the horse-crazy, swashbuckling Andrew Parker Bowles, a man who at one time was also coiled around Princess Anne (though not at the same time as he was with Camilla, contrary to rumors and the third season of *The Crown*); Charles begrudgingly put one foot into his union with the Palace-approved, beautiful but naive Diana; and Charles and Camilla started a decades-long affair that flagrantly smudged the monarchy’s reputation and gassed up the tabloids for years. The two marriages engendered two sets of children, but the extramarital romance produced splintered families and, as can now be said with confidence, broke the hearts of those very same children.

But it was in this trail of wreckage that Camilla found her footing and started playing what can only be called a long game. Before Charles eventually married Diana in 1981, he floundered around with other women, but Camilla made sure he was always more than welcome at the Parker Bowles residences whenever he wanted to return to his true love. Brigadier Andrew knew about Charles and Camilla’s fling but enjoyed the whole aristocratic gamesmanship of it all—and the royal associations, even if it meant shuffling around his private clubs as a cuckold. So, Charles and Camilla threw caution to the wind, coming dangerously close to displaying their love in public, and, at one point, making it fodder for staff gossip. The rumor that one of Charles’s bodyguards found the passionate couple “doing what Lady Chatterley enjoyed best” in the garden at Camilla’s grandmother’s house has become an old (but probably false) fable in royal circles.

It wasn’t until after Diana entered the mix that Charles and Camilla added colluding to their canoodling. Marrying the woman the Firm demanded left Charles demoralized and in constant need of bucking up, a typical state of mind for the famously mopey prince. Enter Camilla, who kept up the sensual mistress routine, but she also, like her ancestor Alice Keppel did for King Edward VII, became Charles’s biggest champion and a dependable advisor. And Camilla managed to do this without scuttling her own marriage. When it came to Charles, Camilla leaned on that same self-

assuredness and natural affection that made her so appealing and unique as a debutante, qualities that flowered from seeds planted during her upbringing. She confidently took on the role as the future King's closest confidante and lover.

Charles admitted to his official biographer, Jonathan Dimbleby, that what made Camilla so exceptional was that “she laughed easily and at the same silliness” as he did, while in a letter to his favorite uncle, Lord Mountbatten, he claimed he and Camilla experienced near perfection: a “blissful, peaceful, and mutually happy relationship.” Camilla became essential for Charles. No matter how high the stakes, he had to have her in his world. She shared his interests in hunting and country life and made herself indispensable when Charles fled Palace duties and a struggling Diana to while away in his prized gardens and don his tweeds at his rural retreat. This was made easier by the fact that his refuge, the vast country mansion of Highgrove, is only a fifteen-minute drive from Camilla's beloved Ray Mill House, an almost Proustian re-creation of her childhood haven in Sussex that she still uses to this day. Their pastoral conniving involved others from their inner sanctum who opened up the doors to their own country manors for Charles and Camilla's trysts when Ray Mill or Highgrove wasn't an option. A housekeeper from one of these conspiratorial homes complained to a tabloid that she always knew when Camilla had been there: “After she's been staying, I find knickers all over the place.” Camilla's undergarments making yet another appearance.

The pair carried on like this until the calamitous 1990s sent them both reeling. In 1992, the Queen's famous *annus horribilis*, Diana and Charles finally called it quits and separated. Enough was enough—Charles was checked out and, from the royal institution's point of view, Diana was causing untold damage by openly discussing their marriage woes. And it quickly got so much worse, for Camilla in particular. After the new year celebrations of 1993, Australia's *New Idea* magazine published the scandalous transcript of a bawdy phone call between Charles and Camilla. Former *Mirror* editor Richard Stott, who broke the story but didn't run the transcript, claims that an amateur radio enthusiast from Merseyside gave him the tape after he randomly—and after “a few pints of lager”—picked up the call on his radio and recognized Charles's voice. Dubbed “Camillagate,” the contents of this proto-sex tape are old news; even a 2022 episode of *The Crown* rehashed it in all its gory details. It's worth

noting, however, that after Charles says he wants to “live in [Camilla’s] trousers or something, it would be much easier,” Camilla laughingly responds with, “What are you going to turn into, a pair of knickers? Oh, you’re going to come back as a pair of knickers.” Those knickers seem to be a running theme in this story.

The barrage of lurid news tanked both of their reputations, forcing Camilla to batten down the hatches at Middlewick House, the Wiltshire manor she shared with Parker Bowles at the time. Charles, of course, had the Palace apparatus in his corner, and the system’s instincts to protect one of its own kicked in. Wasting no time to initiate an image-rebuilding effort for Charles, the spin machine went into high gear for the heir to the throne. Camilla, on the other hand, was left to manage on her own. It was a tough outcome for someone who had just been branded the most hated woman in Britain. She faced an unabating Hydra of scorn: hate mail, threatening phone calls, people scowling in her direction in public (though that famous story about shoppers throwing bread rolls at her is just a tabloid myth), and, of course, strikes from the papers and the wider world’s press. For her part, Diana nicknamed Camilla “the Rottweiler,” which, as she probably intended, the media picked up and ran with. Harassed and stalked, Camilla retreated into Middlewick, often afraid to step outside.

While in hiding, Camilla began her long climb back to normal life. She taught herself how to paint (a hobby she still enjoys to this day) and buried herself in books. Proving her resilience, she privately withstood her mother’s death from crippling osteoporosis and Charles’s disastrous TV interview with Jonathan Dimbleby in July 1994, where he publicly confirmed that he had cheated on Diana. The nineties weren’t done with her yet, though. Camilla and her brigadier finally divorced in 1995, and Parker Bowles went on to marry his own favorite mistress, Rosemary Pitman, shortly after. In February 1996, Charles and Diana’s divorce was finalized. The musical chairs of extramarital sex, collusion, and public humiliation were finally brought to an ignoble end for all involved.

After the ink dried on the divorce papers, Camilla found herself utterly alone in her cavernous Wiltshire home, but, because of her ability to “just get on with it” and her commitment to Charles, the cocoon of her new life started to form. Camilla’s stability and endurance during these hardships was recognized by those close to her and quietly by those in the orbit of the Palace. She never publicly aired her grievances or rushed to correct the



record (at the time), no matter how vicious the rumor—she rode out the storm, prioritizing her relationship with Charles (who did the same in return, much to the frustration of young William and Harry, who a family source said “often felt like they came second to Camilla”). That grin-and-bear-it upbringing had already prepared her for a life of “never complain, never explain” as a member of the royal family. “The duchess is resilient . . . down to earth,” Julian Payne, her communications secretary during the 2010s, previously said to me. “She is focused on the bigger picture.” Her natural composure and confidence would see her through.

This time she had some serious help. After Charles and Diana’s divorce, the Queen and the institution slowly started to accept that Camilla wasn’t going anywhere—her gravitational pull on Charles was too strong, and their long affair had solidified into something that the Palace couldn’t easily dismiss. Diana’s tragic death in 1997 forced the couple to retreat from any plans to step out publicly, going to great lengths to avoid being seen together. They wanted to change this unwelcome reality and, to achieve that, Charles and Camilla as a couple would need a PR miracle. So Charles promoted assistant private secretary Mark Bolland to a deputy role—tasking him to work with private secretary Stephen Lamport to incrementally rehabilitate Camilla’s image. Now widely known as “Operation PB” (Parker Bowles), the duo masterminded a long-term campaign as subtle as it was powerful, at least at first. When the press finally got the official first words about Charles and his ongoing relationship with Camilla, Bolland told journalists she was a “nonnegotiable” part of his life. However, they waited eighteen months before making their first photographed public appearance—a birthday party for Camilla’s sister at London’s Ritz hotel. Bolland personally phoned the likes of *The Sun* and the *Daily Mail* to assure them that the January 28, 1999, bash was “T-Day” (Together Day). The Queen was unimpressed—she felt her son was “over-promoting” their relationship. But it worked. Suddenly, at least in certain media quarters, Camilla had gone from being called “the other woman” to the “woman who waited.”

For Camilla’s own fiftieth birthday celebration in June 2000, Clarence House scaled up their efforts with a sparkly to-do at Highgrove, where she would meet the Queen for the first time (and Bolland would go on to share all the details with the *News of the World*, edited by his close friend Rebekah Brooks, now the managing director of Rupert Murdoch’s News

UK). That night Camilla “dazzled,” and Charles and his “woman who waited” shared the spotlight in the same house they previously snuck away to for trysts. At the time, I’m told, both William and Harry struggled to come to terms with the reality of their family’s new normal. “They had few people they could share their anger with,” said a mutual friend of the siblings. “Here was a woman who had destroyed their family and tormented their mother, now having the time of her life. In those early days, they were angry with her.”

It would be another five years before Charles and Camilla would marry, and in the spring of 2005—in a toned-down civil ceremony at Windsor Guildhall in front of their children, including Princes William and Harry—Camilla Parker Bowles completed the first stage of her transformation. Taking Charles’s hand in marriage, the vilified royal mistress became the Duchess of Cornwall, wife to the heir. Patrick “Paddy” Harverson, then Charles’s communications secretary and the PR chief responsible for taking the reins of Operation PB a year prior, counted the wedding as a crowning accomplishment for the couple. The former communications director for Manchester United Football Club (he turned David Beckham from a national hate figure to hero after the football legend was blamed for England’s loss against Argentina in the 1998 World Cup), Harverson was an experienced, likable, yet determined “comms guy” dedicated to his one mission: “protect and promote.” He embraced that position from day one with Camilla, recognizing how her outgoing nature and calm under pressure could benefit the monarchy’s reputation. He also quickly realized that Camilla was indispensable for Charles—she reanimated him in a way that no one or nothing else could. “She has been by his side, working diligently, supporting him while pursuing her own causes,” said Harverson. “They love each other. She is a source of great support and comfort and love to [Charles]. They share the same sense of humor and they blend together beautifully.”

Good for Charles, and good for the institution, as it turns out. The wedding meant that the Palace finally embraced Camilla and formally established a working role for her. The Queen had also come around to agreeing that the union was the best thing for the Firm. It had the potential to clean up the mess the couple had made over the years.

For William and Harry, it took a long time to get there, but they finally accepted Camilla for what she was and still is—an anchor for their father,

an unflinching, steady support system for which he could not do without. But while she may technically be their stepmother, the relationship she has with both is “more professional and respectful than loving and familial,” described a family friend. In the years that followed, the new Duchess of Cornwall finally became tolerated, then later accepted, by the public (and now even approved of by some). In the early days it would have been unimaginable to think that one day William and Kate would meet Charles and Camilla for laugh-filled lunches, but the two couples have grown increasingly closer over the years, especially since the Sussexes’ departure. As for her relationship with Harry and Meghan, there is none. Camilla has told others she has “great sympathy” for what Meghan went through but, according to a royal source, has “no respect for the way they handled themselves.”

The rehabilitation of the mistress could be called a success, a sanitizing process that turned a “Rottweiler” into a duchess. But there was still work to be done, and Camilla, Charles, and their Palace teams continually fueled the engines for different iterations of Operation PB, orchestrating most of them from the shadows. Camilla has also taken matters into her own hands, building relationships with a number of high-profile (and some notorious) media figures. Though former morning TV host Piers Morgan was responsible for some of the most aggressive tabloid coverage about Princess Diana and the royal family during his time as editor in chief of the *Mirror* and has also spent more than five years attacking the Duchess of Sussex in articles and on TV, Camilla continues to enjoy a close relationship with him. Not even accusations of *Mirror* journalists hacking the phones of Harry and other high-profile figures during Morgan’s tenure has tempered the friendship. The pair have been close for more than twenty years and enjoy regular chats on the phone and the occasional boozy lunch. In addition to their shared love of East Sussex (they grew up in neighboring villages), they have a mutual disdain for all things “woke” (in its 2.0 sense). Behind closed doors, Camilla usually rolls her eyes when topics such as gender identity, unconscious racial bias, and even veganism are raised. “It’s all ‘lefty nonsense’ to her,” a former aide revealed. “Even gluten-free or dairy-free options on a restaurant menu irk her.”

It seems they might have similar views on Meghan, too. When Piers called the Duchess of Sussex “Pinocchio Princess” and then a “race-baiter” on *Good Morning Britain* after she admitted that she had suicidal ideations

during her time as a working royal (also asserting that there was unconscious bias within the family), it was Camilla who quietly thanked him for defending the Firm. “[Camilla] will never publicly comment on anything or speak ill of others, but she will *always* know someone who can do that for her,” a former Palace aide told me. “I’ve had some messages communicated to me on behalf of several members of the royal family,” Morgan admitted to *Extra TV* in April 2021. “I’m not going to go into who it was, but [it was] gratitude that somebody was standing up.”

Even her friendship with legendary actress Dame Judi Dench came in handy when a fifth season of *The Crown* threatened to knock Camilla’s reputation once again. The (mostly accurate) portrayal of her as a chain-smoking adulteress who made Diana’s life hell saw her popularity tank once again, as viewers were reminded of Camilla’s pre-Operation PB antics. To prevent the negativity experienced during the release of *The Crown*’s fourth season from happening again, friends in the media (including the *Mail* group of newspapers, where she enjoys a close relationship with the paper’s owner, Lord Rothermere) activated a defense strategy. The “vicious” series, the tabloid barked on its front pages and website, is bullying the royal family, would have “destroyed” the Queen if she were still alive, is “verging on defamatory,” and should be boycotted. Dench did her bit to help the cause and wrote an open letter in *The Times* accusing Netflix executives and show producers of blurring the lines between historical accuracy and crude sensationalism, thereby damaging the monarchy. The show should, she insisted, have a disclaimer at the start to “warn” viewers of its fictionalized scenes. It was a curious fight for the usually press-shy actress to take on, especially given her own depictions of the Queen’s great-great-grandmother in the movies *Victoria & Abdul* and *Her Majesty, Mrs. Brown*, both of which received some criticism from historians about accuracy.

Though those in Camilla’s world all echo the same high praise when it comes to her sense of humor and mischievous “twinkle in her eye” (both true), one can’t deny that many of these friendships have also served a greater purpose when it comes to the rehabilitation of her image. That prize charm is also how she won over the majority of the royal press pack. While most senior royals tend to largely ignore the gaggle of reporters and photographers at engagements, Camilla is always the first (and often the only) to say hello and give a wink. When the photographers point their lenses, Camilla doesn’t turn away or play hard to get; instead she will ask,

“Where do you want me?” She will even give a nudge to Charles at times if she senses that snappers aren’t getting the best shot.

It’s a smart and simple move—especially in the cases of some longtime royal reporters, who harbor a need to be liked by the subjects they write about. Most in the royal rota now sing her praises when given the chance in opinion pieces and documentary appearances. With some, the relationship has gone even deeper. The *Daily Mail*’s royal editor Rebecca English is regularly the first to be spoon-fed Camilla-related scoops. A canny strategy that has paid off in droves, as the reporter has never written a critical word about the paper’s star royal source since taking the job in 2004. “For Camilla, having a little pet in the [press] pack has been essential,” a former Palace aide revealed. “After the wedding, it was absolutely her mission to make that happen.”

In *Spare*, Prince Harry revealed his “complex feelings” toward his stepmother. “In a funny way I even wanted Camilla to be happy,” he wrote. “Maybe she’d be less dangerous if she was happy.” That dangerousness, he told journalist Anderson Cooper, comes from her willingness to forge interdependent relationships with the tabloid press and media figures. “With a family built on hierarchy, and with her, on the way to being Queen Consort, there [were] gonna be people or bodies left in the street.” It is no secret that his own body was one of those sacrificed on Camilla and Bolland’s “personal PR altar.” In those earlier days, information about him and his life were currency to curry favor with Fleet Street editors. Today, a similar arrangement with sections of the British press still exists, as Harry’s courtroom revelations have revealed.

Still, the Duke of Sussex also says he sees Camilla as just as much of a victim of the inner workings of a cold institution as any of his other family members. “I have a huge amount of compassion for her, you know,” he said. “She had a reputation, or an image, to rehabilitate. Whatever conversations happened, whatever deals or trading was made right at the beginning, she was led to believe that that would be the best way of doing it . . . [She] has done everything that she can to improve her own reputation and her own image for her own sake.” Even today there is no animosity on Harry’s side. A source close to the Duke of Sussex—who has said he doesn’t consider Camilla an “evil stepmother”—called their relationship “respectful . . . and kept at a safe distance.” Camilla, I’m told, may not feel quite the same. “To say she wasn’t hurt by what he wrote [in *Spare*] would

not be the truth,” said a royal source. “But she won’t retaliate.” A friend and one of Camilla’s “Queen’s companions,” the Marchioness of Lansdowne, told *The Sunday Times*, “Of course it bothers her, of course it hurts. But she doesn’t let it get to her. Her philosophy is always, ‘Don’t make a thing of it and it will settle down—least said, soonest mended.’”

The marchioness is one of a group of six women Queen Camilla keeps close, in place of what previous female monarchs called ladies-in-waiting. Other “Queen’s companions” include Baroness Carlyn Chisholm, a British peeress and member of the House of Lords; and Lady Sarah Keswick, who has known Charles and Camilla since the first days of their affair. Camilla’s sister, Annabel Elliot, whom she considers her best friend, joined the Marchioness of Lansdowne to serve as “Ladies Attendants” during the May 2023 coronation. Elliot’s appearance made the ceremony somewhat of a family affair for Camilla, whose three teenage grandsons, Gus Lopes, Louis Lopes, and Freddy Parker Bowles, were selected as pages of honor.

Camilla has long enjoyed close relationships with her two children. Her son, Tom Parker Bowles, a restaurateur, is tight-lipped when it comes to talking about Camilla the royal, but he’s the first to sing her praises as a mother. Her roast chicken “with all the trimmings” on a Sunday, with everyone getting together at Ray Mill House, is something they strive to do regularly, no matter how busy everyone gets. “We all love our food and to be able to share that with each other is wonderful,” he told me during an interview. As grandmother to his children, Freddy and Lola, she’s also happy to step in to babysit (something she is “brilliant” at, he said). Despite the fact that they’re now children of the King’s wife, neither Tom nor her daughter, Laura, expect their lives to change. “You’re not going to find us with great estates or being called the Duke of Whatever, no, that would be appalling,” he has said.

In addition to fulfilling her duties as grandmother and pushing overtime to repair her reputation, Camilla has done the necessary work in her role as a senior royal, namely through philanthropic endeavors and awareness raising to help others. In an unassuming way, Camilla has put her energies into more than ninety charities, including grittier, less-glamorous issues that demand more than just ribbon-cutting. The National Osteoporosis Society, a cherished charity for Camilla after her mother died of the disorder in 1994, was renamed the Royal Osteoporosis Society in 2019. The name change was Camilla’s idea, said the charity’s executive Craig Jones, a business-

minded decision Camilla believed would give the charity more “clout and credibility.” More clout is important because, as Jones said, “osteoporosis is a difficult cause . . . it’s surrounded by stereotypes and defeatism . . . people think breaking bones is an inevitable part of getting older. Camilla knows it isn’t.” She also passionately raises awareness about domestic abuse, which she rightly calls a “global pandemic of violence against women”; literacy, through her “Queen’s Reading Room” initiative; animal welfare (both of her dogs, Beth and Bluebell, were rescued from the Battersea Dog Home); and loneliness among the elderly. Unable to lean on widespread popularity or tabloid interest in her sartorial choices (blame an ageist society and, by her own admission to an aide, a “less exciting” wardrobe for that), Camilla has carried out many of her charitable efforts without splashy, big-budget campaigns. “She was very explicit with me that she didn’t want [that] and simply let her work speak for herself,” said Julian Payne.

This natural style toward work and her ease in her role has scored Camilla points with the Firm, the public, and influential figures. It has also impressed her husband. In his first address as King in September 2022, Charles had this to say about his other half:

*I count on the loving help of my darling wife, Camilla. In recognition of her own loyal public service since our marriage seventeen years ago, she becomes my Queen Consort. I know she will bring to the demands of her new role the steadfast devotion to duty on which I have come to rely so much.*

And with that the second stage of Camilla’s royal journey was a success: Camilla, Queen Consort, now sharing her husband’s rank and status. Before she passed away, Queen Elizabeth II promoted the idea for Camilla to take on the consort title before Charles’s ascension, making her wish clear before the Platinum Jubilee celebrations in 2022. Seventeen years earlier, after the couple’s wedding, Palace aides had assured the public that Camilla would only take on the title of “Princess Consort”—an effort to appease a nation that mostly disliked her. But with Camilla having managed to achieve acceptance since then, the late monarch felt it was the right time to put her stamp of approval on an upgraded title. Unbeknownst to the public, that, too, was only temporary. A month before the May 6, 2023, coronation, Buckingham Palace released invitations without the consort styling. The former mistress would now be crowned by the Archbishop of Canterbury as Queen Camilla. Transformation complete.

Ironically, and perhaps hard to believe for some, it was never Camilla's wish to sit on the throne. Those I have spoken to over the years say she has simply accepted that the role comes with the territory of being with the man she wanted to spend the rest of her life with. Nevertheless, she takes the job seriously. Despite her age, she consistently carries out more engagements than most royals, including Prince William and Kate, the Princess of Wales. She also remains a committed and effective advisor to the King. She can probably say more with a half-raised eyebrow than the rest of his well-informed staff combined (it's why she was never a fan of Charles's right-hand man Michael Fawcett—she felt he was the only other person who had his ear as much as she does). An aide close to her has told me that “she doesn't take herself too seriously. She isn't lost in a sense of self-importance, but she understands the importance of the institution.” Added a royal source, “To be around her you would never think she is Queen. She's still the same as she was years ago, friendly with everyone, always up for a natter.”

Payne, who worked for Charles and Camilla for five years, told Times Radio, “She has an innate understanding of the institution but also fifty years of living in the real world. She's a very good bridge between the two. You see her voice and her impact in all facets of the life of the King and as a couple.”

Whether she wanted it or not—and whether the public wanted it or not (polls at the time of the finishing of this book say a lot of the nation still aren't sure)—she is now Queen Camilla. And what now appears like an inevitability actually took a lot of backstage maneuvering and horse-trading. While communications campaigns and PR gurus certainly played significant roles in Camilla's decades-long metamorphosis, it would be a mistake to underestimate her own handiwork in this massive image overhaul. But her long game is finally over, and Camilla and the Palace PR corps can finally file the strategies and plans for Operation PB. Perhaps they'll come in handy for someone else in the future. She's come a long way from the Shand family haven in Sussex, but, in many ways, this is exactly where Camilla thought she'd be when she became Charles's mistress more than forty years ago. Her troubles endured, and her final act planned for all along.



## Part II: Kate

Suddenly Front and Center

*We've all seen the families of the skilled survivors. Their strength comes from within and was put there . . . from their earliest days.*

—Diana, Princess of Wales, 1993, keynote speech

*It is the nature of stone to be satisfied.  
It is the nature of water to want to be somewhere else.*

—Mary Oliver, *The Leaf and the Cloud*

As the final throes of summer tapered into an unusually hot start to the fall of 2019, September's late afternoons brought longer shadows and slanting light to the hills and woodlands of Surrey. Only twenty-five miles southwest of London, the Royal Horticultural Society's flagship site at Wisley basked in the warm glow of England's unseasonably long summer and served as a testament to the wonders of horticulture. The grand gardens cover 240 acres, and its Glasshouse centerpiece, a greenhouse the size of ten tennis courts, was thriving with exotic plants from around the world enjoying the early-autumn sun. An arcadia for anyone with even a passing interest in the natural world, Wisley is home to a world-famous rock garden with a tumbling stream, alpine plants, and a fern grotto, as well as the meandering walkways of the Bowes-Lyon Rose Garden and its four thousand plants. That month, RHS Wisley was also the proud new home of the Back to Nature Garden, a woodland ramble and wildflower meadow for families and children with treehouses, a hollow log, swings, a willow pond, and a large sand pit. The brainchild of Kate, who was then the Duchess of Cambridge, the garden opened on September 10. Just like the usually bashful autumnal sun, Kate, too, was ready to shed her shy side for the garden's grand unveiling. She visited the garden with *Great British Bake Off* star Mary Berry to tour the grounds and take part in a host of fun activities with local schoolchildren. "I hope I do this right!" she said with a laugh as she planted a weeping blue cedar sapling in front of photographers in the garden's family play zone. The natural sprawl of the tree's drooping

branches—which grow outward rather than up—added visual curiosity to the grounds and would eventually provide a den-like structure for children to play under.

In a signature Emilia Wickstead blue floral dress, Kate also gave a speech on the importance of family, friends, and community re-creation in the development of young children. “The physical benefits of being outdoors and in nature are well documented,” she said. “More recently, however, I have learned that these often safe and supported environments can also bring significant benefits to the cognitive, social, and emotional development of our children, too.” The speech underscored Kate’s mission to get children back outdoors. And, unlike public speeches in the past, where she often stumbled on her words, she wasn’t nervous this time. “She practiced it a few times before giving it and was just really at ease,” her communications secretary told me afterward. “I’m definitely seeing a new level of confidence in her.”

Her self-assured demeanor was a world away from four months prior, when she launched her first Back to Nature concept garden at the Chelsea Flower Show in June. To promote that she filmed a surprise appearance on BBC’s *Blue Peter*, Britain’s longest-running children’s television show. On air, viewers saw Kate wander around the rangy Paddington Recreation Ground in London’s Maida Vale with host Lindsey Russell talking about her passion for the great outdoors and how she constantly encourages her children to spend time outside, “rain or shine.” Smiling, relaxed, and motherly around the local schoolchildren featured in the program, Kate took the small group to “pond dip” for tadpoles, an activity she claimed was “massively up her street,” as well as some old-fashioned fort-building using sticks, logs, and leaves.

But, behind the scenes, it was a different story. Though it was a low-pressure, small-stakes broadcast appearance, Kate was feeling nervous and “well out of her comfort zone” before the taping. “It was just not an area she felt confident in and, up until that point, other household staff hadn’t really pushed her,” a Kensington Palace source said. Naturally timid and introverted, Kate had historically eschewed giving interviews or public speaking, instead finding comfort in engagements that were often led by a host while she quietly followed, giving a speech from a script or teleprompter. She also favored outings that involved interacting with

children or sporting activities, where it's more about her actions than her words.

Where other senior royals are out and about several times a week, meeting people across the length and breadth of the country, Kate has long maintained a smaller work schedule that helped her check off the required royal boxes while saving time for her roles as a mother and a wife. Prince William was called work-shy for his initial hesitation to fully sign on for royal duty; Kate, too, gained some disparaging media nicknames of her own. Not long after their marriage, some critics deemed her “lazy” because she avoided regular royal duties. Over the years, several factors made it easier to circumvent too many public-facing events, including William’s fierce protectiveness and her vital role of producing an heir (and spares) first and foremost. The Palace gatekeepers have always been more vigilant when it comes to Kate, never pushing her too hard, as the road to Queendom is a marathon, not a sprint. “I think for a long time people were afraid to make her do something that would make her uncomfortable,” a senior aide told me. But with the sun setting on the Queen’s reign, the heir and spare tasks achieved, it was time to slowly push Kate out onto center court.

Her lead press secretary Christian Jones—who had six years of experience working with two government departments before starting at Kensington Palace in early 2019—was the one who suggested the *Blue Peter* appearance to the duchess. While it was designed as a slow pitch for Kate to hit a crowd-pleasing home run, there were difficulties getting her up to the plate. Kate, Jones later told me, wasn’t thrilled with the idea of doing an interview and initially wanted to turn it down. But after some encouragement from both himself and William, she reluctantly agreed. On the day of the mid-June shoot, Kate was “a bag of nerves.”

Jones joined her for the weekday outing and reminded Kate that the interview would be short and the majority of the filming would be with children. But it was William’s words that eventually filled her with enough courage to stay calm. As she arrived, a text message from her husband popped up. “William was texting her regularly to see how she was doing and make sure she wasn’t nervous,” said a source. The taping itself went smoothly, Kate later admitting to Jones that she “worried for nothing.” William called afterward to make sure everything was all right. Everything, she assured him, was great. “She was always nervous about speaking on

camera,” an aide said afterward, “but it feels like today was a bit of a breakthrough.” Given that Kate was in a public-facing role for eight years up to this point, the journey to this breakthrough took longer than anyone expected. Still, progress is progress.

The Back to Nature projects formed part of the buildup to Kate’s early-years development advocacy, dubbed “her life’s work” by Kensington Palace officials. What started back in 2012 as a curious interest in how experiences in childhood often shape a person’s life, for good and bad, gradually expanded into the focus of her royal efforts. Through the Royal Foundation Centre for Early Childhood, which she launched in 2021, Kate is now working with professionals “to transform society for generations to come.” Along with it have been splashy nationwide campaigns, numerous research reports, and red-letter events to drum up interest and awareness. It’s all for a worthy cause, but the restrictive nature of Kate’s role means that she’s unable to get involved on the political front and push for the urgent solutions the early-years sector desperately needs—namely, government funding.

Instead, say royal aides, Kate hopes her focus on amplifying “key findings” and issues will influence policymakers, including politicians and those in government. Within the sector itself, feedback has been a mix of appreciation for her efforts and a feeling that much of the initial work done (surveys and reports that offer statistics and information already discovered by other organizations, as well as endless convening of “roundtable discussions”) seemed a shade performative. Case in point: there were no early-years experts on the team that drafted a key report from her foundation in 2022. Dr. Mine Conkbayir, a leading voice in the early-years sector and founder of several related scientific programs and educational courses, said, “We are well accustomed to MPs and royalty visiting early-years settings. But nothing is done. The time has long passed for ‘awareness.’ We need action—long-term investment and funding in the early years.” Indeed, in 1999 the Labour party launched an early-years program in Britain offering grants and centers for health care, education, and mental health support for children and parents. Due to funding cuts, however, over 1,400 of the 3,600 centers that the Sure Start program has operated in are now closed. Campaigners say this could have been avoided if prominent figures such as Kate helped advocate for their importance. Nevertheless, it’s clear that Kate genuinely cares about the issue, and

Kensington Palace often reassures journalists that she remains committed to the cause for “the rest of her life.”

Like so much royal philanthropy, Kate’s early-years work is part of a broader institutional campaign to flaunt and elevate her importance to the monarchy and to the nation. Every royal is expected to have their flagship cause, and this is hers. Flaunting is, of course, the easy part. Without fail, those in the media—now as a matter of reflex—will always reference Kate’s elegance, charm, and grace. There is also always a focus on what Kate is wearing—her clothes, her jewelry, her shoes, her hairstyle—to such an extent that often what she says and does is usually an afterthought. Compared to other royals, mainstream coverage of Kate in the British papers is overwhelmingly positive, often bordering on infantilizing the princess, with articles marveling at her ability to perform the simplest of tasks (think enthusiastic reporting about kicking a soccer ball or flipping a pancake, or how amazing it is that she can assume the perfect “princess pose” in photographs). Admittedly, Kate has rarely put a foot down wrong in public. But in the instances where criticism would be fair, such as carrying out fewer engagements than other senior royals, or the fact that she has had *five* different private secretaries in six years (one, I’m told, simply found the role “uninspiring and frustrating”), you’d be unlikely to read about it in any British newspaper.

For many of those in the press, Kate is the monarchy’s last “shiny thing” for many years to come, even more so given William’s slow fade into his staid institutional role and the departure of Harry and Meghan. Put a new, glamorous photo of Kate on the front page of a paper and a sales boost is guaranteed. Charles, Camilla, and William? Unless it’s family drama, not so much. In the first months after her wedding to Prince Harry, the Duchess of Sussex was also a shimmering ornament in the royal family tree. And with her outgoing nature and leadership potential, qualities for which Kate isn’t known, early coverage of Meghan’s royal engagements were far less about fashion choices and more about her work or her role in the Firm. Until they weren’t.

Though new to the Windsor fold, Meghan assuredly took to her role as a working royal. With her acting experience and upbeat demeanor, Meghan was supremely comfortable in her public-facing role, even when she initially knew very little about it. Her confidence alarmed some at Buckingham Palace, who found it intimidating or obnoxious at times.

Before it all went wrong, the Firm's American outsider and underdog was becoming the star of the show. Whether it was guest-editing an entire September issue of *British Vogue* while heavily pregnant, releasing a bestselling book for charity, or collaborating with British fashion brands to launch a capsule collection to raise money for her patronage of the women's employment coaching charity Smart Works, Meghan got things done fast. It was Princess Diana all over again.

William, Kate, and their team took notice and altered course. Harry and Meghan had introduced the world to a new, more modern-looking royal, and it suddenly made the Cambridges—who for years had been the monarchy's hot young couple—appear a little dull in comparison. Though all similar in age, it's undeniable that during their glory days the Sussexes connected with a younger generation of Brits in a way William and Kate never had. And so, over time, Kate's private secretaries and communications aides encouraged her to change her approach to engagements—less “listening and learning” and more *doing*. Even her working wardrobe of formal coat dresses and structured pieces started to slowly transform into the more relaxed, business-casual attire chosen by the California duchess. Fashion choices change over time for anyone, but even a few aides at Buckingham Palace separately commented that Kate's sartorial evolutions seemed far from coincidental. As an aide working with the Cambridges and Sussexes said to me in 2019, “Meghan's arrival was a bit like a rocket up the . . .” He paused midsentence, but I knew where he was going.

Much has been written (and mostly speculated) about the relationship between Meghan and Kate. In past articles and *Finding Freedom*, I wrote about how—contrary to reports—the lukewarm distance between the two women was initially down to the ever-growing cracks in William and Harry's relationship. They may have had very little in common, but they probably could have made things work in those early days if there was peace between the warring Windsor siblings. Still, for Meghan, who found much of her time as a working royal a lonely and isolated experience, there was a hope that Kate would be someone she could at least turn to for an encouraging word during her lowest points, including her emotional difficulties during her pregnancy. They were once both outsiders, middle-class women brought into the House of Windsor for unimaginably different lives. Kate, however, was uninterested in forming this kind of bond with

Meghan. “She can be cold if she doesn’t like someone,” said a source who had worked with Kate in the past. Does that mean she didn’t like her from the start? The source paused. “She wasn’t a fan, no,” they replied. Added another, “She spent more time talking *about* Meghan than talking *to* her.” This is a side of Kate that rarely gets written about. Advocating for mental health causes—the mental health of mothers, for that matter—but ignoring her own sister-in-law’s cries for help seemed out of character for someone the public knew as sweet and easy to get along with. And when the *Telegraph* accused the Duchess of Sussex of making Kate cry (front-page news that resulted in days of critical Meghan coverage), Kate watched in silence as the Palace refused to set the record straight, even though it was the other way around. She later apologized to Meghan (with flowers), but the damage from the public rift was already done.

On more recent occasions, Kate has jokingly shivered when Meghan’s name has come up around her, and there has been almost zero direct communication, bar a few short pleasantries, between the pair since late 2019. For the princess, there’s no going back, even in her relationship with Harry. “She was close to Harry, and she will always look back fondly on those moments . . . and the relationship he had with their children . . . but to her there is no way she could ever trust them after all their interviews,” said a source who knows the family. There’s also the fact that the Sussexes’ departure put more pressure on the other half of the “Fab Four” to scale up and fill the working void left behind.

After Harry and Meghan broke ranks and fled to North America at the start of 2020, sources at the time said Kate was put in the hot seat. But perhaps the extra push was also a silver lining. That period saw the introduction of Kate 2.0—a slightly more relaxed, more relatable duchess with a voice that could be (needed to be) heard. First up was an appearance on the *Happy Mum, Happy Baby* podcast with mommy blogger Giovanna Fletcher. During their candid conversation, Kate opened up about her own childhood and shared some of her struggles as a mother. The interview was the first time the public heard Kate speak at length, and it was universally lauded in the media as “groundbreaking,” which is *maybe* a little hyperbolic. But even as a somewhat jaded royal reporter it was fascinating to witness her showing a different side of herself when Kensington Palace invited a group of us to come and listen to the recording before it went live. There was the future Queen discussing her severe morning sickness, “mum

guilt,” and giving a peek into her world, all the while reminding listeners that the girl next door had made it to the top without losing her everywoman qualities.

I remember having a similar conversation with Kate at a Kensington Palace media reception after the birth of Princess Charlotte in 2015, one in which she spoke about the challenges of parenting. “I look at my friends and think they have it all figured it out . . . while I’m just making it up as I go along,” she said with a laugh. I always thought this more frank, real side of the sometimes Stepford-like royal wife was something that others should see more of. Attending her engagements and traveling on the couple’s tours for the better part of a decade, I was around for brief glimpses of Kate away from the cameras. At India’s Kaziranga National Park in 2016, I was the only reporter with William and her on a mini-safari to spot the elusive one-horned rhinos for which the stunning region is famous. As we rode through the wild terrain in two open-topped Jeeps, our guides instructed us to remain silent if a rhino crossed our path and to let the accompanying park ranger make the necessary animal calls to scare it if it got *too* close. As luck would have it, we encountered two on our journey, one of which decided to stop right in the middle of the muddy road we were traveling on. Clearly not in a rush, the beautiful female rhinoceros slowly stomped around in front of us . . . and then stopped to poop. As we sat there in dead silence giving the rhino absolutely no privacy whatsoever, I looked over at Kate, who was in a fit of muted giggles. For someone usually so poised and inscrutable, it felt like the mask momentarily fell away, and it was a refreshing sight. Her silent laughter triggered the rest of us and we all ended up pretty much holding our breath, trying not to let out immature chuckles after each massive plop.

It was a genuinely candid moment. And so, the podcast and its chance for the public to experience a tiny bit of that same openness was an inspired PR push. If the Palace needed Kate to generate some positive news in the wake of Harry and Meghan’s departure, it was a solid start. In the summer of 2020, during the height of the pandemic, Kate spearheaded a successful photography project with the National Portrait Gallery. Hold Still was a community project in which Kate, an avid photographer and art history graduate, invited members of the public to send in photographs they snapped during the national lockdowns. Documenting the effects of the virus outbreak and the subsequent quarantines, the digital exhibition



gathered and organized photographs under the themes of “Helpers and Heroes,” “Your New Normal,” and “Acts of Kindness.” It was a compassionate project, and Kate scored accolades and solid media coverage for another solo venture. A year later, she wrote an introduction and helped curate content for the book *Hold Still*, which made its way to the *Sunday Times* bestseller list. It was reminiscent of Meghan’s 2018 *Together* cookbook in aid of the Grenfell survivors of London’s Hubb Community Kitchen—and it worked. In September 2021, the same Kate who was exceedingly nervous for a brief appearance on a children’s television program confidently took to the tennis courts to play doubles with teen ace Emma Raducanu. An avid tennis player and patron of the All England Lawn Tennis and Croquet Club (AELTC), Kate showed off her forehand and appeared unfazed by the cameras and the many in attendance who were there to welcome Raducanu back to the United Kingdom after she took the trophy at the U.S. Open just a few weeks before.

After the autumn leaves fell and the 2021 holiday season kicked into high gear, Kate readied herself to host the televised *Together at Christmas* carol service at Westminster Abbey. Christmas has always been a high-return, low-risk holiday for the royal family, and Kate seized it for a moment. Billed as a “tribute to the incredible work of individuals and organizations across Britain who have supported their communities through the Covid-19 pandemic,” the holiday occasion primarily provided the family a much-needed reason to convene in public. Still staggering from an unnerving few months that started with the April 2021 death of Prince Philip, the Queen’s October hospitalization, and the ever-unfolding Sussex story, the senior members of the Firm were determined to put on a united front. And, with Kate at the helm—even playing the piano—it was a success.

With the exception of Princess Anne (who had schedule conflicts), the extended royal family appeared with much fanfare—which also helped gloss over the fact that the Queen was too fragile to attend. When it came time to doing it all again in 2022, the family was in even more dire need of a celebratory set piece. Earlier that year, Prince Andrew was humiliatingly defrocked and settled out of court with his family’s money. The monarch’s death further destabilized the family and the Firm, while Harry’s candid memoir was lurking around the corner. There was an immense and powerful feeling that the other shoe was about to drop. The family gathered

for a *Together at Christmas* redux featuring a stirring tribute to the recently deceased Queen Elizabeth II. And, by coincidence, the carol service took place on the same night as the premiere of Harry and Meghan's Netflix docuseries. A perfect distraction, they hoped. From a PR point of view, the evening wasn't quite the draw it was the previous year, but Kate appeared even more confident. And the family, despite their troubles, were adequately cheerful. The absence of Covid masks this time around might have helped, too.

For someone more than comfortable in the background, Kate has come a very long way. She did this with the help of the Palace machine, sure, but also on her own and with some guidance from Bucklebury Manor, the Middleton family home. Kate's stable childhood and strong parental guidance, especially from her mother, inculcated in her strains of resilience and acceptance unique to those who are *not* born into incomprehensible wealth and privilege. Kate's comparatively modest beginnings started in a simple semidetached house just outside of Reading. Her parents, Michael and Carole Middleton, who met while working at British Airways, bought the house shortly after their marriage. During Kate's early years, Carole set up shop in the shed behind the house, forming a mail-order party supply business. Her company, Party Pieces, was a multimillion-dollar operation for many years before it was sold at a loss to an entrepreneur in 2023. Back then Carole added self-made millionaire to a résumé that also included loving mother of three, and Michael continued at British Airways until he later joined Party Pieces to help his wife manage the growing company. After selling their first home, the Middleton family moved to a larger property in Bucklebury village and then to the nearby sprawling manor house on the nearby Pease Hill.

The Middleton ancestors who married into money left an inheritance large enough for Michael and Carole to send Kate and her siblings, Pippa and James, to some of the country's top private schools. As two caring parents who worked hard, made their mint, and climbed the social ladder (no small feat in a country *still* obsessed with class), the Middletons—mostly Carole—saw that the pretty and grounded Kate was ready to carry the family name further to the top. So, they began orchestrating her life, ensuring she was at the right places at the right time and spoke the right way. Kensington Palace has never denied that Kate had several rounds of elocution lessons as she became more serious with William. Friends have

noted over the years that her accent now sounds “posher” and “even more plummy” than her husband’s. The Middleton strategy involved more than just aristocratic affectation—Carole calculatingly placed Kate right at the center of young Prince William’s world. It was first reported in royal biographer Katie Nicholl’s *Kate: The Future Queen* that when Carole learned that Prince William was slated to attend the University of St. Andrews, she encouraged her daughter to turn down a spot at her dream school, the University of Edinburgh, take a gap year to study abroad in Florence, and enroll at St. Andrews the following year.

Carole set things up, and Kate took it the rest of the way. It wasn’t long before William and Kate’s friendliness turned into a loving relationship, one that included natural ups and downs—periods when they were on and times when they were off. During the flush and passion of their early romance, the pair spent lots of time with Kate’s family in Bucklebury. William took to the cozy Middleton enclave in a village where time seemed to stand still. The echoing bells of the sixteenth-century parish, the clink of glasses and last call in the traditional Bladebone Inn, and the low lights and trailing chimney smoke from thatched-roof houses all proved irresistible for a young man used to gated entries, long corridors, and private secretaries.

He also fell for the Middleton family. Although less frequent these days, William has always looked forward to Sunday roasts at their house and helping load the dishwasher at the end of it. They live in comfort, but it’s down-to-earth, snug, and congenial compared to the decorous, hushed rooms at the cavernous royal residences he grew up in. The wellies-by-the-back-door and home-cooked meals of it was an environment that both he and Kate have continually tried to re-create for their own children.

Bucklebury Manor was the house at the end of the lane. And it was this home with its familial affection and quiet ambition that shaped and equipped Kate for her life as a future Queen. As Tina Brown noted, “Bucklebury provided the backbone for Kate’s aspirational resolve.” And Kate was forced to call up this resolve long before the two were married. Their courtship lasted eight years, long enough to give birth to the cruel tabloid nickname “Waity Katie.” Knowing he would soon be immersed in his monarchical duties, William struggled to commit for the long haul, even pushing the two to completely break up in spring 2007. Kate retreated to Bucklebury for Carole’s motherly advice, while William took refuge at Bovington Army Camp in Dorset.

Kate didn't pull back for long. She soon resurfaced and demonstrated some of that Middleton determination and took a few bold steps of her own. While William was off in Dorset—ostensibly for armored reconnaissance training, but photographic evidence suggests he spent much of his time sowing his wild oats—Kate rallied her sister, Pippa, and some close friends for London's nightlife scene. The paparazzi swarmed, and Kate was regularly photographed on raucous nights out. Long before my royal reporter days, I saw her inside the members-only Boujis club in South Kensington a few times, where she and her friends would knock back complimentary trays of shots and jump up on the seats and tables to dance to whatever hip-hop or house music the DJ was spinning. There was an option to leave the building secretly, but Kate left through the main doors, where the photographers waited.

During that spring, the media ran with the “single and ready to mingle” storyline long enough for William to take notice and come racing back from Bovington. Game, set, match. Less than three years later, I combined reporting efforts with Nicholl to break the news on the front cover of *Us Weekly* that the “Royal Wedding Is On!” A week later, Clarence House confirmed the engagement. William and Kate married in the spring of 2011. An estimated two billion people around the world watched in awe as Kate Middleton stepped out of the church as Catherine, Duchess of Cambridge, the grand and dulcet chimes of Westminster Abbey eclipsing the bells of Bucklebury's little parish church.

In many ways this is where Kate's personal story comes to an end: she traded in Carole's training for the Palace playbook, and the young woman disappeared behind a Palace-constructed mold. Before her engagement to William, Kate was left to fend, manage, and ward off the stalking tabloid press who seemed to buzz around her wherever she went and create whatever narratives they pleased. There may have been no social media negativity or online trolls to deal with, but Fleet Street's interest was obsessive: Kate was regularly tailed by paparazzi, her voicemails were repeatedly hacked (155 times alone by one reporter at *News the World*), the likes of the *Daily Mail* poked fun at her un-royal family and former air hostess mom, and body-shaming commentary was written about her weight loss. The misogynistic and snobbish way many of the tabloids wrote about Kate was reprehensible. After her marriage, however, she had full Palace

protection and spinmeisters on the payroll to assist her with media harassment and reputational management.

Aides at the time told me they were keen to avoid “the past” (i.e., the institution’s mistakes with Princess Diana) from happening again. Because of the Middletons’ strategic guidance and Kate’s instincts for reticence and discretion, the public knew scarcely anything about her inner life even when she was simply Kate Middleton from Berkshire. As the Duchess of Cambridge, wife of the heir to the throne and future Queen, her genuine identity receded even further. Transfigured by her new role and completely dedicated to indiscriminately supporting William, Kate—with institutional assistance—successfully sublimated her authentic self, becoming an enigma to the public and perhaps even to herself. Unimpeachable, relatable Kate was also now an inscrutable queen in training—an institutional dream come true.

Kate quickly assumed her royal positions: a vessel for a dynastic family and a token of glamour and youth. She gave birth to an heir in the requisite time frame—Prince George was born in 2013. Following years of tradition, she introduced her firstborn (and the subsequent births of Charlotte and Louis) to the world on the steps of the Lindo Wing at St. Mary’s Hospital in London. My experience of waiting for weeks outside the hospital with the dozens of other journalists and photographers for the mother of an heir to give birth is still as surreal as it sounds. Lying on the floor just ten steps away from them (to stay out of shot) as hundreds of cameras clicked was just bizarre. After the body image-obsessed tabloids tracked every pound of her postpartum weight loss, she was back on the royal A-team for the daily drudgery: ribbon-cutting, ceremonial piffle, and well-timed photo ops. And she looked great doing it. Always elegant and serene, she wore her role well. The late Hilary Mantel got into some hot water for saying so, but during Kate’s early royal career, it almost seemed that appearing this way was Kate’s sole purpose for the Firm, especially after she birthed an heir. “I saw Kate becoming a jointed doll on which certain rags are hung,” Mantel wrote, adding that the duchess appeared like a “shop-window mannequin, with no personality of her own, entirely defined by what she wore.” A harsh observation to be sure, but also a truth most find hard to swallow. Like Diana, Kate became a sparkling showpiece for the Firm, a symbol of refined beauty and those white, English Rose genetics the British newspapers love so much. Freya in an Emilia Wickstead coat dress.

And now, like Diana, she, too, is the Princess of Wales. It's a title that carries a huge and extremely important legacy, but sources close to the royal (who, for those wondering, "is just as happy being called Kate as she is Catherine") say she is surprisingly "unfazed" by her new designation. Respectful of the past but graciously "keen to carve out her own" path in the new role.

Unlike strong-minded Diana, who, saddled with a cruel and taxing marriage, proved to be a woman unwilling to fully submit to the royal cause, so far Kate has been a much more teachable, pliable future Queen. She's coachable, which is something Queen Elizabeth II admired in Kate from the start. "There has rarely been a moment where Kate has said 'This is *my* way' or pushed an opinion on others," said a royal source. "She is happy to follow the advice and leadership of those around her, people she trusts to take charge and [who] know what's best." To mitigate the fact that, in terms of actual work, she has technically been a part-time working royal, the Kensington Palace communications team always stress in press releases and other communiqués that Kate is "keen to learn." So, yet another nickname was born. "Katie Keen" was a popular refrain on social media for several years.

A Kensington Palace source called her approach to philanthropic work a "shift" in how royal duties have been executed over the years. Where in the past royal patronages were collected in the hundreds (Queen Elizabeth II had more than six hundred when she passed), the Waleses have both streamlined their lists. Princess Anne is currently patron or president for more than three hundred organizations and rarely goes a few days without carrying out an engagement at one of them, while Kate has taken on only about twenty (a spokesperson for the couple said the smaller slate gives more time to make an impact on each one, rather than infrequent visits, though statistically there isn't much proof of this). All are said to reflect her own interests (such as the Royal Photographic Society), but it's resulted in a much leaner schedule of engagements for the publicly funded Princess of Wales. In 2022, she attended just ninety engagements; Anne, on the other hand, topped out at 214. In 2023, before the coronation, both William and Kate took off an entire month from work for the children's Easter break from school, leaving Charles and Camilla to hold the fort and the attention of the public. It followed almost two weeks off in January, a week in February, and seven weeks over the summer for other school-related

vacations. “That one’s a nonnegotiable,” said a royal source. “It’s essential for her and William to have the school holidays with the children.” Another source told me that Kate doesn’t plan to increase her workload for another ten to fifteen years, once the children reach adulthood. It’s a privilege most parents can only dream of. The late Queen, too, would take off blocks of time throughout the year to recharge, but she was also known to carry out *at least* three hundred engagements annually. Sources said Kate remains “laser focused” on her duty to the family first, and then the Crown.

Unlike so many others in the royal family, Kate has no history of bringing scandal or shame to the Firm, and it’s likely that the Palace machine will ensure it stays that way. When she was photographed topless while vacationing in France with William in 2012, she met the horrendous moment by staying mum and out of the fray—the definition of grace under fire. I joined Kate for an engagement in Kuala Lumpur, Malaysia, on the day France’s *Closer* magazine released the photos in print and online. William’s private secretary Miguel Head had just shared the news with the couple over breakfast when I arrived at the As-Syakirin Mosque ahead of the Duke and Duchess of Cambridge for a tour of the Islamic place of worship. For someone who had just experienced such a traumatic and gross invasion of privacy, Kate seemed unshaken. William was tense, his fists clenched and, from a source who had been with him earlier in the day, “filled with rage.” But Kate smiled and got on with the work. Rather than “freak out,” I was told, she relied on the royal institution and her vehemently protective husband to handle the situation, which they eventually did by winning a lawsuit against the French outlet and scrubbing the photos from many parts of the internet. A senior aide likened Kate’s faith in the institution to doing a trust fall: “She has absolute confidence that they know what’s best.”

When rumors repeatedly circulated and trended online about her marriage, Kate never publicly addressed or acknowledged the issue, letting William, the Palace, and the passage of time do the work for her. In our current age of oversharing, when most people snatch up the opportunity and platform to set the record straight, Kate—who reportedly never looks at social media or reads newspapers—seems content as a voiceless symbol of courtly resolve, a totem of stoicism in a time of emotional overdrive. This side of her most resembles Queen Elizabeth II, a woman after whom Kate has long modeled her approach to royal life—the late sovereign’s allegiance

to the Crown and her commitment to the stability and continuity of the monarchy. Perhaps more than anything else, Kate has learned what is paramount for survival in the system: vanishing into your role, giving away nothing, and allowing yourself to embody what the public sees in you. And with those elocution lessons, the Princess of Wales even sounds a bit like her former boss—polished, regal, and appropriately distant.

Kate may have achieved a Queen-like detachment, but it's still a guess as to whether she can maintain this now that natural occurrences and unanticipated conditions have pushed her further into the spotlight. Even to this day, the public knows so little about her, and we haven't yet seen her display the gravitas and commanding power that the late Queen mustered so effortlessly. Some journalists who have been approached by publishers to author biographies about the Princess of Wales have turned down the chance. "I'd barely be able to do a chapter, let alone an entire book," one joked to me. As the Princess of Wales, Kate has now entered a more pressurized, demanding phase of her royal life, which has put much of the fate of the monarchy's popularity on her shoulders. William will one day be King, but the closer he gets, the more rigid he becomes. His future is a stately, silent one. Kate's is more of a question mark, but we know it will involve more public participation and civic engagement. She can still easily draw a crowd and land a front page like no other (working) royal, and the Firm heavily leans on that. With Charles and Camilla already aging out of the long overseas tours, William and Kate will be expected to carry some of that load—even if they have already told senior courtiers that they would prefer to keep any travels focused on their own flagship projects rather than those at the request of the Foreign & Commonwealth Office. Still, there are commitments with being married to the next in line to the throne that are unavoidable, including new military honors. In December 2022, King Charles named his daughter-in-law the new honorary colonel of the Irish Guards—a position previously held by Prince William that requires more than appearing with the guard's regiment for St. Patrick's Day. The following March, she dressed up in camo and visited the 1st Battalion Irish Guards at a very snowy Salisbury Plain Training Area to participate in training exercises. And in August 2023, she became the commodore-in-chief of the Royal Navy's Fleet Air Arm (one of Prince Andrew's former roles), colonel-in-chief of the 1st Queen's Dragoon Guards, and Royal Honorary Air Commodore of Royal Air Force Coningsby.



But at home, titles are left at the door, and she relishes just being “mama” or, in Princess Charlotte’s case, “mummy.” Since moving to the smaller Adelaide Cottage on the Windsor estate, the family enjoy “plenty of outdoor time,” said a source, who noted that both William and Kate enjoy riding bikes with their three children. “It’s cute . . . like ducks in a row,” they joked. Without the live-in help they had at Kensington Palace’s Apartment 1A (staff now just come and go), Kate has “really gotten into cooking.” Above all, and this is where she differs from Elizabeth II, the children will *always* come before duty, several sources commented.

Raising an heir has also presented its own unique challenges. After Prince George’s tenth birthday in 2023, media coverage and opinion pieces about his future role increased. It was also reported that the second in line to the throne will be allowed to skip the obligatory stint with the Armed Forces “if he wishes.” Controversial, according to some in royal circles, given that he will one day become the head of the British Armed Forces when taking the throne. But William and Kate, a source told me, “want to allow George to make as many of his own decisions as he can in life.”

Mother but also the future Queen—it’s quite a balancing act. And it puts Kate in an almost impossible position: when the time comes, she will have to leave the mum role at the palace gates, shuck her natural diffidence, balance her regal rectitude with some everywoman charm, and, for the never-ending presence of the press, dazzle whenever needed. It will require every ounce of the Middleton resilience that got her this far. For a woman who is so tightly controlled and carefully assembled, this is a lot of shape-shifting and pressure to perform. Under such continual duress, facades tend to crumble. The institution will do anything to prevent this from happening. The Palace knows the fallout when it does.

After that successful 2019 appearance on *Blue Peter*—an undeniable confidence booster considering her pre-taping nerves almost got the better of her—with a big smile Kate confidently asked her head of communications, “Okay, what can I do next?” Perhaps we’ll see more of this self-assurance and enthusiasm from the Princess of Wales as she grows even more accustomed to the spotlight. Maybe that Back to Nature garden day was a turning point for Kate—planting the weeping blue cedar a means to encourage her own growth. Here’s the thing about that species: it’s naturally slow-growing and requires adequate space for its sculptural branches and cascading needles. But if there is too much pruning, or the

space around it is too restricted, the tree ends up taking on an odd shape and loses the character that made it so special in the first place.

## A Dangerous Game

Royals and the Media

*The press is our chief ideological weapon.*

—Nikita Khrushchev (former premier of the Soviet Union), 1957, speech

*If we amplify everything, we hear nothing.*

—Jon Stewart, 2010, speech at “Rally to Restore Sanity”

Sitting in a dimly lit corner of a South London pub on a brisk autumnal evening, Prince William was about as incognito as a future King could get. Swapping his usual uniform of a crisp Oxford shirt and chinos for a more casual jeans and baseball cap combo, the then Duke of Cambridge would have looked like any other patron if it weren't for his protection officers sitting nearby. Not that anyone would have noticed—the buzz around the October 11, 2019, England vs. Czech Republic football game on the venue's TV screens had the most pub-goers cheering on the Three Lions in their UEFA Euro qualifier match (which they were about to lose, 2–1). William was one of them, but he also had other business to attend to.

While the senior royal is no stranger to a pint or two at the pub with friends, this visit was different. He was there to meet *Sunday Times* editor in chief and News Corp executive Martin Ivens. William first established a professional relationship with Ivens when he took on the newspaper's top job in 2013, and there was a mutual respect between the two—and an appreciation of football. But they weren't here to talk match stats. On the top of William's mind was Prince Harry, who had just seven days earlier announced phone-hacking lawsuits against News Corp's *Sun* newspaper

and MGN, the former owners of the *Mirror*. Around the same time, Meghan announced she was suing the publisher of the *Mail on Sunday* after they published a handwritten letter she sent to her estranged father. The announcement of their lawsuits stunned the rest of the royal family, who found out the news with the rest of the world while Harry and Meghan were touring southern Africa.

When news outlets reported on the lawsuits, William immediately turned to his aides to vent. “It was a step too far in his opinion,” said a former Kensington Palace staffer. “You just don’t take on the press like that . . . It’s a recipe for disaster.” Added another, “William felt this would jeopardize his own relationships [with the press].” Around this time, William was already in the process of meeting a number of big-name newspaper editors to personally strengthen his connections, so someone (especially his brother) putting them at risk was not an option. After a contact had tipped him off, William was aware that Harry had also discussed their “tensions” and “different paths” with journalist Tom Bradby for a forthcoming prime-time ITV documentary about the Sussexes’ royal tour. Both William and his private secretary Simon Case felt that Harry’s candid confessions were going to be “a problem.”

So, by the time William sat down with Ivens at the pub, it didn’t take long for him to open up about Harry. “I’ve put my arm around my brother all our lives and I can’t do that anymore; we’re separate entities,” he confessed. “I’m sad about that. All we can do, and all I can do, is try and support them and hope that the time comes when we’re all singing from the same page. I want everyone to play on the team.”

As the relationship between the Sussexes, the institution, and the royal family continued to disintegrate, William’s frustrations with Harry intensified. When Harry and Meghan announced on January 8, 2020, that they would completely step back from their royal roles, William took action to deal with the oncoming Sussex storm. “He had conversations with a few in his team about getting ahead of what he felt would soon be Harry blaming them all for not doing enough [to support himself and Meghan],” said a Kensington Palace aide who has since left the royal household. Palace officials advised William to bite his tongue until he could join the Queen and Charles for a proper sit-down with Harry, a meeting already scheduled for a week later in Sandringham. But his patience was, as usual, running thin, so he discreetly took matters into his own hands.

Just a day before the now-famous Sandringham Summit, William's disapproval over his brother's decision to step back was loud and clear on the front page of *The Sunday Times*: "I've put my arm around my brother all our lives. I can't do it anymore." The article quoted William speaking to an anonymous "friend" (guess who) and positioned the heir as a caring older brother who had done everything to help his hapless sibling. When it first came out at midnight, Kensington Palace didn't like its tone. Calls were made. By early morning, the second editions of the paper made their way around the country with an updated front page: "William to Harry: We need to be team players." Perfect.

For years, the axiom "never complain, never explain" has been synonymous with the royal family. Dating back to the 1800s, legend has it that it was British prime minister Benjamin Disraeli who first uttered the phrase, but it was soon adopted by high-ranking Brits across the military, royalty, and even future prime ministers, including Winston Churchill. During the Victorian age and beyond, the maxim reflected an established position for the royal family and those in the institution. Today, however, it's nothing more than an empty promise. Queen Elizabeth II may have genuinely kept calm and carried on, but the go-to move for most other senior family members now is to reveal their thoughts, plans, and grievances via anonymous source quotes through their staff and well-timed leaks to preferred newspapers.

This sacrosanct relationship between two of Britain's oldest institutions, the monarchy and the press, is now a symbiotic one where each leans on the other for its survival. Without the acres of coverage and the visibility the British newspapers provide, the royal family would be a shadow of itself. This drift into irrelevance has already happened to many European monarchies. And without the access, photos, and scoops from the family's constant drama that drives their revenue, the flagging industry of tabloids and broadsheet newspapers would be even closer to death's door.

While printed media is fast becoming a thing of the past, newspapers and their brands still sit at the core of the nation's media realm as many publications have found new leases on life online. Influential, expedient, subsidized by deep pockets, and fueled by an information-obsessed public, the likes of the *Daily Mail*, *The Sun*, *The Telegraph*, and *The Times* have the ability to influence political votes, public opinion, and the national mood. They've wielded this power for centuries, sometimes for good, but often

not. The arrival of publications such as the *London Gazette* in 1665 saw pages filled with eye-catching headlines, exaggerated tales, and titillating rumors, creating a sense of communal belonging among a widely dispersed British public. They were outraged and intrigued by the same things, motivated by the same opinions. And as a result, says openDemocracy journalist Adam Ramsay, “demands for democracy—that these publics have a say—advanced.”

This synchronicity of opinion and demand for a more democratic system created a new form of nationalism among the population, one that sprung from the bottom instead of being decreed from the top. The establishment was forced to acknowledge and respond. King Charles I disregarded public and parliamentary opinion during the birth of this new nationalist era which resulted in his beheading. The late political scientist and historian Benedict Anderson pointed out that the country’s ruling class, including its media-owning elite, quickly realized the advantages of maintaining pomp and ceremony, “[it] kept the plebs reverential and society hierarchical, and propped it up.”

The cofounder of the *National Review* and editor of the *Economist* in the 1860s, Walter Bagehot, maintained that the British monarchy’s *raison d’être* was to “impress the many” while Westminster and Whitehall press on with “governing the many.” The Crown is the “dignified” part of the constitution—the monarchy is there to “excite and preserve the reverence of the population.” Strategically, this located the hereditary principle—a dynasty of white privilege and the rusty class system that goes with it—right at the heart of British identity. The emergence of radio and TV amplified this notion. Lord Reith, the first managing director of the BBC, said in 1929 that the national broadcasting corporation would guarantee that the ringing bells of Big Ben, “the clock which beats the time over the Houses of Parliament, in the center of Empire,” would echo “in the loneliest cottages in the land.”

In 1924, Reith convinced King George V to address his subjects over the radio via the BBC with great success. Twenty years later, for Queen Elizabeth II’s coronation, the royal family fully embraced modern media, allowing TV cameras inside Westminster Abbey to broadcast the ceremony for the first time. This historic occasion doubled the number of television owners in Britain and established royal pageantry as a form of entertainment. Because the sovereign’s roles include the head of British

Armed Forces and the head of the Church of England, the monarchy was already conjoined with the institutions of the military and religion. But after Her Majesty's coronation, the institution of the media—one that now was connected to the people by way of a TV or radio in virtually every British home—also became an essential component of the royal pantomime.

The media kept the appeal of the royal family alive throughout Queen Elizabeth II's reign and beyond. And the monarchy has needed it. The huge decline in religion (only 6 percent of the adult British population currently identify as a practicing Christian) and a vast reduction in the country's military power have left the media as the only viable institution left to effectively prop up the monarchical system. As a result, the institution has heavily leaned on the media for connection and prominence. Some new media efforts worked (Charles and Camilla's assorted appearances on popular British TV shows such as *The Repair Shop*, *Gardeners' World*, and *Antiques Roadshow* have been solid PR boosts, particularly among older Brits) and some were misfires. In 1969, Prince Philip encouraged Buckingham Palace to commission the BBC documentary *Royal Family*, which was essentially a one-episode reality show that followed the royals for just over three months. It revealed never-before-seen intimate moments such as family mealtimes and Balmoral barbecues. Publicly it was a well-received program, but it also briefly destabilized the family. The "behind the palace walls" approach allowed *too* much access to the monarchy, and the portrait of a somewhat "normal" family cut through the carefully maintained veil of secrecy and fantasy that is so vital to the monarchy's existence. If the people who were supposedly given divine sanction to rule are just like us, then what was the point of it all? The Palace's successful campaign to remove the 110-minute special from all archives has left behind only bootleg cuts to occasionally surface on the internet.

This "now you see, now you don't" relationship is what made the second half of Queen Elizabeth II's reign so interesting. While she gave plenty of scripted speeches in front of the cameras, and even shared stories about the Crown Jewels in a 2018 BBC documentary, the Queen famously never gave a full-length interview. The public rarely knew her opinion on matters beyond horse racing and corgis; as for her personal life, much of it remains a mystery even after her death. Kate, the Princess of Wales, has mostly followed the same model, while the majority of the family have clearly deviated from it. The disastrous results that come from more

forthcoming moments reveal just how important having a protective media strategy is for the monarchy—their secrecy is their weapon.

Of course, apace with this give-and-take relationship with the traditional media come their tortured alliances with Britain's newspapers and manic tabloids. For many of those outside the United Kingdom, the country's tabloid culture is hard to fathom. In the United States and most of Europe, tabloid periodicals are rarely taken seriously—they are trivial publications (in the past referred to as “yellow journalism”) usually relegated to grocery store checkout lines and doctor's waiting rooms. But for those living in Britain, they are part of the national fabric and the country's collective conversations. Even for those who purposefully avoid such material, there is little escape from tabloid journalism. When the more elevated outlets like BBC News, Sky News, and BBC Radio 4 analyze the day's newspaper front pages across numerous shows, tabloid headlines are discussed as seriously as the stories from the *Financial Times* or the *Guardian*. Whether people want it or not, the narratives from the likes of *The Sun* and the *Daily Mail* easily become part of one's subconscious—whether it is through other media or their presence at the front of every corner shop, supermarket, and gas station in the country. And in any case, for a society obsessed with surfaces and superficialities, addicted to gossip and celebrity, and demanding of beauty and gore in equal measure, the tabloids give people what they want (even if they will rarely admit it). As Martin Amis said, “They wouldn't be there if there wasn't something in the British character that wanted it to be so.” Too much junk food, however, can make you sick.

Where British newspapers were once clearly separated into a trio of categories: broadsheets (*The Times*, the *Telegraph*, the *Independent*), the mid-markets (*Daily Mail*, *Express*), and the tabloids (*The Sun*, the *Mirror*, the *Daily Star*), the lines are now blurred. While *The Times of London* may posture and advance a more elevated style (and it does contain some of the country's finest hard news coverage), when it comes to royal news, the contents are often no more or less salacious and gossip-ridden than the stories found down a rung in the *Mail*. And while one was once guaranteed a break from the screeches and tawdry gossip of the *Mirror* or *The Sun* by opening the pages of the *Telegraph*, that supposedly high-minded paper is now home to some of the most coarse, tabloid-style royal articles out there, including gossipy fiction such as Prince Harry spending nights alone in a Montecito hotel to get away from his wife. For the royals, this means



nowhere is safe—every publication is capable of sinking to this kind of questionable, even vicious, coverage.

\* \* \*

While they are constantly evolving, the relationships between the press and the institution can be separated into three silos: the royal rota; sources, leaks, and briefings; and the darker world of interference, obstruction, and control.

For years, the royal rota has been the official way for media to access taxpayer-funded royal engagements and activities. Similar to the White House press corps, members from this assemblage of journalists from various print outlets take turns reporting back to the group the relevant information and scuttlebutt from engagements where open coverage isn't possible—usually intimate gatherings in venues with limited space, or when the general humdrumness of it all doesn't require more than a reporter or two. For each engagement there is usually one print reporter, a representative from the Press Association, one TV camera (broadcasters have their own pool system, too), and a couple of photographers—everyone else, including those who aren't part of the official rota, waits outside in a “fixed point” pen to capture the royal departures and arrivals.

The rota's existence ensures that nothing is missed as members of the royal family carry out their work, but it's not a system without flaws. Established British national newspapers are the only ones allowed in from the print world, and journalists of all stripes from the Commonwealth—including Australia, New Zealand, and Canada—are banned from joining. Some exceptions have been made for the London-only *Evening Standard* newspaper and the glossy royal-friendly *Hello!* magazine. Even though online outlets are now the dominant news source for people across the world, journalists from the U.K. divisions of all-digital news organizations, such as *HuffPost* (which William and Kate have even contributed opinion articles for) and *Newsweek*, are also blocked from the rota.

With newspaper sales on a fast decline and newsrooms shrinking, it's no wonder that, unlike the White House press pool (which is open to any permanent U.S.-based editorial staff working across any platform), access to the rota (and its reporting notes) is fiercely managed and maintained by its members, which at the time of the writing of this book is just ten print

journalists. Though there is much more to royal coverage than just engagement reporting, the additional rota-only briefings and front-row access to major occasions, such as funerals and weddings (though Harry controversially banned them from his nuptials), means rota members have become indispensable assets to their newspaper bosses. Front-page stories on the royals still guarantee a boost in newsstand sales of up to 15 percent.

Though it was the Palace who green-lit the group's formation more than forty years ago, the implementation was left to a British trade body, the News Media Association (NMA), who assigned a "captain" to manage the pool. For the past thirteen years that captain has been the royal editor of the *Daily Mail*, Rebecca English, who is solely in charge of managing the rotation of members covering each royal engagement and ensuring reporting is filed among the group. "We call them the cartel—it's a strange system that has a complete monopoly on coverage [of royal engagements]. And no one wants to change the system," a Buckingham Palace communications aide once told me. Even among the rota there has been frustration over English's seemingly permanent role. "They essentially put the *Mail* in charge of it all," a royal reporter at a popular newspaper told me. "She often rigs things to make sure she gets all the good engagements, gatekeeps certain information [from the Palace], and will do anything to make sure the rota doesn't grow." There's also the glaring fact that the captain of the rota has been accused, with evidence in a court of law, of illegally paying a private investigator to spy on Prince Harry and track one of his former girlfriends. She has refused to comment on the matter.

Prior to Meghan's arrival, a couple of us in the royal press pack enjoyed rota access in a more honorary fashion. As members of the U.S. media, we didn't meet the official criteria, but because we offered continual royal coverage for American publications that cater to a different audience (i.e., not considered industry competition), the rota reluctantly allowed us full access to the pooled reporting notes and rota positions on engagements. From 2011 to 2017, all was fine. But as I grew closer to the Sussexes' team (a situation that led a few reporters to privately complain to the Palace about my "unfair" access) my rota privileges were restricted. "I'd love to help but . . . you're in more of a TV role now," English said with a sigh, referring to my ABC News gig and conveniently ignoring my role as royal editor for *Harper's Bazaar*. The other honorary member, who also worked

for a U.S. outlet with close connections to the Duchess of Sussex's inner circle, also had their rota access reduced.

The Sussexes were the big story, so, under English's fabricated rule, anyone, *especially* an honorary member, with strong access to the couple's world should not be allowed additional benefits as well as rota perks. "Newsroom budgets were shrinking fast, job security was becoming a concern to many, and the focus of some in the rota became less about what was fair and more about protecting one's job and the ability to pay school fees or a mortgage," one longtime royal correspondent admitted to me. The Palace, on the other hand, quietly made sure that foreign correspondents excluded from the rota had everything we needed (I was "snuck" out of barricaded media positions and inside engagements by certain press secretaries on many occasions) but, as one aide said to me with a sigh, "We really don't want to interfere with the rota." They were, as several expressed to me over the years, scared. After all, if unhappy rota members had the power to shift the tone of their coverage with the wave of a pen, the Palace was most definitely going to do whatever they could to keep it that way.

Restricted access for Commonwealth outlets, digital news organizations, or U.S. publications (the latter being relevant to a newly installed American duchess in the House of Windsor) didn't make much sense to many of us. With the support of two senior Palace aides, I wrote a letter to relevant senior individuals at Buckingham Palace about why it was important to open an additional position in the rota—one that could at least be shared by the aforementioned groups. Harry, I was told, was also keen to back the effort. But it quickly hit a dead end. Rather than decide themselves, Palace aides called in English and *The Times'* royal correspondent Valentine Low, the rota's overseas tour captain (who was admittedly far less bothered about petty politics and mostly attempted to be fair in this less-involved role), for a meeting. English told them that letting "others" in would be unacceptable. "To be honest the rota is just a headache none of us want to deal with. It's easier to just leave it as it is," a senior courtier said with a shrug over coffee with me. Yet another case of institutional fear and blinkered acceptance of the status quo when it comes to the media.

Harry and Meghan, who were having their own conversations about the same issue, were then told that if they wanted to break away from the rota

system and give other journalists access to their work, they would have to foot the bill for their own engagements. The list for their reasons to leave was getting longer by the month. Harry vented in *Spare*, “I’d had it with the royal rota, both the individuals and the system, which was more outdated than the horse and cart . . . It discouraged fair competition, engendered cronyism, encouraged a small mob of hacks to feel entitled.”

To Harry, the rota wasn’t just a symbol of the prevailing but noxious link between the media and monarchy, but proof of the backroom deals made between the two institutions, the underhanded agreements that are often personally destructive. He famously called this pact the “invisible contract”—a tacit agreement in which orchestrated public exposure is offered with a certain level of scrutiny accepted, in return for privacy behind palace gates. Amol Rajan, who produced the BBC documentary series *The Princes and the Press* (which, for transparency, I participated in), describes it like this: “Journalists are always doing unspoken deals with people. I worked in newspapers for the best part of a decade; I cut a few deals myself. The Windsor deal is: The royals get to live in a palace, they get some tax-payer funding. In return—so long as they grant access and a steady supply of stories and pictures—they get favorable coverage. But that deal only works if both parties stick to their side of the bargain.”

Prince Harry’s black-and-white description of this invisible contract in *Spare* and more recent interviews reveals a world in which almost every press officer and courtier has a hotline to the press—a wide-open connection to dish dirt on other family members in order to protect their own bosses and bank future favors. Of course, it’s not quite as simple as that. Many old hands in the royal press pack will (and do) categorically say that no such invisible contract exists whatsoever and that this is all part of Harry’s axe-grinding campaign to take down his family and the media along with it. In my own experience, the real truth lies deep in the murky middle. The *Express*’s longtime royal correspondent, Richard Palmer, has said in interviews he doesn’t recognize Harry’s description in the slightest, while veteran royal editor Robert Jobson said in 2021, during the period of leaks around Harry and Meghan’s troubles, “They can deny it all they like until they’re blue in the face, but there’s been an awful lot of leaking, particularly from Kensington Palace.”

While royal “churnalism”—the regurgitation of press releases, rewriting details from royal rota reports, and parroting briefing notes sent out by

Palace aides—takes up the majority of the slate for some journalists on the beat, bigger outlets also need their own stories. Exclusives, leaks from sources, and on-and-off-the-record briefs make up the second type of relationship between the Palace and press. While big scoops do sometimes come directly from Palace aides (especially those hunting for favors or armed with an agenda), many are still down to good old-fashioned reporting efforts. Having access to the world the royals occupy provides journalists, myself included, with the perfect opportunity to build relationships with an assortment of those who live and work up close and personal with the royal family. Sometimes it's their communications secretaries or private secretaries, and other times it's those who are not based at the palace or work independently, such as assistants, stylists, hairdressers, and protection officers. It's no different to the way in which one covers politics, sports, or entertainment news—you cultivate sources wherever you can find them. Some of these sources are on a mission from HQ and others simply dish up the goods because they love to vent, gossip, or feel heard. And, of course, there are those who do it for the money—British papers historically pay handsomely for insider information (even when it's illegal, in some cases).

Off-the-record briefings and sources speaking anonymously are by no means a bad thing in and of themselves, and journalists depend on these things for reporting. Publicists and representatives for the likes of celebrities, sports stars, politicians, businesses, and governments all rely on an open channel to discuss stories or issues that are best talked about on background or off the record. In the Palace's case, it is often a convenient way to share useful or sensitive information ahead of an engagement or a royal mile-marker, or to address a story they want to quash, derail, or explain without the fuss of putting out a statement. While the Palace often chooses to “no comment” most things, staff in the communications offices will sometimes instead give quotable “guidance” as a source to provide further information or context. It's partly why we have a WhatsApp group with the communication aides to fire off questions and comment requests at all hours of the day.

What makes the House of Windsor unique in this dance with the media is the competing households within it, all with their own agendas, and all doing their best to please their royal bosses. Up until the Queen's death there were three houses, each with a team assigned to work with the media: Kensington Palace for William and Kate, Clarence House for Charles and

Camilla, and Buckingham Palace for the monarch. There were also smaller teams under the BP umbrella who worked with other family members like Edward and Sophie, Princess Anne, and (pre-departure) Harry and Meghan. Though all part of the same institution, the rivalry between these teams is real in many ways and often derails a unified message. Each house is often angling for the same space in newspapers, hand-waving for attention with regards to their work, grabbing the ideal dates and locations for their tours and engagements, or scrambling for first dibs on charitable causes. And this rivalry often causes rifts, problems, and confusion downstream after a particular household offers breaking news or choreographs a PR operation. It was an “absolute headache” when Charles, William, and Harry all wanted to do similar high-profile environmental work, an aide once told me. “None of them were into the idea of collaborating; they all wanted their own big moments away from the other . . . It was all about competition, and the households were purposefully holding information back so others couldn’t try to get ahead,” they explained.

Naturally, as paid members of the team, household staff for each of the three offices look out for the royals they represent. This is where “briefings” get complicated, because while the aides are all working to prop up the Crown, they owe nothing to the family members they don’t report to. In the stormy days of Charles and Diana’s fractious marriage, both had friends in the press that they directed their aides (and friends) to saddle up to. In recent years, the Sussexes have repeatedly claimed that staff from other households betrayed them by briefing negative stories to journalists about them, and that Charles specifically authorized aides to give out details and fabrications to his preferred media outlets. Harry called it a “dirty game” in his Netflix docuseries.

When it comes to this game, it involves more than just standard communication efforts for their bosses. Palace courtiers, as previously discussed, also have a long history of leaking information about other royals—for a multitude of reasons. With different households, it is common for an aide to look out for the royal they represent by using information about another member of the family (from a different household, and preferably less senior) as currency to win over the more ruthless media outlets or to kill a potentially damaging story about the “principal” they serve. Just think back to the 2018 tabloid stories about Meghan’s 5:00 a.m. emails and the supposed drama around her wedding tiara. These reports,

and many others, included anonymous quotes from Palace sources and aides working for *other* members of the royal family. And this was hardly a secret. Over the years, many Palace staff have described what can only be called a toxic culture of leaking and negative briefings within the institution, especially poisonous when it comes to Harry and Meghan. Some of the staff I have spoken to in the past and for this book said the couple was an easy target because they believed other family members were jealous of their unrivaled popularity at the time, while two others shrugged and said that was “just how it goes.” And a handful of aides told me they thought that much of the venom was a result of the fact that some family members and staff just flat-out disliked Meghan for both rational and irrational reasons.

Journalist Anna Pasternak, who received legal threats from the Palace and attacks from British newspapers for a *Tatler* profile on Kate, which included mild criticism, in its July/August 2020 issue, said briefings often come to those journalists playing the right game. “[To receive them] you have to consistently write pieces that flatter the relevant members of the royal family, that you have to be seen to be more negative about others [in the family],” she explained.

These conspiratorial briefings happen much less often with broadcast journalists because they so rarely have the ability to lean on anonymous source quotes for reporting (although background information can easily shape the tone of a news script), but it’s exceedingly common with traditional print outlets and their online companion sites. Journalists who say otherwise either haven’t managed to build those kinds of relationships with the Palace or are lying to avoid putting their access at risk. But this doesn’t mean television doesn’t get dragged into the drama. And when it does, it can get heated, fast. Case in point: when I reported details of an insidious briefing war between Kensington Palace and Prince Harry, the Palace hit back hard. For a 2021 investigative show on Britain’s ITV network, I said that it was no coincidence that stories of Prince William’s “fears” for his brother’s “fragile” state of mind appeared in newspapers less than a day after the Duke of Sussex publicly opened up about the growing distance between him and his brother. Based on information I had confirmed from several sources and Palace aides, I added that the Sussex camp were well aware that a senior member of the then Duke of Cambridge’s staff cynically used supposed concerns about Harry’s mental

health as an opportunity to spin positive press for William. Furious that I had exposed this, Kensington Palace—personally instructed by William, one of his aides let slip—rapidly intervened and applied the requisite pressure to stop the truth from spreading. Such claims would not paint their boss in a positive light, especially given his active role as a mental health advocate.

The producers of the show were sternly encouraged by Prince William’s lawyers to remove my comments from the documentary. Aides at Kensington Palace warned the network that my accurate revelations were “potentially” defamatory. The tug-of-war rose to ITV’s executive level until the broadcaster made an eleventh-hour agreement to mute the audio of my voice when it aired. I was told by a source that ITV was concerned about losing access to the royal family for other big-ticket TV items (such as Kate’s Christmas concert specials).

Dead air on network television is extremely rare, so when my voice cut out for five seconds the night *Harry & William: What Went Wrong* aired, it made for an incredibly awkward silence noticed by viewers and pundits alike. Kensington Palace continued their damage control by telling certain royal correspondents that I had “no evidence” to support my claim. Eager-to-please reporters repeated this accusation, despite knowing the truth. “It provided a vivid example that Kensington Palace is certainly more prepared to wade in to influence media coverage when it chooses to,” said the documentary’s award-winning journalist-turned-director Richard Sanders. “On the day of transmission, the Palace demanded that we remove [the] quote. People more important than myself acquiesced, although it seemed to me perfectly, legally defensible.” Defensible, indeed. And somehow, in all this back-and-forth and he said—she said nonsense, the real story was lost to the noise.

Continuing William’s campaign to emerge from the brothers’ public squabble looking like the caring older sibling, the heir’s Kensington Palace team did everything they could to carefully control that narrative. They were determined to paint him as the more mature and responsible one who had done all he could to salvage the relationship. But they can’t bury the articles that included the strategic briefings I initially exposed, which clearly quote Kensington Palace sources. “WILLS: MY FEARS FOR FRAGILE HARRY” was *The Sun*’s October 21, 2019, front page. Inside the paper, a senior royal source revealed that William was worried about



Harry's "fragile" state of mind after *Harry and Meghan: An African Journey* aired that week. Another source in the story added, "Harry is not in great shape . . . I'd say he's not well." And a Kensington Palace source was also quoted by BBC News on the same day, revealing that the Duke of Cambridge was "worried" about his brother. Harry and Meghan, they added, were in a "fragile" place. Similar language appeared in a number of other outlets, including the front page of the *Daily Mail*: "WILLIAM'S FEARS FOR TROUBLED HARRY."

My proof of Kensington Palace's schemes at work wasn't just in the newspaper coverage. I also had close working relationships with Buckingham Palace aides and people on Harry and Meghan's team. Back in 2019, one of the Sussexes' main communications aides felt strongly that William's staff, led by press secretary Christian Jones, crossed a line with the mental health stories. One of the couple's team called me the moment the "William's concerns for Harry" front pages dropped. "It's pretty disgusting that they would pull out the mental health card for this . . . None of them care for his health," the aide said. As Harry later shared, "They were happy to lie to protect my brother. They were never willing to tell the truth to protect us."

This wasn't Christian Jones's first rodeo, and he was just one of many at Kensington Palace who engaged in these tactics. William's private secretary Simon Case and communications secretary-turned-senior-advisor Jason Knauf also shared details with preferred reporters to quell rumors about the broken relationship between the Cambridges and the Sussexes. When William and Kate went to see Harry and Meghan after the birth of Archie, Jones made calls to a *Mirror* reporter and me to share an exclusive—the couple had just *minutes* ago stopped by for a special visit. "It's a great story that shows that the relationship isn't as bad as everyone makes out," he said. "It was really sweet." What he failed to mention, as I later found out from Sussex sources, was that the couple's lukewarm drive-by lasted less than twenty minutes.

There are also times when certain false information is purposefully given out just to give the institution a proper whitewash. For *Finding Freedom*—which initially started life in 2018 when Harry and Meghan were excited about their years ahead as royals—two Kensington Palace aides working for the Sussexes at the time told my coauthor Carolyn Durand and me that Meghan had received SAS-style security training ahead

of her marriage to Harry. Perfectly believable, given the fact that Kate and other senior royals went through the exact same taxing instruction course. But the Sussexes were surprised to read this when the book came out in August 2020. “Meghan *wishes* that was true,” her new U.S. representative admitted to me after publication. Harry called the story “nonsense,” adding, “On the contrary, the Palace floated the idea of not giving her any security at all because I was now sixth in line to the throne.”

Looking back on that period, a current senior Kensington Palace staffer called the “briefing wars” that took place during the Sussexes’ fallout a “dark time.” They claim the Prince and Princess of Wales are now keen to move on and operate differently. After I exposed the details behind the “fears for Harry” stories leaked by Kensington Palace, William had me excluded from access to engagements and even press releases for almost ten months. A former aide in the prince’s circle revealed that it was the last straw. “There was a frustration that control of the narrative was slipping away when *Finding Freedom* came out, then Oprah . . . [William and Kate] were exhausted and angered by it all.” But in the summer of 2022, I was told by a senior aide that the household wanted to “wipe the slate clean.” The arrival of Lee Thompson, NBC’s former vice president of global communications and strategic partnerships, as William and Kate’s new head of press has certainly resulted in new, more transparent strategies. There’s a sense that under his watch at least, the past might not repeat itself. “That’s not how I operate,” Thompson told me shortly after taking on his new role. He vowed to staff at the start of his role that he doesn’t have favorites and doesn’t have plans to get involved in any games. A supposed new era.

But the lasting damage of many years of deceit and cynical tactics still lingers. The impact on family relations seems as raw as ever when you consider Harry’s tormented odyssey. There were times, the Duke of Sussex says, that even brother William had been a victim of manipulation and trickery in an effort to boost his father’s and Camilla’s images. Charles’s former press secretary Sandy Henney revealed that William was “furious” when, at sixteen, *The Sun* published details of his first proper meeting with Camilla. The author of the story later revealed that the source was, once again, Mark Bolland, Charles’s deputy private secretary and public relations advisor. Henney described the briefings as “transactional,” adding, “When I joined his office in ’93 [Charles] was going through some pretty virulent criticism—‘Bad father, unloving husband.’ I think he was pretty hurt.”

Bolland worked hard to change Charles's image, leaking all sorts of details in the process and helping journalists shine an extremely positive light on his boss, even if it meant bringing others down along the way. "[Mark] had a meeting with me at the publisher's office, at the very beginning of [my biography *Charles: Victim or Villain*]," revealed journalist Penny Junor. Details provided to the author included the claim that Charles's marriage to Princess Diana was a lost cause because she had multiple personality disorder. This was a low point in Charles's desperate attempts to reconstruct his image, and the public took notice. The Palace disassociated itself from the book, but Junor still claims Bolland was behind much of the reporting in the tome, a huge share of which glorified Camilla as the woman who "saved" a forlorn prince.

Bolland was also accused of approving a *News of the World* scoop claiming a sixteen-year-old Harry was "taking drugs," in exchange for spinning the story into one that praised Charles as a caring, involved father who took time out of his busy royal schedule to take his pot-smoking son to a "heroin rehab clinic." To complete the fabrication, misleading photographs from an unrelated royal engagement Harry and his father carried out at an entirely different rehabilitation facility were used to illustrate the article. While Harry has admitted to spending many nights at Highgrove getting high and drunkenly falling into trouble at a local pub in Wiltshire, the story failed to mention that this rebellious time in his life was partly the result of Charles leaving him alone at his country mansion for a majority of the summer in 2002. "This was a child that needed guidance, that needed a parent, and [Charles] was too busy and involved with other things to notice," said a family friend. In *Spare*, Harry writes that the front-page tabloid story, which went on for an additional six pages, left him feeling "sickened" and "horrificed." Bolland later admitted that the sequence of events in the now-defunct newspaper was "distorted" to make Charles look good.

When rumors about Prince William and gossip about Kate's "fallout" with Rose Hanbury flooded social media feeds and American tabloid magazines in 2019, Kensington Palace press secretary Christian Jones took a leaf out of Bolland's book and pulled out all the stops to get *The Sun*—the first outlet to allude to the gossip—to stop poking around in the detritus of the rumor and back off. Crises such as these require more than just strategic briefing, which drops us right into the third media relationship: tactics that

teeter on the edge of ethical boundaries, and in some cases run right past them.

While there was no proof that there was any truth to the Rose gossip, the tale's trip along the grapevine was damaging enough. "Christian was desperate to stop [the rumor] and made it his mission to do so," a former courtier told me. Jones even tried to include me in his attempts. While the tabloid continued to dig around on the story, even sending a reporter to canvass Hanbury's home in Norfolk, Jones—who had already admitted to me that the paper's persistence was stressing him out—suggested that I connect with the journalist behind the initial reports—*The Sun*'s "showbiz" editor Dan Wootton. Christian clearly wanted to give Wootton something in exchange for standing down on the rumors. If he promised Wootton scoops from elsewhere, maybe *The Sun* would do him a solid. As for my supposed gain from this, Jones claimed, it would be a "great move" to help promote *Finding Freedom* before it was launched in August. "He would be helpful," Jones wrote in a late-night text. "I reckon a story [from your book] to Dan that goes in *The Sun*, and then he goes on [morning TV show] *Lorraine* [to talk about it]."

At this point I was already aware and dubious of the triad relationship between Jones, Callum Stephens (his partner and PR executive), and Wootton. I had zero interest in collaborating with the tabloid and Wootton, let alone with a notorious hack best known for bullying and hounding celebrities, including the late *Love Island UK* host Caroline Flack (who Prince Harry was romantically linked to in 2009), as well as a long list of worrying allegations, including blackmail, coercion and other repulsive acts. (In July 2023, Wootton responded to the publication of some of the allegations, calling it a "witch hunt" by "dark forces," and admitted that, while he has "made errors of judgement in the past [the] criminal allegations . . . are simply untrue.") But Jones continued to push the idea—at least three other times.

It was soon clear my book was not the only carrot Jones would dangle in front of his pal at *The Sun*. In late June the paper suddenly pulled reporters off the hunt and then dropped digs into the story entirely. "Christian helped make it end," one high-level courtier told me. Curiously, Wootton and the paper—which does not have a reputation for giving up on potential scoops—shifted their focus to a series of revealing stories about the Sussexes.

For Prince Harry and some other Palace staff, including one who was confiding in me at the time, the timing of this shift was dubious. And those suspicions reached fever pitch when, a year later, a report was published by a grassroots news outlet run by a team of media lawyers and former Fleet Street journalists that focuses on the activities of Britain's newspapers. Strict U.K. laws prevent me from repeating the details contained within it.

At this point, the Sussexes and two of their aides were on high alert. It didn't go unnoticed that just months prior to the report, Wootton let slip to Talk Radio listeners that most of the negative stories about the Sussexes are "coming from within the royal family."

For this book, several separate sources—including two *Sun* staffers—confirmed that Jones helped provide details to *The Sun* about the Sussexes' move to Canada and their decision to step back from royal life. "Leaks got really obvious toward the end," a senior ranking courtier confided to me. When Harry and Meghan's head of communications Sara Latham sat down with Jones and Prince Charles's press secretary Julian Payne in January 2020 to prepare a joint statement from Buckingham Palace confirming the couple's official departure, details about it leaked to the newspaper while they were still working on the draft. "They hadn't even spoken to anyone at that point and Dan [Wootton] was already calling her to ask for comment about details in the statement . . . It felt like Christian had literally been texting him under the table."

The steady stream of information to *The Sun* appeared to have had an upshot. The paper that once dubbed William "Workshy Wills" and called him the "cringey" heir went on to write mostly enthusiastic, positive pieces about the Prince of Wales. Since 2020, *The Sun*'s coverage has called Prince William a "hero," labeled him a "man of the people," and—after years of negative commentary—declared that the future of the monarchy now rests in his "safe hands." A "proud" Kate even joined forces with the tabloid in the summer of 2023 to launch a drive for baby bank donations. Quite the reversal.

As for Prince Harry, he attempted to sound the alarm on Jones's movements with Wootton early on but, to his frustration, found himself up against resistance from all fronts in the institution. At the infamous Sandringham Summit in January 2020, the duke brought up the matter to his brother for the first time, a conversation to which William was surprisingly receptive. A source said he was willing to hear Harry out.

“Yeah, we’ve also got our suspicions,” William responded. They both agreed to do “something” about it—but three months went by, and nothing was done. Instead, William promoted Jones from press secretary to personal private secretary, a station much closer to the future king.

But the Duke of Sussex wasn’t relying on his brother’s cooperation anymore because, by this point, he had all the evidence he needed: relevant documents, intel from Scotland Yard, and information from other journalists (including sources at the paper itself) who had passed details along to his team. Armed with a dossier, Harry went to the very top of the institution with a formal complaint and a suggestion that they take appropriate action against *The Sun*. The response Harry received, however, was far from what he expected. There, on Buckingham Palace–headed paper, was a reply from the Lord Chamberlain at the time, Earl William Peel, who had a particularly close relationship with Charles. The letter, a source said, included “some of the most strong” language seen on official household stationery, aimed at Harry, not Jones. “It was a threat,” said a source close to the situation, who added that the Queen wasn’t consulted before the Palace issued it. “[The Lord Chamberlain] said either drop the charges or face severe consequences in twenty-four hours.” A message from a lawyer for Jones, arranged by the Palace, soon followed. The decree: stand down from legal action against Prince William’s aide.

An exasperated Harry pointed out to Palace aides that he was not suing the aide or anyone on this matter—he simply had a desire for the situation, a public official with deep connections to private information about a senior royal being shared with a national newspaper, to be properly dealt with. For the duke, enough was enough. *The Sun* had a long and controversial history of inappropriate relationships with public officials, and the Palace, at one point, was also keen to put an end to these practices. “The Palace basically accused Harry of wanting to sue his brother’s [private secretary] and causing great distress to Christian,” the source continued. When they asked him to provide more evidence, Harry refused. “At this point he already had plenty and, given how defensive they were being of Christian, it was clearly going to be used to help *him* and not Harry.”

Within weeks, it was clear to all involved that the Lord Chamberlain’s threat of “severe consequences” was no bluff. Harry received two further letters in July 2020, one from Charles’s private secretary Clive Alderton and the other from the Queen’s, Edward Young, both stating the same thing:

he was to be officially and immediately cut off from *all* financial support, including official security, which Charles had been privately covering with his Duchy of Cornwall income.

“I have *never* seen the Palace circle the wagons like they did with Christian,” a source later reflected. “In my experience, anyone who puts a risk to the survival of the monarchy is out.” It seems, however, that the actions of Christian Jones, who continued to work for Prince William until April 2021, were seen as a help, not a hindrance. As it turns out, William knew about Jones’s friendship with Dan Wootton since day one. Multiple sources confirm that during an early 2018 interview with Simon Case for his job at the Kensington Palace press office, Jones, in the interest of transparency, shared that he has a “working relationship” with Wootton.

Joining *The Sun* in the collusion club with the royal family is the *Daily Mail*. Often the go-to when it comes to setting the record straight or controlling certain narratives, the consistently favorable coverage of the royal family in the country’s most read daily newspaper has greatly benefited the monarchy in the last fifteen years.

Queen Camilla’s mutually advantageous friendship with *Mail* editor Georgie Greig now orbits the *Independent*, a once left-leaning paper where Greig landed in January 2023 as editor in chief. Since the Eton College alum’s arrival, the *Independent* has gone from a paper that went out of its way to avoid covering the royal family to routinely publishing insidery reports that have at times quoted a mysterious “senior royal family source.” And her ongoing relationship with the *Mail*’s publisher, Lord Rothermere, arguably the most powerful man in the British media, has helped matters, too. “Camilla has been canny,” said former BBC royal correspondent Peter Hunt. “She’s kept the media close and the *Daily Mail* even closer.”

So it’s no surprise that when the Duchess of Sussex announced in October 2019 that she was suing Associated Newspapers and the *Mail on Sunday* on the grounds of copyright infringement and invasion of privacy after they published a private letter she wrote to her estranged father, Thomas Markle, both Clarence House and Kensington Palace aides became “very worried” about how it might affect their ties with the *Mail*. “Even aides on [the Sussex] team were saying it would be best to stand down,” admitted a source, who added that once Harry and Meghan made the legal action public, Charles, Camilla, and William were “furious.” “So much work had gone into getting the *Mail* in their corner . . . The paper had pretty

much become an extension of the Palace communications team, and to lose that would have had detrimental impact on the monarchy as a whole. It sounds extreme, but the *Mail*'s positive coverage and its huge audience do a huge part in helping prop up the popularity of the royal family.”

A number of sources confirmed that in an effort to make it clear to Lord Rothermere and his executives that the Palace was against the duchess's legal move, Palace officials furtively told the *Mail*'s lawyers that they would “get the help they need [from the institution]” to defend themselves in the trial. Evidence of this support arrived in December 2020 when the publisher's lawyers filed a witness statement from the *Mail on Sunday*'s editor in chief Ted Verity. In the statement, he shared information received from a “senior member of the royal household” referred to only as “Source U.” Verity wrote, “They were fully aware of the matters in dispute in these proceedings and how important they were to me and the company I work for.” This Source U, an anonymous high-ranking courtier, informed Verity that William and Kate's head of communications at the time, Jason Knauf, worked on drafts of Meghan's letter to her father. In their eyes, this *legally* ensured that Meghan was not the sole copyright owner.

With this one source statement, the *Daily Mail*—with Palace assistance—tried to submarine one of Meghan's copyright claims and paved the way for Knauf to step forward with evidence. The kicker: Source U also claimed that *I* was given a copy of the letter for a “big reveal” in *Finding Freedom*. A ludicrous claim that I hardly feel the need to correct, but, as the pages of the book itself confirmed, this is untrue.

Still, none of this mattered by February 2021. After more than a year of hearings, the judge decreed that because the case was so clear-cut, there was no need for a full trial. The court awarded Meghan a victory over the newspaper group for both invasion of privacy and copyright infringement. For the publisher and a number of individuals at the Palace, it was a crushing blow, as both parties hoped the trial would result in a victory for the paper and a timely opportunity to traduce Meghan's character yet again.

The legal drama was far from over, though. Claiming they had new evidence and that it was essential for their witnesses to be heard (including Knauf and Thomas Markle, who bizarrely sided with the same paper that famously screwed him over days before Harry and Meghan's wedding), the *Mail*'s lawyers appealed the ruling. With Prince William's blessing to circumvent an employment NDA concerning emails and text messages,



Jason Knauf provided a statement of his own to prove he was a legitimate coauthor of the letter (having helped Meghan go over every draft), and that the two of them had meticulously worded it in the event that the press got hold of it. In other words, could it have really been that private then?

The emails that Knauf provided to the *Mail*'s lawyers and the court also showed that he and Meghan repeatedly discussed *Finding Freedom* after my coauthor and I asked him for input on some topics in our biography. During a fall 2018 lunch at Nobu (a spot we had taken Knauf on a number of occasions), Durand and I gave him an overview of what was needed for the book. He was keen to help us in his role as Harry, Meghan, William, and Kate's joint communications secretary, so I followed this up with the first wish list of topics and queries (mostly regarding Meghan's family and upbringing) with which we thought he could help—all standard practice for most journalists writing a book on the royal family.

Knauf's emails showed that Meghan had provided him with answers to some of the questions on this list, and the press raced to turn this into some sort of *gotcha* moment—supposed “proof” that she had invaded her own privacy by helping us with the book (which is exactly the point Associated was hoping to make). And also “proof” that I had lied about the couple not cooperating. It was incredibly frustrating, as I was clear in hundreds of media interviews—and even two witness statements for this very case—that the couple did *not* cooperate with us on the book.

It was all completely ridiculous. Not a week goes by when a royal press secretary doesn't have to ask a member of the family whether something is true or not, or discuss a response to a story. The same goes for when a journalist calls Buckingham Palace for a “right of reply” on a big scoop they are about to break. If it's of interest (or alarm), this usually spurs the Palace official to contact the relevant royal to discuss the matter (often unbeknownst to the reporter making the request). It's standard operating procedure, and it certainly doesn't mean the royal is in cahoots with that exact journalist. Of course, this is all information that Knauf omitted from his statement (and the British tabloid press would choose to ignore). Too much of the truth would have spoiled the narrative he was attempting to spin.

The Palace has always worked closely with the press, but this combined effort in the High Court was like nothing seen before. Meghan's U.K. lawyer, Jenny Afia, points out that Knauf didn't have to step forward if he

didn't want to—there was no official request for his evidence. “The witness statements had no legal significance on the case . . . [They were] filed because the impact on Meghan's reputation was potentially damaging,” she said. Indeed, for the *Mail*, the Palace, and Knauf this was just a mission in optics. And for William, it was his opportunity to watch the institution strike back after Harry and Meghan went so public with private details about the Firm.

Still, regardless of the sideshow circus, it was clear from the beginning that the *Mail* broke copyright laws and unlawfully trampled on Meghan's privacy by publishing her letter to her father. Their appeal was destined to flop from the get-go. Almost a year after the original decision, the judge awarded Meghan her second victory in December 2021 alongside a court-mandated front-page apology from the paper. The mea culpa in the *Mail on Sunday* stopped short of saying sorry, but it did acknowledge her legal victory.

Knauf continued to work in his role as chief executive of William and Kate's foundation for a few more months before stepping down to join the board of the foundation for William's Earthshot Prize. As a loyal aide, he stuck by William through it all, from helping brief the press long after his communications role ended, leading the bullying allegations against Meghan, and joining forces with the *Mail* in court. Unsurprisingly, a year later, King Charles included him on his list of those to receive the honorable title of lieutenant of the Royal Victorian Order (RVO) for his “personal service to the monarchy.” Notably, this high honor is chosen by the royal family and not the government, and it was his pal the Prince of Wales who performed the investiture on May 10, 2023, at Windsor Castle. Knauf—a man who went above and beyond to protect the royal family's relationship with a British tabloid—emerged from this fiasco as a titled hero, the personification of duty above all. His dangerous dalliance with the media in the courtroom is all part of a job description you won't find on his LinkedIn profile and a soon-to-be forgotten footnote in a celebrated career.

No one really paid attention to the *Mail's* public apology because their coverage at the time focused on the fact that Meghan received only £1 from the newspaper for her privacy invasion. The *Mail* conveniently failed to report that Meghan also received close to seven figures for her copyright win. So, in the end the paper came out unscathed. Emboldened by their tighter-than-ever relationship with the institution, King Charles took the

relationship to another level by hiring longtime *Daily Mail* editor Tobyn Andreae as his communications secretary in July 2022—the invisible contract becoming increasingly visible. Though he had no PR or communications experience, the former Eton College student’s twenty-one years at the country’s most aggressive tabloid was most appealing to the monarch and his Queen. With her established ties to the paper, it was Camilla who put him forward for the role after Geordie Greig sang his praises on a number of occasions. Andreae is not the first person from the news media industry to lead the monarch’s press team, but Charles’s other hires, such as the capable former *Newsnight* editor Simon Enright, came from the proven BBC, not the arena of downmarket tabloids. If this was intended as a modernizing effort on the King’s part, it comes with more than a few questions as to why.

Buckingham Palace’s head of press is now a man whose stint at the *Mail* included being an editor overseeing pieces that called out Kate’s “alarming” weight loss, articles pushing the cruel “Waity Katie” nickname that followed her for years, and features mocking the princess’s “trashy” eyebrows and “disastrous” gray hairs. And Andreae’s two years as a deputy editor at the *Mail on Sunday* included the ugly week in which the paper viciously exposed Thomas Markle’s staged paparazzi photos, the ones that initiated a chain of events that brought the Sussexes’ royal wedding to its knees, destroying Meghan’s relationship with her father in the process. But as the royals and those who collaborate with them have repeatedly demonstrated, it’s all about keeping one’s enemies—and friends in the right places—very close. It’s easier to forgive previous attacks when those responsible for such cruelty are now on your side and at your disposal when enemies and obstacles get in the way.

\* \* \*

Kensington Palace and Buckingham Palace have refused to comment on their media relationships or briefing history. Palace sources did, however, tell the *Daily Mail* in 2022 that it was “absolutely wrong” to suggest that people working at the Palace had secretly briefed damaging or confidential information about the Sussexes during their time as working royals. Sources making these claims to the same newspaper that published most of the offending articles is objectively absurd. Despite a mountain of evidence to

the contrary, many royal reporters still claim no such invisible contract exists. But as the respected BBC journalist Andrew Marr said, “Either well-known journalists are making a lot of stuff up, just sitting at their laptops at the kitchen table inventing the detail of feuds and private confrontations, or a particularly confidence-rotting form of anonymous briefing has been taking place.” Jennie Bond, the BBC’s royal correspondent from 1989 to 2003, added, “Charles has always kept the tabloids on side, rather to my own annoyance and bemusement when I was working at the BBC . . . I was excluded from parties and events. I remember one big party at Buckingham Palace, I wasn’t invited as a [senior] royal correspondent but Piers Morgan was, as the editor of the *Daily Mirror*, David Yelland was, as the editor of *The Sun*. And I used to say to [the Palace], ‘Why do you give stories to the tabloids first? Why don’t you come to me, and I’ll broadcast it and they can follow me?’ But that was never the way the Palace worked; they liked to keep particularly the tabloids on side.”

But as the golden years of Fleet Street fade further into the past and the number of those who actually buy physical newspapers continues on a downward trajectory, Palace officials are making strides toward fostering stronger relationships with broadcast media. Both the Prince and Princess of Wales continue to nurture a beneficial relationship with ITV (yes, the very same broadcaster who protected William from my briefing claims), with Kate’s annual Christmas concert likely to enter its third run and the prince collaborating with the network for a fly-on-the-wall documentary about his work with a homeless charity. “You cannot say a critical word about [William and Kate], no matter what the story is. They are protecting that relationship fiercely,” a respected journalist at ITV told me.

And King Charles has now shifted some of his media efforts to strengthening bonds with the BBC, an expedient reversal from his previous position. Shortly after taking the throne, the King held at least two clandestine meetings with BBC executives. These discussions were part of the monarch’s efforts to ensure that the network properly covers his work as King in spite of all the drama surrounding the institution. The message: His Majesty will not be overshadowed any longer. And it proved a successful run of schmoozing. In the buildup to the May 2023 coronation, the BBC ran Palace-requested items across their platforms about his charitable efforts. “It’s become apparent to a number of journalists and producers that the Palace now has the BBC firmly under its control,” a senior figure at the

network shared on the condition of anonymity. “To many, the BBC has become an extension of the press office of the palace.”

Joined at the hip, two troubled institutions now require each other for relevance in a culture that, to a large degree, is moving on without them. As a result, the relationship between the monarchy and the British media has changed. Where once the royal family needed the print press as a partner for advancing their agenda, it is now in such dire straits that the Palace has mutated into a feeder machine—there’s no clear mission, just a gasping effort to provide them enough grist to keep the relationship limping forward. With the option to tell their own stories on social platforms and through other progressive outlets, perhaps it’s time the Palace realizes it no longer needs to play the dirty game—that it also has the option of pulling the plug before a callous and reckless tabloid culture pulls the Firm down all the way to the bottom.

# The Decay of Years

The Fading Glory of the Crown

*Something as curious as the monarchy won't survive unless you take account of people's attitudes.  
After all, if people don't want it, they won't have it.*

—Charles, the Prince of Wales, 1994, ITV interview

*As yourselves your empires fall, and every kingdom hath a grave.*

—William Habington, *To Castara*

*May 3, 1951*

A thin fog hunkered over the streets of London on an otherwise agreeable spring morning. Thousands gathered to cheer King George VI, Queen Elizabeth (later known as the Queen Mother), and Princess Margaret as they made their way from the gates of Buckingham Palace to St. Paul's Cathedral to officially open the Festival of Britain. The decked-out and tasseled Household Cavalry Mounted Regiment escorted the open-top carriage, stopping the horse-drawn escort only once along the way at the ceremonial entrance to the City of London. Here, at the Temple Bar Memorial, the Lord Mayor presented the King with the pearled sword, a bit of royal kabuki established in the Elizabethan era that is still performed every time the royal family makes a pilgrimage to the cathedral. From here the monarch's escort continued the short distance to St. Paul's, Sir Christopher Wren's magnificently domed, Neoclassical-Baroque masterpiece. After a short dedication service, other members of the royal family, including a twenty-five-year-old Princess Elizabeth (who nine months later became Queen Elizabeth II), husband Prince Philip, and

George VI's mother, Queen Mary, joined Their Majesties and Margaret on the cathedral's front steps for the King's speech.

The 1951 Festival of Britain was a nationwide exhibition that emerged from the two great storm surges that altered the texture of British life: the fallout from World War II and the winding down of the British Empire. Although the fall of the empire was mostly gradual and undramatic, two particular events signaled its crumbling into the ocean of history—India's independence in 1947 and the London Declaration of 1949. The latter established the Commonwealth of Nations, which at the time was really just Britain's last-ditch effort to maintain ties and mutual interests with its former colonial strongholds and outposts. After the victory parades and end of World War II celebrations faded into memory, and Britons faced the grim economic realities of a once great nation in decline—work and food shortages being chief among them—the Festival was designed to showcase the United Kingdom's past, present, and future contributions to Western civilization and to boost the country's morale.

At the time, Britain looked and felt like a defeated nation. Lights in war-ravaged cities flickered off and on at night, food rationing lines formed in grimy streets, and heavy-headed souls trudged home after the factory whistles blew—now a haunting sound reminding the working men and women that many of their coworkers-turned-comrades never made it home from the front lines. These telltale signs of slow economic recovery and collective grief produced a dour national mood, one that tested the “Keep Calm and Carry On” resolve that carried the country through the war's crouching hours, wailing sirens, and bombs.

Dreamed up by Herbert Morrison, a senior cabinet member of the Labour party and a forward-thinking politician, the Festival of Britain highlighted the country's achievements in the arts, sciences, and industry as a means to celebrate the nation's victories beyond the arenas of war—a reminder of Britain's role in advancing civilization even while it was still recuperating from a full-on assault against it. The exhibitions were scattered across England and Scotland, but the Festival's epicenter was on the South Bank of the River Thames in the nation's capital. It featured pavilions, displays, retrospectives, and the Festival's focal point: the futurist-looking Skylon, a “floating” three-hundred-foot-high cigar-shaped steel tower meant to symbolize the United Kingdom's aspirational strides out of the rubble toward a better world. In a promotional reel, a jaunty yet

instructional male voice distinctive of 1950s commercials and TV shows told viewers that the Festival was “devised halfway through this century as a milestone between past and future to enrich and enliven the present,” and stressed that Britain was now a “diverse place of serious fun and lighthearted solemnity reclaimed from the bomb rack and the decay of years.”

The Festival also marked the centenary of Prince Albert and Queen Victoria’s Great Exhibition. Held in the massive cast-iron-and-glass wonder of Crystal Palace, the 1851 Victorian-era exhibition celebrated modern industrial technology and culture from around the world. Prince Albert, who was known as an advocate for reform and social change (including campaigning against the slave trade and child labor), said that the motivations for the exhibition were “for Great Britain [to make] clear to the world its role as an industrial leader,” and to “increase the means of industrial education and extend the influence of science and art upon productive industry.” Absent from this grandstanding was any mention of how it also coupled the image of Queen Victoria and her consort as patrons of the arts and sciences with showcases highlighting the power and wealth of the British Empire. It was a clever public relations coup outdone only by the fact that the Festival also solidified the monarchy’s relationship with the middle class, the main audience for the exhibition. The industrial and technological achievements on display were important to this segment of Britain’s population, and so the Great Exhibition was another moment to bolster and advance national pride and unity—two survival elements for a lineal monarchy at odds with middle class aspirations.

Twenty years later, with the impatient urging of Prime Minister William Ewart Gladstone, this same Victorian, PR-minded institution took it a step further—Palace officials reclaimed the old carriages and royal accoutrements that were collecting cobwebs in carriage houses and attics, and gave them a good polish to create the apparatus of pomp and pageantry that the royal family are known for today. The Victorian Firm was dealing with a public image crisis of their own—a small but intelligent republican movement was afoot and out to change some hearts and minds. After the Prince of Wales (later Edward II) “miraculously” recovered from typhoid in 1872, the monarchy leveraged the moment to make itself magical again. The Queen wanted a small, quiet thanksgiving service to mark her son’s recovery, but Gladstone convinced her to accept what the late political



essayist Tom Nairn called “the new limelight” by turning the service into a national public holiday. Seventy-two years later, the same would happen again when Prime Minister Rishi Sunak announced that King Charles III’s coronation would be a full-fat display of pomp and celebration, rather than the cost-of-living, crisis-minded proceedings that sources said the monarch had originally hoped for.

After Gladstone’s encouragement, they pulled out all the stops, creating a flashy display of regal power and tradition that also, by the way, featured a balcony moment similar to the ones we’re accustomed to now. Victoria and her son, the miraculous survivor, stepped out onto the Buckingham Palace balcony to wave to the public and bask in their cheering. In one auspicious and ostentatious display of ceremony, the royal family endeared themselves to the crowd, coiled their identity around the national one, and drowned out the emerging republican chorus.

Standing on the front steps of St. Paul’s decades later, King George VI would have been aware of all this as he waved to an adoring public before his Festival of Britain speech. By this point the royal apparatus the Victorians put in motion was a well-oiled machine, and the institution quickly engaged it for this hinge-moment in the nation’s history. Overcoming his stammer in the speech, the King wasted no time in likening the Festival of Britain to its Victorian predecessor: “One hundred years ago, Queen Victoria opened the Great Exhibition in Hyde Park . . . All of us can paint the contrast between the calm and security of the Victorian Age and the hard experience of our own. Yet this is no time for despondency. For I see this Festival as a symbol of Britain’s abiding courage and vitality.”

After declaring the Festival open, Their Majesties and Princess Margaret descended the cathedral stairs to applause and pealing bells before boarding their coach back to the Palace. Off in the distance a forty-one-gun salute fired from the Tower of London and Hyde Park capped off the theatrics with a dash of militaristic zeal. Just as Queen Victoria and Prince Albert had done in 1851, the postwar royal family of 1951 deftly entwined their brand with the occasion—using the moment to stage some tried-and-true royal pantomime.

The Festival of Britain was a success, and millions attended it during its five-month run. But shortly after it closed, Winston Churchill and a newly elected Conservative government completely dismantled it, erasing it from sight. They believed that the Festival was nothing more than a display of

utopian delusions and propaganda for the Labour party's vision of a Socialist Britain, and somehow the previous government had convinced the monarchy this was a good idea. Particularly that Skylon, which the era's grumbling, traditional conservatives no doubt universally condemned as a futuristic eyesore.

An almost forgotten tidepool of history, the Festival's legacy rests in how it successfully promoted a new and positive vision for a modern Britain while the country was still recovering from war. It put a benign face on modernity and change. And also, a royal one. Strangely enough, an antique horse-drawn landau en route to St. Paul's Cathedral is now an indelible image from a festival that celebrated the possibilities of the future. The royal family and the institution once again made looking back an essential component of the national mechanism for looking forward.

Just a few years later, the institution used this royal cunning to officially repackage the dead empire as a new, vital Commonwealth of Nations, and enlisted the newly crowned Queen Elizabeth II for the task. In her 1953 Christmas Day broadcast, she strategically connected her nascent reign with the Elizabethan Age and the accomplishments of her "Tudor forbear," to assert that "from the Empire of which they built the frame, there has arisen a worldwide fellowship of nations of a type never seen before." Using grandiose abstractions, she sold the idea of the Commonwealth as "an entirely new conception—built on the highest qualities of the spirit of man: friendship, loyalty, and the desire for freedom and peace."

The institutional spin continued as Her Majesty repeated that "the Commonwealth is moving steadily towards greater harmony between its many creeds, colours and races despite the imperfections by which, like every human institution, it is beset." She added her signature touches of commitment to duty, declaring: "To that new conception of an equal partnership of nations and races I shall give myself heart and soul every day of my life."

This is quite a bill of goods. The remnants of empire—damaged and forever-stained with colonial boot scuffs—reissued as equal partners in the pursuit of brotherly love and common good. The rapacious takeovers glossed over as institutional imperfections. And the state power and ancestral privilege of the Crown repurposed as a living bond between a sovereign and Commonwealth citizens who are no longer subjects. Rather than a token of colonial power, the Crown was repositioned as a symbol of

stability and continuance, even as it shape-shifted to assume its diminished position in the new Commonwealth of Nations. All this in one broadcast by a young monarch prepared to tell the world that while empires are swept away, the Crown remains.

Part of the Queen's new mission as head of state was to redecorate decolonization and postwar decline in shades of unified purpose and modernity—to normalize the essential theatrics required to conjure up Britain as a leader of this new “worldwide fellowship” while softening the blow of the nation's waning power. Times may be changing, but the British royal family can still convene and lead. This was the messaging, and it was crafty, but it was also disingenuous. The monarchy and the British government knew all along that many of these former colonies and territories would eventually “graduate” and mature into independence and a life beyond the mother country's shadow. This illusion of a leading nation was necessary to secure a place for the United Kingdom at the table of global power, even if it meant projecting itself as a soft unifier interested in the “spirit of man” while other superpowers like the United States and the former Soviet Union ferociously employed hard power to build military might and gain control of world economies.

In many ways, the British monarchy with Queen Elizabeth II at its helm continually accomplished this unifying the Commonwealth task for decades, incrementally changing the Crown's image, through soft power and image maintenance just enough to remain visible and relevant (the Queen's famous quote “I have to be seen to be believed” is applicable here). Elizabeth II and the institution charged up the Victorian royal machine when necessary—employing royal choreography and elevating, even manufacturing, tradition with all its national costume to validate the monarchy for the modern world. That whole looking-back-to-look-forward trick, what Tom Nairn called “cultivated anachronism.” Fanfare and royal enchantment go a long way in selling the idea that Britain still heavily influences and leads the Commonwealth. The presentation of a pearled sword *must* mean something. Why else would they still do it?

But what exactly is this global fellowship? Members have changed over the years, but the current Commonwealth of Nations, known as the British Commonwealth until 1949, is a voluntary association of fifty-six independent member countries, many of which are former British colonies or territories like Trinidad and Tobago, Ghana, and Sri Lanka. This is

different from the Commonwealth Realms, which refers to the fourteen sovereign states that have the British monarch as their official head of state, including Canada, New Zealand, Jamaica, and Australia. The Commonwealth of Nations includes the Commonwealth Realms, but a majority of the countries in the Commonwealth of Nations do not have the British monarch as their head of state. It's a lot to keep straight.

Hardly a multination partnership of shared interests, cultural understanding, and mutual respect, the Commonwealth of Nations is more a loose confederation of countries with current or former ties to Britain. Some are stronger than others and, for years, the strength of the ties between the mother country and the realms has given the entire Commonwealth an illusory glow of health and vague connection. But, toward the end of the Queen's reign and particularly after her death, even the appearance of strength started to vanish. In the case of Barbados, the country's graduation day came just over nine months before the Queen's death. After 396 years, the sun finally set on the royal family's reign over the Caribbean island in November 2021, with a handover ceremony attended by Charles, who watched in silence as the royal standard flag representing the Queen was lowered to cheers in Heroes Square in Bridgetown. Out of respect for Queen Elizabeth II, Jamaica put their republican ambitions on hold while she was alive, but, ahead of Charles's coronation, it was announced that a referendum would be held in 2024 and would possibly see the country become a republic, complete with an elected president, before the year is out.

More worryingly for the monarchy, the growing republican movement in Australia—a Commonwealth realm known for its long commitment to the Crown—found new energy after the Queen's passing. Just five hours after her death, the Australian Green Party leader Adam Bandt weighed in on Twitter: "Our thoughts and prayers are with the family and all who loved her. Now Australia must move forward. We need Treaty with First Nation peoples, and we need to become a republic." Many found the tweet insensitively timed and disrespectful. Even the Australian prime minister, Anthony Albanese, obliquely admonished Bandt for his timing. But Albanese, too, is a devoted republican, and in May 2022 he appointed an assistant minister to his administration whose primary role is to hasten the process for the country to hold a referendum to become a republic. And in the summer of 2023, it was announced that the country would no longer

host the Commonwealth Games, a major sporting event always supported by the royal family, because they do not represent “value for money” anymore.

Bandt might have been an outlier in his seeming disrespect for Queen Elizabeth II, but when it comes to King Charles, it seems he is just another voice in a growing choir. In a February 2023 decision that indicates the referendum may come sooner rather than later, Australia’s central reserve bank—with consultation from the nation’s current center-left Labour government—decided to remove the face of the British sovereign from their five-dollar bill. Aussie fivers were the only remaining banknote featuring an image of the Queen (which will still remain in circulation), but new ones issued will not display the new monarch. The new banknote will feature an indigenous design, something that honors “the culture and history of the first Australians.” Charles has been relegated to coins only. Treasurer Jim Chalmers said, “The \$5 note will say more about our history and our heritage and our country, and I see that as a good thing.” One can hardly argue with that. And it’s both a sign of the times and more evidence that King Charles just doesn’t command the same level of admiration as his mother. There’s a “why wait now” feeling to all these republican impulses—the Queen is gone, so what’s the holdup?

Republicans closer to the Crown’s home turf are also asking this same question. The Scottish independence movement may have hit a roadblock when Scottish National Party (SNP) leader Nicola Sturgeon resigned amid controversy in March 2023, but their historic push for independence is not going away. Fifteen years ago, the Scottish National Party was considered a mostly unimportant rabble of semi-radicals, but, as of early 2023, the party now holds forty-eight of the country’s fifty-nine parliamentary seats in Westminster. Around 45 percent of Scottish voters do not want England to govern their country, and a vast majority of younger Scots are in favor of breaking away from English rule. New SNP leader Humza Yousaf says it’s not a case of if, but when an independent Scotland should decide on their future with the royal family. “It’s not an immediate priority, I accept that,” he said. “But let’s absolutely within the first five years [of independence] consider whether or not we should move away from having a monarchy into an elected head of state.” It’s a future the late Queen once publicly opposed, taking a rare step into the political arena. Ahead of Scotland’s 2014 independence referendum (which saw 55 percent of the country vote

in favor of remaining part of the United Kingdom), she expressed hope that voters will “think very carefully about the future.” It was later revealed that a panicked Prime Minister David Cameron had asked the monarch to make the public intervention.

A driving force behind the current Scottish independence movement is a desire to return to the European Union. If the Scots do vote for independence, Scotland will immediately apply to rejoin the EU. This says quite a lot about the fallout from Brexit, which came into effect in January 2020. Triggered by anti-establishment populism and anti-immigration sentiment, and sold as a return to the traditional, bygone days of ye olde British glory, Brexit further isolated Britain, hastening its decline in the global arena and at home. The numbers bear this out. Just a quick example: if the United Kingdom’s gross domestic product (GDP) continues on its current path of an average decline of 0.5 percent annually as it has from 2010 to 2021, the British economy will fall behind many of its European neighbors, including Poland by 2030 and Romania and Hungary by 2040. There is a fear, particularly from those in the left-leaning parties, that a failing economy will lead to a mass exodus of young people, what Labour leader Sir Keir Starmer calls a “brain drain—not just to London and Edinburgh, but to Lyon, Munich, and Warsaw—that’s not the future our country deserves.” It must be said that the unanticipated disruption of the Covid pandemic and the global economic destabilization that accompanied it also greatly impacted Britain’s economy like it did elsewhere around the world. One wonders, however, whether a continued British partnership with other countries in the European Union might have minimized the spiritual and economic aftereffects of the twenty-first century’s first global plague.

This is what King Charles and the royal institution are facing: a shrinking Commonwealth, a retreating world presence, and a weakening economy at home. And because the royal family has so deftly—and expediently in recent years—merged itself with national identity and the “Land of Hope and Glory” instincts, when the nation’s status wanes, so, too, does theirs. Queen Elizabeth II, with her physical and emotional endurance and exalted commitment to the Crown, provided a decorative and protective veil from this troubling codependency between national stability and monarchical relevance, but in the early days of the Carolean era, the veil has fallen away.

Keeping the ship afloat during these anxious times is mission number one for King Charles. He long ago reconciled himself to the fact that maintaining a smaller monarchy and streamlining the institution behind it are essential to its survival. His steps to “slim down” the family business, a dream he harbored long before becoming King, are now supposedly in full motion. Under Charles’s plans, a leaner lineup of seven royals (himself, Camilla, William, Kate, Anne, Edward, and Sophie) will represent the Crown on a working level. When every other institution and major governmental body is under pressure to cut costs, it’s a smart move. Whether it’s fully realized is another thing altogether. So far there have been few signs from Buckingham Palace that the royal family will cost the British taxpayer less money anytime soon, and a look at the Court Circular (the official record of past royal engagements) shows that the lesser-known Duke and Duchess of Kent, Duke and Duchess of Gloucester, and Princess Alexandra have all been carrying out dozens of official engagements since Charles took charge.

Charles’s efforts also include cutting back on the number of family members benefiting from reduced-rate rents at royal residences. With the Sussexes having officially handed back the keys to Frogmore Cottage in June 2023 and Prince Andrew under pressure to downsize, the King is also working with aides to open the likes of Buckingham Palace, Windsor Castle, and Balmoral to the public for longer periods around the year to generate more income. If executed, it’s an operational change that could shave millions off the amount the family pulls from the public purse to fund the Firm. Instead of using Buckingham Palace—which is being renovated with Sovereign Grant funding of £396 million over ten years—as an official royal residence, Charles has chosen to stick with the nearby Clarence House as his London base. “There’s a strong chance we will see BP turn into an all-year-round tourist attraction,” said a senior aide.

During the first two years of his reign, we’re unlikely to see further drastic changes, but sources close to King Charles say there will be more in the future. At least on paper, the new King appears to have accepted that, as the monarchy’s importance at home and abroad continues to diminish, survival will largely be down to appearing as a more cost-effective, domestic-focused operation. Polls often reveal that a majority of the British public do not consider themselves royalists, nor do they enthusiastically support the monarchy, but most leave it at that—viewing the family as a

harmless institution that makes Britain unique and one that doesn't present any glaringly definitive reasons to get rid of it. Royal Family, Inc., relies on this apathy and sources say King Charles, CEO, knows some belt-tightening is the key to remaining mostly unchallenged. What he wasn't counting on, though, was the increasing number of republicans at home who want to abolish the monarchy altogether—sooner rather than later.

Up until now, the British republican movement has mostly remained on the fringe with those calling for the end of the monarchy viewed as radicals or busybody academics with too much time on their hands. But this is starting to change. Since 2018, the royal family's popularity has been on the slide. At the same time, the numbers of those beginning to see the rationale for doing away with the royal system are rising. This group consists of both hardcore anti-monarchists and those who just don't see the point anymore, particularly after the Queen's death. Since then, protestors (albeit far outnumbered by royal well-wishers) have started to become a regular sight at royal engagements. Signs and banners reading "NOT MY KING" are now a familiar sight on walkabouts. Recent polls show overall abolition support from an average of one in four Britons (up from just less than 20 percent a few years ago), while the number of people who say the monarchy is "very important" for the country fell to 29 percent, from 38 percent in 2022. Individually, King Charles III has an average approval rating of 54 percent, well below that of his late mother, 76 percent, and William, at 64 percent. In 2023, outright support for the monarchy fell to 55 percent (down from 75 percent in 2012, the Queen's Diamond Jubilee Year and the peak of Cambridge mania). Generationally, the differences are huge—79 percent of over-sixty-fives in Britain back the Crown, while just 36 percent of eighteen-to-twenty-four-year-olds want it to continue. That point will no doubt be of concern to the royal institution, who are already aware that when older swathes of royalists die out, they will be replaced with more critical voices.

Since Charles's ascension, the British republican advocacy group, Republic, has stepped up its efforts to disestablish the royal institution—and the movement is growing. Hardly a "firebrand," its CEO, Graham Smith, takes a constitutional, nuts-and-bolts perspective to where Britain would go without a royal head of state. The author of *Abolish the Monarchy: Why We Should and How We Will* describes it as all "relatively straightforward" because "no one is suggesting [that Britain moves] to a U.S.- or French-



style constitution. It's about moving to a parliamentary democracy." He describes a future where both houses of Parliament are filled with elected representatives, with a prime minister serving in the lower house. This system would also include a non-political head of state, who is elected by the people, but ultimately has very limited powers. Countries all across Europe already have this structure, including Germany, Ireland, Iceland, Finland, and many of the Baltic states. Anna Whitelock, a British historian and professor of the history of monarchy at City, University of London, predicts a similar fate. "By 2030 there will be definite louder clamors for the eradication of the monarchy," she has said. "The monarchy—its purpose, what it's about, will be questioned and challenged in a way that it hasn't been before."

Just five years ago, the thought of the Windsors becoming equal citizens without privileged status seemed unreal to most, but now that future doesn't seem as far-fetched. Harry and Meghan have already fled to real life, and, by the looks of it, they're not hurting for either money or status. More importantly, for Britain as a country, Smith thinks establishing a republic would be a moment of profound pride for the nation: "We would actually feel very proud of ourselves for doing it and for embracing democracy and ridding ourselves of these institutions. I hope we [will also] be a beacon to other countries."

As reasonable and seemingly straightforward as this is, the possible birth of a British republic is a long way off. A lot of this has to do with the perceived popularity of the royal family, even in their current fragmented state. Republicans argue that the members of the population who passively support the monarchy believe the family are popular, profitable, and harmless. Anti-monarchists claim this is a common fallacy that is easy to disprove. With regards to their popularity, the feeling is that most of the people who like the monarchy do so because they believe others do as well, often a direct result of deceptive polling and reporting. As an example, if there is an opinion poll that states 75 percent of the population want to "keep the monarchy," the result is often misreported in the media as 75 percent "love the monarchy," which obviously makes it sound more popular than it really is. Keeping something doesn't always mean you love it. That's why attics and garages are full of stuff we want to hold on to but don't value enough to use or display.

When it comes to the profitability belief, the anti-monarchy stance is that there's no real evidence of this. It's certainly true that they are tourist attractions, but there is no precise value attached to the monarchical revenue stream—no matter how many figures are flung around every year. Staunch royalists will say the royal family are the country's biggest attraction, but a closer look at statistics available from Britain's Association of Leading Visitor Attractions reveals that it's the country's heritage sites such as St. Paul's Cathedral and the Tower of London that consistently feature at the top of London's most-visited attractions. And while Windsor Great Park might be a popular destination, royal residences such as Kensington Palace, Buckingham Palace, and Windsor Castle have yet to feature in their annual top ten lists. To put it comparatively, Britain's average tourism revenue pre-Covid was £127 billion and royal tourism accounted for approximately £500 million of it—0.3 percent of that number.

There is a habituated opinion, however, that while the British monarchy is a peculiar, even frustrating institution, at the end of the day, it is a mostly innocuous one. In the 2014 BBC program *Martin Amis's England*, Amis, who was not known for fuzzy feelings toward the “philistine” royal family, echoed this point of view: “It's connected with our love of [1970s British TV drama set in a posh London townhouse] *Upstairs, Downstairs*—those country house dramas. It's nostalgia for that class society. It's all connected, it can't not be connected. But it's relatively harmless.” For years, this notion that the family may be innocuous aristocratic buffoons has provided the monarchy with an invulnerability that protected some of their darker secrets. But this just isn't the case anymore; the monarchy is more vulnerable now than it's ever been. The popular Queen Elizabeth II's reign is long gone, Prince Andrew dragged the Crown's reputation through puddles of disgrace, the King's business dealings threw a shadow over his early days on the throne, and Harry and Meghan bore a hole through the Palace wall.

More recently, deeper insights into the royal family's private wealth and finances have revealed a world of secrecy that obscures their fiscal matters from the public. Ahead of Charles's coronation, the *Guardian* launched an investigative report to cut through the “entrenched secrecy” that the paper argues was a “hallmark of [Elizabeth II's reign]” and one that deprives the British people “of the most basic information about the monarchy.” It

resulted in reporting that estimated King Charles's personal fortune at £1.8 billion (the Palace later called this figure "a highly creative mix of speculation, assumption and inaccuracy"). The King's assets include jewelry passed on from his mother (diamonds, pearls, emeralds, rubies—you name it, he's got it) worth an estimated £533 million; inherited properties, including Balmoral and Sandringham; a fleet of cherished Rolls-Royces and Bentleys; and, of course, Her Majesty's horses—several stables' full that are said to be worth upward of £27 million.

Digging even deeper, investigations also showed that the late Queen and King Charles both took cash payments worth around £1.2 billion from "two hereditary estates that pay no tax," in addition to the millions they receive in public funding for their official duties. And the Duchies of Cornwall and Lancaster are the primary cash cows. In 2022, they collected £21 million from each, while a fierce debate continues as to whether these duchies actually belong to the British state. On top of this, the monarch also receives £86.3 million a year from the Sovereign Grant (made up of taxpayer contributions and a percentage of Crown Estate profit) for official royal duties, official travel, staff salaries, and the upkeep of properties. Regardless of the state of the country's economy, this number does not go down, thanks to a so-called "golden ratchet" clause inserted by former *Conservative* prime minister David Cameron during his term. In fact, from 2025, the Sovereign Grant can expect a projected rise of £38.5 million (45 percent) thanks to an increase in Crown Estate profit after Charles secured a £1-billion-a-year wind-farm deal on part of its land. While the King made it clear he wants extra profit from the estate to "be directed for the wider good," a percentage of that will also go back into the pockets of the royal family instead of the public purse. "This is at a time when nurses are receiving [a] 5 percent [pay rise] and other key public workers are still fighting for a fair wage," said Nick Wall of internal pressure group Labour for a Republic. "This reward is morally unjustifiable, while also both anti-democratic and plain wrong. The people of this country should have their say on royal funding through debate between their elected representatives." It's worth noting that the royal family also cost the country approximately £345 million in security funding, which is not covered by the Sovereign Grant.

All of this heavily underlines the republican argument that, at the end of the day, monarchies look out for themselves and are propelled by their own

agendas, interests, and bank accounts. This enormous fortune speaks volumes about the monarchy's motivations for sticking around way beyond its sell-by date and why they use the idea of "serving the Crown" as a protective shield. If all of this is about duty to the state and commitment to a better Britain, then it doesn't look so much like an ungodly amount of inherited wealth as it does well-earned compensation for services rendered. As long as they are cutting ribbons, sharing cute portraits of their children, and doing enough work, they trust the public will agree to keep them on as a "harmless" anachronism and a uniquely British spectacle. Just like their forebears, they will continue to roll out the carriages, unsheathe ceremonial swords, and parade the crown in a worn-thin campaign to keep their palaces and stay in the game.

After King George III went mad and was forced to abdicate in 1820, his son, George IV, nicknamed "Prinny," assumed the throne. George IV's heavy drinking and self-indulgence sorely tested the patience of the public and eventually caught up with him. He reigned as King for a brief and troubled ten years before his death. When his brother, William IV, ascended, he faced a disgruntled public and an institution in disarray. Known as "Sailor Billy" because of his storied career in the Royal Navy, he was the oldest person at that point to assume the throne, and a bit of a hopeless case. Legend has it that after a reform mob threw garbage and food at his royal carriage, the sailor king said, "I feel the Crown tottering on my head." King Charles III usurped Sailor Billy as the oldest sovereign to take the throne, and one imagines that after the eggs thrown his way, not to mention the tepid response to his ascension, he, too, may one day feel the Crown teetering on his head.

## Endgame

*We ransomed our dignity to the clouds . . . We're actors . . .  
We pledged our identities, secure in the conventions of our trade that someone would be watching.  
And then, gradually, no one was.*

—Tom Stoppard, *Rosencrantz and Guildenstern Are Dead*

*If you want a happy ending, that depends, of course, on where you stop your story.*

—Orson Welles, *The Big Brass Ring*

As I quietly made my way toward the center of a virtually empty Westminster Abbey, it was hard to believe that the unassuming wooden throne in front of me was a central figure in one of the country's most ancient rituals. Patched up and timeworn, the faded wood and spotted gold Coronation Chair has been at the heart of Britain's coronations for more than seven centuries. It's the place where the Archbishop of Canterbury anoints the new monarch, where King Charles receives the royal regalia and, finally, feels the full symbolic weight of the Crown upon his brow.

With less than twenty-four hours left on the coronation countdown, the Abbey was a hive of hushed activity. Outdoor voices were left firmly at the door as workers quietly made necessary adjustments to the center stage, lint rollers at the ready to keep the somewhat garish-looking yellow carpet lint-free. Its color wasn't tradition, but a choice made early on in the planning process so the area would "pop" on television (and, in a lucky coincidence, show some solidarity toward Ukraine—a running theme in the 2023 activities of the royal family).

Even after twelve years of covering the royal story, it was difficult not to feel the gravity of what was about to take place. The 335-pound Stone of Destiny, which was brought down from Edinburgh Castle four days earlier and was now sitting beneath the Coronation Chair, had enough history behind it for an entire book of its own. The Anglican Church and the royal family have used this humble slab of sandstone as part of the inauguration ceremony for almost a thousand years. Covering these details for rolling ABC News coverage felt like reporting from a liminal space, somewhere between venerable old traditions and an episode of *Game of Thrones*. But one thing was for sure—the royal family had set the most dramatic stage possible.

Westminster Abbey has been the backdrop for coronations since 1066. The church has also hosted more than sixteen royal weddings and even more funerals, including the global events of Princess Diana's and Queen Elizabeth II's memorials. For me, Westminster is also where I clocked in for my first major event as a royal reporter—covering the elaborate nuptials of William and Kate on April 29, 2011. Back then it was an entirely new world to me, and I marveled at the thirty-three cameras that were discreetly set up to broadcast as many angles of the fairy-tale ceremony as possible. More than a decade later, production teams strategically placed exactly 150 cameras—now smaller and more technologically advanced—to capture Charles's big day in a level of detail unimaginable back in the early 2000s. The job at hand: broadcast every movement, every bead of sweat, and every glistening eye in full 4K resolution.

The contrast between then and now is a stark and clarifying one. When William and Kate tied the knot, we were all still caught up in the royal fantasy—the enchanting wedding provided the magic the family and institution desperately needed at the time. After a dry spell, the couple's union made the royal family exciting again and threw a spotlight on the possibilities of the next generation. The cameras were there to catch this aspect, too, but the fairy-tale filter was still on and the royal machinery provided the requisite timeless grandeur. But after several years of family disintegration, disturbing revelations, and disquieting investigations, the soft focus is gone and so is a lot of the myth, both entombed with Queen Elizabeth II. Just like those 4K cameras at Charles's coronation, we can now see the world at large more clearly, at times forced to take in

unvarnished realities at a disorienting pace. And, despite institutional resistance, the monarchy is now just another part of this unmasked world.

The May 6, 2023, crowning of King Charles III was the first chance for the majority of the nation, and those around the globe, to witness the spectacle of a British coronation. Though the crowds in the rainy streets of London hoping to catch a glimpse of the Golden State Carriage or that iconic balcony wave were fewer than we saw for the Queen's Platinum Jubilee just a year earlier, it still briefly brought the nation's capital to a standstill.

With millions tuned in around the world, it was the perfect opportunity for the Firm to recaptivate and restore some of that lost mystique. Commentary notes that Buckingham Palace sent to those of us preparing for hours of television coverage placed emphasis on the fact that the ceremony was one thousand years old. But a closer look at the past reveals a different history. In fact, the type of ceremony the institution prepared for Charles dates back only to 1902, when King Edward VII was crowned. Sure, there are still medieval elements, but the majority is a more recent creation as technology allowed the world to start witnessing such events. Even the regalia on display aren't originals—those were destroyed by Oliver Cromwell in 1649 during the country's brief flirtation with republicanism. As journalist and polemicist Fintan O'Toole pointed out, "The odd thing about these British royal ceremonies is that they have become more important as the power and majesty they are supposed to project has diminished."

For Charles, this wouldn't be the first time a little creative license was needed to stir the emotions and imaginations of those watching. His investiture as a twenty-year-old Prince of Wales in 1969 was in fact largely created by his filmmaker uncle, Lord Snowdon, who shaped the ceremony to look arcane and mysterious, despite the fact that they used modern props to drape the occasion. While it looked like Charles's ornate crown was topped by a gold orb, it was actually just an electroplated plastic Ping-Pong ball. Snowdon later called the event "bogus as hell."

They say a coronation is a mirror for a monarch's reign, and Charles certainly tried to put a twenty-first-century stamp on the service. He chopped the ceremony down to two hours from three, and his procession route was just a quarter of his mother's coronation's sojourn in 1953. And though guests included monarchs from Spain, Bhutan, the Netherlands, and

more, there was also representation from the general public on the 2,300-person guest list—many of those were honorable people who had bettered their communities through charitable work or volunteering. Less aristocracy, more meritocracy. There were a few celebrity sightings, too, courtesy of Lionel Richie and Katy Perry, both ambassadors for charities founded by Charles. It was still by and large an Anglican ceremony, but Charles also cosigned a new pledge authored by the Archbishop of Canterbury, promising that the Church of England “will seek to foster an environment where people of all faiths and beliefs may live freely.” This was an important distinction for a man who has an impressive collection of books on all faiths, from Judaism to Buddhism, and once called Islam “one of the greatest treasures of accumulated wisdom and spiritual knowledge available to humanity.”

Of course, tradition leaves little room for true modernization. As he did for Harry and Meghan’s 2018 wedding ceremony, Charles requested a Black gospel choir to perform at his coronation. The talented Ascension Choir was handpicked for the job, though it was impossible not to notice that the choir didn’t sing gospel music. Their presence, said journalist Nels Abbey, could have been something truly new and refreshing—a change to what is considered the norm in worship in the Church of England. “It would be diversity doing what diversity is meant to do,” he said. “What we had instead was a group of excellent Black singers swaying to a [Anglican] hymn.”

And there were also changes that were not so well received. Not long before the big day, Lambeth Palace—the official London residence of the Archbishop of Canterbury—announced that, for the first time in coronation history, the public was invited to make an “homage” to the King and “pay true allegiance to your majesty, and to your heirs and successors” during the coronation. But this news was met with widespread criticism in the public and the media—a request to pledge allegiance felt like a ridiculous call for servility, a command reverberating from feudal times or heard on state-mandated television in North Korea. Sources told me that Charles absolutely hated the unnecessary, tone-deaf addition. After the backlash (which saw 84 percent of people polled in Britain say they would refuse to do such a thing), Buckingham Palace officials instructed the archbishop’s office to tone it down. On the day itself, the archbishop instead “invited” those in the congregation who wished to “offer their support” to recite an



oath swearing allegiance to the monarch and the Crown. To most, however, it still seemed extremely old-fashioned—and undemocratic.

This blip on the radar proved a harbinger for some rough waters ahead. The coronation was a moment Charles had spent his adult life thinking about and planning for, particularly during his mother's later years. But, despite ample preparation time, his arrival did not go particularly smoothly. Pulling up to Westminster Abbey for their grand entrance, the King and Queen were forced to wait in their carriage for six minutes before other family members arrived. "We can never be on time," Charles angrily muttered to Camilla. "There is *always* something . . . This is boring." A Buckingham Palace source initially blamed the delay on the Wales family for departing Kensington Palace late, but a spokesperson for the Prince of Wales was quick to chime in with the detail that Charles's carriage had actually traveled from Buckingham Palace to Westminster too quickly, resulting in the premature arrival. The two households' narratives at odds, once again.

As he slowly walked through the church's Great West Door and under its ten statues of twentieth-century martyrs, Charles looked like a man with the weight of the world on his shoulders—and it wasn't because of the nearly five-pound St. Edward's Crown on his head. His grandfather King George VI's heavy velvet Robe of State from 1937 appeared to pull his shoulders down even farther into a stoop that aged him beyond his seventy-four years. Some sources said it was nerves, others called it dread, but, as he and Queen Camilla sat down on matching throne chairs, he bit the insides of his pale, powdered cheeks, looking more like he was enduring the ceremony rather than basking in it. Though much could go wrong elsewhere, he didn't need to worry about his speaking parts. The few sentences—such as "All this I promise to do" and "I am willing"—that Charles had to recite over the next 120 minutes were (much to the amusement of viewers) printed out in large font on cue cards that were held up directly in his line of vision for easy reading.

Camilla, on the other hand, looked confident, though at times appeared as if she couldn't quite believe she had finally completed her thirty-seven-year journey from unpopular mistress to a crowned Queen. Her smirk as Queen Mary's upcycled crown (now bejeweled with 178 carats of Cullinan diamonds) was placed on her head became one of the most meme'd images of the day on social media. Unlike Charles, who was anointed with holy oil

behind a screen as a private moment between himself and God, Camilla was anointed in full public view—her new, elevated status was reinforced in front of the world.

Of course, eyes were also on the other family members. In stark contrast to a robed Prince William, who, as the next in line, kneeled before his father and pledged his loyalty “as your liege man of life and limb” (from a cue card, naturally) with a hand on Charles’s right shoulder and a kiss on his left cheek, Charles’s other son sat among guests four rows back. With Meghan at home in California, Prince Harry’s solo attendance was a striking reminder of the missed opportunity the monarch had to bring his entire family together before the public witnessed this royal milestone. It wasn’t for lack of effort on Harry’s side, who made it clear to his father after the January release of his memoir that he hoped to have a proper conversation about events of the past, a chance for both sides to take accountability where necessary. Instead, Charles was stubbornly hard to pin down. The Sussexes spent the first few months of the year unclear about whether they were even invited to the coronation. His responses to Harry’s inquiries about his attendance were vague at best. “I . . . haven’t decided,” he told his son during an early February phone call that Harry initiated, and he didn’t officially make up his mind until late March. As for Harry, while he had an extensive list of reasons for skipping the proceedings altogether, shortly before making the trip, he told a source that supporting his father as the fifth in line to the throne “still outweighed the other things.”

Unsurprisingly, Harry, who left for California immediately after the service, received far more cold shoulders than Prince Andrew, who self-assuredly walked to his seat in the Abbey. Though Palace aides explicitly told the Duke of Sussex that he wasn’t allowed to wear a military uniform (a request that neither he nor his team had actually made), Charles gave a firm nod to Andrew to wear his lavish Order of the Garter ceremonial robes. There were some concerns among courtiers about how this would look, with “some suggestions that maybe [Andrew] should be encouraged to wear civilian attire,” said a source. All fell on deaf ears. Just like the Queen he replaced, Charles’s soft spot for his brother remains exposed.

Back at center stage, Archbishop Welby put on the show of his life, dramatically holding the St. Edward’s Crown high before lowering it onto Charles’s head. “God save the King,” he solemnly declared, before stepping back to carefully check that it fit the new monarch’s head. The Abbey’s

pealing bells and booms of gun salutes echoed around London. “God save the King,” the 2,300-strong congregation called back.

Charles, standing taller than when he entered, regained his confidence—even if just for a moment—as he walked the aisle with Camilla, their purple velvet Robes of Estate trailing behind them. As he stepped past his siblings, a smile briefly cracked from the corner of his mouth before he stopped to acknowledge the assembled faith leaders he had personally invited. It was a warm moment and an affecting modern touch—Charles’s pan-religious leanings on full display as he shook their hands. Smiles, however, were left indoors, and as he stepped outside a stiff resignation returned. The hard part was over, but a look of fear fell over him—a concerned grimace clouded any faint suggestion of joy. The coronation ceremony was complete, but for King Charles III the tough part of the job is only beginning. For William, too.

The father and son are facing a long line of hurdles. Britain is in a tailspin, and the turmoil’s end is nowhere in sight. In the past, the family and the institution have seized crises as opportunities to showcase their importance, to highlight monarchical “stability” and “continuity.” It’s different now. There isn’t a war (so far anyway) that the establishment can use to galvanize support—only a nation in severe economic and reputational decline, and one fighting for a new identity. The Commonwealth Realms are not what they once were, with some countries already making quick and resolute moves toward independence. Over the next two years, Charles, Camilla, William, and Kate plan to increase formal visits to Commonwealth countries to protect and strengthen ties. It’s a last-ditch attempt at bolstering relationships with what’s left of Queen Elizabeth II’s “brotherhood of nations” (that Charles failed to visit during his first year as King). But, as many of them continue to look at a future without the British monarchy, it’s probably too little, too late.

Closer to home, the King and the Prince of Wales must contend with rabid criticism of the institution and the royal system; a younger generation who feel apathetic toward the royals and who are pushing for a more open and tolerant culture; and a growing republican movement that, while still on the fringe, will continue to find footing in the wreckage left behind by the family’s rippling scandals and the institution’s missteps. This all pales in comparison to the mammoth task of keeping the family and system relevant enough to stay afloat. Aspirations will fall as survival mode kicks in, and

King Charles could do worse than simply embracing his position as a warden of the monarchy until Prince William takes his shot at reanimating the pageant, even if it's just for another generation.

After the dust settled from the coronation celebrations and Westminster Abbey returned to its quiet dignity, Prince William forged ahead with his new agenda—one step closer to what historians will call the “Gulielean Era.” The heir is already openly discussing the changes he will make to define his own reign. His decision to forgo a Welsh investiture when he became the Prince of Wales is just a preview. “Tradition will not be the deciding factor in anything he does,” said a source. Instead, his mission is to define what the monarchy means and looks like in the modern world. A senior staffer from his household told *The Times of London*, just days after Charles's big day: “[William's] Coronation will look and feel quite different.”

As the official royal family Instagram account trotted out highlights from the coronation celebrations, William and Kate's social media had a slightly different take on the proceedings. In a glossy, five-minute video directed by an advertising filmmaker (whose clients include Uber Eats and Red Bull), the focus firmly rested on the Wales family. Although it was Charles's coronation weekend, the King and Queen were visible in the film for only fourteen seconds. It was a decision noticed by some senior Buckingham Palace aides and the monarch himself. A source close to William simply called the decision smart public relations. “The prince is aware of the huge amount of popularity and good favor that he and the princess receive . . . For them to take advantage of that only benefits the entire institution.” Whatever the reason, it's yet another sign of the growing lack of cohesion between the King and the heir, the father and the son. Long gone is that “lockstep” narrative the Palace once pushed—Kensington Palace now regularly shares that William will do things his own way when his time comes. “There has been a sense,” described a former senior courtier, “that William is slowly trying to separate himself from his father. His popularity is high, and he doesn't want his father's lack of it to affect that.”

A month after the coronation, the soldiers were out marching once again—this time for Trooping the Colour, King Charles's official birthday parade. What was once a must-see calendar entry for royalists felt quieter this time around. Perhaps it was widespread fatigue from royal events over

the past year, but, even at the start of the summer tourist season, the crowds gathered outside Buckingham Palace were thin. While one would usually fear getting caught in the middle of the throng of people who stand outside Buckingham Palace to watch for the big balcony moment and the roaring RAF flyover, this time you could have easily walked through Canada Gate to Bird Cage Walk on the other side of the Mall without so much as a knock to your shoulder.

The balcony moment itself, once a who's who of the royal family and the iconic setting for those vibrant group portraits, appeared quieter and less exciting without its star player and cast of colorful supporting characters. The lineup of the Wales family, the Edinburghs, Princess Anne and husband Sir Tim Lawrence, and the new King and Queen may have been the slimmed-down vision Charles had long desired, but the result felt a little lackluster.

To change, adapt, and modernize has been a repeated challenge for the royal institution throughout history. While Charles can't alter the fact that the sun is setting on the British monarchy as we know it, he can set the tone for how they will approach—and even embrace—the coming nightfall. There is honor and duty in this, too. The monarch would be wise to remember something he said almost twenty years ago. When asked about his role in the Firm, he answered, “I find myself born into this particular position. I'm determined to make the most of it. And to do whatever I can to help. And I hope I leave things behind a little bit better than I found them.”

Balanced stewardship from King Charles may keep it all together for the remainder of his reign, but to secure a meaningful future for the Firm, King William and the next generation will need to usher in *real* change. Without it, they risk losing it all. In Samuel Beckett's masterpiece play *Endgame*, the servant, Clov, says to his elderly and frail master, Hamm, “I use the words you taught me. If they don't mean anything anymore, teach me others. Or let me be silent.” The question of how to endure in a hostile world is also their existential predicament. At first, Hamm stubbornly believes “there is no reason for [their situation] to change,” but it is Clov who cautions him, succinctly and unemotionally stating, “It may end.” A poignant reminder that so much is beyond our control, even our final move on the chessboard or the last words of our soliloquies. The monarchy is now running out of meaningful words, especially if it ignores a public trying to

teach it new ones. Should it continue to do so, then perhaps it's time for silence and to let their country speak for them instead—even if it means standing back and watching the curtain slowly close. In the story of Beckett's stubborn old diehard Hamm, he eventually admits he's out of moves: "Old endgame lost of old, play and lose and have done with losing."

# Acknowledgments

Albert Lee, whom I'm so fortunate to call my literary agent, told me before I signed the deal for *Finding Freedom* that it "takes a village" to get a title to market—and it has been an absolute dream to work with this one on *Endgame*.

Thank you once again to the amazing people and friends at HarperCollins and Dey Street, especially Liate Stehlik. Carrie Thornton, your editorial expertise, critical but loving eye, belief in my work, and willingness to take risks with me has made creating this book another unforgettable experience, and I thank you wholeheartedly! I also owe a debt of gratitude to Allison Carney and Heidi Richter for another stellar marketing and publicity campaign; Renata De Oliveira, Drew Henry, Rachel Meyers (We made it! Thank you for all your tireless efforts), Ploy Siripant (another iconic cover!), and Ben Steinberg.

To the HarperCollins UK and HQ Stories teams: Lisa Milton, I'm so glad we got to work together again. Huge thanks to Halema Begum, Claire Brett, George Green, Arthur Heard, Kate Oakley, Marleigh Price, Joanna Rose, and Lauren Trabucchi.

Albert, my old friend, thank you for continuing to steer this ship with the wisdom and skill that makes you the best in the game. It's an honor to be part of the UTA family. I'm also very grateful to Laurie-Maude Chenard, Harry Sherer, and Sam Solomons. Melissa Chinchillo, Meredith Miller, Zoe Nelson, and Ethan Schlatter, thank you for all your efforts in bringing this book to new foreign markets (even with the insane translation times!).

Brett Valley, what can I say? You guided me when I couldn't find my words, helped me see straight when the number of topics I wanted to explore made my head spin, and taught me how to become a better writer. I've learned so much from you, and I look forward to the next! Thank you.

Reena Ratan, once again you helped me bring another beautiful book to life with iconic photographs. The *Back Hill Reporter* could never!

To all the sources, contacts, experts, insiders, and peers who contributed to my reporting efforts—be it on or off the record—thank you for trusting me with your words and your stories. Some of us may not always see eye to eye, but I have the greatest amount of respect for every one of you.

Thank you to my colleagues across the lands who have been so supportive and patient while I worked on *Endgame*. To the incredible teams at ABC News, *Good Morning America*, and ABC News Live—I'm so lucky I get to experience so many of these milestone moments with you all. Simone Swink and Zoe Magee, here's to another unbeatable year of royal coverage! Big love to the über-talented and unstoppable gang at *Harper's Bazaar*, including Bianca Betancourt, Quinci LeGardye, Chelsy Sanchez, and Rosa Sanchez.

Writing a book like this at lightning speed is not easy. It's an isolating and testing experience, so I want to give special thanks to the kind souls who have helped keep me strong on all fronts while I worked. Gary Murphy, you've been an absolute legend; you kept me upbeat on crazy days and have taught me so much. Hilary, you equipped me with tools I will carry for the rest of my life. And my amazing friends who kept me topped up with memes, laughs, and distractions—love you guys!

As ever, the best comes last. To my beautiful family for supporting me always, I love you so much. Hayley and Ramin, I'm so proud of you both for your achievements together. This book is great and all, but becoming an uncle to your beautiful baby girl was easily the highlight of my 2023.



## Notes

The events described in the pages of *Endgame* draw on more than eleven years of reporting, conversations, interviews, and experiences from my time covering the royal beat, as well as firsthand accounts from hundreds of engagements, major events, overseas tours, and interactions with members of the royal family. Some names have been removed for legal reasons.

For this book alone I interviewed more than sixty sources—a leaner pool than *Finding Freedom*, which started out even smaller in the initial months of writing to ensure the project was not leaked before it was announced in June 2023. As is the often frustrating nature of royal news, a lot of interviews were given on the promise of anonymity (a move done for a number of reasons, including to acknowledge sensitivity of roles, to protect careers or relationships, and to ensure safety). The upside to this is that it has allowed sources the freedom to speak candidly and critically without fear.

A number of people also spoke “on background,” which means you won’t see their quotes in the book, but the information they provided has informed areas of reporting and certain scenes. Some also spoke strictly off the record.

A few additional notes before we get started with the references. Unless otherwise stated in the following pages or made clear in the book, quotes featured in *Endgame* with no attribution are from my own interviews or conversations. All information from legal actions and court cases cited in the book has been referenced from original documents and not news coverage. Where the book already cites the exact reference material or a source of information (e.g., TV show name, network, *and* date), I have not repeated it in the reference notes. There are also a few fun facts peppered

throughout that didn't quite fit in the manuscript but may help give a little more background detail. Thank you for reading!

## *Prologue*

Prince Harry spoke of his family's "unconscious bias" during an interview with journalist Tom Bradby on *ITV's Harry: The Interview*, January 8, 2023.

### *1*

Boris Johnson's "bright and focused" quote is from a BBC News interview, September 12, 2022. Queen Elizabeth II's "episodic mobility issues" were first cited by Buckingham Palace in a May 10, 2022, statement confirming she would miss the State Opening of Parliament. "It's my job" was provided by an "informed source" in a report by Matt Wilkinson, "Unseen picture of the Queen during last days at Balmoral where she insisted on doing her 'job' till the end," *The Sun*, September 16, 2022. "We have heard nothing but bagpipes . . ." was in a letter written by Queen Victoria featured in Delia Miller, *Queen Victoria's Life in the Scottish Highlands*, 1985. Scott Methven's quotes were sourced from the self-penned "Recollections of a Queen's piper," *The Spectator*, September 17, 2022; a BBC News interview on September 10, 2021; and a CBC News interview on September 14, 2022. The "drunken octopus" quote is from Prince Harry, *Spare*, 2023. Reverend Dr. Iain Greenshields and Ailsa Anderson were interviewed during ABC News' *Celebrating Queen Elizabeth* (which I was also part of) on September 19, 2022. "It has been an honor and a privilege to accompany her on her final journeys . . ." is from a statement written by Anne, the Princess Royal, on September 13, 2022.

I also found the following titles useful while researching this specific chapter: Robert Hardman, *Queen of Our Times*, 2022; Brian Hoey, *All the Queen's Men: Inside the Royal Household*, 1992; Brian Hoey, *At Home with the Queen: Life Through the Keyhole of the Royal Household*, 2003; Tom Quinn, *Backstairs Billy: The Life of William Tallon, the Queen Mother's Most Devoted Servant*, 2016.

## 2

The origin of the term “the Firm” is believed to be from King George VI, the late Queen’s father, who used it to describe the royal family (predominantly senior royals) and the business of monarchy (including the staff working within it): “We’re not a family. We’re a firm,” he reportedly declared. The first printed mention of Charles one day wanting a “slimmed-down monarchy” was in an interview given by Charles’s former deputy private secretary Mark Bolland with Ian Katz, “Prince is very, very weak, says his former top aide,” *Guardian*, October 25, 2003. Camilla’s not hiring her own ladies-in-waiting being called a “modern” decision is from a Buckingham Palace media briefing given on November 29, 2022. Joe Mazzulla’s comment on William and Kate’s visit was given to journalists at a November 30, 2022, press conference at TD Garden Arena in Boston. BBC viewership of the Earthshot Prize ceremony from article by Abbie Bray, “BBC viewers ‘switch off’ The Earthshot Prize minutes into show,” *Express*, December 6, 2022. The royal family approval rating falling to 47 percent after the release of *Spare* is from an Ipsos poll of 1,084 adults aged 18–75 in Great Britain between March 10 and March 13, 2023. Assorted quotes from Prince William’s birthday profile by Rebecca English, “‘There are things you don’t do and Harry has 100% crossed the line’: Prince William ‘alternates between grief and anger’ over his brother but—as he turns 40—their relationship remains at ‘rock bottom,’” *Daily Mail*, June 17, 2022. Princess Diana’s first documented use of the nickname “men in gray” was in one of her tape recordings for biographer Andrew Morton, which became part of the manuscript for *Diana: Her True Story*, 1992. The term “Fab Four” first went viral on Twitter after the then Duke and Duchess of Cambridge and the future Duke and Duchess of Sussex walked to church at Sandringham together on Christmas Day, 2017—the *Daily Mail* then ran the headline “Side by side for the first time, it’s the new Fab Four!” the following day. “Oprah *who?*” and other quotes from Prince Edward and Sophie, Countess of Wessex, from an interview by Camilla Tominey, “‘We are still a family no matter what’: The Earl and Countess of Wessex on grieving for ‘Grandpa,’” *The Telegraph*, June 4, 2021. “She was never born to be Queen . . .” quote from Robert Hardman on a Facebook livestream interview for Viking Cruises on June 2, 2022. “Grief is the price of love” is

from a statement written by Queen Elizabeth II after the September 11, 2001, terror attacks. “We will meet again” was from the Queen’s Covid broadcast to the United Kingdom and Commonwealth on April 5, 2020. “If you’re sorry, tell *me* you’re sorry,” said by Ngozi Fulani on ITV’s *Good Morning Britain*, March 8, 2023.

### 3

“A bit of grouchiness” from a September 14, 2022, tweet by *The Times*’ history correspondent Jack Blackburn. The term “Pengate” was used by the *Telegraph*, *Daily Express*, *The Sun*, and other outlets between September and October 2022. Prime Minister Rishi Sunak leaving Liz Truss’s “request in place” was from an official comment made by a 10 Downing Street spokesperson on October 28, 2022. King Charles being “keenly aware” and wanting “good value” come from an article by Hayley Dixon and Gurpreet Narwan, “Coronation for the cost of living crisis as King expresses wish for ‘good value,’” *The Telegraph*, September 13, 2022. “The King and Queen Consort and their advisers are keenly following the debate . . .” from an article by Rebecca English, “King Charles’s first 100 days—and what 2023 will bring,” *Daily Mail*, December 30, 2022. “Obviously, there will be a great deal of attention on the United Kingdom at that time . . .” is from a 10 Downing Street spokesman on December 19, 2022. “Declaration of war” is from an article by Rebecca English, “Releasing trailer for Harry and Meghan’s Netflix show during William and Kate’s US tour is little less than ‘a declaration of war’ say insiders,” *Daily Mail*, December 2, 2022. “Deliberately torpedoed” is from an article by Valentine Low, Tom Ball, and Jack Blackburn, “Sussexes accused of sabotaging Prince and Princess of Wales’ US visit,” *The Times*, December 2, 2022. “Harry, Do You Really Hate Your Family So Much?” front-page story by Richard Palmer, *Daily Express*, December 2, 2022. Additional details on Ryan Reynolds and Rob McElhenney’s Wrexham Football Club takeover via profile piece by Andrew Barker, “A Win for Wrexham: How Ryan Reynolds and Rob McElhenney Helped Bring a City Back to Life,” *Variety*, June 19, 2023. “Institutional gaslighting” quoted from Prince Harry in *Harry & Meghan* (episode 4), Netflix, 2022. “I reminded him to keep his rifle pointed at the target” quote is from an article by Roya Nikkhah, “What the Palace made of

Harry and Meghan’s ‘truth,’” *The Sunday Times*, December 11, 2022. The burgundy coats “dig” was from a front-page story by Amanda Platell, “Was the great royal burgundy parade a cheeky swipe at Meghan?,” *Daily Mail*, December 21, 2022. “Instead of building bridges, the head of state is torching them . . .” is a quote from a Twitter/X post by Peter Hunt on March 1, 2023. Norman Baker spoke of Andrew “dressing up as a royal” in a story by Matt Wilkinson, “BACK FOR BASH: Disgraced Prince Andrew ‘to dress-up as royal for a day’ as he’s invited to party alongside King Charles,” *The Sun*, March 20, 2023. Jens Zimmermann’s quotes were filed to newswires by the Associated Press on March 31, 2023. The headline “For Hamburg, Devastated by Allied Bombing, King Charles’s Visit Is So Much More Than a Photo-op” is from an opinion piece by Helene von Bismarck, *Guardian*, March 30, 2023. “Your father always does what he wants to do” is quoted from Prince Harry, *Spare*, 2023.

Though this chapter does not quote or use its material, I found Robert Jobson, *Our King: Charles III: The Man and the Monarch Revealed*, 2023, useful in my research.

## 4

“The only two people who talked more about strategy and planning than [the aide] were Hitler and Stalin,” from Alastair Campbell, *Winners: And How They Succeed*, 2015. Ailsa Anderson quotes from *Celebrating Queen Elizabeth*, ABC News, September 19, 2022. The term “Englishness” was first used by Tom Nairn in a series of essays on the British state published in the *New Left Review* and later collected in the book *The Break-Up of Britain*, 1977. “British-Englishness” was inspired by Nairn’s term as well, and there have also been uses of the phrase in at least three PhD theses by various authors, including Siyu Cao, “Performing Post-Britishness: A Quest for Independence in the Contemporary Literature of England,” University of Warwick, Department of English and Comparative Literary Studies, April 2020. “Glamour of backwardness,” “contrived timelessness,” “great nation-family,” and “a willful failure to quit a darkening stage” are from Tom Nairn, *The Enchanted Glass: Britain and Its Monarchy*, 2011. The Treaty of Waitangi (Te Tiriti o Waitangi) was an agreement between the British Crown and more than five hundred Māori chiefs in 1840; however,

although it was intended to create unity, different understandings of the treaty—and breaches of it—have caused conflict. “New Zealand has long been renowned for its dairy produce . . .” quote from the Queen in report by Associated Press, “All in All, Queen May Want to Forget About New Zealand,” February 27, 1986. Positive opinion of the royal family dropping within four months of the Queen’s death is from a YouGov survey of 1,710 adults in Britain between September 13 and September 14, 2022. Story about Kylie Minogue turning down coronation performance first reported by Katie Hind, “EXCLUSIVE: Kylie Minogue REFUSES offer to star at King Charles’ Coronation concert because of growing Republican sentiment in Australia,” *Daily Mail*, March 4, 2023, and since confirmed by my own additional reporting. Zillennials are a microgeneration of people born on the cusp of the Millennial and Gen Z demographic cohorts, usually between 1993 and 1998. Statistics of YouTube channel “The Prince and Princess of Wales” accurate as of July 31, 2023.

The following books provided helpful background and research: Kevin Sharpe, *Selling the Tudor Monarchy: Authority and Image in Sixteenth-Century England*, 2017; Kevin Sharpe, *Image Wars: Promoting Kings and Commonwealths in England, 1603–1660*, 2018.

## 5

An investiture is the day when someone who has been awarded an honor receives their insignia in person from a member of the royal family (and there are around thirty held every year). The term “annus horribilis,” meaning “horrible year” in Latin, was brought to prominence by the Queen in a speech at Guildhall, London, on November 24, 1992, for her Ruby Jubilee on the throne and the end of a year marked by scandal and disaster for the royal family. “Queen’s speech without the Queen” was used in coverage by news outlets including the *London Evening Standard*, BBC News, *Daily Mail*, and *The Sydney Morning Herald* on May 10 and May 11, 2022. The “bags of cash” scandal was first reported by Gabriel Pogrund, Charles Keidan, and Katherine Faulkner, “Prince Charles accepted €1m cash in suitcase from sheikh,” *The Sunday Times*, June 25, 2022. Charles “will not accept bags of cash again” statement given by a Clarence House “source” to the Press Association, Reuters, and journalists—including

myself—on June 29, 2022. Details on Charles accepting donation from the Bin Laden family by Gabriel Pogrund, “Prince Charles accepted £1m from family of Osama bin Laden,” *The Sunday Times*, July 30, 2022. The “sins of the father” quote is from a source at the Prince of Wales’s Charitable Fund to BBC News on July 31, 2022. The Mahfouz cash-for-honors scandal was first reported by Gabriel Pogrund and Dipesh Gadher, “Prince Charles aides fixed CBE for Saudi tycoon who gave £1.5m,” *The Sunday Times*, September 5, 2021. Pogrund’s follow-up articles are not quoted but provided additional information. Subsequent cash-of-honors details, including Michael Fawcett’s resignation, were reported by Kate Mansey and Jonathan Bucks, “Charles Aide Told Saudi Donor: We’ll Help You Get Knighthood,” *Mail on Sunday*, September 5, 2021. “Fawcett has been there for so many years . . .” quote from Dickie Arbiter in book by Stephen Bates, *Royalty Inc: Britain’s Best-Known Brand*, 2015. The existence of the “Fawcett the Fence” nickname first came to light in an article by Jamie Wilson, “Aide who ‘sold gifts’ adds to royal woes,” *Guardian*, November 11, 2002. “We have all agreed to end this arrangement” statement from Clarence House given to Press Association and journalists, including myself, on November 11, 2021. “Ersatz Georgian and mock Scottish vernacular creations . . .” quote by Alan Dunlop from article by Laura Webster, “Prince Charles’s Knockroon ‘eco-village’ has just 30 homes,” *The National*, February 3, 2019. “He needs to rethink what he spends his money on” quote by Gabriel Pogrund from interview on *Red Box Politics Podcast* (episode title: “Prince Charles and Money”), July 4, 2022. Charles “was more than disappointed at the policy” is from an article by Matt Dathan and Valentine Low, “Prince Charles: Flying migrants to Rwanda is ‘appalling,’” *The Times*, June 10, 2022. “But Americans can do anything!” is allegedly a comment made by Prince Charles, reported in a book by Sally Bedell Smith, *Charles: The Misunderstood Prince*, 2017. “Royal body . . . carriers of a blood line” comes from an essay by Hilary Mantel, “Royal Bodies,” *London Review of Books*, February 21, 2013. The nickname “queen of people’s hearts” first entered the lexicon after Princess Diana was asked if she thought she would ever become Queen (alongside Charles) during her *Panorama* interview (episode title: “An Interview with HRH The Princess of Wales”), BBC1, November 20, 1995. “Prince of Wails” was first used in an article by William D. Montalbano, “Prince’s Marital Woes Become Britain’s Problem,” *Los Angeles Times*, December 30, 1995, and in

dozens of articles in the years that followed. The nickname “Pampered Prince” was first used in an article (which also cites the “crested silver dispenser”) by Stuart Millar and Jamie Wilson, “Pampered prince puts sun king in shade,” *Guardian*, November 15, 2002.

Alongside material from these referenced sources, I also found the following two books useful for additional insight: Catherine Mayer, *Charles: The Heart of a King*, 2022; Tom Bower, *Rebel Prince: The Power, Passion and Defiance of Prince Charles*, 2018.

## 6

The 152 veterans of the Royal Navy, Royal Marines, and British Army who signed the letter to Queen Elizabeth II were convened by the Republic group; it was sent directly to the monarch on January 13, 2022. “Without Prince Philip the royal house of cards is falling” is from Tom Bower, *The Times*, December 12, 2021. “I cannot imagine anyone in their right mind leaving you for Camilla” is from a letter sent by Prince Philip to Princess Diana in the summer of 1992 and reprinted in a book by Paul Burrell, *A Royal Duty*, 2003. “If I walk, will you walk with me?” was first reported in a book by Gyles Brandreth, *Breaking the Code: Westminster Diaries*, 2014. “I don’t think any child should be asked to do that, under any circumstances,” from Prince Harry interview in a profile by Angela Levin, “Prince Harry on Chaos After Diana’s Death and Why the World Needs ‘the Magic’ of the Royal Family,” *Newsweek*, June 21, 2017. “[Andrew] is a kind, good man . . .” quote from Sarah, Duchess of York, interview on *Good Morning Britain*, ITV, June 14, 2022. “He was in an invidious situation of his own making . . .” quote from producer Sam McAlister interview by Andrew Kersley, “Ex-*Newsnight* producer Sam McAlister on booking Prince Andrew and BBC’s ‘fatal’ class problem,” *Press Gazette*, July 22, 2022. “Like a platter of fruit” quote is from Virginia Giuffre in an interview with *Panorama*, BBC, December 2, 2019. The articles featuring sources close to Prince Andrew denying the authenticity of the photo with Virginia Giuffre were by Bill Gardner, “Prince Andrew’s supporters say his ‘chubby’ fingers prove photo of him with Epstein victim is fake,” *The Telegraph*, August 29, 2019, and Robert Jobson, “Prince Andrew hits back over ‘witch hunt’: Duke of York insists claims by Epstein’s ‘sex slave’ are



‘categorically untrue,’” *London Evening Standard*, August 28, 2019. “Any suggestion of impropriety with underage minors is categorically untrue” is from a Buckingham Palace spokeswoman on January 2, 2015. “It is emphatically denied that the Duke of York had any form of sexual contact or relationship with Virginia [Giuffre]” is a statement from Buckingham Palace in response to Virginia Giuffre’s *Panorama* interview on December 2, 2019. “He denies that it ever happened . . .” quote from Virginia Giuffre interview with NBC News on September 20, 2019. “Tits and bums man” and “schoolboy humor” quotes from reporting in article by Valentine Low, “‘Andrew the great’ exasperated duchess with unsavoury friend,” *The Times*, January 6, 2015. The tabloid nickname “Randy Andy” was born after a 1986 *Daily Mail* article, titled “Randy Andy and His Web of Arm Candy” chronicled his long list of alleged romances. “He would just be putting himself back into the same dangerous position again, facing the same deposition . . .” quote from David Boies interview on *Piers Morgan Uncensored*, Talk TV, February 21, 2023.

During my reading and research for this chapter, I also found the following titles of use: Nigel Cawthorne, *Prince Andrew: Epstein, Maxwell and the Palace*, 2022; Robert Jobson, *Prince Philip’s Century, 1921–2021: The Extraordinary Life of the Duke of Edinburgh*, 2021; Sam McAlister, *Scoops: Behind the Scenes of the BBC’s Most Shocking Interviews*, 2022; Sarah Ferguson, *Finding Sarah: A Duchess’s Journey to Find Herself*, 2011.

## 7

Black women in the United Kingdom being four times more likely to die during childbirth is a statistic from a report published by MBRRACE-UK (Mothers and Babies: Reducing Risk through Audits and Confidential Enquiries across the United Kingdom), released on November 10, 2021. Young Black men in London being nineteen times more likely to be stopped and searched is from a November 2020 research study by University College London’s institute for global city policing. The death rate of non-white people in Britain who died from Covid being 50 percent more than their white counterparts comes from a May 2020 analysis by the Institute for Fiscal Studies. Minority ethnic job applicants sending 60 percent more applications to get a positive response from an employer is a statistic

released in January 2019 by the Centre for Social Investigation at Nuffield College, University of Oxford. The case of “retain and explain” for statues linked to slavery in the City of London was a result of a decision made by the district’s Court of Common Council. Prince Charles’s speech on the “appalling atrocity of slavery” was delivered in Bridgetown, Barbados, on November 30, 2021. Barbados was dubbed “Little England” after the English settled on the island in 1627, wiping away all traces of its original inhabitants (the Arawaks), and it retained the nickname due to its strong British attitude and traditions (such as afternoon tea and cricket matches). “Shouldn’t be here at all” quote from David Denny in article by Victoria Murphy, “Prince Charles Calls Slavery an ‘Appalling Atrocity’ Which ‘Forever Stains Our History’ in Landmark Speech,” *Town & Country*, November 29, 2021. Prince Philip’s “slitty-eyed” remark was made to a group of students of Mandarin at Xian University on October 16, 1986. Prince Philip told then president of Nigeria Olusegun Obasanjo (wearing national dress), “You look like you’re ready for bed,” during a visit to Nigeria on December 3, 2003. Prince Philip’s “Do you still throw spears at each other?” remark was made on a visit to the Tjapukai Aboriginal Cultural Park in Australia on March 2, 2002. “The Africans just don’t know how to govern themselves . . .” was a quote from the Queen Mother (shared by one of her ladies-in-waiting) in an article by Tanya Gold, “The queen of unkindness,” *Guardian*, September 15, 2009. Charles calling a South Asian friend “Sooty” is from an article by Tim Walker, “Member of Princes’ polo club ‘affectionately’ known as Sooty,” *The Telegraph*, January 12, 2009. Princess Michael of Kent was quoted telling Black restaurant goers, “You need to go back to the colonies!” in an article by Jeane MacIntosh, “TELLS BLACK NYERS: ‘GO TO COLONIES,’” *New York Post*, May 26, 2004. “I even pretended years ago to be an African, a half caste” is from an interview with Princess Michael of Kent on *My Favourite Hymns*, ITV1, July 25, 2004. Prince Andrew’s alleged use of the n-word is from a comment piece by Rohan Silva, “Andrew’s use of language left me reeling—and I still regret not challenging his choice of words,” *London Evening Standard*, November 18, 2019. Prince Harry’s uses of the slurs “rag-head” and “Paki” were from a leaked video recording covered in the *News of the World*, January 11, 2009. The document revealing courtiers banned “coloured immigrants or foreigners” from serving in clerical roles in the royal household was first revealed in a report by David Pegg and Rob

Evans, “Buckingham Palace banned ethnic minorities from office roles, papers reveal,” *Guardian*, June 2, 2021. “Paraded naked through the streets . . .” is from an opinion piece written by Jeremy Clarkson, “One day, Harold the glove puppet will tell the truth about A Woman Talking B\*\*\*\*\*ks,” *The Sun*, December 16, 2022. “You may not necessarily comment on this issue . . .” quote by Antigua prime minister Gaston Browne to Prince Edward was broadcast on ABSTV Antigua, April 27, 2022. “She was ahead of the curve” is a quote from historian and professor of imperial and military history at King’s College London Ashley Jackson in the article “The Queen and the Commonwealth: a force for international change?,” *The Queen at 90*, BBC History, March 2020. “I declare before you all that my whole life, whether it be long or short . . .” is from the Queen’s twenty-first-birthday speech on April 21, 1947. That an image “would particularly appeal to a History of Art graduate such as Kate” is a quote by *Mail on Sunday* art critic Philip Hensher in an article by Sarah Oliver and Katie Nicholl, “Incredible glimpse through the palace keyhole and fiercely guarded private life of William and Kate,” *Mail on Sunday*, April 24, 2016. “If the Koh-i-Noor is a symbol of East India Company . . .” quote from Danielle Kinsey in article by Brahmjot Kaur, “Camilla swaps the Kohinoor diamond for another controversial stone on her coronation crown,” NBC News, February 17, 2023. “With a world stage and powerful voice that was inherited by her very position . . .” quote from article by John V. Petrocelli, “Trouble in the Castle: Unnecessary to Consult Sussex,” *Psychology Today*, December 10, 2022. Prince Harry’s statement condemning “racial undertones” and “wave of abuse” was released by Kensington Palace with the title “A Statement by the Communications Secretary to Prince Harry” on November 8, 2016. “I do think the Duke of Sussex and his office will bear some responsibility if a journalist is harmed . . .” comment by Richard Palmer on Twitter/X, December 18, 2018. “If you’d seen the stuff that was written and you were receiving it . . .” quotes from Neil Basu to Channel 4 News, November 29, 2022. The “Meghan made Kate cry” story first ran in an article by Camilla Tominey, “Kate and Meghan: Is the royal sisterhood really at breaking point?,” *The Telegraph*, November 26, 2018. The “What Meghan wants, Meghan gets!” tiara story was first reported by Dan Wootton, “MAJ RAPPED MEG: The Queen warned Prince Harry over Meghan Markle’s ‘difficult’ behaviour after row over bride’s tiara for royal wedding,” *The Sun*, November 9, 2018.

The story claiming Meghan, the Duchess of Sussex, “bollocked” Kate, the Duchess of Cambridge’s staff was reported by Dan Wootton, “ROYAL STRIFE: Meghan Markle and Kate Middleton locked in bitter fallout as Hollywood starlet takes on royal court,” *The Sun*, November 30, 2018. The claim that Meghan refused to wear M&S tights first appeared in a column by Sophia Money-Coutts, *The Sunday Telegraph*, November 18, 2018. The nickname “Duchess Difficult” was first used in a headline by Roya Nikkhah, “Meghan loses second close aide, Samantha Cohen, as rumours swirl of ‘Duchess Difficult,’” *The Sunday Times*, December 9, 2018. The nickname “Me-Gain” was reported in an article by David Jenkins, “Two years on from the Royal Wedding, the cult of ‘Meghanomania’ endures,” *Tatler*, May 18, 2020. The descriptor “narcissistic sociopath” being used by ex-staffers was reported by Valentine Low, *Courtiers: The Hidden Power Behind the Crown*, 2018. “Degree wife” first appeared in an article by Sophia Money-Coutts, “Cambridge v. Sussex: is there a rift between Prince William and Kate and Prince Harry and Meghan?,” *The Sunday Times*, June 16, 2019. “Calling someone the b-word, labeling them as difficult . . .” quote is from Meghan on the podcast *Archetypes* (episode: “To ‘B’ or not to ‘B’?”), Spotify, November 2022. “Melissa is a hugely talented person . . .” source quotes from article by Richard Eden, “Palace shock as Meghan Markle’s closest aide quits her job just six months after royal wedding,” *Daily Mail*, November 10, 2018. The Meghan “friend” the Buckingham Palace aide said had also made comments about Melissa Toubati was actress Janina Gavankar, who was interviewed on *This Morning*, March 10, 2021, where she said, “I also know why someone had to leave, and it was for gross misconduct. The truth will come out, there’s plenty of emails and texts about that.” “I just didn’t want to be alive anymore . . .” quotes from Meghan from *Oprah with Meghan and Harry*, CBS, March 7, 2021. “As far as the family was concerned . . .” quotes from Prince Harry from *Harry & Meghan*, Netflix, 2022. Only 8 percent of Britain’s journalism workforce being non-white is a statistic from an Office for National Statistics Labour Force Survey reported by Charlotte Tobitt, “Survey finds growing UK journalism workforce of nearly 100,000 still lacks ethnic diversity,” *Press Gazette*, May 13, 2021 (updated September 30, 2022). The first use of “British-Iranian” in an article about me was by Ian Gallagher, “The celebrity writers chosen by Meghan to tell her ‘real’ story,” *Mail on Sunday*, April 25, 2020. “What was able to just be manufactured and

churned out, it's almost unsurvivable . . ." quote from Meghan to *Teenager Therapy* podcast, October 10, 2020. The statement denying Kate's "baby Botox" was issued by a Kensington Palace spokesperson on July 24, 2019. "For us, for this union and the specifics around her race . . ." quote from Prince Harry from *Oprah with Meghan and Harry*, CBS, March 7, 2021. The letter written by Holly Lynch was sent to the Duchess of Sussex on October 29, 2019. The nationwide poll about sympathy for the Sussexes or the royal family after the Oprah Winfrey interview aired was conducted by YouGov (who surveyed 2,111 adults living in the United Kingdom) on March 8, 2021. Kate's "History will judge this statement" was reported by Valentine Low in the paperback release of *Courtiers: The Hidden Power Behind the Crown*, 2023. "We are very much not a racist family" was William's comment to Sky News reporter Inzamam Rashid on March 11, 2021, who asked the question, "Have you spoken to your brother since the interview?" (the prince's reply, "No, I haven't spoken to him yet, but I will do"), followed by, "And can you just let me know, is the royal family a racist family, sir?" The Buckingham Palace employment diversity percentages were released in the Sovereign Grant Report for the financial year 2022–23, and additional information was gathered by my own reporting. "Everything they said was going to happen hasn't happened . . ." quotes by Prince Harry from *Harry: The Interview*, ITV, January 8, 2023.

This chapter would be incomplete without the additional insights, stories, and research provided in the following sources: Akala, *Natives: Race and Class in the Ruins of Empire*, 2019; Naomi and Natalie Evans, *The Mixed-Race Experience: Reflections and Revelations on Multicultural Identity*, 2022; Catherine Hall et al., *Legacies of British Slave-ownership: Colonial Slavery and the Formation of Victorian Britain*, 2016; Afua Hirsch, *Brit(ish): On Race, Identity and Belonging*, 2018; Kenneth Morgan, *Slavery and the British Empire: From Africa to America*, 2007; Safiya Umoja Noble, *Algorithms of Oppression: How Search Engines Reinforce Racism*, 2019; David Olusoga, *Black and British: A Short, Essential History*, 2020. A huge hat tip also goes to the R. S. Locke article "House of Windsor II: Prince Harry and the Flight of Icarus," Medium, March 1, 2001; a journal article by Emily C. Bartel, "Too Many Blackamoors: Deportation, Discrimination, and Elizabeth I," *Studies in English Literature, 1500–1900* 46, no. 2, Tudor and Stuart Drama (Spring 2006); the YouTube channel "LonerBox" for its documentaries "Racism in the UK," October 14, 2020,

and “The British Monarchy,” September 30, 2022; and the documentary “How Black Britons experienced racism in the shadow of COVID-19,” Al Jazeera, March 14, 2022.

## 8

Prince William said he was “sickened by the racist abuse aimed at England” in a tweet from the Kensington Palace Twitter/X account on July 12, 2021. William’s speech about ensuring diversity in future BAFTA nominations was delivered at the start of the 73rd British Academy Film and Television Arts Awards ceremony on February 3, 2020. “The public look to him to keep royal work looking modern . . .” and (later on in the chapter) “middle-class job” and “ordinary people” are from sources quoted in a profile by Roya Nikkhah, “Up close and personal with Prince William: an intimate portrait of the future king,” *The Sunday Times*, March 20, 2021. Cholmondeley is pronounced “Chum-lee.” The first report about Kate, then the Duchess of Cambridge, and Rose Hanbury’s alleged “fall out” was by Dan Wootton, “ROYAL RIVAL: Kate Middleton has fall-out with glamorous best friend and tells Prince William to ‘phase her out,’” *The Sun*, March 22, 2019—it was removed from the newspaper’s website in 2021. The nickname “Turnip Toffs” was first used in an article by Catherine Ostler, “The Turnip Toffs! Meet Kate and Will’s new neighbours, the party-loving Norfolk set with bigger homes than the royals. And, dahling, everyone knows each other (sometimes EXTREMELY well),” *Daily Mail*, September 12, 2014. “The real victim of aristocratic dinner party gossip” from an article by Richard Kay, “Is Kate’s ‘rural rivalry’ just a vicious rumour to damage her?,” *Daily Mail*, March 24, 2019. The legal warning to U.K. newspapers about rumors was reported by Lachlan Cartwright and Tom Sykes, “Prince William’s Lawyer Tries to Suppress Rumors . . . ,” *Daily Beast*, April 9, 2019. The claim that Harry and Meghan’s marriage was in trouble was reported by Aaron Johnson, “Harry and Meghan TRIAL SEPARATION: ‘Nasty Fights, Humiliation and Failure’ Lead Prince to Pursue ‘Peace’—Inside the Drama,” Radar Online, July 18, 2023. “He wanted me to hit him back, but I chose not to . . .” by Prince Harry from *Harry: The Interview*, ITV, January 8, 2023. “Far from seeming cold and unfeeling . . .” in an article by Camilla Tominey, “There’s never been a

better time for the Princess of Wales's new private secretary to shake things up," *The Telegraph* ("Royal Appointment" digital newsletter), February 8, 2023. "We are uniquely bonded because of what we went through . . ." is a quote from Prince William during a seven-minute video released online by Kensington Palace on April 21, 2017, to launch Heads Together. "Look, we're brothers, we'll always be brothers . . ." quote by Prince Harry on *Harry and Meghan: An African Journey*, ITV, October 20, 2019. The report that William had "bullied" Harry out of the family is by Valentine Low, "Princes 'fell out because William wasn't friendly towards Meghan,'" *The Times*, January 13, 2020. The "source close to the royal family" who said Harry has been "kidnapped by a cult of psychotherapy" was quoted in an article by Alastair Jamieson, "Royals despair as Prince Harry 'kidnapped by cult of psychotherapy,'" *Independent*, January 10, 2023. "The worldwide privacy" tour episode of *South Park* (season 26, episode 2) was first aired on February, 15, 2023, on Comedy Central in the United States. William was first called "work-shy" in an article by Emily Andrews, "Meddling Wills is throne idle," *The Sun*, February 18, 2016. The photographs of William at a Swiss nightclub appeared in an article by Emily Andrews and Nick Parker, "LETTING HIS HEIR DOWN: Prince William shows off his dad dancing skills as he throws his hands in the air to hip hop classic on lads' holiday," *The Sun*, March 14, 2017. "My mother did put herself right out there . . ." quotes by Prince William from interview by Alastair Campbell, "William: A Prince in His Prime," *British GQ*, May 29, 2017. "Following on from my time in the military . . ." is from Prince William's statement released by Kensington Palace, "An update from Kensington Palace about the plans for The Duke and Duchess of Cambridge in 2017," January 20, 2017. "I'll never know as much as he does, but I'll try my best . . ." quotes by Prince William in an article by Hannah Furness, "Prince William on making his mark on father's Duchy of Cornwall legacy," *The Telegraph*, October 11, 2019. "Homelessness can be prevented when we collaborate . . ." quote by Prince William from Kensington Palace press release, "The Prince of Wales and The Royal Foundation launch UK-wide programme to end homelessness," June 26, 2023. William spoke of his "unique bond" with Harry in a Heads Together video released by Kensington Palace on April 21, 2017. Miguel Head is quoted in an article by Roya Nikkhah, "Up close and personal with Prince William: an intimate portrait of the future king," *The Sunday Times*, March 20, 2021. William's

“lifelong mission” was first reported by Russell Myers, “Prince William’s pledge after Israel and Palestine visit: ‘Middle East peace will be my lifelong mission,’” *The Mirror*, July 1, 2018. “WILLS THE FREEDOM FIGHTER” was the front page of *The Sun*, March 23, 2023.

Additional reading and research was useful in the books Robert Jobson, *William at 40: The Making of a Modern Monarch*, 2022; Penny Junor, *Prince William: Born to Be King, an Intimate Portrait*, 2012; Anna Pasternak, *The American Duchess: The Real Wallis Simpson*, 2020. The research on the “Turnip Toffs” by author Meredith Constant (published to TikTok and YouTube, March 2023) was also very helpful.

## 9

“Granny, while this final parting brings us great sadness . . .” from tribute statement written by Prince Harry and released on September 12, 2022. “I just wanted to show her that she’s welcome . . .” quote from unnamed fourteen-year-old girl to Scott McLean, CNN, September 10, 2022. “It was one of the hardest things she ever had to do” from a source quoted in Robert Jobson, *Our King: Charles III: The Man and the Monarch Revealed*, 2023. The interview in which Harry said changing the media was his “life’s work” was with Tom Bradby, *Harry: The Interview*, ITV, January 8, 2023. Bill Simmons called Harry and Meghan “the fucking grifters” on *The Bill Simmons Podcast*, Spotify, June 16, 2023. The Sussexes’ marriage was described as “frazzled” and “fraught” in an article by Camilla Tominey, “The Sussexes are frazzled, fraught and lacking romance—like any couple with young kids,” *The Telegraph*, May 19, 2023. Though not directly quoted, references to Prince Harry’s *Spare*, 2023, are also made during this chapter.

## 10

Queen Elizabeth I called Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, her “Eyes,” William Cecil her “Spirit,” and Robert Cecil her “pigmy” or “elf,” per letters she had written during her life and quoted in a number of books on her life, including Alison Weir, *Elizabeth, The Queen*, 2011. Prince Philip’s



and Princess Margaret's references to courtiers as "the Men with Mustaches" has been documented in numerous biographies, including books by Gyles Brandreth, *Philip: The Final Portrait*, 2021, and Tim Heald, *Princess Margaret: A Life Unravelling*, 2007. Sarah, the Duchess of York, referred to "Gray Men" in her autobiography, *My Story*, 1996. Angela Kelly's NDA was first reported by Kate Mansey, "Angela Kelly 'is made to sign gagging order,'" *Mail on Sunday*, May 21, 2023. "Whenever there is a monarch, there is court . . ." quote from Valentine Low, *Courtiers: The Hidden Power Behind the Crown*, 2022. "Courtiers in the British system are the rulers of their masters . . ." quote from Robert Hardman in an article by Latika Bourke, "The 'men in grey': The true powers behind the palace," *Sydney Morning Herald*, March 13, 2021. The "half in, half out" working model was shared by Prince Harry and Meghan, the Duchess of Sussex, on the website SussexRoyal.com, as well as within the royal institution, on January 8, 2020. "Something out of monarchies in the middle ages" is attributed to "Buckingham Palace insiders" in an article by Chris Ship, "Why has the Queen's most loyal aide suddenly left his role?," ITV News, September 17, 2017. "Palace power struggle" was first used to describe Sir Christopher Geidt's departure in an article by Valentine Low and Alexi Mostrous, "Queen's aide Sir Christopher Geidt ousted in palace power struggle," *The Times*, September 16, 2017. Sir Clive Alderton's "hatchet man" nickname was first reported in an article by Kate Mansey, "King Charles III will keep the Queen's Private Secretary—known as a 'hatchet man' for his ability to deliver bad news—in his post," *Mail on Sunday*, September 17, 2022. Samantha Cohen's "Samantha the Panther" nickname was first reported by Martin Robinson, "Meghan gets the Queen's special advisor," *Daily Mail*, May 24, 2018. "[He'd] spent much of his career adjacent to, and indeed drawn to shit . . ." quotes from Prince Harry, *Spare*, 2023. The article that refers to Simon Case as "a fixer by nature" and "keeper of secrets" is by Ben Wright and Joshua Nevett, "Simon Case: 'Keeper of secrets' under scrutiny," BBC News, February 3, 2023. "I like Simon, but he's a snake" quote is from article by Emilio Casalicchio, "From spy chief to Prince Harry's bête noire—the many lives of UK Cabinet Secretary Simon Case," *Politico*, January 10, 2023. The term *divergent paths* was used often used by Kensington Palace aides in 2019 to describe Harry and William's "natural progression" into establishing different roles at different royal households. Elton John defended Harry and Meghan's use

of his private jet in a series of posts on Twitter/X, August 19, 2019, where he said, “To maintain a high level of much-needed protection, we provided them with a private jet flight.” Prince William “looking like your archetypal family man on holiday . . .” is from an article by Rebecca English, “Who needs a private jet? Kate and Wills’ £73 budget flight,” *Daily Mail*, August 23, 2019.

The following books also provided invaluable research and background: Baldassare Castiglione, *Il Libro del Cortegiano* (*The Book of the Courtier*), 1528; Ophelia Field, *Sarah Churchill Duchess of Marlborough: The Queen’s Favourite*, 2003; Paul Hill, *The Age of Athelstan: Britain’s Forgotten History*, 2004; Niccolò Machiavelli, *The Prince*, 1532; Marc Morris, *The Anglo-Saxons: A History of Beginnings*, 2022; Kathryn Warner, *Edward II: The Unconventional King*, 2014; Alison Weir, *Henry VIII: The King and His Court*, 2001; Lucy Worsley, *Courtiers: The Secret History of the Georgian Court*, 2010.

## 11

The term “people’s princess” was used by the then British prime minister Tony Blair to describe Diana, Princess of Wales, on the day of her death, August 31, 1997. “Harry never says that his mother is dead . . .” quote from article by Andrew O’Hagan, “Off His Royal Tits,” *London Review of Books* 45, no. 3, February 2, 2023. Harry has publicly shared his fears of “history repeating itself” on at least three occasions, including his docuseries created with Oprah Winfrey, *The Me You Can’t See*, Apple TV+, 2021. “Felt the presence of [his] mum . . .” quotes by Prince Harry to Michael Strahan, *Good Morning America*, ABC, January 9, 2023. Diana was going to “enliven it . . .” quote from former *Guardian* royal correspondent and author of *Royalty Inc.*, Stephen Bates, in an article by Suyin Haynes, “*The Crown* Doesn’t Fully Explain Why Princess Diana Was So Popular. Here’s How She Became a Global Celebrity,” *Time*, November 16, 2020. Tom Cruise spoke about media “harassment” over the phone to CNN on August 31, 1997. “Where Is Our Queen? Where Is Her Flag?” was the front page of *The Sun*, September 4, 1997. The sentence on Diana’s influence on fashion trends was inspired by an article by Emma Mackenzie, “Why are people so obsessed with buying Diana’s things?,” Yahoo! News, August 9, 2023. The

“Diana: Her Fashion Story” exhibition traced the evolution of the royal’s style and was organized by Historic Royal Palaces and ran at Kensington Palace from February 24, 2017, to February 17, 2019. Biographer Penny Junor wrote about Diana as a bad mother, volatile, narcissistic, and violent in her books *Charles: Victim or Villain*, 1999, and *Prince Harry: Brother, Soldier, Son*, 2014. Additional details on the Martin Bashir/*Panorama* investigation from the “Report of The Dyson Investigation by The Right Honourable Lord Dyson,” published on May 14, 2021. Earl Spencer’s letter to BBC’s director-general Tim Davie was published in the *Daily Mail*, “SPENCER’S ULTIMATUM TO BBC’S NEW BOSS,” November 3, 2020. Martin Bashir stepped down from his BBC role in April 2021, and it was announced in a statement by Jonathan Munro, the deputy director of BBC News, on May 14, 2021. Both Prince Harry’s and Prince William’s statements on the outcome of Lord Dyson’s investigation were released under embargo by their respective offices at exactly 10:00 p.m. U.K. time, May 20, 2021. “What bullying actually means . . .” quote from Jenny Afia is from *The Princes and The Press* (episode 2), BBC Two, December 8, 2021. “You must understand, darling boy . . .” quote by Charles is from Prince Harry, *Spare*, 2023. “Say what I want about Harry and Meghan . . .” quote by Norman Baker is from interview on GB News, December 13, 2022.

Other books that provided helpful research for this specific chapter: Noel Botham, *The Murder of Princess Diana: The Truth Behind the Assassination of the People’s Princess*, 2017; Tina Brown, *The Diana Chronicles*, 2017; Patrick Jephson, *Shadow of a Princess: An Intimate Account by Her Private Secretary*, 2000; James Patterson and Chris Mooney, *Diana, William, & Harry: A life cut short. A love that endures*, 2023; Ken Wharfe with Robert Jobson, *Diana: Closely Guarded Secret*, 2016; Ken Wharfe and Ros Coward, *Diana: Remembering the Princess*, 2022.

## 12

### *Part I*

Quotes from Camilla's *Mail* interview (including "just get on with it" later in the chapter) were given to Georgie Greig, "EXCLUSIVE: Camilla up close! Duchess of Cornwall opens up as never before, saying: 'If you can't laugh at yourself, you may as well give up,'" *Mail on Sunday*, May 28, 2017. "Raunchy and randy" and "throw her knickers on the table" come from an article by Caroline Murphy, "Squidging about," *London Review of Books* 26, no. 2, January 22, 2004. "Doing what Lady Chatterley loved best" is a quote from a butler in the book by Gyles Brandreth, *Charles & Camilla: Portrait of a Love Affair*, 2005. "She laughed easily at the same silliness" quote is from a book by Jonathan Dimbleby, *The Prince of Wales: An Intimate Portrait*, 1998. Details of Charles's letters to Lord Mountbatten published in a book by Penny Junor, *The Duchess: Camilla Parker Bowles and the Love Affair that Rocked the Crown*, 2018. "I find knickers all over the place" quote is from a housekeeper at Glyn Celyn House, where the couple regularly stayed as far back as 1992, in an article by James Whitaker and Jane Kerr, *The Mirror*, August 26, 1996. The story about the ham radio enthusiast is from the memoir of Richard Stott, *Dogs and Lampposts*, 2002. Diana's "Rottweiler" nickname for Camilla was first reported by Andrew Morton, *Diana: Her True Story*, 1992. Patrick "Paddy" Harverson's quote is from an interview on *Good Morning America*, ABC, September 12, 2022. Piers Morgan called Meghan "Pinocchio Princess" in a March 8, 2021, Twitter/X post before calling her a "race-baiter" on *Good Morning Britain*, ITV, March 10, 2021, where he then stormed off the set when challenged by a co-presenter about his stance (and then "left" his job that same day after Meghan personally complained to the network's CEO, Carolyn McCall, who defended the duchess). "New series of Netflix's *The Crown* is 'vicious' and 'would have destroyed' the Queen, one of the late monarch's closest friends says," story by Brittany Chain, Katie Hind, and Kate Mansey, *Mail on Sunday*, October 23, 2022. Judi Dench added pressure on Netflix to tell viewers its show is fiction by writing a letter that was published in *The Times*, October 19, 2022. Harry's "bodies left in the street" quote was from an interview with Anderson Cooper, *60 Minutes*, CBS, January 8, 2023. "I have a huge amount of compassion for her . . ." quote from Harry to Michael Strahan, *Good Morning America*, ABC, January 9, 2023. "Of course it bothers her . . ." quote from the Marchioness of Lansdowne in an article by Roya Nikkhah, "Queen Camilla: the 'lady boss,' by her inner circle," *The Sunday Times*, April 15, 2023. "We all love our food . . ." quote

from Tom Parker Bowles to me on the podcast *The HeirPod*, ABC Audio, December 13, 2019. “You’re not going to find us with great estates . . .” quote from Tom Parker Bowles on the podcast *The News Agents*, Global, April 20, 2023. “She was very explicit with me . . .” quote from Julian Payne to Times Radio, May 4, 2023. “I count on the loving help of my darling wife . . .” was from King Charles’s address to “the Nation and the Commonwealth,” which was broadcast on September 9, 2022.

Additional reading for this chapter: HRH The Prince of Wales and Bunny Guinness, *Highgrove: A Garden Celebrated*, 2014; Caroline Graham, *Camilla: Her True Story*, 2001; Tom Quinn, *Mrs. Keppel: Mistress to the King*, 2016.

## 12

### *Part II*

“The physical benefits of being outdoors . . . are well documented . . .” from a speech delivered by Kate, then the Duchess of Cambridge, at the Back to Nature festival at RHS Garden Wisley on September 10, 2019. Kate’s appearance on *Blue Peter* aired on BBC1, June 13, 2019. The Royal Foundation Centre for Early Childhood was launched on June 18, 2021. Details of Sure Start closures come from article by Anoosh Chakelian, “Replacing lost Sure Start centres is a tacit admission of austerity’s failure,” *New Statesman*, February 10, 2023. Kate joined the podcast *Happy Mum, Happy Baby*, Acast, for an episode released on February 15, 2020. The book *Hold Still: A Portrait of Our Nation in 2020*, featuring an introduction by the Duchess of Cambridge, was released on May 7, 2021. “Bucklebury provided the backbone for Kate’s aspirational resolve” is from Tina Brown, *The Palace Papers: Inside the House of Windsor—the Truth and the Turmoil*, 2022. The nickname “Waity Katie” was invented by the *Daily Mail* (because she was “happy to hang on until William proposes”) and first used in the article “‘Waity Katie’ has a wobble as Prince William commits seven years to the RAF,” November 8, 2008. “Royal Wedding Is On! The Secret Proposal” was the front cover of *Us Weekly* a week before the engagement was announced on November 16, 2010. “I saw Kate becoming a jointed doll on which certain rags are hung . . .” and other quotes are from

Hilary Mantel, “Royal Bodies,” *London Review of Books* 35, no. 4, February 21, 2013. The report that Prince George can skip a stint in the Armed Forces “if he wishes” originates from an article by Kate Mansey, “Prince George will not be expected to join the Armed Forces before becoming King breaking centuries of tradition,” *Mail on Sunday*, July 15, 2023.

## 13

“Demands for democracy—that these publics have a say—advanced” and other invaluable insight from an article by Adam Ramsay, “The monarchy and media are trapped in a mutually dependent relationship,” *openDemocracy*, January 9, 2023. More invaluable insight in an article by Adam Ramsay, “Dismantling Britain Is One Thing. Dismantling Britishness Is Another,” *Novara Media*, October 6, 2021. “Impress the many,” “governing the many,” and “excite and preserve the reverence of the population” from Walter Bagehot, *The English Constitution* (Second Edition), 1873. “The clock which beats the time over the Houses of Parliament . . .” quote is referenced in Todd Avery, *Radio Modernism: Literature, Ethics, and the BBC, 1922–1938*, 2006. The statistic that 6 percent of the British population identify as Christian (while 42 percent say they are nonpracticing Christians) is from a survey by Talking Jesus reported exclusively in an article by Anugrah Kumar, ““Talking Jesus’ report finds only 6% of UK adults identify as practicing Christians,” *The Christian Post*, May 2, 2022. “They wouldn’t be there if there wasn’t something in the British character . . .” quote from *Martin Amis’s England*, BBC Four, March 23, 2014. “They can deny it all they like until they’re blue in the face . . .” quote from Robert Jobson on *Sunrise*, Channel 7, November 24, 2021. The term “churnalism” is used for a type of journalism in which press releases and stories from newswires (or press pools) are used to create articles in newspapers and other news media—it was coined by BBC journalist Waseem Zakir in the early 2000s. The documentary *Harry & William: What Went Wrong* aired on ITV1, July 4, 2021. The documentary *Harry and Meghan: An African Journey* aired on ITV1, October 23, 2019. William and Kate’s visit to Harry and Meghan was reported by me, “Prince William & Duchess Kate Have Visited Meghan at

Frogmore Cottage,” *Harper’s Bazaar*, April 25, 2019. Sandy Henney’s quote is from Zeynep Tufekci, “Prince Harry Is Right, and It’s Not Just a Matter of Royal Gossip,” *New York Times*, January 25, 2023. Penny Junor’s quote about Mark Bolland is from *Reinventing the Royals* (episode 1 of 2), BBC Two, March 24, 2015. Dan Wootton’s comment about negative information “coming from within the royal family” was made on Talk Radio, August 2, 2019. Kate, the Princess of Wales, backed *The Sun’s* “Baby, Bank On Us” appeal on June 4, 2023, telling the paper, “I’m very proud to support this campaign.” “Camilla has been canny . . .” is from an article by Peter Hunt, “How Camilla came in from the cold,” *Spectator*, February 5, 2022. The apology to Meghan in the *Mail on Sunday* was printed on December 26, 2021, and on the *Mail Online* on December 25, 2021. Additional Tobynd Andreae history from an article by Ellie Hall, “King Charles Hired a Former Top Editor at the Tabloids That Published Critical Kate Middleton Columns and the Story That Was an Impetus for the Breakdown of Meghan Markle’s Relationship with Her Father,” *BuzzFeed News*, September 30, 2022. “Either well-known journalists are making a lot of stuff up . . .” quote is from an article by Andrew Marr, “Prince Harry’s war on the Windsors,” *New Statesman*, January 11, 2023.

I fell down many a rabbit hole researching for this chapter, but the following titles are some of the many additional sources of research that were helpful (even if material or quotes from them don’t appear in the book): Dickie Arbiter, *On Duty with the Queen: My Time as a Buckingham Palace Press Secretary*, 2014; Nick Davies, *Flat Earth News: An Award-Winning Reporter Exposes Falsehood, Distortion and Propaganda in the Global Media*, 2008; Jackie Harrison and Luke McKernan, *Breaking the News: 500 Years of News in Britain*, 2022; Chris Horrie, *Tabloid Nation: From the Birth of the Daily Mirror to the Death of the Tabloid Newspaper*, 2003; Adrian Phillips, *The First Royal Media War: Edward VIII, the Abdication and the Press*, 2023.

## 14

The origin of “Keep Calm and Carry On” was a slogan created by Britain’s Ministry of Information in 1939 as a message of “sober restraint” to be used in the event of war. “For Great Britain [to make] clear to the world its role

as an industrial leader” is quoted from a book by Mark Kishlansky, Patrick Geary, and Patricia O’Brien, *Civilization in the West*, 2008. “Increase the means of industrial education . . .” quote from an 1850 royal commission for the Great Exhibition, which Prince Albert was president of, and now available in the House of Lords Library. Edward VII’s “miraculous” recovery from typhoid is covered in a book by Jane Ridley, *Bertie: A Life of Edward VII*, 2012. “The new limelight” and (later in the chapter) “cultivated anachronism” are from a book by Tom Nairn, *The Enchanted Glass: Britain and Its Monarchy*, 2011. “One hundred years ago, Queen Victoria opened the Great Exhibition . . .” speech by King George VI, delivered for the opening of the Festival of Britain, May 3, 1951 (sourced from British Pathé archives). “Worldwide fellowship” from Queen Elizabeth II’s Christmas broadcast delivered on December 25, 1953. The Queen’s famous “I have to be seen to be believed” quote is in a biography by Sally Bedell Smith, *Elizabeth the Queen: The Life of a Modern Monarch*, 2012. Commonwealth Games being “not value for money” were the words of politician David Andrews, Australia’s premier of Victoria, during a July 18, 2023, news conference announcing that the country will be pulling out of hosting duties. The quotes from Australia’s treasurer Jim Chalmers were given during a news conference in Melbourne on February 1, 2023. Humza Yousaf’s quotes about Scotland becoming a republic are from an interview by Laura Webster, “Humza Yousaf: Indy Scotland should look at breaking with royals,” *The National*, March 13, 2023. The Queen made the comment about the people of Scotland needing to “think very carefully about the future” during a walkabout outside Crathie Kirk church in Balmoral on September 14, 2014. The data used to highlight Britain’s economic trajectory (that it will soon be overtaken by Poland et al.) came from calculations shared by Labour party leader Sir Keir Starmer on February 27, 2023, based on World Bank data and the assumption that the United Kingdom’s gross domestic product (GDP) per capita continues to grow as it has between 2010 and 2021. Keir Starmer’s comment about “brain drain” is from a speech given at the office of U.K. Finance in London on February 27, 2023. The phrase “Land of Hope and Glory” is from a British patriotic song (set to the theme of Edward Elgar’s “Pomp and Circumstance March No. 1”). Its references to Britain’s colonial history, with lines like “By freedom gained, by truth maintained, thine Empire shall be strong” have made it controversial. The government-funded £396



million, ten-year refurbishment of Buckingham Palace (agreed to by then Conservative leader and prime minister Theresa May, chancellor of the exchequer Philip Hammond, and Buckingham Palace's Keeper of the Privy Purse Sir Alan Reid) was announced in November 2016 and began in April 2017. Buckingham Palace is usually referred to as "BP" by staff and royal family members (same for Kensington Palace, which is called "KP"). Poll data for abolition support comes from British market research and data analytics firm YouGov (total sample size was 1,754 adults, and fieldwork was undertaken between April 30 and May 2, 2022); the percentage of Britons thinking the monarchy is "very important" comes from the National Centre for Social Research (based on 6,638 interviews carried out in 2023 and building on forty years of data collected for their annual "British Social Attitudes" survey); King Charles's approval rating based on polling by Ipsos in April 2023 (data is from three representative quota samples from adults between eighteen and seventy-five years old: 1,079 interviewed online between March 31–April 1; 2,000 interviewed online between April 12–13; and 1,008 interviewed over the phone between April 5–11); young and older support for the monarchy was polled in April 2023 by YouGov for BBC's *Panorama* (4,592 U.K. adults questioned). Anna Whitelock quoted by Press Association on April 14, 2016. Royal tourism site statistics from the Association of Leading Visitor Attractions (AVLA) and based on visits made in 2022 to known attractions. The *Guardian's* "Cost of the crown" series was launched with a report by David Pegg and Paul Lewis, "How the British royal family hides its wealth from public scrutiny," April 5, 2023. Charles's estimated fortune and assets come from a report by the "Cost of the crown" team, "Revealed: King Charles's private fortune estimated at £1.8bn," *Guardian*, April 20, 2023. "Be directed for the wider good" quote from Britain's finance minister Jeremy Hunt, January 20, 2023. Nick Wall's quote comes from a Labour for a Republic letter to opposition Labour leader Keir Starmer sent in July 2023.

The following books were useful for historical research and additional insight: Becky E. Conekin, *The Autobiography of a Nation: The 1951 Festival of Britain*, 2003; Phillip Hall, *Royal Fortune: Tax, Money & the Monarchy*, 1992; Philip Murphy, *Monarchy and the End of Empire: The House of Windsor, the British Government, and the Postwar Commonwealth*, 2013; Tom Nairn, *The Break-Up of Britain: Crisis and Neo-Nationalism*, 2021; Lynn Picknett, Clive Prince, and Stephen Prior,

*War of the Windsors: A Century of Unconstitutional Monarchy*, 2002; Tim Shipman, *Fall Out: A Year of Political Mayhem*, 2018; Graham Smith, *Abolish the Monarchy: Why We Should and How We Will*, 2023; E. A. Smith, *George IV*, 2000; Peter Fearon, *Buckingham Babylon: The Rise and Fall of the House of Windsor*, 1993.

## 15

“The odd thing about these British royal ceremonials . . .” and regalia observation from article by Fintan O’Toole, “Golden Coats, Sacred Spoons,” *The New York Review of Books*, May 7, 2023. The story of the electroplated Ping-Pong ball was first reported by Stellene Volandes, “Prince Charles’s Prince of Wales Coronet Has an Actual Ping Pong Ball Hidden Inside It,” *Town & Country*, April 23, 2019. The Earl of Snowdon’s comments on Charles’s “bogus as hell” Welsh investiture were made on *Timewatch*, BBC Two, July 3, 2009. “It would be diversity doing what diversity is meant to do . . .” quote from op-ed by Nels Abbey, “Brilliant Floella Benjamin and a not-very-gospel coronation choir. Is this as ‘diverse’ as Britain gets?,” *Guardian*, May 7, 2023. The 84 percent of British people saying they would not pledge allegiance to King Charles III came from a snap online poll for *Good Morning Britain*, ITV1, April 30, 2023. “[William’s] Coronation will look and feel quite different” quote from a “source close to William” in article by Roya Nikkhah, “Prince William is already thinking about his coronation—it won’t be like his dad’s,” *The Sunday Times*, May 13, 2023. “I find myself born into this particular position . . .” quotes from Charles (then the Prince of Wales) from interview with *60 Minutes*, CBS, October 27, 2005.

I found Ian Lloyd, *The Throne: 1,000 Years of British Coronations*, 2023, useful for additional information on coronations and coronation ceremonies.

\* \* \*

And finally, there are so many other resources not mentioned in the individual chapter references that provided invaluable information and additional reading while writing this book, including Norman Baker, . . . *And What Do You Do? What the Royal Family Want You to Know*, 2020;

Tina Brown, *The Palace Papers: Inside the House of Windsor—the Truth and the Turmoil*, 2022; Robert Jobson, *Charles at Seventy: Thoughts, Hopes and Dreams*, 2018; Alexander Larman, *The Crown in Crisis: Countdown to the Abdication*, 2021; Andrew Marr, *The Diamond Queen: Elizabeth II and Her People*, 2021; and, of course, Prince Harry, *Spare*, 2023.

## Photo Section

### Five Years of Highs and Lows



Happier times for the “Fab Four” at the February 2018 Royal Foundation Forum in London.

*Chris Jackson/Getty*



William and Kate followed tradition, sharing their third child, Prince Louis, with the world outside the Lindo Wing of London's St. Mary's Hospital on April 23, 2018.

*Mark Cuthbert/Getty*



Harry and Meghan were at the peak of their popularity on their wedding day at St. George's Chapel, Windsor, on May 19, 2018, though the vultures were already circling.

*Ben Stansall/Getty*



The Queen of the United Kingdom, Elizabeth II, shares a laugh with the Queen of Fashion, Anna Wintour, during London Fashion Week in February 2018.

*WPA Pool/Getty*



Charles and Camilla host Donald and Melania Trump during a June 2019 state visit. President Trump later tweeted about meeting “the Prince of Whales.”

*Chris Jackson/Getty*





The Queen and Prince Philip meet their great-grandson, and the first mixed-race child born to a senior royal, Archie, after his May 6, 2019, birth. “I cherish these times,” Harry later wrote.

*Chris Allerton/Sussex Royal*



Proud parents: Prince Louis makes his Trooping the Colour debut alongside siblings Princess Charlotte and Prince George in June 2019.

*Pool/Samir Hussein/Getty*



Prince Andrew's catastrophic November 2019 *Newsnight* interview, where the duke deflected and fumbled answers about his friendship with Jeffrey Epstein and underage sex allegations.

*Mark Harrison/BBC*



A painfully obvious divide as William and Kate turn cold shoulders to Harry and Meghan at the Commonwealth Day service on March 9, 2020—the Sussexes' final engagement as working royals.

*WPA Pool/Getty*





A united front: William and Kate took a break from their March 2020 royal tour of Ireland for a romantic stroll in front of the cameras.

*Pool/Samir Hussein/Getty*



After Harry's departure, the Palace were keen to show William and Charles—here at a medical rehabilitation center in February 2020—working in “lockstep” together.

*WPA Pool/Getty*



Strict pandemic protocols were still in place for the funeral of Prince Philip, with the Queen one of only thirty attendees for this solemn occasion on April 17, 2021.

*WPA Pool/Getty*





Harry and Meghan's March 2021 interview with Oprah was the first step in the couple sharing their side of the story. The Palace's response? "Recollections may vary."

*CBS/Harpo Productions—Joe Pugliese*





William and Harry briefly put their differences to one side in July 2021 to unveil a commemorative statue of their mother, Princess Diana, in the gardens of Kensington Palace.

*WPA Pool/Getty*



Charles, Camilla, William, and Kate sparkle at the premiere of *No Time to Die* at London's Royal Albert Hall in September 2021.

*Ian Gavan/Getty*



The Netflix docuseries *Harry & Meghan*—which debuted in December 2022—was the first project born of the Sussexes' deal with Netflix and gave a peek into their new life in California with Archie and Lilibet.

*Netflix*



*Netflix*



As the Queen slowed down, Prince Charles took on her monarchical duties bit by bit. Here he delivers the sovereign's speech at the opening of Parliament in May 2022.

*WPA Pool/Getty*





William and Kate's misjudged and colonial-tinged May 2022 tour of the Caribbean ended with Jamaica announcing their intent to cut ties with the British monarchy.

*Karwai Tang/Getty*



Harry and Meghan make a low-key appearance at the June 2022 Platinum Jubilee celebrating the Queen at St. Paul's Cathedral for a service of thanksgiving.

*WPA Pool/Getty*



During the Trooping the Colour parade to mark his great-grandmother's birthday in June 2022, Prince Louis lets his feelings about the very loud Royal Air Force flyover be known.

*Max Mumby/Indigo/Getty*





The last photo: Queen Elizabeth II awaits the new (and short-lived) Prime Minister Liz Truss at Balmoral Castle on September 6, 2022—two days before she passed.

*WPA Pool/Getty*



An uncomfortable reunion for the Wales and Sussex couples, who briefly came together after the death of the Queen to greet mourners on the Long Walk at Windsor Castle on September 10, 2022.

*WPA Pool/Getty*



Harry carried out a major publicity tour for his candid memoir, *Spare*, appearing on *The Late Show with Stephen Colbert* in January 2023. The book rocketed to the tops of bestseller lists worldwide.

*CBS*



A new normal: After Charles became King, egg-throwing hecklers (above, pictured in November 2022) and republican protestors became a familiar sight at the monarch's engagements.

*Chris Jackson/Getty*



A new normal: After Charles became King, egg-throwing hecklers and republican protestors (above, February 2023) became a familiar sight at the monarch's engagements.

*Arthur Edwards/Getty*





The celebrations for the coronation begin—a Buckingham Palace garden party in May 2023—with Edward and Sophie now thrust forward into prominent roles once destined for Harry and Meghan.

*Jonathan Brady/Getty*





Despite initial plans for a leaner coronation, King Charles III's May 6, 2023, crowning laid on full pomp and circumstance as the family, including Kate and Andrew, worked hard to stoke pride for a monarchy facing challenging times. The day also marked the triumph of Camilla's image rehabilitation as she finally became queen.

*Jonathan Brady/Getty*



*WPA Pool/Getty*





*Jeff Spicer/Getty*



*P van Katwijk/Getty*



With Charles's vision for a slimmed-down working lineup now a reality, a leaner June 2023 Trooping the Colour balcony appearance failed to evoke the usual annual buzz. Royal events fatigue? Or the sign of waning public support? Only time will tell.

*Neil Mockford/Getty*

## About the Author

**OMID SCOBIE** is a London-based journalist, broadcaster, and author. His *New York Times* bestselling biography of the Duke and Duchess of Sussex, *Finding Freedom*, remains one of the fastest-selling royal books of all time and made Scobie the most-talked-about royal correspondent of this generation. Today he remains an authoritative voice on the British royal family, which he has covered since 2011, and he can regularly be seen on U.S. television as a contributor on *Good Morning America* and ABC News, helping shape coverage of breaking royal news and major royal events. He also serves as an editor-at-large for *Harper's Bazaar*. An advocate for a more diverse, inclusive, and ethical media, Scobie is regularly invited to speak with journalism students and at industry events.

Discover great authors, exclusive offers, and more at [hc.com](https://www.hc.com).

# Bookperk

[Sign up for Bookperk](#) and get e-book bargains, sneak peeks, special offers, and more—delivered straight to your inbox.

**SIGN UP NOW**

# Copyright



ENDGAME. Copyright © 2023 by Omid Scobie. All rights reserved under International and Pan-American Copyright Conventions. By payment of the required fees, you have been granted the nonexclusive, nontransferable right to access and read the text of this e-book on-screen. No part of this text may be reproduced, transmitted, downloaded, decompiled, reverse-engineered, or stored in or introduced into any information storage and retrieval system, in any form or by any means, whether electronic or mechanical, now known or hereafter invented, without the express written permission of HarperCollins e-books.

*Cover design by Ploy Siripant*

*Cover photographs © Pascal Le Segretain/Getty Images (Prince William and Catherine, Duchess of Cambridge); © Max Mumby/Indigo/Getty Images (King Charles III and Camilla, Queen Consort); © Misan Harriman/The Duke and Duchess of Sussex/Backgrid (Prince Harry and Meghan, Duchess of Sussex); © Shutterstock*

*Cover photograph edit by Reena Ratan*

FIRST EDITION

Digital Edition NOVEMBER 2023 ISBN: 978-0-06-325868-6

Version 10112023

Print ISBN: 978-0-06-325866-2

# About the Publisher

## **Australia**

HarperCollins Publishers Australia Pty. Ltd.  
Level 13, 201 Elizabeth Street  
Sydney, NSW 2000, Australia  
[www.harpercollins.com.au](http://www.harpercollins.com.au)

## **Canada**

HarperCollins Publishers Ltd  
Bay Adelaide Centre, East Tower  
22 Adelaide Street West, 41st Floor  
Toronto, Ontario, M5H 4E3  
[www.harpercollins.ca](http://www.harpercollins.ca)

## **India**

HarperCollins India  
A 75, Sector 57  
Noida  
Uttar Pradesh 201 301  
[www.harpercollins.co.in](http://www.harpercollins.co.in)

## **New Zealand**

HarperCollins Publishers New Zealand  
Unit D1, 63 Apollo Drive  
Rosedale 0632  
Auckland, New Zealand  
[www.harpercollins.co.nz](http://www.harpercollins.co.nz)

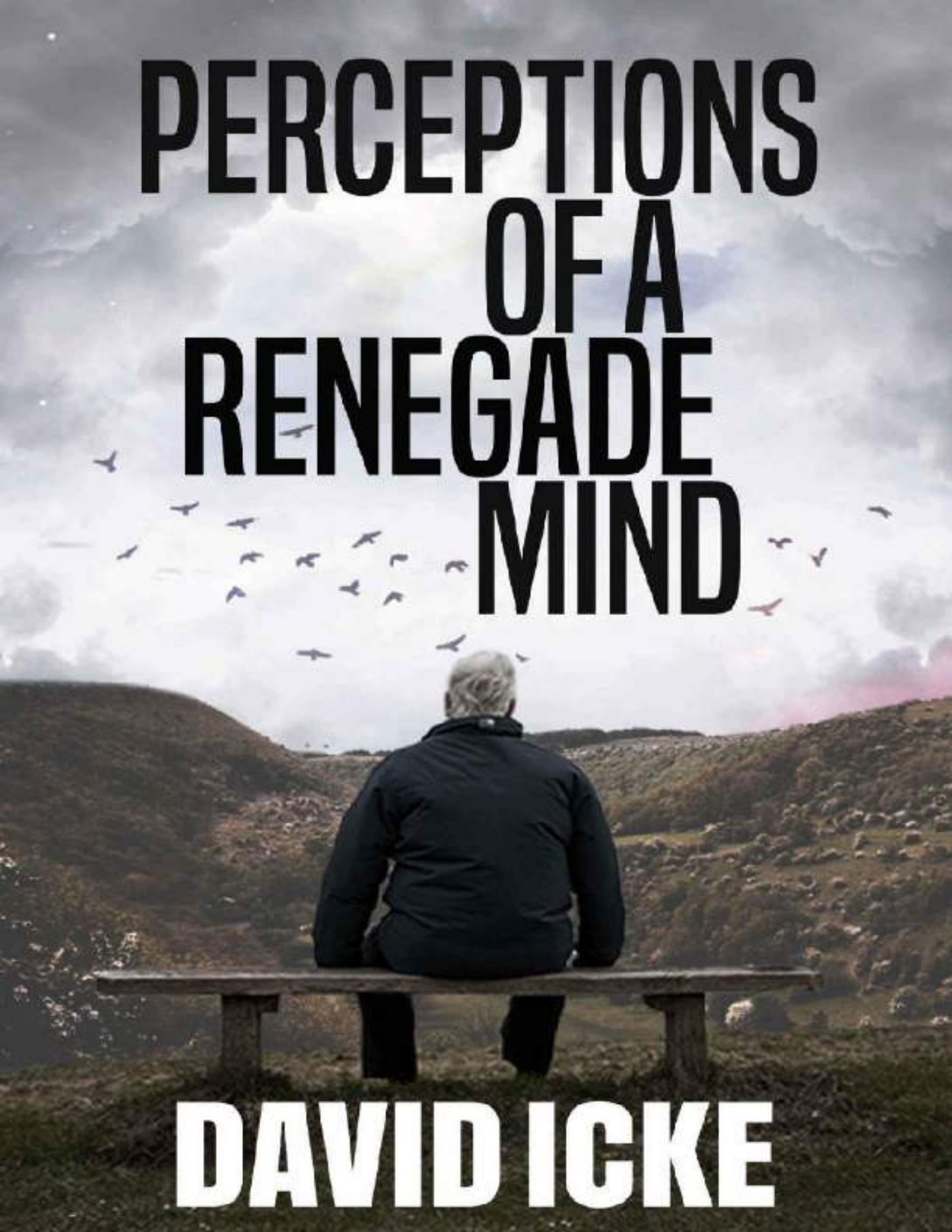
## **United Kingdom**

HarperCollins Publishers Ltd.  
1 London Bridge Street  
London SE1 9GF, UK  
[www.harpercollins.co.uk](http://www.harpercollins.co.uk)

**United States**  
HarperCollins Publishers Inc.  
195 Broadway  
New York, NY 10007  
[www.harpercollins.com](http://www.harpercollins.com)

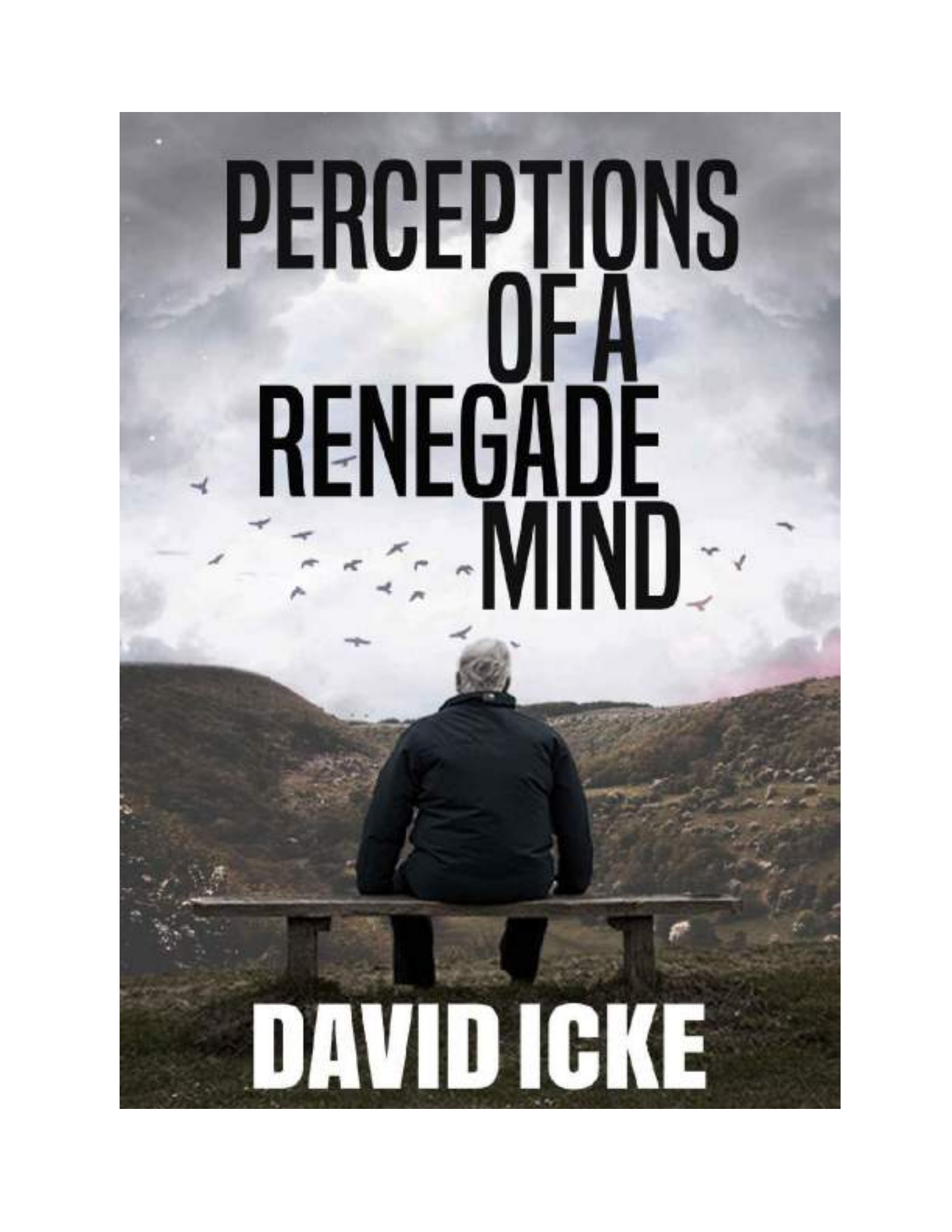


\* Counsellors of state are the five individuals (over the age of twenty-one) next in the line of succession and are authorized to carry out most of King Charles's official duties—such as attending Privy Council meetings and signing documents—if the monarch is absent due to illness or being abroad. They can't, however, dissolve Parliament, appoint a prime minister, or deal with Commonwealth matters. The current counsellors of state, in this order, are Queen Camilla, Prince William, Prince Harry, Prince Andrew, and Princess Beatrice.

A person with grey hair, wearing a dark jacket, is seen from behind, sitting on a wooden bench. They are looking out over a landscape of rolling hills covered in low-lying vegetation. The sky is filled with large, white, fluffy clouds, and a large flock of birds is flying in the air. The overall mood is contemplative and serene.

# PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND

**DAVID ICKE**



# PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND

**DAVID ICKE**

# PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND



ickonic  
publishing

First published in July 2021.

ickonic  
publishing

**New Enterprise House  
St Helens Street  
Derby  
DE1 3GY  
UK**

*email:* [gareth.icke@davidicke.com](mailto:gareth.icke@davidicke.com)

Copyright © 2021 David Icke

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form without permission from the Publisher, except for the quotation of brief passages in criticism

*Cover Design:* Gareth Icke  
*Book Design:* Neil Hague

**British Library Cataloguing-in  
Publication Data**

A catalogue record for this book is  
available from the British Library

eISBN 978-18384153-1-0

# PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND



**DAVID ICKE**

**Dedication:**

***To Freeeeedom!***

# **ICKONIC**

**THE ALTERNATIVE**

**NEW. DIFFERENT. REVOLUTIONARY**

**HUNDREDS OF CUTTING EDGE DOCUMENTARIES,  
FEATURE FILMS, SERIES & PODCASTS.**

**SIGN UP NOW AT [ICKONIC.COM](http://ICKONIC.COM)**



THE LIFE STORY OF DAVID ICKE

# RENEGADE

THE FEATURE LENGTH FILM



AVAILABLE NOW AT [DAVIDICKE.COM](http://DAVIDICKE.COM)

**Renegade:**

Adjective

‘Having rejected tradition: Unconventional.’

**Merriam-Webster Dictionary**

## **Acquiescence to tyranny is the death of the spirit**

You may be 38 years old, as I happen to be. And one day, some great opportunity stands before you and calls you to stand up for some great principle, some great issue, some great cause. And you refuse to do it because you are afraid ... You refuse to do it because you want to live longer ... You're afraid that you will lose your job, or you are afraid that you will be criticised or that you will lose your popularity, or you're afraid that somebody will stab you, or shoot at you or bomb your house; so you refuse to take the stand.

Well, you may go on and live until you are 90, but you're just as dead at 38 as you would be at 90. And the cessation of breathing in your life is but the belated announcement of an earlier death of the spirit.

**Martin Luther King**

**How the few control the many and always have – the many do  
whatever they're told**

'Forward, the Light Brigade!'  
Was there a man dismayed?  
Not though the soldier knew  
Someone had blundered.  
Theirs not to make reply,  
Theirs not to reason why,  
Theirs but to do and die.  
Into the valley of Death  
Rode the six hundred.

Cannon to right of them,  
Cannon to left of them,  
Cannon in front of them  
Volleyed and thundered;  
Stormed at with shot and shell,  
Boldly they rode and well,  
Into the jaws of Death,  
Into the mouth of hell  
Rode the six hundred

**Alfred Lord Tennyson (1809-1892)**

The mist is lifting slowly  
I can see the way ahead  
And I've left behind the empty streets  
That once inspired my life  
And the strength of the emotion  
Is like thunder in the air  
'Cos the promise that we made each other  
Haunts me to the end

The secret of your beauty  
And the mystery of your soul  
I've been searching for in everyone I meet  
And the times I've been mistaken  
It's impossible to say  
And the grass is growing  
Underneath our feet

The words that I remember  
From my childhood still are true  
That there's none so blind  
As those who will not see  
And to those who lack the courage  
And say it's dangerous to try  
Well they just don't know  
That love eternal will not be denied

I know you're out there somewhere  
Somewhere, somewhere  
I know you're out there somewhere

Somewhere you can hear my voice  
I know I'll find you somehow  
Somehow, somehow  
I know I'll find you somehow  
And somehow I'll return again to you

**The Moody Blues**

**Are you a gutless wonder - or a Renegade Mind?**

Monuments put from pen to paper,  
Turns me into a gutless wonder,  
And if you tolerate this,  
Then your children will be next.  
Gravity keeps my head down,  
Or is it maybe shame ...

**Manic Street Preachers**

Rise like lions after slumber  
In unvanquishable number.  
Shake your chains to earth like dew  
Which in sleep have fallen on you.  
Ye are many – they are few.

**Percy Shelley**

# Contents

|              |                                                   |
|--------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| CHAPTER 1    | 'I'm thinking' – Oh, but <i>are</i> you?          |
| CHAPTER 2    | Renegade perception                               |
| CHAPTER 3    | The Pushbacker sting                              |
| CHAPTER 4    | 'Covid': The calculated catastrophe               |
| CHAPTER 5    | There <i>is no</i> 'virus'                        |
| CHAPTER 6    | Sequence of deceit                                |
| CHAPTER 7    | War on your mind                                  |
| CHAPTER 8    | 'Reframing' insanity                              |
| CHAPTER 9    | We must have it? So what is it?                   |
| CHAPTER 10   | Human 2.0                                         |
| CHAPTER 11   | Who controls the Cult?                            |
| CHAPTER 12   | Escaping Wetiko                                   |
| POSTSCRIPT   |                                                   |
| APPENDIX     | Cowan-Kaufman-Morell Statement on Virus Isolation |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY |                                                   |
| INDEX        |                                                   |



## CHAPTER ONE

### **I'm thinking' – Oh, but *are* you?**

*Think for yourself and let others enjoy the privilege of doing so too*  
Voltaire

**F**rench-born philosopher, mathematician and scientist René Descartes became famous for his statement in Latin in the 17th century which translates into English as: 'I think, therefore I am.'

On the face of it that is true. Thought reflects perception and perception leads to both behaviour and self-identity. In that sense 'we' are what we think. But who or what is doing the thinking and is thinking the only route to perception? Clearly, as we shall see, 'we' are not always the source of 'our' perception, indeed with regard to humanity as a whole this is rarely the case; and thinking is far from the only means of perception. Thought is the village idiot compared with other expressions of consciousness that we all have the potential to access and tap into. This has to be true when we *are* those other expressions of consciousness which are infinite in nature. We have forgotten this, or, more to the point, been manipulated to forget.

These are not just the esoteric musings of the navel. The whole foundation of human control and oppression is control of perception. Once perception is hijacked then so is behaviour which is dictated by perception. Collective perception becomes collective behaviour and collective behaviour is what we call human society. Perception is all and those behind human control know that which is

why perception is the target 24/7 of the psychopathic manipulators that I call the Global Cult. They know that if they dictate perception they will dictate behaviour and collectively dictate the nature of human society. They are further aware that perception is formed from information received and if they control the circulation of information they will to a vast extent direct human behaviour. Censorship of information and opinion has become globally Nazi-like in recent years and never more blatantly than since the illusory 'virus pandemic' was triggered out of China in 2019 and across the world in 2020. Why have billions submitted to house arrest and accepted fascistic societies in a way they would have never believed possible? Those controlling the information spewing from government, mainstream media and Silicon Valley (all controlled by the same Global Cult networks) told them they were in danger from a 'deadly virus' and only by submitting to house arrest and conceding their most basic of freedoms could they and their families be protected. This monumental and provable lie became the *perception* of the billions and therefore the *behaviour* of the billions. In those few words you have the whole structure and modus operandi of human control. Fear is a perception – False Emotion Appearing Real – and fear is the currency of control. In short ... get them by the balls (or give them the impression that you have) and their hearts and minds will follow. Nothing grips the dangly bits and freezes the rear-end more comprehensively than fear.

## **World number 1**

There are two 'worlds' in what appears to be one 'world' and the prime difference between them is knowledge. First we have the mass of human society in which the population is maintained in coldly-calculated ignorance through control of information and the 'education' (indoctrination) system. That's all you really need to control to enslave billions in a perceptual delusion in which what are perceived to be *their* thoughts and opinions are ever-repeated mantras that the system has been downloading all their lives through 'education', media, science, medicine, politics and academia

in which the personnel and advocates are themselves overwhelmingly the perceptual products of the same repetition. Teachers and academics in general are processed by the same programming machine as everyone else, but unlike the great majority they never leave the 'education' program. It gripped them as students and continues to grip them as programmers of subsequent generations of students. The programmed become the programmers – the programmed programmers. The same can largely be said for scientists, doctors and politicians and not least because as the American writer Upton Sinclair said: 'It is difficult to get a man to understand something when his salary depends upon his not understanding it.' If your career and income depend on thinking the way the system demands then you will – bar a few free-minded exceptions – concede your mind to the Perceptual Mainframe that I call the Postage Stamp Consensus. This is a tiny band of perceived knowledge and possibility 'taught' (downloaded) in the schools and universities, pounded out by the mainstream media and on which all government policy is founded. Try thinking, and especially speaking and acting, outside of the 'box' of consensus and see what that does for your career in the Mainstream Everything which bullies, harasses, intimidates and ridicules the population into compliance. Here we have the simple structure which enslaves most of humanity in a perceptual prison cell for an entire lifetime and I'll go deeper into this process shortly. Most of what humanity is taught as fact is nothing more than programmed belief. American science fiction author Frank Herbert was right when he said: 'Belief can be manipulated. Only knowledge is dangerous.' In the 'Covid' age belief is promoted and knowledge is censored. It was always so, but never to the extreme of today.

## **World number 2**

A 'number 2' is slang for 'doing a poo' and how appropriate that is when this other 'world' is doing just that on humanity every minute of every day. World number 2 is a global network of secret societies and semi-secret groups dictating the direction of society via

governments, corporations and authorities of every kind. I have spent more than 30 years uncovering and exposing this network that I call the Global Cult and knowing its agenda is what has made my books so accurate in predicting current and past events. Secret societies are secret for a reason. They want to keep their hoarded knowledge to themselves and their chosen initiates and to hide it from the population which they seek through ignorance to control and subdue. The whole foundation of the division between World 1 and World 2 is *knowledge*. What number 1 knows number 2 must not. Knowledge they have worked so hard to keep secret includes (a) the agenda to enslave humanity in a centrally-controlled global dictatorship, and (b) the nature of reality and life itself. The latter (b) must be suppressed to allow the former (a) to prevail as I shall be explaining. The way the Cult manipulates and interacts with the population can be likened to a spider's web. The 'spider' sits at the centre in the shadows and imposes its will through the web with each strand represented in World number 2 by a secret society, satanic or semi-secret group, and in World number 1 – the world of the seen – by governments, agencies of government, law enforcement, corporations, the banking system, media conglomerates and Silicon Valley (Fig 1 overleaf). The spider and the web connect and coordinate all these organisations to pursue the same global outcome while the population sees them as individual entities working randomly and independently. At the level of the web governments *are* the banking system *are* the corporations *are* the media *are* Silicon Valley *are* the World Health Organization working from their inner cores as one unit. Apparently unconnected countries, corporations, institutions, organisations and people are on the *same team* pursuing the same global outcome. Strands in the web immediately around the spider are the most secretive and exclusive secret societies and their membership is emphatically restricted to the Cult inner-circle emerging through the generations from particular bloodlines for reasons I will come to. At the core of the core you would get them in a single room. That's how many people are dictating the direction of human society and its transformation

through the 'Covid' hoax and other means. As the web expands out from the spider we meet the secret societies that many people will be aware of – the Freemasons, Knights Templar, Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, the inner sanctum of the Jesuit Order, and such like. Note how many are connected to the Church of Rome and there is a reason for that. The Roman Church was established as a revamp, a rebranding, of the relocated 'Church' of Babylon and the Cult imposing global tyranny today can be tracked back to Babylon and Sumer in what is now Iraq.



**Figure 1:** The global web through which the few control the many. (Image Neil Hague.)

Inner levels of the web operate in the unseen away from the public eye and then we have what I call the cusp organisations located at the point where the hidden meets the seen. They include a series of satellite organisations answering to a secret society founded in London in the late 19th century called the Round Table and among them are the Royal Institute of International Affairs (UK, founded in 1920); Council on Foreign Relations (US, 1921); Bilderberg Group (worldwide, 1954); Trilateral Commission (US/worldwide, 1972); and the Club of Rome (worldwide, 1968) which was created to exploit environmental concerns to justify the centralisation of global power to 'save the planet'. The Club of Rome instigated with others the human-caused climate change hoax which has led to all the 'green

new deals' demanding that very centralisation of control. Cusp organisations, which include endless 'think tanks' all over the world, are designed to coordinate a single global policy between political and business leaders, intelligence personnel, media organisations and anyone who can influence the direction of policy in their own sphere of operation. Major players and regular attenders will know what is happening – or some of it – while others come and go and are kept overwhelmingly in the dark about the big picture. I refer to these cusp groupings as semi-secret in that they can be publicly identified, but what goes on at the inner-core is kept very much 'in house' even from most of their members and participants through a fiercely-imposed system of compartmentalisation. Only let them know what they need to know to serve your interests and no more. The structure of secret societies serves as a perfect example of this principle. Most Freemasons never get higher than the bottom three levels of 'degree' (degree of knowledge) when there are 33 official degrees of the Scottish Rite. Initiates only qualify for the next higher 'compartment' or degree if those at that level choose to allow them. Knowledge can be carefully assigned only to those considered 'safe'. I went to my local Freemason's lodge a few years ago when they were having an 'open day' to show how cuddly they were and when I chatted to some of them I was astonished at how little the rank and file knew even about the most ubiquitous symbols they use. The mushroom technique – keep them in the dark and feed them bullshit – applies to most people in the web as well as the population as a whole. Sub-divisions of the web mirror in theme and structure transnational corporations which have a headquarters somewhere in the world dictating to all their subsidiaries in different countries. Subsidiaries operate in their methodology and branding to the same centrally-dictated plan and policy in pursuit of particular ends. The Cult web functions in the same way. Each country has its own web as a subsidiary of the global one. They consist of networks of secret societies, semi-secret groups and bloodline families and their job is to impose the will of the spider and the global web in their particular country. Subsidiary networks control and manipulate the national political system, finance, corporations, media, medicine, etc. to

ensure that they follow the globally-dictated Cult agenda. These networks were the means through which the 'Covid' hoax could be played out with almost every country responding in the same way.

## **The 'Yessir' pyramid**

Compartmentalisation is the key to understanding how a tiny few can dictate the lives of billions when combined with a top-down sequence of imposition and acquiescence. The inner core of the Cult sits at the peak of the pyramidal hierarchy of human society (Fig 2 overleaf). It imposes its will – its agenda for the world – on the level immediately below which acquiesces to that imposition. This level then imposes the Cult will on the level below them which acquiesces and imposes on the next level. Very quickly we meet levels in the hierarchy that have no idea there even is a Cult, but the sequence of imposition and acquiescence continues down the pyramid in just the same way. 'I don't know why we are doing this but the order came from "on-high" and so we better just do it.' Alfred Lord Tennyson said of the cannon fodder levels in his poem *The Charge of the Light Brigade*: 'Theirs not to reason why; theirs but to do and die.' The next line says that 'into the valley of death rode the six hundred' and they died because they obeyed without question what their perceived 'superiors' told them to do. In the same way the population capitulated to 'Covid'. The whole hierarchical pyramid functions like this to allow the very few to direct the enormous many.

Eventually imposition-acquiescence-imposition-acquiescence comes down to the mass of the population at the foot of the pyramid. If they acquiesce to those levels of the hierarchy imposing on them (governments/law enforcement/doctors/media) a circuit is completed between the population and the handful of super-psychopaths in the Cult inner core at the top of the pyramid.

Without a circuit-breaking refusal to obey, the sequence of imposition and acquiescence allows a staggeringly few people to impose their will upon the entirety of humankind. We are looking at the very sequence that has subjugated billions since the start of 2020. Our freedom has not been taken from us. Humanity has given it

away. Fascists do not impose fascism because there are not enough of them. Fascism is imposed by the population acquiescing to fascism. Put another way allowing their perceptions to be programmed to the extent that leads to the population giving their freedom away by giving their perceptions – their mind – away. If this circuit is not broken by humanity ceasing to cooperate with their own enslavement then nothing can change. For that to happen people have to critically think and see through the lies and window dressing and then summon the backbone to act upon what they see. The Cult spends its days working to stop either happening and its methodology is systematic and highly detailed, but it can be overcome and that is what this book is all about.

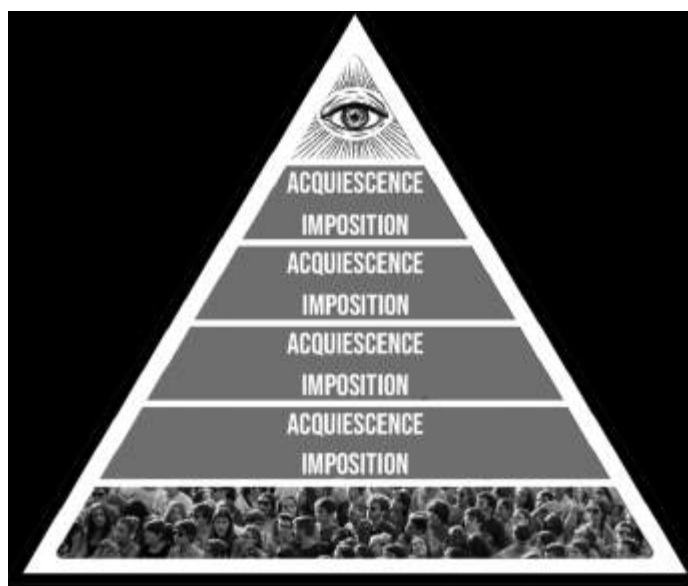


**Figure 2:** The simple sequence of imposition and compliance that allows a handful of people at the peak of the pyramid to dictate the lives of billions.

## **The Life Program**

Okay, back to world number 1 or the world of the 'masses'. Observe the process of what we call 'life' and it is a perceptual download from cradle to grave. The Cult has created a global structure in which perception can be programmed and the program continually topped-up with what appears to be constant confirmation that the program is indeed true reality. The important word here is 'appears'.



This is the structure, the fly-trap, the Postage Stamp Consensus or Perceptual Mainframe, which represents that incredibly narrow band of perceived possibility delivered by the 'education' system, mainstream media, science and medicine. From the earliest age the download begins with parents who have themselves succumbed to the very programming their children are about to go through. Most parents don't do this out of malevolence and mostly it is quite the opposite. They do what they believe is best for their children and that is what the program has told them is best. Within three or four years comes the major transition from parental programming to full-blown state (Cult) programming in school, college and university where perceptually-programmed teachers and academics pass on their programming to the next generations. Teachers who resist are soon marginalised and their careers ended while children who resist are called a problem child for whom Ritalin may need to be prescribed. A few years after entering the 'world' children are under the control of authority figures representing the state telling them when they have to be there, when they can leave and when they can speak, eat, even go to the toilet. This is calculated preparation for a lifetime of obeying authority in all its forms. Reflex-action fear of authority is instilled by authority from the start. Children soon learn the carrot and stick consequences of obeying or defying authority which is underpinned daily for the rest of their life. Fortunately I daydreamed through this crap and never obeyed authority simply because it told me to. This approach to my alleged 'betters' continues to this day. There can be consequences of pursuing open-minded freedom in a world of closed-minded conformity. I spent a lot of time in school corridors after being ejected from the classroom for not taking some of it seriously and now I spend a lot of time being ejected from Facebook, YouTube and Twitter. But I can tell you that being true to yourself and not compromising your self-respect is far more exhilarating than bowing to authority for authority's sake. You don't have to be a sheep to the shepherd (authority) and the sheep dog (fear of not obeying authority).

The perceptual download continues throughout the formative years in school, college and university while script-reading 'teachers', 'academics' 'scientists', 'doctors' and 'journalists' insist that ongoing generations must be as programmed as they are. Accept the program or you will not pass your 'exams' which confirm your 'degree' of programming. It is tragic to think that many parents pressure their offspring to work hard at school to download the program and qualify for the next stage at college and university. The late, great, American comedian George Carlin said: 'Here's a bumper sticker I'd like to see: We are proud parents of a child who has resisted his teachers' attempts to break his spirit and bend him to the will of his corporate masters.' Well, the best of luck finding many of those, George. Then comes the moment to leave the formal programming years in academia and enter the 'adult' world of work. There you meet others in your chosen or prescribed arena who went through the same Postage Stamp Consensus program before you did. There is therefore overwhelming agreement between almost everyone on the basic foundations of Postage Stamp reality and the rejection, even contempt, of the few who have a mind of their own and are prepared to use it. This has two major effects. Firstly, the consensus confirms to the programmed that their download is really how things are. I mean, everyone knows that, right? Secondly, the arrogance and ignorance of Postage Stamp adherents ensure that anyone questioning the program will have unpleasant consequences for seeking their own truth and not picking their perceptions from the shelf marked: 'Things you must believe without question and if you don't you're a dangerous lunatic conspiracy theorist and a harebrained nutter'.

Every government, agency and corporation is founded on the same Postage Stamp prison cell and you can see why so many people believe the same thing while calling it their own 'opinion'. Fusion of governments and corporations in pursuit of the same agenda was the definition of fascism described by Italian dictator Benito Mussolini. The pressure to conform to perceptual norms downloaded for a lifetime is incessant and infiltrates society right

down to family groups that become censors and condemners of their own 'black sheep' for not, ironically, being sheep. We have seen an explosion of that in the 'Covid' era. Cult-owned global media unleashes its propaganda all day every day in support of the Postage Stamp and targets with abuse and ridicule anyone in the public eye who won't bend their mind to the will of the tyranny. Any response to this is denied (certainly in my case). They don't want to give a platform to expose official lies. Cult-owned-and-created Internet giants like Facebook, Google, YouTube and Twitter delete you for having an unapproved opinion. Facebook boasts that its AI censors delete 97-percent of 'hate speech' before anyone even reports it. Much of that 'hate speech' will simply be an opinion that Facebook and its masters don't want people to see. Such perceptual oppression is widely known as fascism. Even Facebook executive Benny Thomas, a 'CEO Global Planning Lead', said in comments secretly recorded by investigative journalism operation Project Veritas that Facebook is 'too powerful' and should be broken up:

I mean, no king in history has been the ruler of two billion people, but Mark Zuckerberg is ... And he's 36. That's too much for a 36-year-old ... You should not have power over two billion people. I just think that's wrong.

Thomas said Facebook-owned platforms like Instagram, Oculus, and WhatsApp needed to be separate companies. 'It's too much power when they're all one together'. That's the way the Cult likes it, however. We have an executive of a Cult organisation in Benny Thomas that doesn't know there is a Cult such is the compartmentalisation. Thomas said that Facebook and Google 'are no longer companies, they're countries'. Actually they are more powerful than countries on the basis that if you control information you control perception and control human society.

## **I love my oppressor**

Another expression of this psychological trickery is for those who realise they are being pressured into compliance to eventually

convince themselves to believe the official narratives to protect their self-respect from accepting the truth that they have succumbed to meek and subservient compliance. Such people become some of the most vehement defenders of the system. You can see them everywhere screaming abuse at those who prefer to think for themselves and by doing so reminding the compliers of their own capitulation to conformity. 'You are talking dangerous nonsense you Covidiot!!' Are you trying to convince me or yourself? It is a potent form of Stockholm syndrome which is defined as: 'A psychological condition that occurs when a victim of abuse identifies and attaches, or bonds, positively with their abuser.' An example is hostages bonding and even 'falling in love' with their kidnappers. The syndrome has been observed in domestic violence, abused children, concentration camp inmates, prisoners of war and many and various Satanic cults. These are some traits of Stockholm syndrome listed at [goodtherapy.org](http://goodtherapy.org):

- Positive regard towards perpetrators of abuse or captor [see 'Covid'].
- Failure to cooperate with police and other government authorities when it comes to holding perpetrators of abuse or kidnapping accountable [or in the case of 'Covid' cooperating with the police to enforce and defend their captors' demands].
- Little or no effort to escape [see 'Covid'].
- Belief in the goodness of the perpetrators or kidnappers [see 'Covid'].
- Appeasement of captors. This is a manipulative strategy for maintaining one's safety. As victims get rewarded – perhaps with less abuse or even with life itself – their appeasing behaviours are reinforced [see 'Covid'].
- Learned helplessness. This can be akin to 'if you can't beat 'em, join 'em'. As the victims fail to escape the abuse or captivity, they may start giving up and soon realize it's just easier for everyone if they acquiesce all their power to their captors [see 'Covid'].

- Feelings of pity toward the abusers, believing they are actually victims themselves. Because of this, victims may go on a crusade or mission to 'save' [protect] their abuser [see the venom unleashed on those challenging the official 'Covid' narrative].
- Unwillingness to learn to detach from their perpetrators and heal. In essence, victims may tend to be less loyal to themselves than to their abuser [ *definitely* see 'Covid'].

Ponder on those traits and compare them with the behaviour of great swathes of the global population who have defended governments and authorities which have spent every minute destroying their lives and livelihoods and those of their children and grandchildren since early 2020 with fascistic lockdowns, house arrest and employment deletion to 'protect' them from a 'deadly virus' that their abusers' perceptually created to bring about this very outcome. We are looking at mass Stockholm syndrome. All those that agree to concede their freedom will believe those perceptions are originating in their own independent 'mind' when in fact by conceding their reality to Stockholm syndrome they have by definition conceded any independence of mind. Listen to the 'opinions' of the acquiescing masses in this 'Covid' era and what gushes forth is the repetition of the official version of everything delivered unprocessed, unfiltered and unquestioned. The whole programming dynamic works this way. I must be free because I'm told that I am and so I think that I am.

You can see what I mean with the chapter theme of 'I'm thinking – Oh, but *are* you?' The great majority are not thinking, let alone for themselves. They are repeating what authority has told them to believe which allows them to be controlled. Weaving through this mentality is the fear that the 'conspiracy theorists' are right and this again explains the often hysterical abuse that ensues when you dare to contest the official narrative of anything. Denial is the mechanism of hiding from yourself what you don't want to be true. Telling people what they want to hear is easy, but it's an infinitely greater challenge to tell them what they would rather not be happening.

One is akin to pushing against an open door while the other is met with vehement resistance no matter what the scale of evidence. I don't want it to be true so I'll convince myself that it's not. Examples are everywhere from the denial that a partner is cheating despite all the signs to the reflex-action rejection of any idea that world events in which country after country act in exactly the same way are centrally coordinated. To accept the latter is to accept that a force of unspeakable evil is working to destroy your life and the lives of your children with nothing too horrific to achieve that end. Who the heck wants that to be true? But if we don't face reality the end is duly achieved and the consequences are far worse and ongoing than breaking through the walls of denial today with the courage to make a stand against tyranny.

### **Connect the dots – but how?**

A crucial aspect of perceptual programming is to portray a world in which everything is random and almost nothing is connected to anything else. Randomness cannot be coordinated by its very nature and once you perceive events as random the idea they could be connected is waved away as the rantings of the tinfoil-hat brigade. You can't plan and coordinate random you idiot! No, you can't, but you can hide the coldly-calculated and long-planned behind the *illusion* of randomness. A foundation manifestation of the Renegade Mind is to scan reality for patterns that connect the apparently random and turn pixels and dots into pictures. This is the way I work and have done so for more than 30 years. You look for similarities in people, modus operandi and desired outcomes and slowly, then ever quicker, the picture forms. For instance: There would seem to be no connection between the 'Covid pandemic' hoax and the human-caused global-warming hoax and yet they are masks (appropriately) on the same face seeking the same outcome. Those pushing the global warming myth through the Club of Rome and other Cult agencies are driving the lies about 'Covid' – Bill Gates is an obvious one, but they are endless. Why would the same people be involved in both when they are clearly not connected? Oh, but they

are. Common themes with personnel are matched by common goals. The 'solutions' to both 'problems' are centralisation of global power to impose the will of the few on the many to 'save' humanity from 'Covid' and save the planet from an 'existential threat' (we need 'zero Covid' and 'zero carbon emissions'). These, in turn, connect with the 'dot' of globalisation which was coined to describe the centralisation of global power in every area of life through incessant political and corporate expansion, trading blocks and superstates like the European Union. If you are the few and you want to control the many you have to centralise power and decision-making. The more you centralise power the more power the few at the centre will have over the many; and the more that power is centralised the more power those at the centre have to centralise even quicker. The momentum of centralisation gets faster and faster which is exactly the process we have witnessed. In this way the hoaxed 'pandemic' and the fakery of human-caused global warming serve the interests of globalisation and the seizure of global power in the hands of the Cult inner-circle which is behind 'Covid', 'climate change' and globalisation. At this point random 'dots' become a clear and obvious picture or pattern.

Klaus Schwab, the classic Bond villain who founded the Cult's Gates-funded World Economic Forum, published a book in 2020, *The Great Reset*, in which he used the 'problem' of 'Covid' to justify a total transformation of human society to 'save' humanity from 'climate change'. Schwab said: 'The pandemic represents a rare but narrow window of opportunity to reflect, reimagine, and reset our world.' What he didn't mention is that the Cult he serves is behind both hoaxes as I show in my book *The Answer*. He and the Cult don't have to reimagine the world. They know precisely what they want and that's why they destroyed human society with 'Covid' to 'build back better' in their grand design. Their job is not to imagine, but to get humanity to imagine and agree with their plans while believing it's all random. It must be pure coincidence that 'The Great Reset' has long been the Cult's code name for the global imposition of fascism and replaced previous code-names of the 'New World

Order' used by Cult frontmen like Father George Bush and the 'New Order of the Ages' which emerged from Freemasonry and much older secret societies. New Order of the Ages appears on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States as 'Novus ordo seclorum' underneath the Cult symbol used since way back of the pyramid and all seeing-eye (Fig 3). The pyramid is the hierarchy of human control headed by the illuminated eye that symbolises the force behind the Cult which I will expose in later chapters. The term 'Annuit Coeptis' translates as 'He favours our undertaking'. We are told the 'He' is the Christian god, but 'He' is not as I will be explaining.



**Figure 3:** The all-seeing eye of the Cult 'god' on the Freemason-designed Great Seal of the United States and also on the dollar bill.

## Having you on

Two major Cult techniques of perceptual manipulation that relate to all this are what I have called since the 1990s Problem-Reaction-Solution (PRS) and the Totalitarian Tiptoe (TT). They can be uncovered by the inquiring mind with a simple question: Who benefits? The answer usually identifies the perpetrators of a given action or happening through the concept of 'he who most benefits from a crime is the one most likely to have committed it'. The Latin 'Cue bono?' – Who benefits? – is widely attributed to the Roman orator and statesman Marcus Tullius Cicero. No wonder it goes back so far when the concept has been relevant to human behaviour since



history was recorded. Problem-Reaction-Solution is the technique used to manipulate us every day by covertly creating a problem (or the illusion of one) and offering the solution to the problem (or the illusion of one). In the first phase you create the problem and blame someone or something else for why it has happened. This may relate to a financial collapse, terrorist attack, war, global warming or pandemic, anything in fact that will allow you to impose the 'solution' to change society in the way you desire at that time. The 'problem' doesn't have to be real. PRS is manipulation of perception and all you need is the population to believe the problem is real. Human-caused global warming and the 'Covid pandemic' only have to be *perceived* to be real for the population to accept the 'solutions' of authority. I refer to this technique as NO-Problem-Reaction-Solution. Billions did not meekly accept house arrest from early 2020 because there was a real deadly 'Covid pandemic' but because they perceived – believed – that to be the case. The antidote to Problem-Reaction-Solution is to ask who benefits from the proposed solution. Invariably it will be anyone who wants to justify more control through deletion of freedom and centralisation of power and decision-making.

The two world wars were Problem-Reaction-Solutions that transformed and realigned global society. Both were manipulated into being by the Cult as I have detailed in books since the mid-1990s. They dramatically centralised global power, especially World War Two, which led to the United Nations and other global bodies thanks to the overt and covert manipulations of the Rockefeller family and other Cult bloodlines like the Rothschilds. The UN is a stalking horse for full-blown world government that I will come to shortly. The land on which the UN building stands in New York was donated by the Rockefellers and the same Cult family was behind Big Pharma scalpel and drug 'medicine' and the creation of the World Health Organization as part of the UN. They have been stalwarts of the eugenics movement and funded Hitler's race-purity expert' Ernst Rudin. The human-caused global warming hoax has been orchestrated by the Club of Rome through the UN which is

manufacturing both the 'problem' through its Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change and imposing the 'solution' through its Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030 which demand the total centralisation of global power to 'save the world' from a climate hoax the United Nations is itself perpetrating. What a small world the Cult can be seen to be particularly among the inner circles. The bedfellow of Problem-Reaction-Solution is the Totalitarian Tiptoe which became the Totalitarian Sprint in 2020. The technique is fashioned to hide the carefully-coordinated behind the cover of apparently random events. You start the sequence at 'A' and you know you are heading for 'Z'. You don't want people to know that and each step on the journey is presented as a random happening while all the steps strung together lead in the same direction. The speed may have quickened dramatically in recent times, but you can still see the incremental approach of the Tiptoe in the case of 'Covid' as each new imposition takes us deeper into fascism. Tell people they have to do this or that to get back to 'normal', then this and this and this. With each new demand adding to the ones that went before the population's freedom is deleted until it disappears. The spider wraps its web around the flies more comprehensively with each new diktat. I'll highlight this in more detail when I get to the 'Covid' hoax and how it has been pulled off. Another prime example of the Totalitarian Tiptoe is how the Cult-created European Union went from a 'free-trade zone' to a centralised bureaucratic dictatorship through the Tiptoe of incremental centralisation of power until nations became mere administrative units for Cult-owned dark suits in Brussels.

The antidote to ignorance is knowledge which the Cult seeks vehemently to deny us, but despite the systematic censorship to that end the Renegade Mind can overcome this by vociferously seeking out the facts no matter the impediments put in the way. There is also a method of thinking and perceiving – *knowing* – that doesn't even need names, dates, place-type facts to identify the patterns that reveal the story. I'll get to that in the final chapter. All you need to know about the manipulation of human society and to what end is still out there – *at the time of writing* – in the form of books, videos

and websites for those that really want to breach the walls of programmed perception. To access this knowledge requires the abandonment of the mainstream media as a source of information in the awareness that this is owned and controlled by the Cult and therefore promotes mass perceptions that suit the Cult. Mainstream media lies all day, every day. That is its function and very reason for being. Where it does tell the truth, here and there, is only because the truth and the Cult agenda very occasionally coincide. If you look for fact and insight to the BBC, CNN and virtually all the rest of them you are asking to be conned and perceptually programmed.

### **Know the outcome and you'll see the journey**

Events seem random when you have no idea where the world is being taken. Once you do the random becomes the carefully planned. Know the outcome and you'll see the journey is a phrase I have been using for a long time to give context to daily happenings that appear unconnected. Does a problem, or illusion of a problem, trigger a proposed 'solution' that further drives society in the direction of the outcome? Invariably the answer will be yes and the random – *abracadabra* – becomes the clearly coordinated. So what is this outcome that unlocks the door to a massively expanded understanding of daily events? I will summarise its major aspects – the fine detail is in my other books – and those new to this information will see that the world they thought they were living in is a very different place. The foundation of the Cult agenda is the incessant centralisation of power and all such centralisation is ultimately in pursuit of Cult control on a global level. I have described for a long time the planned world structure of top-down dictatorship as the Hunger Games Society. The term obviously comes from the movie series which portrayed a world in which a few living in military-protected hi-tech luxury were the overlords of a population condemned to abject poverty in isolated 'sectors' that were not allowed to interact. 'Covid' lockdowns and travel bans anyone? The 'Hunger Games' pyramid of structural control has the inner circle of the Cult at the top with pretty much the entire

population at the bottom under their control through dependency for survival on the Cult. The whole structure is planned to be protected and enforced by a military-police state ([Fig 4](#)).

Here you have the reason for the global lockdowns of the fake pandemic to coldly destroy independent incomes and livelihoods and make everyone dependent on the 'state' (the Cult that controls the 'states'). I have warned in my books for many years about the plan to introduce a 'guaranteed income' – a barely survivable pittance – designed to impose dependency when employment was destroyed by AI technology and now even more comprehensively at great speed by the 'Covid' scam. Once the pandemic was played and lockdown consequences began to delete independent income the authorities began to talk right on cue about the need for a guaranteed income and a 'Great Reset'. Guaranteed income will be presented as benevolent governments seeking to help a desperate people – desperate as a direct result of actions of the same governments. The truth is that such payments are a trap. You will only get them if you do exactly what the authorities demand including mass vaccination (genetic manipulation). We have seen this theme already in Australia where those dependent on government benefits have them reduced if parents don't agree to have their children vaccinated according to an insane health-destroying government-dictated schedule. Calculated economic collapse applies to governments as well as people. The Cult wants rid of countries through the creation of a world state with countries broken up into regions ruled by a world government and super states like the European Union. Countries must be bankrupted, too, to this end and it's being achieved by the trillions in 'rescue packages' and furlough payments, trillions in lost taxation, and money-no-object spending on 'Covid' including constant all-medium advertising (programming) which has made the media dependent on government for much of its income. The day of reckoning is coming – as planned – for government spending and given that it has been made possible by printing money and not by production/taxation there is inflation on the way that has the

potential to wipe out monetary value. In that case there will be no need for the Cult to steal your money. It just won't be worth anything (see the German Weimar Republic before the Nazis took over). Many have been okay with lockdowns while getting a percentage of their income from so-called furlough payments without having to work. Those payments are dependent, however, on people having at least a theoretical job with a business considered non-essential and ordered to close. As these business go under because they are closed by lockdown after lockdown the furlough stops and it will for everyone eventually. Then what? The 'then what?' is precisely the idea.



**Figure 4:** The Hunger Games Society structure I have long warned was planned and now the 'Covid' hoax has made it possible. This is the real reason for lockdowns.

## Hired hands

Between the Hunger Games Cult elite and the dependent population is planned to be a vicious military-police state (a fusion of the two into one force). This has been in the making for a long time with police looking ever more like the military and carrying weapons to match. The pandemic scam has seen this process accelerate so fast as

lockdown house arrest is brutally enforced by carefully recruited fascist minds and gormless system-servers. The police and military are planned to merge into a centrally-directed world army in a global structure headed by a world government which wouldn't be elected even by the election fixes now in place. The world army is not planned even to be human and instead wars would be fought, primarily against the population, using robot technology controlled by artificial intelligence. I have been warning about this for decades and now militaries around the world are being transformed by this very AI technology. The global regime that I describe is a particular form of fascism known as a technocracy in which decisions are not made by clueless and co-opted politicians but by unelected technocrats – scientists, engineers, technologists and bureaucrats. Cult-owned-and-controlled Silicon Valley giants are examples of technocracy and they already have far more power to direct world events than governments. They are with their censorship *selecting* governments. I know that some are calling the 'Great Reset' a Marxist communist takeover, but fascism and Marxism are different labels for the same tyranny. Tell those who lived in fascist Germany and Stalinist Russia that there was a difference in the way their freedom was deleted and their lives controlled. I could call it a fascist technocracy or a Marxist technocracy and they would be equally accurate. The Hunger Games society with its world government structure would oversee a world army, world central bank and single world cashless currency imposing its will on a microchipped population ([Fig 5](#)). Scan its different elements and see how the illusory pandemic is forcing society in this very direction at great speed. Leaders of 23 countries and the World Health Organization (WHO) backed the idea in March, 2021, of a global treaty for 'international cooperation' in 'health emergencies' and nations should 'come together as a global community for peaceful cooperation that extends beyond this crisis'. Cut the Orwellian bullshit and this means another step towards global government. The plan includes a cashless digital money system that I first warned about in 1993. Right at the start of 'Covid' the deeply corrupt Tedros

Adhanom Ghebreyesus, the crooked and merely gofer 'head' of the World Health Organization, said it was possible to catch the 'virus' by touching cash and it was better to use cashless means. The claim was ridiculous nonsense and like the whole 'Covid' mind-trick it was nothing to do with 'health' and everything to do with pushing every aspect of the Cult agenda. As a result of the Tedros lie the use of cash has plummeted. The Cult script involves a single world digital currency that would eventually be technologically embedded in the body. China is a massive global centre for the Cult and if you watch what is happening there you will know what is planned for everywhere. The Chinese government is developing a digital currency which would allow fines to be deducted immediately via AI for anyone caught on camera breaking its fantastic list of laws and the money is going to be programmable with an expiry date to ensure that no one can accrue wealth except the Cult and its operatives.



**Figure 5:** The structure of global control the Cult has been working towards for so long and this has been enormously advanced by the 'Covid' illusion.

## **Serfdom is so smart**

The Cult plan is far wider, extreme, and more comprehensive than even most conspiracy researchers appreciate and I will come to the true depths of deceit and control in the chapters 'Who controls the

Cult?’ and ‘Escaping Wetiko’. Even the world that we know is crazy enough. We are being deluged with ever more sophisticated and controlling technology under the heading of ‘smart’. We have smart televisions, smart meters, smart cards, smart cars, smart driving, smart roads, smart pills, smart patches, smart watches, smart skin, smart borders, smart pavements, smart streets, smart cities, smart communities, smart environments, smart growth, smart planet ... smart *everything* around us. Smart technologies and methods of operation are designed to interlock to create a global Smart Grid connecting the entirety of human society including human minds to create a centrally-dictated ‘hive’ mind. ‘Smart cities’ is code for densely-occupied megacities of total surveillance and control through AI. Ever more destructive frequency communication systems like 5G have been rolled out without any official testing for health and psychological effects (colossal). 5G/6G/7G systems are needed to run the Smart Grid and each one becomes more destructive of body and mind. Deleting independent income is crucial to forcing people into these AI-policed prisons by ending private property ownership (except for the Cult elite). The Cult’s Great Reset now openly foresees a global society in which no one will own any possessions and everything will be rented while the Cult would own literally everything under the guise of government and corporations. The aim has been to use the lockdowns to destroy sources of income on a mass scale and when the people are destitute and in unrepayable amounts of debt (problem) Cult assets come forward with the pledge to write-off debt in return for handing over all property and possessions (solution). Everything – literally everything including people – would be connected to the Internet via AI. I was warning years ago about the coming Internet of Things (IoT) in which all devices and technology from your car to your fridge would be plugged into the Internet and controlled by AI. Now we are already there with much more to come. The next stage is the Internet of Everything (IoE) which is planned to include the connection of AI to the human brain and body to replace the human mind with a centrally-controlled AI mind. Instead of perceptions



being manipulated through control of information and censorship those perceptions would come direct from the Cult through AI. What do you think? You think whatever AI decides that you think. In human terms there would be no individual 'think' any longer. Too incredible? The ravings of a lunatic? Not at all. Cult-owned crazies in Silicon Valley have been telling us the plan for years without explaining the real motivation and calculated implications. These include Google executive and 'futurist' Ray Kurzweil who highlights the year 2030 for when this would be underway. He said:

Our thinking ... will be a hybrid of biological and non-biological thinking ... humans will be able to extend their limitations and 'think in the cloud' ... We're going to put gateways to the cloud in our brains ... We're going to gradually merge and enhance ourselves ... In my view, that's the nature of being human – we transcend our limitations.

As the technology becomes vastly superior to what we are then the small proportion that is still human gets smaller and smaller and smaller until it's just utterly negligible.

The sales-pitch of Kurzweil and Cult-owned Silicon Valley is that this would make us 'super-human' when the real aim is to make us post-human and no longer 'human' in the sense that we have come to know. The entire global population would be connected to AI and become the centrally-controlled 'hive-mind' of externally-delivered perceptions. The Smart Grid being installed to impose the Cult's will on the world is being constructed to allow particular locations – even one location – to control the whole global system. From these prime control centres, which absolutely include China and Israel, anything connected to the Internet would be switched on or off and manipulated at will. Energy systems could be cut, communication via the Internet taken down, computer-controlled driverless autonomous vehicles driven off the road, medical devices switched off, the potential is limitless given how much AI and Internet connections now run human society. We have seen nothing yet if we allow this to continue. Autonomous vehicle makers are working with law enforcement to produce cars designed to automatically pull over if they detect a police or emergency vehicle flashing from up to 100 feet away. At a police stop the car would be unlocked and the

window rolled down automatically. Vehicles would only take you where the computer (the state) allowed. The end of petrol vehicles and speed limiters on all new cars in the UK and EU from 2022 are steps leading to electric computerised transport over which ultimately you have no control. The picture is far bigger even than the Cult global network or web and that will become clear when I get to the nature of the 'spider'. There is a connection between all these happenings and the instigation of DNA-manipulating 'vaccines' (which aren't 'vaccines') justified by the 'Covid' hoax. That connection is the unfolding plan to transform the human body from a biological to a synthetic biological state and this is why synthetic biology is such a fast-emerging discipline of mainstream science. 'Covid vaccines' are infusing self-replicating synthetic genetic material into the cells to cumulatively take us on the Totalitarian Tiptoe from Human 1.0 to the synthetic biological Human 2.0 which will be physically and perceptually attached to the Smart Grid to one hundred percent control every thought, perception and deed. Humanity needs to wake up and *fast*.

This is the barest explanation of where the 'outcome' is planned to go but it's enough to see the journey happening all around us. Those new to this information will already see 'Covid' in a whole new context. I will add much more detail as we go along, but for the minutiae evidence see my mega-works, *The Answer*, *The Trigger* and *Everything You Need to Know But Have Never Been Told*.

Now – how does a Renegade Mind see the 'world'?

## CHAPTER TWO

### Renegade Perception

*It is one thing to be clever and another to be wise*

George R.R. Martin

A simple definition of the difference between a programmed mind and a Renegade Mind would be that one sees only dots while the other connects them to see the picture. Reading reality with accuracy requires the observer to (a) know the planned outcome and (b) realise that everything, but *everything*, is connected.

The entirety of infinite reality is connected – that's its very nature – and with human society an expression of infinite reality the same must apply. Simple cause and effect is a connection. The effect is triggered by the cause and the effect then becomes the cause of another effect. Nothing happens in isolation because it *can't*. Life in whatever reality is simple choice and consequence. We make choices and these lead to consequences. If we don't like the consequences we can make different choices and get different consequences which lead to other choices and consequences. The choice and the consequence are not only connected they are indivisible. You can't have one without the other as an old song goes. A few cannot control the world unless those being controlled allow that to happen – cause and effect, choice and consequence. Control – who has it and who doesn't – is a two-way process, a symbiotic relationship, involving the controller and controlled. 'They took my freedom away!!' Well, yes, but you also gave it to them. Humanity is

subjected to mass control because humanity has acquiesced to that control. This is all cause and effect and literally a case of give and take. In the same way world events of every kind are connected and the Cult works incessantly to sell the illusion of the random and coincidental to maintain the essential (to them) perception of dots that hide the picture. Renegade Minds know this and constantly scan the world for patterns of connection. This is absolutely pivotal in understanding the happenings in the world and without that perspective clarity is impossible. First you know the planned outcome and then you identify the steps on the journey – the day-by-day apparently random which, when connected in relation to the outcome, no longer appear as individual events, but as the proverbial *chain* of events leading in the same direction. I'll give you some examples:

### **Political puppet show**

We are told to believe that politics is 'adversarial' in that different parties with different beliefs engage in an endless tussle for power. There may have been some truth in that up to a point – and only a point – but today divisions between 'different' parties are rhetorical not ideological. Even the rhetorical is fusing into one-speak as the parties eject any remaining free thinkers while others succumb to the ever-gathering intimidation of anyone with the 'wrong' opinion. The Cult is not a new phenomenon and can be traced back thousands of years as my books have documented. Its intergenerational initiatives have been manipulating events with increasing effect the more that global power has been centralised. In ancient times the Cult secured control through the system of monarchy in which 'special' bloodlines (of which more later) demanded the right to rule as kings and queens simply by birthright and by vanquishing others who claimed the same birthright. There came a time, however, when people had matured enough to see the unfairness of such tyranny and demanded a say in who governed them. Note the word – *governed* them. Not served them – *governed* them, hence government defined as 'the political direction and control exercised over the

actions of the members, citizens, or inhabitants of communities, societies, and states; direction of the affairs of a state, community, etc.' Governments exercise control over rather than serve just like the monarchies before them. Bizarrely there are still countries like the United Kingdom which are ruled by a monarch *and* a government that officially answers to the monarch. The UK head of state and that of Commonwealth countries such as Canada, Australia and New Zealand is 'selected' by who in a *single family* had unprotected sex with whom and in what order. Pinch me it can't be true. Ouch! Shit, it is. The demise of monarchies in most countries offered a potential vacuum in which some form of free and fair society could arise and the Cult had that base covered. Monarchies had served its interests but they couldn't continue in the face of such widespread opposition and, anyway, replacing a 'royal' dictatorship that people could see with a dictatorship 'of the people' hiding behind the concept of 'democracy' presented far greater manipulative possibilities and ways of hiding coordinated tyranny behind the illusion of 'freedom'.

Democracy is quite wrongly defined as government selected by the population. This is not the case at all. It is government selected by *some* of the population (and then only in theory). This 'some' doesn't even have to be the majority as we have seen so often in first-past-the-post elections in which the so-called majority party wins fewer votes than the 'losing' parties combined. Democracy can give total power to a party in government from a minority of the votes cast. It's a sleight of hand to sell tyranny as freedom. Seventy-four million Trump-supporting Americans didn't vote for the 'Democratic' Party of Joe Biden in the distinctly dodgy election in 2020 and yet far from acknowledging the wishes and feelings of that great percentage of American society the Cult-owned Biden government set out from day one to destroy them and their right to a voice and opinion. Empty shell Biden and his Cult handlers said they were doing this to 'protect democracy'. Such is the level of lunacy and sickness to which politics has descended. Connect the dots and relate them to the desired outcome – a world government run by self-appointed technocrats and no longer even elected

politicians. While operating through its political agents in government the Cult is at the same time encouraging public disdain for politicians by putting idiots and incompetents in theoretical power on the road to deleting them. The idea is to instil a public reaction that says of the technocrats: 'Well, they couldn't do any worse than the pathetic politicians.' It's all about controlling perception and Renegade Minds can see through that while programmed minds cannot when they are ignorant of both the planned outcome and the manipulation techniques employed to secure that end. This knowledge can be learned, however, and fast if people choose to get informed.

Politics may at first sight appear very difficult to control from a central point. I mean look at the 'different' parties and how would you be able to oversee them all and their constituent parts? In truth, it's very straightforward because of their structure. We are back to the pyramid of imposition and acquiescence. Organisations are structured in the same way as the system as a whole. Political parties are not open forums of free expression. They are hierarchies. I was a national spokesman for the British Green Party which claimed to be a different kind of politics in which influence and power was devolved; but I can tell you from direct experience – and it's far worse now – that Green parties are run as hierarchies like all the others however much they may try to hide that fact or kid themselves that it's not true. A very few at the top of all political parties are directing policy and personnel. They decide if you are elevated in the party or serve as a government minister and to do that you have to be a yes man or woman. Look at all the maverick political thinkers who never ascended the greasy pole. If you want to progress within the party or reach 'high-office' you need to fall into line and conform. Exceptions to this are rare indeed. Should you want to run for parliament or Congress you have to persuade the local or state level of the party to select you and for that you need to play the game as dictated by the hierarchy. If you secure election and wish to progress within the greater structure you need to go on conforming to what is acceptable to those running the hierarchy

from the peak of the pyramid. Political parties are perceptual gulags and the very fact that there are party 'Whips' appointed to 'whip' politicians into voting the way the hierarchy demands exposes the ridiculous idea that politicians are elected to serve the people they are supposed to represent. Cult operatives and manipulation has long seized control of major parties that have any chance of forming a government and at least most of those that haven't. A new party forms and the Cult goes to work to infiltrate and direct. This has reached such a level today that you see video compilations of 'leaders' of all parties whether Democrats, Republicans, Conservative, Labour and Green parroting the same Cult mantra of 'Build Back Better' and the 'Great Reset' which are straight off the Cult song-sheet to describe the transformation of global society in response to the Cult-instigated hoaxes of the 'Covid pandemic' and human-caused 'climate change'. To see Caroline Lucas, the Green Party MP that I knew when I was in the party in the 1980s, speaking in support of plans proposed by Cult operative Klaus Schwab representing the billionaire global elite is a real head-shaker.

### **Many parties – one master**

The party system is another mind-trick and was instigated to change the nature of the dictatorship by swapping 'royalty' for dark suits that people believed – though now ever less so – represented their interests. Understanding this trick is to realise that a single force (the Cult) controls all parties either directly in terms of the major ones or through manipulation of perception and ideology with others. You don't need to manipulate Green parties to demand your transformation of society in the name of 'climate change' when they are obsessed with the lie that this is essential to 'save the planet'. You just give them a platform and away they go serving your interests while believing they are being environmentally virtuous. America's political structure is a perfect blueprint for how the two or multi-party system is really a one-party state. The Republican Party is controlled from one step back in the shadows by a group made up of billionaires and their gofers known as neoconservatives or Neocons.

I have exposed them in fine detail in my books and they were the driving force behind the policies of the imbecilic presidency of Boy George Bush which included 9/11 (see *The Trigger* for a comprehensive demolition of the official story), the subsequent 'war on terror' (war of terror) and the invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq. The latter was a No-Problem-Reaction-Solution based on claims by Cult operatives, including Bush and British Prime Minister Tony Blair, about Saddam Hussein's 'weapons of mass destruction' which did not exist as war criminals Bush and Blair well knew.



**Figure 6:** Different front people, different parties – same control system.

The Democratic Party has its own 'Neocon' group controlling from the background which I call the 'Democons' and here's the penny-drop – the Neocons and Democons answer to the same masters one step further back into the shadows (Fig 6). At that level of the Cult the Republican and Democrat parties are controlled by the same people and no matter which is in power the Cult is in power. This is how it works in almost every country and certainly in Britain with Conservative, Labour, Liberal Democrat and Green parties now all on the same page whatever the rhetoric may be in their feeble attempts to appear different. Neocons operated at the time of Bush through a think tank called The Project for the New American Century which in September, 2000, published a document entitled *Rebuilding America's Defenses: Strategies, Forces, and Resources*



*For a New Century* demanding that America fight ‘multiple, simultaneous major theatre wars’ as a ‘core mission’ to force regime-change in countries including Iraq, Libya and Syria. Neocons arranged for Bush (‘Republican’) and Blair (‘Labour Party’) to front-up the invasion of Iraq and when they departed the Democons orchestrated the targeting of Libya and Syria through Barack Obama (‘Democrat’) and British Prime Minister David Cameron (‘Conservative Party’). We have ‘different’ parties and ‘different’ people, but the same unfolding script. The more the Cult has seized the reigns of parties and personnel the more their policies have transparently pursued the same agenda to the point where the fascist ‘Covid’ impositions of the Conservative junta of Jackboot Johnson in Britain were opposed by the Labour Party because they were not fascist enough. The Labour Party is likened to the US Democrats while the Conservative Party is akin to a British version of the Republicans and on both sides of the Atlantic they all speak the same language and support the direction demanded by the Cult although some more enthusiastically than others. It’s a similar story in country after country because it’s all centrally controlled. Oh, but what about Trump? I’ll come to him shortly. Political ‘choice’ in the ‘party’ system goes like this: You vote for Party A and they get into government. You don’t like what they do so next time you vote for Party B and they get into government. You don’t like what they do when it’s pretty much the same as Party A and why wouldn’t that be with both controlled by the same force? Given that only two, sometimes three, parties have any chance of forming a government to get rid of Party B that you don’t like you have to vote again for Party A which ... you don’t like. This, ladies and gentlemen, is what they call ‘democracy’ which we are told – wrongly – is a term interchangeable with ‘freedom’.

## **The cult of cults**

At this point I need to introduce a major expression of the Global Cult known as Sabbatian-Frankism. Sabbatian is also spelt as Sabbatean. I will summarise here. I have published major exposés

and detailed background in other works. Sabbatian-Frankism combines the names of two frauds posing as 'Jewish' men, Sabbatai Zevi (1626-1676), a rabbi, black magician and occultist who proclaimed he was the Jewish messiah; and Jacob Frank (1726-1791), the Polish 'Jew', black magician and occultist who said he was the reincarnation of 'messiah' Zevi and biblical patriarch Jacob. They worked across two centuries to establish the Sabbatian-Frankist cult that plays a major, indeed central, role in the manipulation of human society by the Global Cult which has its origins much further back in history than Sabbatai Zevi. I should emphasise two points here in response to the shrill voices that will scream 'anti-Semitism': (1) Sabbatian-Frankists are NOT Jewish and only pose as such to hide their cult behind a Jewish façade; and (2) my information about this cult has come from Jewish sources who have long realised that their society and community has been infiltrated and taken over by interloper Sabbatian-Frankists. Infiltration has been the foundation technique of Sabbatian-Frankism from its official origin in the 17th century. Zevi's Sabbatian sect attracted a massive following described as the biggest messianic movement in Jewish history, spreading as far as Africa and Asia, and he promised a return for the Jews to the 'Promised Land' of Israel. Sabbatianism was not Judaism but an inversion of everything that mainstream Judaism stood for. So much so that this sinister cult would have a feast day when Judaism had a fast day and whatever was forbidden in Judaism the Sabbatians were encouraged and even commanded to do. This included incest and what would be today called Satanism. Members were forbidden to marry outside the sect and there was a system of keeping their children ignorant of what they were part of until they were old enough to be trusted not to unknowingly reveal anything to outsiders. The same system is employed to this day by the Global Cult in general which Sabbatian-Frankism has enormously influenced and now largely controls.

Zevi and his Sabbatians suffered a setback with the intervention by the Sultan of the Islamic Ottoman Empire in the Middle East and what is now the Republic of Turkey where Zevi was located. The

Sultan gave him the choice of proving his 'divinity', converting to Islam or facing torture and death. Funnily enough Zevi chose to convert or at least appear to. Some of his supporters were disillusioned and drifted away, but many did not with 300 families also converting – only in theory – to Islam. They continued behind this Islamic smokescreen to follow the goals, rules and rituals of Sabbatianism and became known as 'crypto-Jews' or the 'Dönme' which means 'to turn'. This is rather ironic because they didn't 'turn' and instead hid behind a fake Islamic persona. The process of appearing to be one thing while being very much another would become the calling card of Sabbatianism especially after Zevi's death and the arrival of the Satanist Jacob Frank in the 18th century when the cult became Sabbatian-Frankism and plumbed still new depths of depravity and infiltration which included – still includes – human sacrifice and sex with children. Wherever Sabbatians go paedophilia and Satanism follow and is it really a surprise that Hollywood is so infested with child abuse and Satanism when it was established by Sabbatian-Frankists and is still controlled by them? Hollywood has been one of the prime vehicles for global perceptual programming and manipulation. How many believe the version of 'history' portrayed in movies when it is a travesty and inversion (again) of the truth? Rabbi Marvin Antelman describes Frankism in his book, *To Eliminate the Opiate*, as 'a movement of complete evil' while Jewish professor Gershom Scholem said of Frank in *The Messianic Idea in Judaism*: 'In all his actions [he was] a truly corrupt and degenerate individual ... one of the most frightening phenomena in the whole of Jewish history.' Frank was excommunicated by traditional rabbis, as was Zevi, but Frank was undeterred and enjoyed vital support from the House of Rothschild, the infamous banking dynasty whose inner-core are Sabbatian-Frankists and not Jews. Infiltration of the Roman Church and Vatican was instigated by Frank with many Dönme 'turning' again to convert to Roman Catholicism with a view to hijacking the reins of power. This was the ever-repeating modus operandi and continues to be so. Pose as an advocate of the religion, culture or country that you want to control and then

manipulate your people into the positions of authority and influence largely as advisers, administrators and Svengalis for those that appear to be in power. They did this with Judaism, Christianity (Christian Zionism is part of this), Islam and other religions and nations until Sabbatian-Frankism spanned the world as it does today.

## **Sabbatian Saudis and the terror network**

One expression of the Sabbatian-Frankist Dönme within Islam is the ruling family of Saudi Arabia, the House of Saud, through which came the vile distortion of Islam known as Wahhabism. This is the violent creed followed by terrorist groups like Al-Qaeda and ISIS or Islamic State. Wahhabism is the hand-chopping, head-chopping 'religion' of Saudi Arabia which is used to keep the people in a constant state of fear so the interloper House of Saud can continue to rule. Al-Qaeda and Islamic State were lavishly funded by the House of Saud while being created and directed by the Sabbatian-Frankist network in the United States that operates through the Pentagon, CIA and the government in general of whichever 'party'. The front man for the establishment of Wahhabism in the middle of the 18th century was a Sabbatian-Frankist 'crypto-Jew' posing as Islamic called Muhammad ibn Abd al-Wahhab. His daughter would marry the son of Muhammad bin Saud who established the first Saudi state before his death in 1765 with support from the British Empire. Bin Saud's successors would establish modern Saudi Arabia in league with the British and Americans in 1932 which allowed them to seize control of Islam's major shrines in Mecca and Medina. They have dictated the direction of Sunni Islam ever since while Iran is the major centre of the Shiite version and here we have the source of at least the public conflict between them. The Sabbatian network has used its Wahhabi extremists to carry out Problem-Reaction-Solution terrorist attacks in the name of 'Al-Qaeda' and 'Islamic State' to justify a devastating 'war on terror', ever-increasing surveillance of the population and to terrify people into compliance. Another insight of the Renegade Mind is the streetwise understanding that

just because a country, location or people are attacked doesn't mean that those apparently representing that country, location or people are not behind the attackers. Often they are *orchestrating* the attacks because of the societal changes that can be then justified in the name of 'saving the population from terrorists'.

I show in great detail in *The Trigger* how Sabbatian-Frankists were the real perpetrators of 9/11 and not '19 Arab hijackers' who were blamed for what happened. Observe what was justified in the name of 9/11 alone in terms of Middle East invasions, mass surveillance and control that fulfilled the demands of the Project for the New American Century document published by the Sabbatian Neocons. What appear to be enemies are on the deep inside players on the same Sabbatian team. Israel and Arab 'royal' dictatorships are all ruled by Sabbatians and the recent peace agreements between Israel and Saudi Arabia, the United Arab Emirates (UAE) and others are only making formal what has always been the case behind the scenes. Palestinians who have been subjected to grotesque tyranny since Israel was bombed and terrorised into existence in 1948 have never stood a chance. Sabbatian-Frankists have controlled Israel (so the constant theme of violence and war which Sabbatians love) and they have controlled the Arab countries that Palestinians have looked to for real support that never comes. 'Royal families' of the Arab world in Saudi Arabia, Bahrain, UAE, etc., are all Sabbatians with allegiance to the aims of the cult and not what is best for their Arabic populations. They have stolen the oil and financial resources from their people by false claims to be 'royal dynasties' with a genetic right to rule and by employing vicious militaries to impose their will.

## **Satanic 'illumination'**

The Satanist Jacob Frank formed an alliance in 1773 with two other Sabbatians, Mayer Amschel Rothschild (1744-1812), founder of the Rothschild banking dynasty, and Jesuit-educated fraudulent Jew, Adam Weishaupt, and this led to the formation of the Bavarian Illuminati, firstly under another name, in 1776. The Illuminati would

be the manipulating force behind the French Revolution (1789-1799) and was also involved in the American Revolution (1775-1783) before and after the Illuminati's official creation. Weishaupt would later become (in public) a Protestant Christian in archetypal Sabbatian style. I read that his name can be decoded as Adam-Weishaupt or 'the first man to lead those who know'. He wasn't a leader in the sense that he was a subordinate, but he did lead those below him in a crusade of transforming human society that still continues today. The theme was confirmed as early as 1785 when a horseman courier called Lanz was reported to be struck by lightning and extensive Illuminati documents were found in his saddlebags. They made the link to Weishaupt and detailed the plan for world takeover. Current events with 'Covid' fascism have been in the making for a very long time. Jacob Frank was jailed for 13 years by the Catholic Inquisition after his arrest in 1760 and on his release he headed for Frankfurt, Germany, home city and headquarters of the House of Rothschild where the alliance was struck with Mayer Amschel Rothschild and Weishaupt. Rothschild arranged for Frank to be given the title of Baron and he became a wealthy nobleman with a big following of Jews in Germany, the Austro-Hungarian Empire and other European countries. Most of them would have believed he was on their side.

The name 'Illuminati' came from the Zohar which is a body of works in the Jewish mystical 'bible' called the Kabbalah. 'Zohar' is the foundation of Sabbatian-Frankist belief and in Hebrew 'Zohar' means 'splendour', 'radiance', 'illuminated', and so we have 'Illuminati'. They claim to be the 'Illuminated Ones' from their knowledge systematically hidden from the human population and passed on through generations of carefully-chosen initiates in the global secret society network or Cult. Hidden knowledge includes an awareness of the Cult agenda for the world and the nature of our collective reality that I will explore later. Cult 'illumination' is symbolised by the torch held by the Statue of Liberty which was gifted to New York by French Freemasons in Paris who knew exactly what it represents. 'Liberty' symbolises the goddess worshipped in

Babylon as Queen Semiramis or Ishtar. The significance of this will become clear. Notice again the ubiquitous theme of inversion with the Statue of 'Liberty' really symbolising mass control (Fig 7). A mirror-image statute stands on an island in the River Seine in Paris from where New York Liberty originated (Fig 8). A large replica of the Liberty flame stands on top of the Pont de l'Alma tunnel in Paris where Princess Diana died in a Cult ritual described in *The Biggest Secret*. Lucifer 'the light bringer' is related to all this (and much more as we'll see) and 'Lucifer' is a central figure in Sabbatian-Frankism and its associated Satanism. Sabbatians reject the Jewish Torah, or Pentateuch, the 'five books of Moses' in the Old Testament known as Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy which are claimed by Judaism and Christianity to have been dictated by 'God' to Moses on Mount Sinai. Sabbatians say these do not apply to them and they seek to replace them with the Zohar to absorb Judaism and its followers into their inversion which is an expression of a much greater global inversion. They want to delete all religions and force humanity to worship a one-world religion – Sabbatian Satanism that also includes worship of the Earth goddess. Satanic themes are being more and more introduced into mainstream society and while Christianity is currently the foremost target for destruction the others are planned to follow.



**Figure 7:** The Cult goddess of Babylon disguised as the Statue of Liberty holding the flame of Lucifer the 'light bringer'.



**Figure 8:** Liberty's mirror image in Paris where the New York version originated.

## **Marx brothers**

Rabbi Marvin Antelman connects the Illuminati to the Jacobins in *To Eliminate the Opiate* and Jacobins were the force behind the French Revolution. He links both to the Bund der Gerechten, or League of the Just, which was the network that inflicted communism/Marxism on the world. Antelman wrote:

The original inner circle of the Bund der Gerechten consisted of born Catholics, Protestants and Jews [Sabbatian-Frankist infiltrators], and those representatives of respective subdivisions formulated schemes for the ultimate destruction of their faiths. The heretical Catholics laid plans which they felt would take a century or more for the ultimate destruction of the church; the apostate Jews for the ultimate destruction of the Jewish religion.

Sabbatian-created communism connects into this anti-religion agenda in that communism does not allow for the free practice of religion. The Sabbatian 'Bund' became the International Communist Party and Communist League and in 1848 'Marxism' was born with the Communist Manifesto of Sabbatian assets Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels. It is absolutely no coincidence that Marxism, just a different name for fascist and other centrally-controlled tyrannies, is being imposed worldwide as a result of the 'Covid' hoax and nor that Marxist/fascist China was the place where the hoax originated. The reason for this will become very clear in the chapter 'Covid: The calculated catastrophe'. The so-called 'Woke' mentality has hijacked



traditional beliefs of the political left and replaced them with far-right make-believe 'social justice' better known as Marxism. Woke will, however, be swallowed by its own perceived 'revolution' which is really the work of billionaires and billionaire corporations feigning being 'Woke'. Marxism is being touted by Wokers as a replacement for 'capitalism' when we don't have 'capitalism'. We have cartelism in which the market is stitched up by the very Cult billionaires and corporations bankrolling Woke. Billionaires love Marxism which keeps the people in servitude while they control from the top. Terminally naïve Wokers think they are 'changing the world' when it's the Cult that is doing the changing and when they have played their vital part and become surplus to requirements they, too, will be targeted. The Illuminati-Jacobins were behind the period known as 'The Terror' in the French Revolution in 1793 and 1794 when Jacobin Maximillian de Robespierre and his Orwellian 'Committee of Public Safety' killed 17,000 'enemies of the Revolution' who had once been 'friends of the Revolution'. Karl Marx (1818-1883), whose Sabbatian creed of Marxism has cost the lives of at least 100 million people, is a hero once again to Wokers who have been systematically kept ignorant of real history by their 'education' programming. As a result they now promote a Sabbatian 'Marxist' abomination destined at some point to consume them. Rabbi Antelman, who spent decades researching the Sabbatian plot, said of the League of the Just and Karl Marx:

Contrary to popular opinion Karl Marx did not originate the Communist Manifesto. He was paid for his services by the League of the Just, which was known in its country of origin, Germany, as the Bund der Geächteten.

Antelman said the text attributed to Marx was the work of other people and Marx 'was only repeating what others already said'. Marx was 'a hired hack – lackey of the wealthy Illuminists'. Marx famously said that religion was the 'opium of the people' (part of the Sabbatian plan to demonise religion) and Antelman called his books, *To Eliminate the Opiate*. Marx was born Jewish, but his family converted to Christianity (Sabbatian modus operandi) and he

attacked Jews, not least in his book, *A World Without Jews*. In doing so he supported the Sabbatian plan to destroy traditional Jewishness and Judaism which we are clearly seeing today with the vindictive targeting of orthodox Jews by the Sabbatian government of Israel over 'Covid' laws. I don't follow any religion and it has done much damage to the world over centuries and acted as a perceptual straightjacket. Renegade Minds, however, are always asking *why* something is being done. It doesn't matter if they agree or disagree with what is happening – *why* is it happening is the question. The 'why?' can be answered with regard to religion in that religions create interacting communities of believers when the Cult wants to dismantle all discourse, unity and interaction (see 'Covid' lockdowns) and the ultimate goal is to delete all religions for a one-world religion of Cult Satanism worshipping their 'god' of which more later. We see the same 'why?' with gun control in America. I don't have guns and don't want them, but why is the Cult seeking to disarm the population at the same time that law enforcement agencies are armed to their molars and why has every tyrant in history sought to disarm people before launching the final takeover? They include Hitler, Stalin, Pol Pot and Mao who followed confiscation with violent seizing of power. You know it's a Cult agenda by the people who immediately race to the microphones to exploit dead people in multiple shootings. Ultra-Zionist Cult lackey Senator Chuck Schumer was straight on the case after ten people were killed in Boulder, Colorado in March, 2121. Simple rule ... if Schumer wants it the Cult wants it and the same with his ultra-Zionist mate the wild-eyed Senator Adam Schiff. At the same time they were calling for the disarmament of Americans, many of whom live a long way from a police response, Schumer, Schiff and the rest of these pampered clowns were sitting on Capitol Hill behind a razor-wired security fence protected by thousands of armed troops in addition to their own armed bodyguards. Mom and pop in an isolated home? They're just potential mass shooters.

## **Zion Mainframe**

Sabbatian-Frankists and most importantly the Rothschilds were behind the creation of 'Zionism', a political movement that demanded a Jewish homeland in Israel as promised by Sabbatai Zevi. The very symbol of Israel comes from the German meaning of the name Rothschild. Dynasty founder Mayer Amschel Rothschild changed the family name from Bauer to Rothschild, or 'Red-Shield' in German, in deference to the six-pointed 'Star of David' hexagram displayed on the family's home in Frankfurt. The symbol later appeared on the flag of Israel after the Rothschilds were centrally involved in its creation. Hexagrams are not a uniquely Jewish symbol and are widely used in occult ('hidden') networks often as a symbol for Saturn (see my other books for why). Neither are Zionism and Jewishness interchangeable. Zionism is a political movement and philosophy and not a 'race' or a people. Many Jews oppose Zionism and many non-Jews, including US President Joe Biden, call themselves Zionists as does Israel-centric Donald Trump. America's support for the Israel government is pretty much a gimme with ultra-Zionist billionaires and corporations providing fantastic and dominant funding for both political parties. Former Congresswoman Cynthia McKinney has told how she was approached immediately she ran for office to 'sign the pledge' to Israel and confirm that she would always vote in that country's best interests. All American politicians are approached in this way. Anyone who refuses will get no support or funding from the enormous and all-powerful Zionist lobby that includes organisations like mega-lobby group AIPAC, the American Israel Public Affairs Committee. Trump's biggest funder was ultra-Zionist casino and media billionaire Sheldon Adelson while major funders of the Democratic Party include ultra-Zionist George Soros and ultra-Zionist financial and media mogul, Haim Saban. Some may reel back at the suggestion that Soros is an Israel-firster (Sabbatian-controlled Israel-firster), but Renegade Minds watch the actions not the words and everywhere Soros donates his billions the Sabbatian agenda benefits. In the spirit of Sabbatian inversion Soros pledged \$1 billion for a new university network to promote 'liberal values and tackle intolerance'. He made the announcement during his annual speech

at the Cult-owned World Economic Forum in Davos, Switzerland, in January, 2020, after his 'harsh criticism' of 'authoritarian rulers' around the world. You can only laugh at such brazen mendacity. How *he* doesn't laugh is the mystery. Translated from the Orwellian 'liberal values and tackle intolerance' means teaching non-white people to hate white people and for white people to loathe themselves for being born white. The reason for that will become clear.

## **The 'Anti-Semitism' fraud**

Zionists support the Jewish homeland in the land of Palestine which has been the Sabbatian-Rothschild goal for so long, but not for the benefit of Jews. Sabbatians and their global Anti-Semitism Industry have skewed public and political opinion to equate opposing the violent extremes of Zionism to be a blanket attack and condemnation of all Jewish people. Sabbatians and their global Anti-Semitism Industry have skewed public and political opinion to equate opposing the violent extremes of Zionism to be a blanket attack and condemnation of all Jewish people. This is nothing more than a Sabbatian protection racket to stop legitimate investigation and exposure of their agendas and activities. The official definition of 'anti-Semitism' has more recently been expanded to include criticism of Zionism – a *political movement* – and this was done to further stop exposure of Sabbatian infiltrators who created Zionism as we know it today in the 19th century. Renegade Minds will talk about these subjects when they know the shit that will come their way. People must decide if they want to know the truth or just cower in the corner in fear of what others will say. Sabbatians have been trying to label me as 'anti-Semitic' since the 1990s as I have uncovered more and more about their background and agendas. Useless, gutless, fraudulent 'journalists' then just repeat the smears without question and on the day I was writing this section a pair of unquestioning repeaters called Ben Quinn and Archie Bland (how appropriate) outright called me an 'anti-Semite' in the establishment propaganda sheet, the London *Guardian*, with no supporting evidence. The

Sabbatian Anti-Semitism Industry said so and who are they to question that? They wouldn't dare. Ironically 'Semitic' refers to a group of languages in the Middle East that are almost entirely Arabic. 'Anti-Semitism' becomes 'anti-Arab' which if the consequences of this misunderstanding were not so grave would be hilarious. Don't bother telling Quinn and Bland. I don't want to confuse them, bless 'em. One reason I am dubbed 'anti-Semitic' is that I wrote in the 1990s that Jewish operatives (Sabbatians) were heavily involved in the Russian Revolution when Sabbatians overthrew the Romanov dynasty. This apparently made me 'anti-Semitic'. Oh, really? Here is a section from *The Trigger*:

British journalist Robert Wilton confirmed these themes in his 1920 book *The Last Days of the Romanovs* when he studied official documents from the Russian government to identify the members of the Bolshevik ruling elite between 1917 and 1919. The Central Committee included 41 Jews among 62 members; the Council of the People's Commissars had 17 Jews out of 22 members; and 458 of the 556 most important Bolshevik positions between 1918 and 1919 were occupied by Jewish people. Only 17 were Russian. Then there were the 23 Jews among the 36 members of the vicious Cheka Soviet secret police established in 1917 who would soon appear all across the country.

Professor Robert Service of Oxford University, an expert on 20th century Russian history, found evidence that ['Jewish'] Leon Trotsky had sought to make sure that Jews were enrolled in the Red Army and were disproportionately represented in the Soviet civil bureaucracy that included the Cheka which performed mass arrests, imprisonment and executions of 'enemies of the people'. A US State Department Decimal File (861.00/5339) dated November 13th, 1918, names [Rothschild banking agent in America] Jacob Schiff and a list of ultra-Zionists as funders of the Russian Revolution leading to claims of a 'Jewish plot', but the key point missed by all is they were not 'Jews' – they were Sabbatian-Frankists.

Britain's Winston Churchill made the same error by mistake or otherwise. He wrote in a 1920 edition of the *Illustrated Sunday Herald* that those behind the Russian revolution were part of a 'worldwide conspiracy for the overthrow of civilisation and for the reconstitution of society on the basis of arrested development, of envious malevolence, and impossible equality' (see 'Woke' today because that has been created by the same network). Churchill said there was no need to exaggerate the part played in the creation of Bolshevism and in the actual bringing about of the Russian

Revolution 'by these international and for the most part atheistical Jews' ['atheistical Jews' = Sabbatians]. Churchill said it is certainly a very great one and probably outweighs all others: 'With the notable exception of Lenin, the majority of the leading figures are Jews.' He went on to describe, knowingly or not, the Sabbatian modus operandi of placing puppet leaders nominally in power while they control from the background:

Moreover, the principal inspiration and driving power comes from the Jewish leaders. Thus Tchitcherin, a pure Russian, is eclipsed by his nominal subordinate, Litvinoff, and the influence of Russians like Bukharin or Lunacharski cannot be compared with the power of Trotsky, or of Zinovieff, the Dictator of the Red Citadel (Petrograd), or of Krassin or Radek – all Jews. In the Soviet institutions the predominance of Jews is even more astonishing. And the prominent, if not indeed the principal, part in the system of terrorism applied by the Extraordinary Commissions for Combatting Counter-Revolution has been taken by Jews, and in some notable cases by Jewesses.

What I said about seriously disproportionate involvement in the Russian Revolution by Jewish 'revolutionaries' (Sabbatians) is provable fact, but truth is no defence against the Sabbatian Anti-Semitism Industry, its repeater parrots like Quinn and Bland, and the now breathtaking network of so-called 'Woke' 'anti-hate' groups with interlocking leaderships and funding which have the role of discrediting and silencing anyone who gets too close to exposing the Sabbatians. We have seen 'truth is no defence' confirmed in legal judgements with the Saskatchewan Human Rights Commission in Canada decreeing this: 'Truthful statements can be presented in a manner that would meet the definition of hate speech, and not all truthful statements must be free from restriction.' Most 'anti-hate' activists, who are themselves consumed by hatred, are too stupid and ignorant of the world to know how they are being used. They are far too far up their own virtue-signalling arses and it's far too dark for them to see anything.

## **The 'revolution' game**

The background and methods of the 'Russian' Revolution are straight from the Sabbatian playbook seen in the French Revolution

and endless others around the world that appear to start as a revolution of the people against tyrannical rule and end up with a regime change to more tyrannical rule overtly or covertly. Wars, terror attacks and regime overthrows follow the Sabbatian cult through history with its agents creating them as Problem-Reaction-Solutions to remove opposition on the road to world domination. Sabbatian dots connect the Rothschilds with the Illuminati, Jacobins of the French Revolution, the 'Bund' or League of the Just, the International Communist Party, Communist League and the Communist Manifesto of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels that would lead to the Rothschild-funded Russian Revolution. The sequence comes under the heading of 'creative destruction' when you advance to your global goal by continually destroying the status quo to install a new status quo which you then also destroy. The two world wars come to mind. With each new status quo you move closer to your planned outcome. Wars and mass murder are to Sabbatians a collective blood sacrifice ritual. They are obsessed with death for many reasons and one is that death is an inversion of life. Satanists and Sabbatians are obsessed with death and often target churches and churchyards for their rituals. Inversion-obsessed Sabbatians explain the use of inverted symbolism including the *inverted* pentagram and *inverted* cross. The inversion of the cross has been related to targeting Christianity, but the cross was a religious symbol long before Christianity and its inversion is a statement about the Sabbatian mentality and goals more than any single religion.

Sabbatians operating in Germany were behind the rise of the occult-obsessed Nazis and the subsequent Jewish exodus from Germany and Europe to Palestine and the United States after World War Two. The Rothschild dynasty was at the forefront of this both as political manipulators and by funding the operation. Why would Sabbatians help to orchestrate the horrors inflicted on Jews by the Nazis and by Stalin after they organised the Russian Revolution? Sabbatians hate Jews and their religion, that's why. They pose as Jews and secure positions of control within Jewish society and play the 'anti-Semitism' card to protect themselves from exposure

through a global network of organisations answering to the Sabbatian-created-and-controlled globe-spanning intelligence network that involves a stunning web of military-intelligence operatives and operations for a tiny country of just nine million. Among them are Jewish assets who are not Sabbatians but have been convinced by them that what they are doing is for the good of Israel and the Jewish community to protect them from what they have been programmed since childhood to believe is a Jew-hating hostile world. The Jewish community is just a highly convenient cover to hide the true nature of Sabbatians. Anyone getting close to exposing their game is accused by Sabbatian place-people and gofers of 'anti-Semitism' and claiming that all Jews are part of a plot to take over the world. I am not saying that. I am saying that Sabbatians – the *real* Jew-haters – have infiltrated the Jewish community to use them both as a cover and an 'anti-Semitic' defence against exposure. Thus we have the Anti-Semitism Industry targeted researchers in this way and most Jewish people think this is justified and genuine. They don't know that their 'Jewish' leaders and institutions of state, intelligence and military are not controlled by Jews at all, but cultists and stooges of Sabbatian-Frankism. I once added my name to a pro-Jewish freedom petition online and the next time I looked my name was gone and text had been added to the petition blurb to attack me as an 'anti-Semite' such is the scale of perceptual programming.

## **Moving on America**

I tell the story in *The Trigger* and a chapter called 'Atlantic Crossing' how particularly after Israel was established the Sabbatians moved in on the United States and eventually grasped control of government administration, the political system via both Democrats and Republicans, the intelligence community like the CIA and National Security Agency (NSA), the Pentagon and mass media. Through this seriously compartmentalised network Sabbatians and their operatives in Mossad, Israeli Defense Forces (IDF) and US agencies pulled off 9/11 and blamed it on 19 'Al-Qaeda hijackers' dominated by men from, or connected to, Sabbatian-ruled Saudi



Arabia. The '19' were not even on the planes let alone flew those big passenger jets into buildings while being largely incompetent at piloting one-engine light aircraft. 'Hijacker' Hani Hanjour who is said to have flown American Airlines Flight 77 into the Pentagon with a turn and manoeuvre most professional pilots said they would have struggled to do was banned from renting a small plane by instructors at the Freeway Airport in Bowie, Maryland, just *six weeks* earlier on the grounds that he was an incompetent pilot. The Jewish population of the world is just 0.2 percent with even that almost entirely concentrated in Israel (75 percent Jewish) and the United States (around two percent). This two percent and globally 0.2 percent refers to *Jewish* people and not Sabbatian interlopers who are a fraction of that fraction. What a sobering thought when you think of the fantastic influence on world affairs of tiny Israel and that the Project for the New America Century (PNAC) which laid out the blueprint in September, 2000, for America's war on terror and regime change wars in Iraq, Libya and Syria was founded and dominated by Sabbatians known as 'Neocons'. The document conceded that this plan would not be supported politically or publicly without a major attack on American soil and a Problem-Reaction-Solution excuse to send troops to war across the Middle East. Sabbatian Neocons said:

... [The] process of transformation ... [war and regime change] ... is likely to be a long one, absent some catastrophic and catalysing event – like a new Pearl Harbor.

Four months later many of those who produced that document came to power with their inane puppet George Bush from the long-time Sabbatian Bush family. They included Sabbatian Dick Cheney who was officially vice-president, but really de-facto president for the entirety of the 'Bush' government. Nine months after the 'Bush' inauguration came what Bush called at the time 'the Pearl Harbor of the 21st century' and with typical Sabbatian timing and symbolism 2001 was the 60th anniversary of the attack in 1941 by the Japanese Air Force on Pearl Harbor, Hawaii, which allowed President Franklin Delano Roosevelt to take the United States into a Sabbatian-

instigated Second World War that he said in his election campaign that he never would. The evidence is overwhelming that Roosevelt and his military and intelligence networks knew the attack was coming and did nothing to stop it, but they did make sure that America's most essential naval ships were not in Hawaii at the time. Three thousand Americans died in the Pearl Harbor attacks as they did on September 11th. By the 9/11 year of 2001 Sabbatians had widely infiltrated the US government, military and intelligence operations and used their compartmentalised assets to pull off the 'Al-Qaeda' attacks. If you read *The Trigger* it will blow your mind to see the utterly staggering concentration of 'Jewish' operatives (Sabbatian infiltrators) in essential positions of political, security, legal, law enforcement, financial and business power before, during, and after the attacks to make them happen, carry them out, and then cover their tracks – and I do mean *staggering* when you think of that 0.2 percent of the world population and two percent of Americans which are Jewish while Sabbatian infiltrators are a fraction of that. A central foundation of the 9/11 conspiracy was the hijacking of government, military, Air Force and intelligence computer systems in real time through 'back-door' access made possible by Israeli (Sabbatian) 'cyber security' software. Sabbatian-controlled Israel is on the way to rivalling Silicon Valley for domination of cyberspace and is becoming the dominant force in cyber-security which gives them access to entire computer systems and their passcodes across the world. Then add to this that Zionists head (officially) Silicon Valley giants like Google (Larry Page and Sergey Brin), Google-owned YouTube (Susan Wojcicki), Facebook (Mark Zuckerberg and Sheryl Sandberg), and Apple (Chairman Arthur D. Levinson), and that ultra-Zionist hedge fund billionaire Paul Singer has a \$1 billion stake in Twitter which is only nominally headed by 'CEO' pothead Jack Dorsey. As cable news host Tucker Carlson said of Dorsey: 'There used to be debate in the medical community whether dropping a ton of acid had permanent effects and I think that debate has now ended.' Carlson made the comment after Dorsey told a hearing on Capitol Hill (if you cut through his bullshit) that he

believed in free speech so long as he got to decide what you can hear and see. These 'big names' of Silicon Valley are only front men and women for the Global Cult, not least the Sabbatians, who are the true controllers of these corporations. Does anyone still wonder why these same people and companies have been ferociously censoring and banning people (like me) for exposing any aspect of the Cult agenda and especially the truth about the 'Covid' hoax which Sabbatians have orchestrated?

The Jeffrey Epstein paedophile ring was a Sabbatian operation. He was officially 'Jewish' but he was a Sabbatian and women abused by the ring have told me about the high number of 'Jewish' people involved. The Epstein horror has Sabbatian written all over it and matches perfectly their modus operandi and obsession with sex and ritual. Epstein was running a Sabbatian blackmail ring in which famous people with political and other influence were provided with young girls for sex while everything was being filmed and recorded on hidden cameras and microphones at his New York house, Caribbean island and other properties. Epstein survivors have described this surveillance system to me and some have gone public. Once the famous politician or other figure knew he or she was on video they tended to do whatever they were told. Here we go again ...when you've got them by the balls their hearts and minds will follow. Sabbatians use this blackmail technique on a wide scale across the world to entrap politicians and others they need to act as demanded. Epstein's private plane, the infamous 'Lolita Express', had many well-known passengers including Bill Clinton while Bill Gates has flown on an Epstein plane and met with him four years after Epstein had been jailed for paedophilia. They subsequently met many times at Epstein's home in New York according to a witness who was there. Epstein's infamous side-kick was Ghislaine Maxwell, daughter of Mossad agent and ultra-Zionist mega-crooked British businessman, Bob Maxwell, who at one time owned the *Daily Mirror* newspaper. Maxwell was murdered at sea on his boat in 1991 by Sabbatian-controlled Mossad when he became a liability with his

business empire collapsing as a former Mossad operative has confirmed (see *The Trigger*).

### **Money, money, money, funny money ...**

Before I come to the Sabbatian connection with the last three US presidents I will lay out the crucial importance to Sabbatians of controlling banking and finance. Sabbatian Mayer Amschel Rothschild set out to dominate this arena in his family's quest for total global control. What is freedom? It is, in effect, choice. The more choices you have the freer you are and the fewer your choices the more you are enslaved. In the global structure created over centuries by Sabbatians the biggest decider and restrictor of choice is ... money. Across the world if you ask people what they would like to do with their lives and why they are not doing that they will reply 'I don't have the money'. This is the idea. A global elite of multi-billionaires are described as 'greedy' and that is true on one level; but control of money – who has it and who doesn't – is not primarily about greed. It's about control. Sabbatians have seized ever more control of finance and sucked the wealth of the world out of the hands of the population. We talk now, after all, about the 'One-percent' and even then the wealthiest are a lot fewer even than that. This has been made possible by a money scam so outrageous and so vast it could rightly be called the scam of scams founded on creating 'money' out of nothing and 'loaning' that with interest to the population. Money out of nothing is called 'credit'. Sabbatians have asserted control over governments and banking ever more completely through the centuries and secured financial laws that allow banks to lend hugely more than they have on deposit in a confidence trick known as fractional reserve lending. Imagine if you could lend money that doesn't exist and charge the recipient interest for doing so. You would end up in jail. Bankers by contrast end up in mansions, private jets, Malibu and Monaco.

Banks are only required to keep a fraction of their deposits and wealth in their vaults and they are allowed to lend 'money' they don't have called 'credit'. Go into a bank for a loan and if you succeed

the banker will not move any real wealth into your account. They will type into your account the amount of the agreed 'loan' – say £100,000. This is not wealth that really exists; it is non-existent, fresh-air, created-out-of-nothing 'credit' which has never, does not, and will never exist except in theory. Credit is backed by nothing except wind and only has buying power because people think that it has buying power and accept it in return for property, goods and services. I have described this situation as like those cartoon characters you see chasing each other and when they run over the edge of a cliff they keep running forward on fresh air until one of them looks down, realises what's happened, and they all crash into the ravine. The whole foundation of the Sabbatian financial system is to stop people looking down except for periodic moments when they want to crash the system (as in 2008 and 2020 ongoing) and reap the rewards from all the property, businesses and wealth their borrowers had signed over as 'collateral' in return for a 'loan' of fresh air. Most people think that money is somehow created by governments when it comes into existence from the start as a debt through banks 'lending' illusory money called credit. Yes, the very currency of exchange is a *debt* from day one issued as an interest-bearing loan. Why don't governments create money interest-free and lend it to their people interest-free? Governments are controlled by Sabbatians and the financial system is controlled by Sabbatians for whom interest-free money would be a nightmare come true. Sabbatians underpin their financial domination through their global network of central banks, including the privately-owned US Federal Reserve and Britain's Bank of England, and this is orchestrated by a privately-owned central bank coordination body called the Bank for International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, created by the usual suspects including the Rockefellers and Rothschilds. Central bank chiefs don't answer to governments or the people. They answer to the Bank for International Settlements or, in other words, the Global Cult which is dominated today by Sabbatians.

## **Built-in disaster**

There are so many constituent scams within the overall banking scam. When you take out a loan of thin-air credit only the amount of that loan is theoretically brought into circulation to add to the amount in circulation; but you are paying back the principle plus interest. The additional interest is not created and this means that with every 'loan' there is a shortfall in the money in circulation between what is borrowed and what has to be paid back. There is never even close to enough money in circulation to repay all outstanding public and private debt including interest. Coldly weaved in the very fabric of the system is the certainty that some will lose their homes, businesses and possessions to the banking 'lender'. This is less obvious in times of 'boom' when the amount of money in circulation (and the debt) is expanding through more people wanting and getting loans. When a downturn comes and the money supply contracts it becomes painfully obvious that there is not enough money to service all debt and interest. This is less obvious in times of 'boom' when the amount of money in circulation (and the debt) is expanding through more people wanting and getting loans. When a downturn comes and the money supply contracts and it becomes painfully obvious – as in 2008 and currently – that there is not enough money to service all debt and interest. Sabbatian banksters have been leading the human population through a calculated series of booms (more debt incurred) and busts (when the debt can't be repaid and the banks get the debtor's tangible wealth in exchange for non-existent 'credit'). With each 'bust' Sabbatian bankers have absorbed more of the world's tangible wealth and we end up with the One-percent. Governments are in bankruptcy levels of debt to the same system and are therefore owned by a system they do not control. The Federal Reserve, 'America's central bank', is privately-owned and American presidents only nominally appoint its chairman or woman to maintain the illusion that it's an arm of government. It's not. The 'Fed' is a cartel of private banks which handed billions to its associates and friends after the crash of 2008 and has been Sabbatian-controlled since it was manipulated into being in 1913 through the covert trickery of Rothschild banking agents Jacob Schiff and Paul

Warburg, and the Sabbatian Rockefeller family. Somehow from a Jewish population of two-percent and globally 0.2 percent (Sabbatian interlopers remember are far smaller) ultra-Zionists headed the Federal Reserve for 31 years between 1987 and 2018 in the form of Alan Greenspan, Bernard Bernanke and Janet Yellen (now Biden's Treasury Secretary) with Yellen's deputy chairman a Israeli-American dual citizen and ultra-Zionist Stanley Fischer, a former governor of the Bank of Israel. Ultra-Zionist Fed chiefs spanned the presidencies of Ronald Reagan ('Republican'), Father George Bush ('Republican'), Bill Clinton ('Democrat'), Boy George Bush ('Republican') and Barack Obama ('Democrat'). We should really add the pre-Greenspan chairman, Paul Adolph Volcker, 'appointed' by Jimmy Carter ('Democrat') who ran the Fed between 1979 and 1987 during the Carter and Reagan administrations before Greenspan took over. Volcker was a long-time associate and business partner of the Rothschilds. No matter what the 'party' officially in power the United States economy was directed by the same force. Here are members of the Obama, Trump and Biden administrations and see if you can make out a common theme.

### **Barack Obama ('Democrat')**

Ultra-Zionists Robert Rubin, Larry Summers, and Timothy Geithner ran the US Treasury in the Clinton administration and two of them reappeared with Obama. Ultra-Zionist Fed chairman Alan Greenspan had manipulated the crash of 2008 through deregulation and jumped ship just before the disaster to make way for ultra-Zionist Bernard Bernanke to hand out trillions to Sabbatian 'too big to fail' banks and businesses, including the ubiquitous ultra-Zionist Goldman Sachs which has an ongoing staff revolving door operation between itself and major financial positions in government worldwide. Obama inherited the fallout of the crash when he took office in January, 2009, and fortunately he had the support of his ultra-Zionist White House Chief of Staff Rahm Emmanuel, son of a terrorist who helped to bomb Israel into being in 1948, and his ultra-Zionist senior adviser David Axelrod, chief strategist in Obama's two

successful presidential campaigns. Emmanuel, later mayor of Chicago and former senior fundraiser and strategist for Bill Clinton, is an example of the Sabbatian policy after Israel was established of migrating insider families to America so their children would be born American citizens. 'Obama' chose this financial team throughout his administration to respond to the Sabbatian-instigated crisis:

Timothy Geithner (ultra-Zionist) Treasury Secretary; Jacob J. Lew, Treasury Secretary; Larry Summers (ultra-Zionist), director of the White House National Economic Council; Paul Adolph Volcker (Rothschild business partner), chairman of the Economic Recovery Advisory Board; Peter Orszag (ultra-Zionist), director of the Office of Management and Budget overseeing all government spending; Penny Pritzker (ultra-Zionist), Commerce Secretary; Jared Bernstein (ultra-Zionist), chief economist and economic policy adviser to Vice President Joe Biden; Mary Schapiro (ultra-Zionist), chair of the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC); Gary Gensler (ultra-Zionist), chairman of the Commodity Futures Trading Commission (CFTC); Sheila Bair (ultra-Zionist), chair of the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC); Karen Mills (ultra-Zionist), head of the Small Business Administration (SBA); Kenneth Feinberg (ultra-Zionist), Special Master for Executive [bail-out] Compensation. Feinberg would be appointed to oversee compensation (with strings) to 9/11 victims and families in a campaign to stop them having their day in court to question the official story. At the same time ultra-Zionist Bernard Bernanke was chairman of the Federal Reserve and these are only some of the ultra-Zionists with allegiance to Sabbatian-controlled Israel in the Obama government. Obama's biggest corporate donor was ultra-Zionist Goldman Sachs which had employed many in his administration.

## **Donald Trump ('Republican')**

Trump claimed to be an outsider (he wasn't) who had come to 'drain the swamp'. He embarked on this goal by immediately appointing ultra-Zionist Steve Mnuchin, a Goldman Sachs employee for 17



years, as his Treasury Secretary. Others included Gary Cohn (ultra-Zionist), chief operating officer of Goldman Sachs, his first Director of the National Economic Council and chief economic adviser, who was later replaced by Larry Kudlow (ultra-Zionist). Trump's senior adviser throughout his four years in the White House was his sinister son-in-law Jared Kushner, a life-long friend of Israel Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu. Kushner is the son of a convicted crook who was pardoned by Trump in his last days in office. Other ultra-Zionists in the Trump administration included: Stephen Miller, Senior Policy Adviser; Avrahm Berkowitz, Deputy Adviser to Trump and his Senior Adviser Jared Kushner; Ivanka Trump, Adviser to the President, who converted to Judaism when she married Jared Kushner; David Friedman, Trump lawyer and Ambassador to Israel; Jason Greenblatt, Trump Organization executive vice president and chief legal officer, who was made Special Representative for International Negotiations and the Israeli-Palestinian Conflict; Rod Rosenstein, Deputy Attorney General; Elliot Abrams, Special Representative for Venezuela, then Iran; John Eisenberg, National Security Council Legal Adviser and Deputy Council to the President for National Security Affairs; Anne Neuberger, Deputy National Manager, National Security Agency; Ezra Cohen-Watnick, Acting Under Secretary of Defense for Intelligence; Elan Carr, Special Envoy to monitor and combat anti-Semitism; Len Khodorkovsky, Deputy Special Envoy to monitor and combat anti-Semitism; Reed Cordish, Assistant to the President, Intragovernmental and Technology Initiatives. Trump Vice President Mike Pence and Secretary of State Mike Pompeo, both Christian Zionists, were also vehement supporters of Israel and its goals and ambitions.

Donald 'free-speech believer' Trump pardoned a number of financial and violent criminals while ignoring calls to pardon Julian Assange and Edward Snowden whose crimes are revealing highly relevant information about government manipulation and corruption and the widespread illegal surveillance of the American people by US 'security' agencies. It's so good to know that Trump is on the side of freedom and justice and not mega-criminals with

allegiance to Sabbatian-controlled Israel. These included a pardon for Israeli spy Jonathan Pollard who was jailed for life in 1987 under the Espionage Act. Aviem Sella, the Mossad agent who recruited Pollard, was also pardoned by Trump while Assange sat in jail and Snowden remained in exile in Russia. Sella had 'fled' (was helped to escape) to Israel in 1987 and was never extradited despite being charged under the Espionage Act. A Trump White House statement said that Sella's clemency had been 'supported by Benjamin Netanyahu, Ron Dermer, Israel's US Ambassador, David Friedman, US Ambassador to Israel and Miriam Adelson, wife of leading Trump donor Sheldon Adelson who died shortly before. Other friends of Jared Kushner were pardoned along with Sholom Weiss who was believed to be serving the longest-ever white-collar prison sentence of more than 800 years in 2000. The sentence was commuted of Ponzi-schemer Eliyahu Weinstein who defrauded Jews and others out of \$200 million. I did mention that Assange and Snowden were ignored, right? Trump gave Sabbatians almost everything they asked for in military and political support, moving the US Embassy from Tel Aviv to Jerusalem with its critical symbolic and literal implications for Palestinian statehood, and the 'deal of the Century' designed by Jared Kushner and David Friedman which gave the Sabbatian Israeli government the green light to substantially expand its already widespread program of building illegal Jewish-only settlements in the occupied land of the West Bank. This made a two-state 'solution' impossible by seizing all the land of a potential Palestinian homeland and that had been the plan since 1948 and then 1967 when the Arab-controlled Gaza Strip, West Bank, Sinai Peninsula and Syrian Golan Heights were occupied by Israel. All the talks about talks and road maps and delays have been buying time until the West Bank was physically occupied by Israeli real estate. Trump would have to be a monumentally ill-informed idiot not to see that this was the plan he was helping to complete. The Trump administration was in so many ways the Kushner administration which means the Netanyahu administration which means the Sabbatian administration. I understand why many opposing Cult fascism in all its forms gravitated to Trump, but he

was a crucial part of the Sabbatian plan and I will deal with this in the next chapter.

## **Joe Biden ('Democrat')**

A barely cognitive Joe Biden took over the presidency in January, 2021, along with his fellow empty shell, Vice-President Kamala Harris, as the latest Sabbatian gofers to enter the White House. Names on the door may have changed and the 'party' – the force behind them remained the same as Zionists were appointed to a stream of pivotal areas relating to Sabbatian plans and policy. They included: Janet Yellen, Treasury Secretary, former head of the Federal Reserve, and still another ultra-Zionist running the US Treasury after Mnuchin (Trump), Lew and Geithner (Obama), and Summers and Rubin (Clinton); Anthony Blinken, Secretary of State; Wendy Sherman, Deputy Secretary of State (so that's 'Biden's' Sabbatian foreign policy sorted); Jeff Zients, White House coronavirus coordinator; Rochelle Walensky, head of the Centers for Disease Control; Rachel Levine, transgender deputy health secretary (that's 'Covid' hoax policy under control); Merrick Garland, Attorney General; Alejandro Mayorkas, Secretary of Homeland Security; Cass Sunstein, Homeland Security with responsibility for new immigration laws; Avril Haines, Director of National Intelligence; Anne Neuberger, National Security Agency cybersecurity director (note, cybersecurity); David Cohen, CIA Deputy Director; Ronald Klain, Biden's Chief of Staff (see Rahm Emanuel); Eric Lander, a 'leading geneticist', Office of Science and Technology Policy director (see Smart Grid, synthetic biology agenda); Jessica Rosenworcel, acting head of the Federal Communications Commission (FCC) which controls Smart Grid technology policy and electromagnetic communication systems including 5G. How can it be that so many pivotal positions are held by two-percent of the American population and 0.2 percent of the world population administration after administration no matter who is the president and what is the party? It's a coincidence? Of course it's not and this is why Sabbatians have built their colossal global web of interlocking 'anti-

hate' hate groups to condemn anyone who asks these glaring questions as an 'anti-Semite'. The way that Jewish people horrifically abused in Sabbatian-backed Nazi Germany are exploited to this end is stomach-turning and disgusting beyond words.

## **Political fusion**

Sabbatian manipulation has reversed the roles of Republicans and Democrats and the same has happened in Britain with the Conservative and Labour Parties. Republicans and Conservatives were always labelled the 'right' and Democrats and Labour the 'left', but look at the policy positions now and the Democrat-Labour 'left' has moved further to the 'right' than Republicans and Conservatives under the banner of 'Woke', the Cult-created far-right tyranny. Where once the Democrat-Labour 'left' defended free speech and human rights they now seek to delete them and as I said earlier despite the 'Covid' fascism of the Jackboot Johnson Conservative government in the UK the Labour Party of leader Keir Starmer demanded even more extreme measures. The Labour Party has been very publicly absorbed by Sabbatians after a political and media onslaught against the previous leader, the weak and inept Jeremy Corbyn, over made-up allegations of 'anti-Semitism' both by him and his party. The plan was clear with this 'anti-Semite' propaganda and what was required in response was a swift and decisive 'fuck off' from Corbyn and a statement to expose the Anti-Semitism Industry (Sabbatian) attempt to silence Labour criticism of the Israeli government (Sabbatians) and purge the party of all dissent against the extremes of ultra-Zionism (Sabbatians). Instead Corbyn and his party fell to their knees and appeased the abusers which, by definition, is impossible. Appeasing one demand leads only to a new demand to be appeased until takeover is complete. Like I say – 'fuck off' would have been a much more effective policy and I have used it myself with great effect over the years when Sabbatians are on my case which is most of the time. I consider that fact a great compliment, by the way. The outcome of the Labour Party capitulation is that we now have a Sabbatian-controlled

Conservative Party 'opposed' by a Sabbatian-controlled Labour Party in a one-party Sabbatian state that hurtles towards the extremes of tyranny (the Sabbatian cult agenda). In America the situation is the same. Labour's Keir Starmer spends his days on his knees with his tongue out pointing to Tel Aviv, or I guess now Jerusalem, while Boris Johnson has an 'anti-Semitism czar' in the form of former Labour MP John Mann who keeps Starmer company on his prayer mat.

Sabbatian influence can be seen in Jewish members of the Labour Party who have been ejected for criticism of Israel including those from families that suffered in Nazi Germany. Sabbatians despise real Jewish people and target them even more harshly because it is so much more difficult to dub them 'anti-Semitic' although in their desperation they do try.

## CHAPTER THREE

### **The Pushbacker sting**

*Until you realize how easy it is for your mind to be manipulated, you  
remain the puppet of someone else's game*

Evita Ochel

I will use the presidencies of Trump and Biden to show how the manipulation of the one-party state plays out behind the illusion of political choice across the world. No two presidencies could – on the face of it – be more different and apparently at odds in terms of direction and policy.

A Renegade Mind sees beyond the obvious and focuses on outcomes and consequences and not image, words and waffle. The Cult embarked on a campaign to divide America between those who blindly support its agenda (the mentality known as 'Woke') and those who are pushing back on where the Cult and its Sabbatians want to go. This presents infinite possibilities for dividing and ruling the population by setting them at war with each other and allows a perceptual ring fence of demonisation to encircle the Pushbackers in a modern version of the Little Big Horn in 1876 when American cavalry led by Lieutenant Colonel George Custer were drawn into a trap, surrounded and killed by Native American tribes defending their land of thousands of years from being seized by the government. In this modern version the roles are reversed and it's those defending themselves from the Sabbatian government who are surrounded and the government that's seeking to destroy them. This trap was set years ago and to explain how we must return to 2016

and the emergence of Donald Trump as a candidate to be President of the United States. He set out to overcome the best part of 20 other candidates in the Republican Party before and during the primaries and was not considered by many in those early stages to have a prayer of living in the White House. The Republican Party was said to have great reservations about Trump and yet somehow he won the nomination. When you know how American politics works – politics in general – there is no way that Trump could have become the party's candidate unless the Sabbatian-controlled 'Neocons' that run the Republican Party wanted that to happen. We saw the proof in emails and documents made public by WikiLeaks that the Democratic Party hierarchy, or Democons, systematically undermined the campaign of Bernie Sanders to make sure that Sabbatian gofer Hillary Clinton won the nomination to be their presidential candidate. If the Democons could do that then the Neocons in the Republican Party could have derailed Trump in the same way. But they didn't and at that stage I began to conclude that Trump could well be the one chosen to be president. If that was the case the 'why' was pretty clear to see – the goal of dividing America between Cult agenda-supporting Wokers and Pushbackers who gravitated to Trump because he was telling them what they wanted to hear. His constituency of support had been increasingly ignored and voiceless for decades and profoundly through the eight years of Sabbatian puppet Barack Obama. Now here was someone speaking their language of pulling back from the incessant globalisation of political and economic power, the exporting of American jobs to China and elsewhere by 'American' (Sabbatian) corporations, the deletion of free speech, and the mass immigration policies that had further devastated job opportunities for the urban working class of all races and the once American heartlands of the Midwest.

### **Beware the forked tongue**

Those people collectively sighed with relief that at last a political leader was apparently on their side, but another trait of the Renegade Mind is that you look even harder at people telling you

what you want to hear than those who are telling you otherwise. Obviously as I said earlier people wish what they want to hear to be true and genuine and they are much more likely to believe that than someone saying what they don't want to hear and don't want to be true. Sales people are taught to be skilled in eliciting by calculated questioning what their customers want to hear and repeating that back to them as their own opinion to get their targets to like and trust them. Assets of the Cult are also sales people in the sense of selling perception. To read Cult manipulation you have to play the long and expanded game and not fall for the Vaudeville show of party politics. Both American parties are vehicles for the Cult and they exploit them in different ways depending on what the agenda requires at that moment. Trump and the Republicans were used to be the focus of dividing America and isolating Pushbackers to open the way for a Biden presidency to become the most extreme in American history by advancing the full-blown Woke (Cult) agenda with the aim of destroying and silencing Pushbackers now labelled Nazi Trump supporters and white supremacists.

Sabbatians wanted Trump in office for the reasons described by ultra-Zionist Saul Alinsky (1909-1972) who was promoting the Woke philosophy through 'community organising' long before anyone had heard of it. In those days it still went by its traditional name of Marxism. The reason for the manipulated Trump phenomenon was laid out in Alinsky's 1971 book, *Rules for Radicals*, which was his blueprint for overthrowing democratic and other regimes and replacing them with Sabbatian Marxism. Not surprisingly his to-do list was evident in the Sabbatian French and Russian 'Revolutions' and that in China which will become very relevant in the next chapter about the 'Covid' hoax. Among Alinsky's followers have been the deeply corrupt Barack Obama, House Speaker Nancy Pelosi and Hillary Clinton who described him as a 'hero'. All three are Sabbatian stooges with Pelosi personifying the arrogant corrupt idiocy that so widely fronts up for the Cult inner core. Predictably as a Sabbatian advocate of the 'light-bringer' Alinsky features Lucifer on the dedication page of his book as the original radical who gained



his own kingdom ('Earth' as we shall see). One of Alinsky's golden radical rules was to pick an individual and focus all attention, hatred and blame on them and not to target faceless bureaucracies and corporations. *Rules for Radicals* is really a Sabbatian handbook with its contents repeatedly employed all over the world for centuries and why wouldn't Sabbatians bring to power their designer-villain to be used as the individual on which all attention, hatred and blame was bestowed? This is what they did and the only question for me is how much Trump knew that and how much he was manipulated. A bit of both, I suspect. This was Alinsky's Trump technique from a man who died in 1972. The technique has spanned history:

Pick the target, freeze it, personalize it, polarize it. Don't try to attack abstract corporations or bureaucracies. Identify a responsible individual. Ignore attempts to shift or spread the blame.

From the moment Trump came to illusory power everything was about him. It wasn't about Republican policy or opinion, but all about Trump. Everything he did was presented in negative, derogatory and abusive terms by the Sabbatian-dominated media led by Cult operations such as CNN, MSNBC, *The New York Times* and the Jeff Bezos-owned *Washington Post* – 'Pick the target, freeze it, personalize it, polarize it.' Trump was turned into a demon to be vilified by those who hated him and a demi-god loved by those who worshipped him. This, in turn, had his supporters, too, presented as equally demonic in preparation for the punchline later down the line when Biden was about to take office. It was here's a Trump, there's a Trump, everywhere a Trump, Trump. Virtually every news story or happening was filtered through the lens of 'The Donald'. You loved him or hated him and which one you chose was said to define you as Satan's spawn or a paragon of virtue. Even supporting some Trump policies or statements and not others was enough for an assault on your character. No shades of grey were or are allowed. Everything is black and white (literally and figuratively). A Californian I knew had her head utterly scrambled by her hatred for Trump while telling people they should love each other. She was so totally consumed by

Trump Derangement Syndrome as it became to be known that this glaring contradiction would never have occurred to her. By definition anyone who criticised Trump or praised his opponents was a hero and this lady described Joe Biden as 'a kind, honest gentleman' when he's a provable liar, mega-crook and vicious piece of work to boot. Sabbatians had indeed divided America using Trump as the fall-guy and all along the clock was ticking on the consequences for his supporters.

### **In hock to his masters**

Trump gave Sabbatians via Israel almost everything they wanted in his four years. Ask and you shall receive was the dynamic between himself and Benjamin Netanyahu orchestrated by Trump's ultra-Zionist son-in-law Jared Kushner, his ultra-Zionist Ambassador to Israel, David Friedman, and ultra-Zionist 'Israel adviser', Jason Greenblatt. The last two were central to the running and protecting from collapse of his business empire, the Trump Organisation, and colossal business failures made him forever beholding to Sabbatian networks that bailed him out. By the start of the 1990s Trump owed \$4 billion to banks that he couldn't pay and almost \$1 billion of that was down to him personally and not his companies. This mega-disaster was the result of building two new casinos in Atlantic City and buying the enormous Taj Mahal operation which led to crippling debt payments. He had borrowed fantastic sums from 72 banks with major Sabbatian connections and although the scale of debt should have had him living in a tent alongside the highway they never foreclosed. A plan was devised to lift Trump from the mire by BT Securities Corporation and Rothschild Inc. and the case was handled by Wilber Ross who had worked for the Rothschilds for 27 years. Ross would be named US Commerce Secretary after Trump's election. Another crucial figure in saving Trump was ultra-Zionist 'investor' Carl Icahn who bought the Taj Mahal casino. Icahn was made special economic adviser on financial regulation in the Trump administration. He didn't stay long but still managed to find time to make a tidy sum of a reported \$31.3 million when he sold his

holdings affected by the price of steel three days before Trump imposed a 235 percent tariff on steel imports. What amazing bits of luck these people have. Trump and Sabbatian operatives have long had a close association and his mentor and legal adviser from the early 1970s until 1986 was the dark and genetically corrupt ultra-Zionist Roy Cohn who was chief counsel to Senator Joseph McCarthy's 'communist' witch-hunt in the 1950s. *Esquire* magazine published an article about Cohn with the headline 'Don't mess with Roy Cohn'. He was described as the most feared lawyer in New York and 'a ruthless master of dirty tricks ... [with] ... more than one Mafia Don on speed dial'. Cohn's influence, contacts, support and protection made Trump a front man for Sabbatians in New York with their connections to one of Cohn's many criminal employers, the 'Russian' Sabbatian Mafia. Israel-centric media mogul Rupert Murdoch was introduced to Trump by Cohn and they started a long friendship. Cohn died in 1986 weeks after being disbarred for unethical conduct by the Appellate Division of the New York State Supreme Court. The wheels of justice do indeed run slow given the length of Cohn's crooked career.

## **QAnon-sense**

We are asked to believe that Donald Trump with his fundamental connections to Sabbatian networks and operatives has been leading the fight to stop the Sabbatian agenda for the fascistic control of America and the world. Sure he has. A man entrapped during his years in the White House by Sabbatian operatives and whose biggest financial donor was casino billionaire Sheldon Adelson who was Sabbatian to his DNA?? Oh, do come on. Trump has been used to divide America and isolate Pushbackers on the Cult agenda under the heading of 'Trump supporters', 'insurrectionists' and 'white supremacists'. The US Intelligence/Mossad Psyop or psychological operation known as QAnon emerged during the Trump years as a central pillar in the Sabbatian campaign to lead Pushbackers into the trap set by those that wished to destroy them. I knew from the start that QAnon was a scam because I had seen the same scenario many

times before over 30 years under different names and I had written about one in particular in the books. 'Not again' was my reaction when QAnon came to the fore. The same script is pulled out every few years and a new name added to the letterhead. The story always takes the same form: 'Insiders' or 'the good guys' in the government-intelligence-military 'Deep State' apparatus were going to instigate mass arrests of the 'bad guys' which would include the Rockefellers, Rothschilds, Barack Obama, Hillary Clinton, George Soros, etc., etc. Dates are given for when the 'good guys' are going to move in, but the dates pass without incident and new dates are given which pass without incident. The central message to Pushbackers in each case is that they don't have to do anything because there is 'a plan' and it is all going to be sorted by the 'good guys' on the inside. 'Trust the plan' was a QAnon mantra when the only plan was to misdirect Pushbackers into putting their trust in a Psyop they believed to be real. Beware, beware, those who tell you what you want to hear and always check it out. Right up to Biden's inauguration QAnon was still claiming that 'the Storm' was coming and Trump would stay on as president when Biden and his cronies were arrested and jailed. It was never going to happen and of course it didn't, but what did happen as a result provided that punchline to the Sabbatian Trump/QAnon Psyop.

On January 6th, 2021, a very big crowd of Trump supporters gathered in the National Mall in Washington DC down from the Capitol Building to protest at what they believed to be widespread corruption and vote fraud that stopped Trump being re-elected for a second term as president in November, 2020. I say as someone that does not support Trump or Biden that the evidence is clear that major vote-fixing went on to favour Biden, a man with cognitive problems so advanced he can often hardly string a sentence together without reading the words written for him on the Teleprompter. Glaring ballot discrepancies included serious questions about electronic voting machines that make vote rigging a comparative cinch and hundreds of thousands of paper votes that suddenly appeared during already advanced vote counts and virtually all of

them for Biden. Early Trump leads in crucial swing states suddenly began to close and disappear. The pandemic hoax was used as the excuse to issue almost limitless numbers of mail-in ballots with no checks to establish that the recipients were still alive or lived at that address. They were sent to streams of people who had not even asked for them. Private organisations were employed to gather these ballots and who knows what they did with them before they turned up at the counts. The American election system has been manipulated over decades to become a sick joke with more holes than a Swiss cheese for the express purpose of dictating the results. Then there was the criminal manipulation of information by Sabbatian tech giants like Facebook, Twitter and Google-owned YouTube which deleted pro-Trump, anti-Biden accounts and posts while everything in support of Biden was left alone. Sabbatians wanted Biden to win because after the dividing of America it was time for full-on Woke and every aspect of the Cult agenda to be unleashed.

## **Hunter gatherer**

Extreme Silicon Valley bias included blocking information by the *New York Post* exposing a Biden scandal that should have ended his bid for president in the final weeks of the campaign. Hunter Biden, his monumentally corrupt son, is reported to have sent a laptop to be repaired at a local store and failed to return for it. Time passed until the laptop became the property of the store for non-payment of the bill. When the owner saw what was on the hard drive he gave a copy to the FBI who did nothing even though it confirmed widespread corruption in which the Joe Biden family were using his political position, especially when he was vice president to Obama, to make multiple millions in countries around the world and most notably Ukraine and China. Hunter Biden's one-time business partner Tony Bobulinski went public when the story broke in the *New York Post* to confirm the corruption he saw and that Joe Biden not only knew what was going on he also profited from the spoils. Millions were handed over by a Chinese company with close

connections – like all major businesses in China – to the Chinese communist party of President Xi Jinping. Joe Biden even boasted at a meeting of the Cult's World Economic Forum that as vice president he had ordered the government of Ukraine to fire a prosecutor. What he didn't mention was that the same man just happened to be investigating an energy company which was part of Hunter Biden's corrupt portfolio. The company was paying him big bucks for no other reason than the influence his father had. Overnight Biden's presidential campaign should have been over given that he had lied publicly about not knowing what his son was doing. Instead almost the entire Sabbatian-owned mainstream media and Sabbatian-owned Silicon Valley suppressed circulation of the story. This alone went a mighty way to rigging the election of 2020. Cult assets like Mark Zuckerberg at Facebook also spent hundreds of millions to be used in support of Biden and vote 'administration'.

The Cult had used Trump as the focus to divide America and was now desperate to bring in moronic, pliable, corrupt Biden to complete the double-whammy. No way were they going to let little things like the will of the people thwart their plan. Silicon Valley widely censored claims that the election was rigged because it *was* rigged. For the same reason anyone claiming it was rigged was denounced as a 'white supremacist' including the pathetically few Republican politicians willing to say so. Right across the media where the claim was mentioned it was described as a 'false claim' even though these excuses for 'journalists' would have done no research into the subject whatsoever. Trump won seven million more votes than any sitting president had ever achieved while somehow a cognitively-challenged soon to be 78-year-old who was hidden away from the public for most of the campaign managed to win more votes than any presidential candidate in history. It makes no sense. You only had to see election rallies for both candidates to witness the enthusiasm for Trump and the apathy for Biden. Tens of thousands would attend Trump events while Biden was speaking in empty car parks with often only television crews attending and framing their shots to hide the fact that no one was there. It was pathetic to see

footage come to light of Biden standing at a podium making speeches only to TV crews and party fixers while reading the words written for him on massive Teleprompter screens. So, yes, those protestors on January 6th had a point about election rigging, but some were about to walk into a trap laid for them in Washington by the Cult Deep State and its QAnon Psyop. This was the Capitol Hill riot ludicrously dubbed an 'insurrection'.

## **The spider and the fly**

Renegade Minds know there are not two 'sides' in politics, only one side, the Cult, working through all 'sides'. It's a stage show, a puppet show, to direct the perceptions of the population into focusing on diversions like parties and candidates while missing the puppeteers with their hands holding all the strings. The Capitol Hill 'insurrection' brings us back to the Little Big Horn. Having created two distinct opposing groupings – Woke and Pushbackers – the trap was about to be sprung. Pushbackers were to be encircled and isolated by associating them all in the public mind with Trump and then labelling Trump as some sort of Confederate leader. I knew immediately that the Capitol riot was a set-up because of two things. One was how easy the rioters got into the building with virtually no credible resistance and secondly I could see – as with the 'Covid' hoax in the West at the start of 2020 – how the Cult could exploit the situation to move its agenda forward with great speed. My experience of Cult techniques and activities over more than 30 years has showed me that while they do exploit situations they haven't themselves created this never happens with events of fundamental agenda significance. Every time major events giving cultists the excuse to rapidly advance their plan you find they are manipulated into being for the specific reason of providing that excuse – Problem-Reaction-Solution. Only a tiny minority of the huge crowd of Washington protestors sought to gain entry to the Capitol by smashing windows and breaching doors. That didn't matter. The whole crowd and all Pushbackers, even if they did not support Trump, were going to be lumped together as dangerous

insurrectionists and conspiracy theorists. The latter term came into widespread use through a CIA memo in the 1960s aimed at discrediting those questioning the nonsensical official story of the Kennedy assassination and it subsequently became widely employed by the media. It's still being used by inept 'journalists' with no idea of its origin to discredit anyone questioning anything that authority claims to be true. When you are perpetrating a conspiracy you need to discredit the very word itself even though the dictionary definition of conspiracy is merely 'the activity of secretly planning with other people to do something bad or illegal' and 'a general agreement to keep silent about a subject for the purpose of keeping it secret'. On that basis there are conspiracies almost wherever you look. For obvious reasons the Cult and its lapdog media have to claim there are no conspiracies even though the word appears in state laws as with conspiracy to defraud, to murder, and to corrupt public morals.

Agent provocateurs are widely used by the Cult Deep State to manipulate genuine people into acting in ways that suit the desired outcome. By genuine in this case I mean protestors genuinely supporting Trump and claims that the election was stolen. In among them, however, were agents of the state wearing the garb of Trump supporters and QAnon to pump-prime the Capital riot which some genuine Trump supporters naively fell for. I described the situation as 'Come into my parlour said the spider to the fly'. Leaflets appeared through the Woke paramilitary arm Antifa, the anti-fascist fascists, calling on supporters to turn up in Washington looking like Trump supporters even though they hated him. Some of those arrested for breaching the Capitol Building were sourced to Antifa and its stable mate Black Lives Matter. Both organisations are funded by Cult billionaires and corporations. One man charged for the riot was according to his lawyer a former FBI agent who had held top secret security clearance for 40 years. Attorney Thomas Plofchan said of his client, 66-year-old Thomas Edward Caldwell:

He has held a Top Secret Security Clearance since 1979 and has undergone multiple Special Background Investigations in support of his clearances. After retiring from the Navy, he



worked as a section chief for the Federal Bureau of Investigation from 2009-2010 as a GS-12 [mid-level employee].

He also formed and operated a consulting firm performing work, often classified, for U.S government customers including the US. Drug Enforcement Agency, Department of Housing and Urban Development, the US Coast Guard, and the US Army Personnel Command.

A judge later released Caldwell pending trial in the absence of evidence about a conspiracy or that he tried to force his way into the building. *The New York Post* reported a 'law enforcement source' as saying that 'at least two known Antifa members were spotted' on camera among Trump supporters during the riot while one of the rioters arrested was John Earle Sullivan, a seriously extreme Black Lives Matter Trump-hater from Utah who was previously arrested and charged in July, 2020, over a BLM-Antifa riot in which drivers were threatened and one was shot. Sullivan is the founder of Utah-based Insurgence USA which is an affiliate of the Cult-created-and-funded Black Lives Matter movement. Footage appeared and was then deleted by Twitter of Trump supporters calling out Antifa infiltrators and a group was filmed changing into pro-Trump clothing before the riot. Security at the building was *pathetic* – as planned. Colonel Leroy Fletcher Prouty, a man with long experience in covert operations working with the US security apparatus, once described the tell-tale sign to identify who is involved in an assassination. He said:

No one has to direct an assassination – it happens. The active role is played secretly by permitting it to happen. This is the greatest single clue. Who has the power to call off or reduce the usual security precautions?

This principle applies to many other situations and certainly to the Capitol riot of January 6th, 2021.

## **The sting**

With such a big and potentially angry crowd known to be gathering near the Capitol the security apparatus would have had a major police detail to defend the building with National Guard troops on

standby given the strength of feeling among people arriving from all over America encouraged by the QAnon Psyop and statements by Donald Trump. Instead Capitol Police 'security' was flimsy, weak, and easily breached. The same number of officers was deployed as on a regular day and that is a blatant red flag. They were not staffed or equipped for a possible riot that had been an obvious possibility in the circumstances. No protective and effective fencing worth the name was put in place and there were no contingency plans. The whole thing was basically a case of standing aside and waving people in. Once inside police mostly backed off apart from one Capitol police officer who ridiculously shot dead unarmed Air Force veteran protestor Ashli Babbitt without a warning as she climbed through a broken window. The 'investigation' refused to name or charge the officer after what must surely be considered a murder in the circumstances. They just lifted a carpet and swept. The story was endlessly repeated about five people dying in the 'armed insurrection' when there was no report of rioters using weapons. Apart from Babbitt the other four died from a heart attack, strokes and apparently a drug overdose. Capitol police officer Brian Sicknick was reported to have died after being bludgeoned with a fire extinguisher when he was alive after the riot was over and died later of what the Washington Medical Examiner's Office said was a stroke. Sicknick had no external injuries. The lies were delivered like rapid fire. There was a narrative to build with incessant repetition of the lie until the lie became the accepted 'everybody knows that' truth. The 'Big Lie' technique of Nazi Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels is constantly used by the Cult which was behind the Nazis and is today behind the 'Covid' and 'climate change' hoaxes. Goebbels said:

If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie, and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State.

Most protestors had a free run of the Capitol Building. This allowed pictures to be taken of rioters in iconic parts of the building including the Senate chamber which could be used as propaganda images against all Pushbackers. One Congresswoman described the scene as 'the worst kind of non-security anybody could ever imagine'. Well, the first part was true, but someone obviously did imagine it and made sure it happened. Some photographs most widely circulated featured people wearing QAnon symbols and now the Psyop would be used to dub all QAnon followers with the ubiquitous fit-all label of 'white supremacist' and 'insurrectionists'. When a Muslim extremist called Noah Green drove his car at two police officers at the Capitol Building killing one in April, 2021, there was no such political and media hysteria. They were just disappointed he wasn't white.

## **The witch-hunt**

Government prosecutor Michael Sherwin, an aggressive, dark-eyed, professional Rottweiler led the 'investigation' and to call it over the top would be to understate reality a thousand fold. Hundreds were tracked down and arrested for the crime of having the wrong political views and people were jailed who had done nothing more than walk in the building, committed no violence or damage to property, took a few pictures and left. They were labelled a 'threat to the Republic' while Biden sat in the White House signing executive orders written for him that were dismantling 'the Republic'. Even when judges ruled that a mother and son should not be in jail the government kept them there. Some of those arrested have been badly beaten by prison guards in Washington and lawyers for one man said he suffered a fractured skull and was made blind in one eye. Meanwhile a woman is shot dead for no reason by a Capitol Police officer and we are not allowed to know who he is never mind what has happened to him although that will be *nothing*. The Cult's QAnon/Trump sting to identify and isolate Pushbackers and then target them on the road to crushing and deleting them was a resounding success. You would have thought the Russians had

invaded the building at gunpoint and lined up senators for a firing squad to see the political and media reaction. Congresswoman Alexandria Ocasio-Cortez is a child in a woman's body, a terrible-tuos, me, me, me, Woker narcissist of such proportions that words have no meaning. She said she thought she was going to die when 'insurrectionists' banged on her office door. It turned out she wasn't even in the Capitol Building when the riot was happening and the 'banging' was a Capitol Police officer. She referred to herself as a 'survivor' which is an insult to all those true survivors of violent and sexual abuse while she lives her pampered and privileged life talking drivel for a living. Her Woke colleague and fellow mega-narcissist Rashida Tlaib broke down describing the devastating effect on her, too, of *not being* in the building when the rioters were there. Ocasio-Cortez and Tlaib are members of a fully-Woke group of Congresswomen known as 'The Squad' along with Ilhan Omar and Ayanna Pressley. The Squad from what I can see can be identified by its vehement anti-white racism, anti-white men agenda, and, as always in these cases, the absence of brain cells on active duty.

The usual suspects were on the riot case immediately in the form of Democrat ultra-Zionist senators and operatives Chuck Schumer and Adam Schiff demanding that Trump be impeached for 'his part in the insurrection'. The same pair of prats had led the failed impeachment of Trump over the invented 'Russia collusion' nonsense which claimed Russia had helped Trump win the 2016 election. I didn't realise that Tel Aviv had been relocated just outside Moscow. I must find an up-to-date map. The Russia hoax was a Sabbatian operation to keep Trump occupied and impotent and to stop any rapport with Russia which the Cult wants to retain as a perceptual enemy to be pulled out at will. Puppet Biden began attacking Russia when he came to office as the Cult seeks more upheaval, division and war across the world. A two-year stage show 'Russia collusion inquiry' headed by the not-very-bright former 9/11 FBI chief Robert Mueller, with support from 19 lawyers, 40 FBI agents plus intelligence analysts, forensic accountants and other

staff, devoured tens of millions of dollars and found no evidence of Russia collusion which a ten-year-old could have told them on day one. Now the same moronic Schumer and Schiff wanted a second impeachment of Trump over the Capitol 'insurrection' (riot) which the arrested development of Schumer called another 'Pearl Harbor' while others compared it with 9/11 in which 3,000 died and, in the case of CNN, with the Rwandan genocide in the 1990s in which an estimated 500,000 to 600,000 were murdered, between 250, 000 and 500,000 women were raped, and populations of whole towns were hacked to death with machetes. To make those comparisons purely for Cult political reasons is beyond insulting to those that suffered and lost their lives and confirms yet again the callous inhumanity that we are dealing with. Schumer is a monumental idiot and so is Schiff, but they serve the Cult agenda and do whatever they're told so they get looked after. Talking of idiots – another inane man who spanned the Russia and Capitol impeachment attempts was Senator Eric Swalwell who had the nerve to accuse Trump of collusion with the Russians while sleeping with a Chinese spy called Christine Fang or 'Fang Fang' which is straight out of a Bond film no doubt starring Klaus Schwab as the bloke living on a secret island and controlling laser weapons positioned in space and pointing at world capitals. Fang Fang plays the part of Bond's infiltrator girlfriend which I'm sure she would enjoy rather more than sharing a bed with the brainless Swalwell, lying back and thinking of China. The FBI eventually warned Swalwell about Fang Fang which gave her time to escape back to the Chinese dictatorship. How very thoughtful of them. The second Trump impeachment also failed and hardly surprising when an impeachment is supposed to remove a sitting president and by the time it happened Trump was no longer president. These people are running your country America, well, officially anyway. Terrifying isn't it?

### **Outcomes tell the story - always**

The outcome of all this – and it's the *outcome* on which Renegade Minds focus, not the words – was that a vicious, hysterical and

obviously pre-planned assault was launched on Pushbackers to censor, silence and discredit them and even targeted their right to earn a living. They have since been condemned as 'domestic terrorists' that need to be treated like Al-Qaeda and Islamic State. 'Domestic terrorists' is a label the Cult has been trying to make stick since the period of the Oklahoma bombing in 1995 which was blamed on 'far-right domestic terrorists'. If you read *The Trigger* you will see that the bombing was clearly a Problem-Reaction-Solution carried out by the Deep State during a Bill Clinton administration so corrupt that no dictionary definition of the term would even nearly suffice. Nearly 30, 000 troops were deployed from all over America to the empty streets of Washington for Biden's inauguration. Ten thousand of them stayed on with the pretext of protecting the capital from insurrectionists when it was more psychological programming to normalise the use of the military in domestic law enforcement in support of the Cult plan for a police-military state. Biden's fascist administration began a purge of 'wrong-thinkers' in the military which means anyone that is not on board with Woke. The Capitol Building was surrounded by a fence with razor wire and the Land of the Free was further symbolically and literally dismantled. The circle was completed with the installation of Biden and the exploitation of the QAnon Psyop.

America had never been so divided since the civil war of the 19th century, Pushbackers were isolated and dubbed terrorists and now, as was always going to happen, the Cult immediately set about deleting what little was left of freedom and transforming American society through a swish of the hand of the most controlled 'president' in American history leading (officially at least) the most extreme regime since the country was declared an independent state on July 4th, 1776. Biden issued undebated, dictatorial executive orders almost by the hour in his opening days in office across the whole spectrum of the Cult wish-list including diluting controls on the border with Mexico allowing thousands of migrants to illegally enter the United States to transform the demographics of America and import an election-changing number of perceived Democrat

voters. Then there were Biden deportation amnesties for the already illegally resident (estimated to be as high as 20 or even 30 million). A bill before Congress awarded American citizenship to anyone who could prove they had worked in agriculture for just 180 days in the previous two years as 'Big Ag' secured its slave labour long-term. There were the plans to add new states to the union such as Puerto Rico and making Washington DC a state. They are all parts of a plan to ensure that the Cult-owned Woke Democrats would be permanently in power.

## **Border – what border?**

I have exposed in detail in other books how mass immigration into the United States and Europe is the work of Cult networks fuelled by the tens of billions spent to this and other ends by George Soros and his global Open Society (open borders) Foundations. The impact can be seen in America alone where the population has increased by *100 million* in little more than 30 years mostly through immigration. I wrote in *The Answer* that the plan was to have so many people crossing the southern border that the numbers become unstoppable and we are now there under Cult-owned Biden. El Salvador in Central America puts the scale of what is happening into context. A third of the population now lives in the United States, much of it illegally, and many more are on the way. The methodology is to crush Central and South American countries economically and spread violence through machete-wielding psychopathic gangs like MS-13 based in El Salvador and now operating in many American cities. Biden-imposed lax security at the southern border means that it is all but open. He said before his 'election' that he wanted to see a surge towards the border if he became president and that was the green light for people to do just that after election day to create the human disaster that followed for both America and the migrants. When that surge came the imbecilic Alexandria Ocasio-Cortez said it wasn't a 'surge' because they are 'children, not insurgents' and the term 'surge' (used by Biden) was a claim of 'white supremacists'.

This disingenuous lady may one day enter the realm of the most basic intelligence, but it won't be any time soon.

Sabbatians and the Cult are in the process of destroying America by importing violent people and gangs in among the genuine to terrorise American cities and by overwhelming services that cannot cope with the sheer volume of new arrivals. Something similar is happening in Europe as Western society in general is targeted for demographic and cultural transformation and upheaval. The plan demands violence and crime to create an environment of intimidation, fear and division and Soros has been funding the election of district attorneys across America who then stop prosecuting many crimes, reduce sentences for violent crimes and free as many violent criminals as they can. Sabbatians are creating the chaos from which order – their order – can respond in a classic Problem-Reaction-Solution. A Freemasonic moto says 'Ordo Ab Chao' (Order out of Chaos) and this is why the Cult is constantly creating chaos to impose a new 'order'. Here you have the reason the Cult is constantly creating chaos. The 'Covid' hoax can be seen with those entering the United States by plane being forced to take a 'Covid' test while migrants flooding through southern border processing facilities do not. Nothing is put in the way of mass migration and if that means ignoring the government's own 'Covid' rules then so be it. They know it's all bullshit anyway. Any pushback on this is denounced as 'racist' by Wokers and Sabbatian fronts like the ultra-Zionist Anti-Defamation League headed by the appalling Jonathan Greenblatt which at the same time argues that Israel should not give citizenship and voting rights to more Palestinian Arabs or the 'Jewish population' (in truth the Sabbatian network) will lose control of the country.

## **Society-changing numbers**

Biden's masters have declared that countries like El Salvador are so dangerous that their people must be allowed into the United States for humanitarian reasons when there are fewer murders in large parts of many Central American countries than in US cities like



Baltimore. That is not to say Central America cannot be a dangerous place and Cult-controlled American governments have been making it so since way back, along with the dismantling of economies, in a long-term plan to drive people north into the United States. Parts of Central America are very dangerous, but in other areas the story is being greatly exaggerated to justify relaxing immigration criteria. Migrants are being offered free healthcare and education in the United States as another incentive to head for the border and there is no requirement to be financially independent before you can enter to prevent the resources of America being drained. You can't blame migrants for seeking what they believe will be a better life, but they are being played by the Cult for dark and nefarious ends. The numbers since Biden took office are huge. In February, 2021, more than 100,000 people were known to have tried to enter the US illegally through the southern border (it was 34,000 in the same month in 2020) and in March it was 170,000 – a 418 percent increase on March, 2020. These numbers are only known people, not the ones who get in unseen. The true figure for migrants illegally crossing the border in a single month was estimated by one congressman at 250,000 and that number will only rise under Biden's current policy. Gangs of murdering drug-running thugs that control the Mexican side of the border demand money – thousands of dollars – to let migrants cross the Rio Grande into America. At the same time gun battles are breaking out on the border several times a week between rival Mexican drug gangs (which now operate globally) who are equipped with sophisticated military-grade weapons, grenades and armoured vehicles. While the Capitol Building was being 'protected' from a non-existent 'threat' by thousands of troops, and others were still deployed at the time in the Cult Neocon war in Afghanistan, the southern border of America was left to its fate. This is not incompetence, it is cold calculation.

By March, 2021, there were 17,000 unaccompanied children held at border facilities and many of them are ensnared by people traffickers for paedophile rings and raped on their journey north to America. This is not conjecture – this is fact. Many of those designated

children are in reality teenage boys or older. Meanwhile Wokers posture their self-purity for encouraging poor and tragic people to come to America and face this nightmare both on the journey and at the border with the disgusting figure of House Speaker Nancy Pelosi giving disingenuous speeches about caring for migrants. The woman's evil. Wokers condemned Trump for having children in cages at the border (so did Obama, *Shhhh*), but now they are sleeping on the floor without access to a shower with one border facility 729 percent over capacity. The Biden insanity even proposed flying migrants from the southern border to the northern border with Canada for 'processing'. The whole shambles is being overseen by ultra-Zionist Secretary of Homeland Security, the moronic liar Alejandro Mayorkas, who banned news cameras at border facilities to stop Americans seeing what was happening. Mayorkas said there was not a ban on news crews; it was just that they were not allowed to film. Alongside him at Homeland Security is another ultra-Zionist Cass Sunstein appointed by Biden to oversee new immigration laws. Sunstein despises conspiracy researchers to the point where he suggests they should be banned or *taxed* for having such views. The man is not bonkers or anything. He's perfectly well-adjusted, but adjusted to what is the question. Criticise what is happening and you are a 'white supremacist' when earlier non-white immigrants also oppose the numbers which effect their lives and opportunities. Black people in poor areas are particularly damaged by uncontrolled immigration and the increased competition for work opportunities with those who will work for less. They are also losing voting power as Hispanics become more dominant in former black areas. It's a downward spiral for them while the billionaires behind the policy drone on about how much they care about black people and 'racism'. None of this is about compassion for migrants or black people – that's just wind and air. Migrants are instead being mercilessly exploited to transform America while the countries they leave are losing their future and the same is true in Europe. Mass immigration may now be the work of Woke Democrats, but it can be traced back to the 1986 Immigration Reform and Control Act (it

wasn't) signed into law by Republican hero President Ronald Reagan which gave amnesty to millions living in the United States illegally and other incentives for people to head for the southern border. Here we have the one-party state at work again.

## **Save me syndrome**

Almost every aspect of what I have been exposing as the Cult agenda was on display in even the first days of 'Biden' with silencing of Pushbackers at the forefront of everything. A Renegade Mind will view the Trump years and QAnon in a very different light to their supporters and advocates as the dots are connected. The QAnon/Trump Psyop has given the Cult all it was looking for. We may not know how much, or little, that Trump realised he was being used, but that's a side issue. This pincer movement produced the desired outcome of dividing America and having Pushbackers isolated. To turn this around we have to look at new routes to empowerment which do not include handing our power to other people and groups through what I will call the 'Save Me Syndrome' – 'I want someone else to do it so that I don't have to'. We have seen this at work throughout human history and the QAnon/Trump Psyop is only the latest incarnation alongside all the others. Religion is an obvious expression of this when people look to a 'god' or priest to save them or tell them how to be saved and then there are 'save me' politicians like Trump. Politics is a diversion and not a 'saviour'. It is a means to block positive change, not make it possible.

Save Me Syndrome always comes with the same repeating theme of handing your power to whom or what you believe will save you while your real 'saviour' stares back from the mirror every morning. Renegade Minds are constantly vigilant in this regard and always asking the question 'What can I do?' rather than 'What can someone else do for me?' Gandhi was right when he said: 'You must be the change you want to see in the world.' We are indeed the people we have been waiting for. We are presented with a constant raft of reasons to concede that power to others and forget where the real power is. Humanity has the numbers and the Cult does not. It has to

use diversion and division to target the unstoppable power that comes from unity. Religions, governments, politicians, corporations, media, QAnon, are all different manifestations of this power-diversion and dilution. Refusing to give your power to governments and instead handing it to Trump and QAnon is not to take a new direction, but merely to recycle the old one with new names on the posters. I will explore this phenomenon as we proceed and how to break the cycles and recycles that got us here through the mists of repeating perception and so repeating history.

For now we shall turn to the most potent example in the entire human story of the consequences that follow when you give your power away. I am talking, of course, of the 'Covid' hoax.

## CHAPTER FOUR

### **'Covid': Calculated catastrophe**

*Facts are threatening to those invested in fraud*  
DaShanne Stokes

**W**e can easily unravel the real reason for the 'Covid pandemic' hoax by employing the Renegade Mind methodology that I have outlined this far. We'll start by comparing the long-planned Cult outcome with the 'Covid pandemic' outcome. Know the outcome and you'll see the journey.

I have highlighted the plan for the Hunger Games Society which has been in my books for so many years with the very few controlling the very many through ongoing dependency. To create this dependency it is essential to destroy independent livelihoods, businesses and employment to make the population reliant on the state (the Cult) for even the basics of life through a guaranteed pittance income. While independence of income remained these Cult ambitions would be thwarted. With this knowledge it was easy to see where the 'pandemic' hoax was going once talk of 'lockdowns' began and the closing of all but perceived 'essential' businesses to 'save' us from an alleged 'deadly virus'. Cult corporations like Amazon and Walmart were naturally considered 'essential' while mom and pop shops and stores had their doors closed by fascist decree. As a result with every new lockdown and new regulation more small and medium, even large businesses not owned by the Cult, went to the wall while Cult giants and their frontmen and women grew financially fatter by the second. Mom and pop were

denied an income and the right to earn a living and the wealth of people like Jeff Bezos (Amazon), Mark Zuckerberg (Facebook) and Sergei Brin and Larry Page (Google/Alphabet) have reached record levels. The Cult was increasing its own power through further dramatic concentrations of wealth while the competition was being destroyed and brought into a state of dependency. Lockdowns have been instigated to secure that very end and were never anything to do with health. My brother Paul spent 45 years building up a bus repair business, but lockdowns meant buses were running at a fraction of normal levels for months on end. Similar stories can be told in their hundreds of millions worldwide. Efforts of a lifetime coldly destroyed by Cult multi-billionaires and their lackeys in government and law enforcement who continued to earn their living from the taxation of the people while denying the right of the same people to earn theirs. How different it would have been if those making and enforcing these decisions had to face the same financial hardships of those they affected, but they never do.

## **Gates of Hell**

Behind it all in the full knowledge of what he is doing and why is the psychopathic figure of Cult operative Bill Gates. His puppet Tedros at the World Health Organization declared 'Covid' a pandemic in March, 2020. The WHO had changed the definition of a 'pandemic' in 2009 just a month before declaring the 'swine flu pandemic' which would not have been so under the previous definition. The same applies to 'Covid'. The definition had included... 'an infection by an infectious agent, occurring simultaneously in different countries, with a significant mortality rate relative to the proportion of the population infected'. The new definition removed the need for 'significant mortality'. The 'pandemic' has been fraudulent even down to the definition, but Gates demanded economy-destroying lockdowns, school closures, social distancing, mandatory masks, a 'vaccination' for every man, woman and child on the planet and severe consequences and restrictions for those that refused. Who gave him this power? The

Cult did which he serves like a little boy in short trousers doing what his daddy tells him. He and his psychopathic missus even smiled when they said that much worse was to come (what they knew was planned to come). Gates responded in the matter-of-fact way of all psychopaths to a question about the effect on the world economy of what he was doing:

Well, it won't go to zero but it will shrink. Global GDP is probably going to take the biggest hit ever [Gates was smiling as he said this] ... in my lifetime this will be the greatest economic hit. But you don't have a choice. People act as if you have a choice. People don't feel like going to the stadium when they might get infected ... People are deeply affected by seeing these stats, by knowing they could be part of the transmission chain, old people, their parents and grandparents, could be affected by this, and so you don't get to say ignore what is going on here.

There will be the ability to open up, particularly in rich countries, if things are done well over the next few months, but for the world at large normalcy only returns when we have largely vaccinated the entire population.

The man has no compassion or empathy. How could he when he's a psychopath like all Cult players? My own view is that even beyond that he is very seriously mentally ill. Look in his eyes and you can see this along with his crazy flailing arms. You don't do what he has done to the world population since the start of 2020 unless you are mentally ill and at the most extreme end of psychopathic. You especially don't do it when to you know, as we shall see, that cases and deaths from 'Covid' are fakery and a product of monumental figure massaging. 'These stats' that Gates referred to are based on a 'test' that's not testing for the 'virus' as he has known all along. He made his fortune with big Cult support as an infamously ruthless software salesman and now buys global control of 'health' (death) policy without the population he affects having any say. It's a breathtaking outrage. Gates talked about people being deeply affected by fear of 'Covid' when that was because of *him* and his global network lying to them minute-by-minute supported by a lying media that he seriously influences and funds to the tune of hundreds of millions. He's handed big sums to media operations including the BBC, NBC, Al Jazeera, Univision, *PBS NewsHour*,

*ProPublica, National Journal, The Guardian, The Financial Times, The Atlantic, Texas Tribune, USA Today publisher Gannett, Washington Monthly, Le Monde, Center for Investigative Reporting, Pulitzer Center on Crisis Reporting, National Press Foundation, International Center for Journalists, Solutions Journalism Network, the Poynter Institute for Media Studies, and many more. Gates is everywhere in the 'Covid' hoax and the man must go to prison – or a mental facility – for the rest of his life and his money distributed to those he has taken such enormous psychopathic pleasure in crushing.*

## **The Muscle**

The Hunger Games global structure demands a police-military state – a fusion of the two into one force – which viciously imposes the will of the Cult on the population and protects the Cult from public rebellion. In that regard, too, the 'Covid' hoax just keeps on giving. Often unlawful, ridiculous and contradictory 'Covid' rules and regulations have been policed across the world by moronic automatons and psychopaths made faceless by face-nappy masks and acting like the Nazi SS and fascist blackshirts and brownshirts of Hitler and Mussolini. The smallest departure from the rules decreed by the psychos in government and their clueless gofers were jumped upon by the face-nappy fascists. Brutality against public protestors soon became commonplace even on girls, women and old people as the brave men with the batons – the Face-Nappies as I call them – broke up peaceful protests and handed out fines like confetti to people who couldn't earn a living let alone pay hundreds of pounds for what was once an accepted human right. Robot Face-Nappies of Nottingham police in the English East Midlands fined one group £11,000 for attending a child's birthday party. For decades I charted the transformation of law enforcement as genuine, decent officers were replaced with psychopaths and the brain dead who would happily and brutally do whatever their masters told them. Now they were let loose on the public and I would emphasise the point that none of this just happened. The step-by-step change in the dynamic between police and public was orchestrated from the shadows by



those who knew where this was all going and the same with the perceptual reframing of those in all levels of authority and official administration through 'training courses' by organisations such as Common Purpose which was created in the late 1980s and given a massive boost in Blair era Britain until it became a global phenomenon. Supposed public 'servants' began to view the population as the enemy and the same was true of the police. This was the start of the explosion of behaviour manipulation organisations and networks preparing for the all-war on the human psyche unleashed with the dawn of 2020. I will go into more detail about this later in the book because it is a core part of what is happening.

Police desecrated beauty spots to deter people gathering and arrested women for walking in the countryside alone 'too far' from their homes. We had arrogant, clueless sergeants in the Isle of Wight police where I live posting on Facebook what they insisted the population must do or else. A schoolmaster sergeant called Radford looked young enough for me to ask if his mother knew he was out, but he was posting what he *expected* people to do while a Sergeant Wilkinson boasted about fining lads for meeting in a McDonald's car park where they went to get a lockdown takeaway. Wilkinson added that he had even cancelled their order. What a pair of prats these people are and yet they have increasingly become the norm among Jackboot Johnson's Yellowshirts once known as the British police. This was the theme all over the world with police savagery common during lockdown protests in the United States, the Netherlands, and the fascist state of Victoria in Australia under its tyrannical and again moronic premier Daniel Andrews. Amazing how tyrannical and moronic tend to work as a team and the same combination could be seen across America as arrogant, narcissistic Woke governors and mayors such as Gavin Newsom (California), Andrew Cuomo (New York), Gretchen Whitmer (Michigan), Lori Lightfoot (Chicago) and Eric Garcetti (Los Angeles) did their Nazi and Stalin impressions with the full support of the compliant brutality of their enforcers in uniform as they arrested small business owners defying

fascist shutdown orders and took them to jail in ankle shackles and handcuffs. This happened to bistro owner Marlena Pavlos-Hackney in Gretchen Whitmer's fascist state of Michigan when police arrived to enforce an order by a state-owned judge for 'putting the community at risk' at a time when other states like Texas were dropping restrictions and migrants were pouring across the southern border without any 'Covid' questions at all. I'm sure there are many officers appalled by what they are ordered to do, but not nearly enough of them. If they were truly appalled they would not do it. As the months passed every opportunity was taken to have the military involved to make their presence on the streets ever more familiar and 'normal' for the longer-term goal of police-military fusion.

Another crucial element to the Hunger Games enforcement network has been encouraging the public to report neighbours and others for 'breaking the lockdown rules'. The group faced with £11,000 in fines at the child's birthday party would have been dobbed-in by a neighbour with a brain the size of a pea. The technique was most famously employed by the Stasi secret police in communist East Germany who had public informants placed throughout the population. A police chief in the UK says his force doesn't need to carry out 'Covid' patrols when they are flooded with so many calls from the public reporting other people for visiting the beach. Dorset police chief James Vaughan said people were so enthusiastic about snitching on their fellow humans they were now operating as an auxiliary arm of the police: 'We are still getting around 400 reports a week from the public, so we will respond to reports ... We won't need to be doing hotspot patrols because people are very quick to pick the phone up and tell us.' Vaughan didn't say that this is a pillar of all tyrannies of whatever complexion and the means to hugely extend the reach of enforcement while spreading distrust among the people and making them wary of doing anything that might get them reported. Those narcissistic Isle of Wight sergeants Radford and Wilkinson never fail to add a link to their Facebook posts where the public can inform on their fellow slaves.

Neither would be self-aware enough to realise they were imitating the Stasi which they might well never have heard of. Government psychologists that I will expose later laid out a policy to turn communities against each other in the same way.

### **A coincidence? Yep, and I can knit fog**

I knew from the start of the alleged pandemic that this was a Cult operation. It presented limitless potential to rapidly advance the Cult agenda and exploit manipulated fear to demand that every man, woman and child on the planet was 'vaccinated' in a process never used on humans before which infuses self-replicating *synthetic* material into human cells. Remember the plan to transform the human body from a biological to a synthetic biological state. I'll deal with the 'vaccine' (that's not actually a vaccine) when I focus on the genetic agenda. Enough to say here that mass global 'vaccination' justified by this 'new virus' set alarms ringing after 30 years of tracking these people and their methods. The 'Covid' hoax officially beginning in China was also a big red flag for reasons I will be explaining. The agenda potential was so enormous that I could dismiss any idea that the 'virus' appeared naturally. Major happenings with major agenda implications never occur without Cult involvement in making them happen. My questions were twofold in early 2020 as the media began its campaign to induce global fear and hysteria: Was this alleged infectious agent released on purpose by the Cult or did it even exist at all? I then did what I always do in these situations. I sat, observed and waited to see where the evidence and information would take me. By March and early April synchronicity was strongly – and ever more so since then – pointing me in the direction of *there is no 'virus'*. I went public on that with derision even from swathes of the alternative media that voiced a scenario that the Chinese government released the 'virus' in league with Deep State elements in the United States from a top-level bio-lab in Wuhan where the 'virus' is said to have first appeared. I looked at that possibility, but I didn't buy it for several reasons. Deaths from the 'virus' did not in any way match what they

would have been with a 'deadly bioweapon' and it is much more effective if you sell the *illusion* of an infectious agent rather than having a real one unless you can control through injection who has it and who doesn't. Otherwise you lose control of events. A made-up 'virus' gives you a blank sheet of paper on which you can make it do whatever you like and have any symptoms or mutant 'variants' you choose to add while a real infectious agent would limit you to what it actually does. A phantom disease allows you to have endless ludicrous 'studies' on the 'Covid' dollar to widen the perceived impact by inventing ever more 'at risk' groups including one study which said those who walk slowly may be almost four times more likely to die from the 'virus'. People are in psychiatric wards for less.

A real 'deadly bioweapon' can take out people in the hierarchy that are not part of the Cult, but essential to its operation. Obviously they don't want that. Releasing a real disease means you immediately lose control of it. Releasing an illusory one means you don't. Again it's vital that people are extra careful when dealing with what they want to hear. A bioweapon unleashed from a Chinese laboratory in collusion with the American Deep State may fit a conspiracy narrative, but is it true? Would it not be far more effective to use the excuse of a 'virus' to justify the real bioweapon – the 'vaccine'? That way your disease agent does not have to be transmitted and arrives directly through a syringe. I saw a French virologist Luc Montagnier quoted in the alternative media as saying he had discovered that the alleged 'new' severe acute respiratory syndrome coronavirus , or SARS-CoV-2, was made artificially and included elements of the human immunodeficiency 'virus' (HIV) and a parasite that causes malaria. SARS-CoV-2 is alleged to trigger an alleged illness called Covid-19. I remembered Montagnier's name from my research years before into claims that an HIV 'retrovirus' causes AIDs – claims that were demolished by Berkeley virologist Peter Duesberg who showed that no one had ever proved that HIV causes acquired immunodeficiency syndrome or AIDS. Claims that become accepted as fact, publicly and medically, with no proof whatsoever are an ever-recurring story that profoundly applies to

‘Covid’. Nevertheless, despite the lack of proof, Montagnier’s team at the Pasteur Institute in Paris had a long dispute with American researcher Robert Gallo over which of them discovered and isolated the HIV ‘virus’ and with *no evidence* found it to cause AIDS. You will see later that there is also no evidence that any ‘virus’ causes any disease or that there is even such a thing as a ‘virus’ in the way it is said to exist. The claim to have ‘isolated’ the HIV ‘virus’ will be presented in its real context as we come to the shocking story – and it is a story – of SARS-CoV-2 and so will Montagnier’s assertion that he identified the full SARS-CoV-2 genome.

## **Hoax in the making**

We can pick up the ‘Covid’ story in 2010 and the publication by the Rockefeller Foundation of a document called ‘Scenarios for the Future of Technology and International Development’. The inner circle of the Rockefeller family has been serving the Cult since John D. Rockefeller (1839-1937) made his fortune with Standard Oil. It is less well known that the same Rockefeller – the Bill Gates of his day – was responsible for establishing what is now referred to as ‘Big Pharma’, the global network of pharmaceutical companies that make outrageous profits dispensing scalpel and drug ‘medicine’ and are obsessed with pumping vaccines in ever-increasing number into as many human arms and backsides as possible. John D. Rockefeller was the driving force behind the creation of the ‘education’ system in the United States and elsewhere specifically designed to program the perceptions of generations thereafter. The Rockefeller family donated exceptionally valuable land in New York for the United Nations building and were central in establishing the World Health Organization in 1948 as an agency of the UN which was created from the start as a Trojan horse and stalking horse for world government. Now enter Bill Gates. His family and the Rockefellers have long been extremely close and I have seen genealogy which claims that if you go back far enough the two families fuse into the same bloodline. Gates has said that the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation was inspired by the Rockefeller Foundation and why not

when both are serving the same Cult? Major tax-exempt foundations are overwhelmingly criminal enterprises in which Cult assets fund the Cult agenda in the guise of 'philanthropy' while avoiding tax in the process. Cult operatives can become mega-rich in their role of front men and women for the psychopaths at the inner core and they, too, have to be psychopaths to knowingly serve such evil. Part of the deal is that a big percentage of the wealth gleaned from representing the Cult has to be spent advancing the ambitions of the Cult and hence you have the Rockefeller Foundation, Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation (and *so* many more) and people like George Soros with his global Open Society Foundations spending their billions in pursuit of global Cult control. Gates is a global public face of the Cult with his interventions in world affairs including Big Tech influence; a central role in the 'Covid' and 'vaccine' scam; promotion of the climate change shakedown; manipulation of education; geoengineering of the skies; and his food-control agenda as the biggest owner of farmland in America, his GMO promotion and through other means. As one writer said: 'Gates monopolizes or wields disproportionate influence over the tech industry, global health and vaccines, agriculture and food policy (including biopiracy and fake food), weather modification and other climate technologies, surveillance, education and media.' The almost limitless wealth secured through Microsoft and other not-allowed-to-fail ventures (including vaccines) has been ploughed into a long, long list of Cult projects designed to enslave the entire human race. Gates and the Rockefellers have been working as one unit with the Rockefeller-established World Health Organization leading global 'Covid' policy controlled by Gates through his mouth-piece Tedros. Gates became the WHO's biggest funder when Trump announced that the American government would cease its donations, but Biden immediately said he would restore the money when he took office in January, 2021. The Gates Foundation (the Cult) owns through limitless funding the world health system and the major players across the globe in the 'Covid' hoax.

Okay, with that background we return to that Rockefeller Foundation document of 2010 headed 'Scenarios for the Future of Technology and International Development' and its 'imaginary' epidemic of a virulent and deadly influenza strain which infected 20 percent of the global population and killed eight million in seven months. The Rockefeller scenario was that the epidemic destroyed economies, closed shops, offices and other businesses and led to governments imposing fierce rules and restrictions that included mandatory wearing of face masks and body-temperature checks to enter communal spaces like railway stations and supermarkets. The document predicted that even after the height of the Rockefeller-envisaged epidemic the authoritarian rule would continue to deal with further pandemics, transnational terrorism, environmental crises and rising poverty. Now you may think that the Rockefellers are our modern-day seers or alternatively, and rather more likely, that they well knew what was planned a few years further on. Fascism had to be imposed, you see, to 'protect citizens from risk and exposure'. The Rockefeller scenario document said:

During the pandemic, national leaders around the world flexed their authority and imposed airtight rules and restrictions, from the mandatory wearing of face masks to body-temperature checks at the entries to communal spaces like train stations and supermarkets. Even after the pandemic faded, this more authoritarian control and oversight of citizens and their activities stuck and even intensified. In order to protect themselves from the spread of increasingly global problems – from pandemics and transnational terrorism to environmental crises and rising poverty – leaders around the world took a firmer grip on power.

At first, the notion of a more controlled world gained wide acceptance and approval. Citizens willingly gave up some of their sovereignty – and their privacy – to more paternalistic states in exchange for greater safety and stability. Citizens were more tolerant, and even eager, for top-down direction and oversight, and national leaders had more latitude to impose order in the ways they saw fit.

In developed countries, this heightened oversight took many forms: biometric IDs for all citizens, for example, and tighter regulation of key industries whose stability was deemed vital to national interests. In many developed countries, enforced cooperation with a suite of new regulations and agreements slowly but steadily restored both order and, importantly, economic growth.

There we have the prophetic Rockefellers in 2010 and three years later came their paper for the Global Health Summit in Beijing, China, when government representatives, the private sector, international organisations and groups met to discuss the next 100 years of 'global health'. The Rockefeller Foundation-funded paper was called 'Dreaming the Future of Health for the Next 100 Years and more prophecy ensued as it described a dystopian future: 'The abundance of data, digitally tracking and linking people may mean the 'death of privacy' and may replace physical interaction with transient, virtual connection, generating isolation and raising questions of how values are shaped in virtual networks.' Next in the 'Covid' hoax preparation sequence came a 'table top' simulation in 2018 for another 'imaginary' pandemic of a disease called Clade X which was said to kill 900 million people. The exercise was organised by the Gates-funded Johns Hopkins University's Center for Health Security in the United States and this is the very same university that has been compiling the disgustingly and systematically erroneous global figures for 'Covid' cases and deaths. Similar Johns Hopkins health crisis scenarios have included the Dark Winter exercise in 2001 and Atlantic Storm in 2005.

## **Nostradamus 201**

For sheer predictive genius look no further prophecy-watchers than the Bill Gates-funded Event 201 held only six weeks before the 'coronavirus pandemic' is supposed to have broken out in China and Event 201 was based on a scenario of a global 'coronavirus pandemic'. Melinda Gates, the great man's missus, told the BBC that he had 'prepared for years' for a coronavirus pandemic which told us what we already knew. Nostradamugates had predicted in a TED talk in 2015 that a pandemic was coming that would kill a lot of people and demolish the world economy. My god, the man is a machine – possibly even literally. Now here he was only weeks before the real thing funding just such a simulated scenario and involving his friends and associates at Johns Hopkins, the World Economic Forum Cult-front of Klaus Schwab, the United Nations,



Johnson & Johnson, major banks, and officials from China and the Centers for Disease Control in the United States. What synchronicity – Johns Hopkins would go on to compile the fraudulent ‘Covid’ figures, the World Economic Forum and Schwab would push the ‘Great Reset’ in response to ‘Covid’, the Centers for Disease Control would be at the forefront of ‘Covid’ policy in the United States, Johnson & Johnson would produce a ‘Covid vaccine’, and everything would officially start just weeks later in China. Spooky, eh? They were even accurate in creating a simulation of a ‘virus’ pandemic because the ‘real thing’ would also be a simulation. Event 201 was not an exercise preparing for something that might happen; it was a rehearsal for what those in control knew was *going* to happen and very shortly. Hours of this simulation were posted on the Internet and the various themes and responses mirrored what would soon be imposed to transform human society. News stories were inserted and what they said would be commonplace a few weeks later with still more prophecy perfection. Much discussion focused on the need to deal with misinformation and the ‘anti-vax movement’ which is exactly what happened when the ‘virus’ arrived – was said to have arrived – in the West.

Cult-owned social media banned criticism and exposure of the official ‘virus’ narrative and when I said there *was* no ‘virus’ in early April, 2020, I was banned by one platform after another including YouTube, Facebook and later Twitter. The mainstream broadcast media in Britain was in effect banned from interviewing me by the Tony-Blair-created government broadcasting censor Ofcom headed by career government bureaucrat Melanie Dawes who was appointed just as the ‘virus’ hoax was about to play out in January, 2020. At the same time the Ickonic media platform was using Vimeo, another ultra-Zionist-owned operation, while our own player was being created and they deleted in an instant hundreds of videos, documentaries, series and shows to confirm their unbelievable vindictiveness. We had copies, of course, and they had to be restored one by one when our player was ready. These people have no class. Sabbatian Facebook promised free advertisements for the Gates-

controlled World Health Organization narrative while deleting ‘false claims and conspiracy theories’ to stop ‘misinformation’ about the alleged coronavirus. All these responses could be seen just a short while earlier in the scenarios of Event 201. Extreme censorship was absolutely crucial for the Cult because the official story was so ridiculous and unsupportable by the evidence that it could never survive open debate and the free-flow of information and opinion. If you can’t win a debate then don’t have one is the Cult’s approach throughout history. Facebook’s little boy front man – front boy – Mark Zuckerberg equated ‘credible and accurate information’ with official sources and exposing their lies with ‘misinformation’.

### **Silencing those that can see**

The censorship dynamic of Event 201 is now the norm with an army of narrative-supporting ‘fact-checker’ organisations whose entire reason for being is to tell the public that official narratives are true and those exposing them are lying. One of the most appalling of these ‘fact-checkers’ is called NewsGuard founded by ultra-Zionist Americans Gordon Crovitz and Steven Brill. Crovitz is a former publisher of *The Wall Street Journal*, former Executive Vice President of Dow Jones, a member of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), and on the board of the American Association of Rhodes Scholars. The CFR and Rhodes Scholarships, named after Rothschild agent Cecil Rhodes who plundered the gold and diamonds of South Africa for his masters and the Cult, have featured widely in my books. NewsGuard don’t seem to like me for some reason – I really can’t think why – and they have done all they can to have me censored and discredited which is, to quote an old British politician, like being savaged by a dead sheep. They are, however, like all in the censorship network, very well connected and funded by organisations themselves funded by, or connected to, Bill Gates. As you would expect with anything associated with Gates NewsGuard has an offshoot called HealthGuard which ‘fights online health care hoaxes’. How very kind. Somehow the NewsGuard European Managing Director Anna-Sophie Harling, a remarkably young-

looking woman with no broadcasting experience and little hands-on work in journalism, has somehow secured a position on the 'Content Board' of UK government broadcast censor Ofcom. An executive of an organisation seeking to discredit dissidents of the official narratives is making decisions for the government broadcast 'regulator' about content?? Another appalling 'fact-checker' is Full Fact funded by George Soros and global censors Google and Facebook.

It's amazing how many activists in the 'fact-checking', 'anti-hate', arena turn up in government-related positions – people like UK Labour Party activist Imran Ahmed who heads the Center for Countering Digital Hate founded by people like Morgan McSweeney, now chief of staff to the Labour Party's hapless and useless 'leader' Keir Starmer. Digital Hate – which is what it really is – uses the American spelling of Center to betray its connection to a transatlantic network of similar organisations which in 2020 shapeshifted from attacking people for 'hate' to attacking them for questioning the 'Covid' hoax and the dangers of the 'Covid vaccine'. It's just a coincidence, you understand. This is one of Imran Ahmed's hysterical statements: 'I would go beyond calling anti-vaxxers conspiracy theorists to say they are an extremist group that pose a national security risk.' No one could ever accuse this prat of understatement and he's including in that those parents who are now against vaccines after their children were damaged for life or killed by them. He's such a nice man. Ahmed does the rounds of the Woke media getting soft-ball questions from spineless 'journalists' who never ask what right he has to campaign to destroy the freedom of speech of others while he demands it for himself. There also seems to be an overrepresentation in Ofcom of people connected to the narrative-worshipping BBC. This incredible global network of narrative-support was super-vital when the 'Covid' hoax was played in the light of the mega-whopper lies that have to be defended from the spotlight cast by the most basic intelligence.

## **Setting the scene**

The Cult plays the long game and proceeds step-by-step ensuring that everything is in place before major cards are played and they don't come any bigger than the 'Covid' hoax. The psychopaths can't handle events where the outcome isn't certain and as little as possible – preferably nothing – is left to chance. Politicians, government and medical officials who would follow direction were brought to illusory power in advance by the Cult web whether on the national stage or others like state governors and mayors of America. For decades the dynamic between officialdom, law enforcement and the public was changed from one of service to one of control and dictatorship. Behaviour manipulation networks established within government were waiting to impose the coming 'Covid' rules and regulations specifically designed to subdue and rewire the psyche of the people in the guise of protecting health. These included in the UK the Behavioural Insights Team part-owned by the British government Cabinet Office; the Scientific Pandemic Insights Group on Behaviours (SPI-B); and a whole web of intelligence and military groups seeking to direct the conversation on social media and control the narrative. Among them are the cyberwarfare (on the people) 77th Brigade of the British military which is also coordinated through the Cabinet Office as civilian and military leadership continues to combine in what they call the Fusion Doctrine. The 77th Brigade is a British equivalent of the infamous Israeli (Sabbatian) military cyberwarfare and Internet manipulation operation Unit 8200 which I expose at length in *The Trigger*. Also carefully in place were the medical and science advisers to government – many on the payroll past or present of Bill Gates – and a whole alternative structure of unelected government stood by to take control when elected parliaments were effectively closed down once the 'Covid' card was slammed on the table. The structure I have described here and so much more was installed in every major country through the Cult networks. The top-down control hierarchy looks like this: The Cult – Cult-owned Gates – the World Health Organization and Tedros – Gates-funded or controlled chief medical officers and science 'advisers' (dictators) in each country –

political 'leaders' – law enforcement – The People. Through this simple global communication and enforcement structure the policy of the Cult could be imposed on virtually the entire human population so long as they acquiesced to the fascism. With everything in place it was time for the button to be pressed in late 2019/early 2020.

These were the prime goals the Cult had to secure for its will to prevail:

1) Locking down economies, closing all but designated 'essential' businesses (Cult-owned corporations were 'essential'), and putting the population under house arrest was an imperative to destroy independent income and employment and ensure dependency on the Cult-controlled state in the Hunger Games Society. Lockdowns had to be established as the global blueprint from the start to respond to the 'virus' and followed by pretty much the entire world.

2) The global population had to be terrified into believing in a deadly 'virus' that didn't actually exist so they would unquestioningly obey authority in the belief that authority must know how best to protect them and their families. Software salesman Gates would suddenly morph into the world's health expert and be promoted as such by the Cult-owned media.

3) A method of testing that wasn't testing for the 'virus', but was only claimed to be, had to be in place to provide the illusion of 'cases' and subsequent 'deaths' that had a very different cause to the 'Covid-19' that would be scribbled on the death certificate.

4) Because there was no 'virus' and the great majority testing positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' would have no symptoms of anything the lie had to be sold that people without symptoms (without the 'virus') could still pass it on to others. This was crucial to justify for the first time quarantining – house arresting – healthy people. Without this the economy-destroying lockdown of *everybody* could not have been credibly sold.

5) The 'saviour' had to be seen as a vaccine which beyond evil drug companies were working like angels of mercy to develop as quickly as possible, with all corners cut, to save the day. The public must absolutely not know that the 'vaccine' had nothing to do with a 'virus' or that the contents were ready and waiting with a very different motive long before the 'Covid' card was even lifted from the pack.

I said in March, 2020, that the 'vaccine' would have been created way ahead of the 'Covid' hoax which justified its use and the following December an article in the New York *Intelligencer* magazine said the Moderna 'vaccine' had been 'designed' by

January, 2020. This was 'before China had even acknowledged that the disease could be transmitted from human to human, more than a week before the first confirmed coronavirus case in the United States'. The article said that by the time the first American death was announced a month later 'the vaccine had already been manufactured and shipped to the National Institutes of Health for the beginning of its Phase I clinical trial'. The 'vaccine' was actually 'designed' long before that although even with this timescale you would expect the article to ask how on earth it could have been done that quickly. Instead it asked why the 'vaccine' had not been rolled out then and not months later. Journalism in the mainstream is truly dead. I am going to detail in the next chapter why the 'virus' has never existed and how a hoax on that scale was possible, but first the foundation on which the Big Lie of 'Covid' was built.

### **The test that doesn't test**

Fraudulent 'testing' is the bottom line of the whole 'Covid' hoax and was the means by which a 'virus' that did not exist *appeared* to exist. They could only achieve this magic trick by using a test not testing for the 'virus'. To use a test that *was* testing for the 'virus' would mean that every test would come back negative given there was no 'virus'. They chose to exploit something called the RT-PCR test invented by American biochemist Kary Mullis in the 1980s who said publicly that his PCR test ... *cannot detect infectious disease*. Yes, the 'test' used worldwide to detect infectious 'Covid' to produce all the illusory 'cases' and 'deaths' compiled by Johns Hopkins and others *cannot detect infectious disease*. This fact came from the mouth of the man who invented PCR and was awarded the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 1993 for doing so. Sadly, and incredibly conveniently for the Cult, Mullis died in August, 2019, at the age of 74 just before his test would be fraudulently used to unleash fascism on the world. He was said to have died from pneumonia which was an irony in itself. A few months later he would have had 'Covid-19' on his death certificate. I say the timing of his death was convenient because had he lived Mullis, a brilliant, honest and decent man, would have been

vociferously speaking out against the use of his test to detect 'Covid' when it was never designed, or able, to do that. I know that to be true given that Mullis made the same point when his test was used to 'detect' – not detect – HIV. He had been seriously critical of the Gallo/Montagnier claim to have isolated the HIV 'virus' and shown it to cause AIDS for which Mullis said there was no evidence. AIDS is actually not a disease but a series of diseases from which people die all the time. When they die from those *same diseases* after a positive 'test' for HIV then AIDS goes on their death certificate. I think I've heard that before somewhere. Countries instigated a policy with 'Covid' that anyone who tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' and died of any other cause within 28 days and even longer 'Covid-19' had to go on the death certificate. Cases have come from the test that can't test for infectious disease and the deaths are those who have died of *anything* after testing positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'. I'll have much more later about the death certificate scandal.

Mullis was deeply dismissive of the now US 'Covid' star Anthony Fauci who he said was a liar who didn't know anything about anything – 'and I would say that to his face – nothing.' He said of Fauci: 'The man thinks he can take a blood sample, put it in an electron microscope and if it's got a virus in there you'll know it – he doesn't understand electron microscopy and he doesn't understand medicine and shouldn't be in a position like he's in.' That position, terrifyingly, has made him the decider of 'Covid' fascism policy on behalf of the Cult in his role as director since 1984 of the National Institute of Allergy and Infectious Diseases (NIAID) while his record of being wrong is laughable; but being wrong, so long as it's the *right kind* of wrong, is why the Cult loves him. He'll say anything the Cult tells him to say. Fauci was made Chief Medical Adviser to the President immediately Biden took office. Biden was installed in the White House by Cult manipulation and one of his first decisions was to elevate Fauci to a position of even more control. This is a coincidence? Yes, and I identify as a flamenco dancer called Lola. How does such an incompetent criminal like Fauci remain in that

pivotal position in American health since *the 1980s*? When you serve the Cult it looks after you until you are surplus to requirements. Kary Mullis said prophetically of Fauci and his like: 'Those guys have an agenda and it's not an agenda we would like them to have ... they make their own rules, they change them when they want to, and Tony Fauci does not mind going on television in front of the people who pay his salary and lie directly into the camera.' Fauci has done that almost daily since the 'Covid' hoax began. Lying is in Fauci's DNA. To make the situation crystal clear about the PCR test this is a direct quote from its inventor Kary Mullis:

It [the PCR test] doesn't tell you that you're sick and doesn't tell you that the thing you ended up with was really going to hurt you ...'

Ask yourself why governments and medical systems the world over have been using this very test to decide who is 'infected' with the SARS-CoV-2 'virus' and the alleged disease it allegedly causes, 'Covid-19'. The answer to that question will tell you what has been going on. By the way, here's a little show-stopper – the 'new' SARS-CoV-2 'virus' was 'identified' as such right from the start using ... *the PCR test not testing for the 'virus'*. If you are new to this and find that shocking then stick around. I have hardly started yet. Even worse, other 'tests', like the 'Lateral Flow Device' (LFD), are considered so useless that they have to be *confirmed* by the PCR test! Leaked emails written by Ben Dyson, adviser to UK 'Health' Secretary Matt Hancock, said they were 'dangerously unreliable'. Dyson, executive director of strategy at the Department of Health, wrote: 'As of today, someone who gets a positive LFD result in (say) London has at best a 25 per cent chance of it being a true positive, but if it is a self-reported test potentially as low as 10 per cent (on an optimistic assumption about specificity) or as low as 2 per cent (on a more pessimistic assumption).' These are the 'tests' that schoolchildren and the public are being urged to have twice a week or more and have to isolate if they get a positive. Each fake positive goes in the statistics as a 'case' no matter how ludicrously inaccurate and the



'cases' drive lockdown, masks and the pressure to 'vaccinate'. The government said in response to the email leak that the 'tests' were accurate which confirmed yet again what shocking bloody liars they are. The real false positive rate is *100 percent* as we'll see. In another 'you couldn't make it up' the UK government agreed to pay £2.8 billion to California's Innova Medical Group to supply the irrelevant lateral flow tests. The company's primary test-making centre is in China. Innova Medical Group, established in March, 2020, is owned by Pasaca Capital Inc, chaired by Chinese-American millionaire Charles Huang who was born in Wuhan.

### **How it works – and how it doesn't**

The RT-PCR test, known by its full title of Polymerase chain reaction, is used across the world to make millions, even billions, of copies of a DNA/RNA genetic information sample. The process is called 'amplification' and means that a tiny sample of genetic material is amplified to bring out the detailed content. I stress that it is not testing for an infectious disease. It is simply amplifying a sample of genetic material. In the words of Kary Mullis: 'PCR is ... just a process that's used to make a whole lot of something out of something.' To emphasise the point companies that make the PCR tests circulated around the world to 'test' for 'Covid' warn on the box that it can't be used to detect 'Covid' or infectious disease and is for research purposes only. It's okay, rest for a minute and you'll be fine. This is the test that produces the 'cases' and 'deaths' that have been used to destroy human society. All those global and national medical and scientific 'experts' demanding this destruction to 'save us' *KNOW* that the test is not testing for the 'virus' and the cases and deaths they claim to be real are an almost unimaginable fraud. Every one of them and so many others including politicians and psychopaths like Gates and Tedros must be brought before Nuremburg-type trials and jailed for the rest of their lives. The more the genetic sample is amplified by PCR the more elements of that material become sensitive to the test and by that I don't mean sensitive for a 'virus' but for elements of the genetic material which

is *naturally* in the body or relates to remnants of old conditions of various kinds lying dormant and causing no disease. Once the amplification of the PCR reaches a certain level *everyone* will test positive. So much of the material has been made sensitive to the test that everyone will have some part of it in their body. Even lying criminals like Fauci have said that once PCR amplifications pass 35 cycles everything will be a false positive that cannot be trusted for the reasons I have described. I say, like many proper doctors and scientists, that 100 percent of the 'positives' are false, but let's just go with Fauci for a moment.

He says that any amplification over 35 cycles will produce false positives and yet the US Centers for Disease Control (CDC) and Food and Drug Administration (FDA) have recommended up to 40 *cycles* and the National Health Service (NHS) in Britain admitted in an internal document for staff that it was using 45 *cycles* of amplification. A long list of other countries has been doing the same and at least one 'testing' laboratory has been using 50 *cycles*. Have you ever heard a doctor, medical 'expert' or the media ask what level of amplification has been used to claim a 'positive'. The 'test' comes back 'positive' and so you have the 'virus', end of story. Now we can see how the government in Tanzania could send off samples from a goat and a pawpaw fruit under human names and both came back positive for 'Covid-19'. Tanzania president John Magufuli mocked the 'Covid' hysteria, the PCR test and masks and refused to import the DNA-manipulating 'vaccine'. The Cult hated him and an article sponsored by the Bill Gates Foundation appeared in the London *Guardian* in February, 2021, headed 'It's time for Africa to rein in Tanzania's anti-vaxxer president'. Well, 'reined in' he shortly was. Magufuli appeared in good health, but then, in March, 2021, he was dead at 61 from 'heart failure'. He was replaced by Samia Hassan Suhulu who is connected to Klaus Schwab's World Economic Forum and she immediately reversed Magufuli's 'Covid' policy. A sample of cola tested positive for 'Covid' with the PCR test in Germany while American actress and singer-songwriter Erykah Badu tested positive in one nostril and negative in the other. Footballer Ronaldo called

the PCR test 'bullshit' after testing positive three times and being forced to quarantine and miss matches when there was nothing wrong with him. The mantra from Tedros at the World Health Organization and national governments (same thing) has been test, test, test. They know that the more tests they can generate the more fake 'cases' they have which go on to become 'deaths' in ways I am coming to. The UK government has its Operation Moonshot planned to test multiple millions every day in workplaces and schools with free tests for everyone to use twice a week at home in line with the Cult plan from the start to make testing part of life. A government advertisement for an 'Interim Head of Asymptomatic Testing Communication' said the job included responsibility for delivering a 'communications strategy' (propaganda) 'to support the expansion of asymptomatic testing that *'normalises testing as part of everyday life'*'. More tests means more fake 'cases', 'deaths' and fascism. I have heard of, and from, many people who booked a test, couldn't turn up, and yet got a positive result through the post for a test they'd never even had. The whole thing is crazy, but for the Cult there's method in the madness. Controlling and manipulating the level of amplification of the test means the authorities can control whenever they want the number of apparent 'cases' and 'deaths'. If they want to justify more fascist lockdown and destruction of livelihoods they keep the amplification high. If they want to give the illusion that lockdowns and the 'vaccine' are working then they lower the amplification and 'cases' and 'deaths' will appear to fall. In January, 2021, the Cult-owned World Health Organization suddenly warned laboratories about over-amplification of the test and to lower the threshold. Suddenly headlines began appearing such as: 'Why ARE "Covid" cases plummeting?' This was just when the vaccine rollout was underway and I had predicted months before they would make cases appear to fall through amplification tampering when the 'vaccine' came. These people are so predictable.

## **Cow vaccines?**

The question must be asked of what is on the test swabs being poked far up the nose of the population to the base of the brain? A nasal swab punctured one woman's brain and caused it to leak fluid. Most of these procedures are being done by people with little training or medical knowledge. Dr Lorraine Day, former orthopaedic trauma surgeon and Chief of Orthopaedic Surgery at San Francisco General Hospital, says the tests are really a '*vaccine*'. Cows have long been vaccinated this way. She points out that masks have to cover the nose and the mouth where it is claimed the '*virus*' exists in saliva. Why then don't they take saliva from the mouth as they do with a DNA test instead of pushing a long swab up the nose towards the brain? The ethmoid bone separates the nasal cavity from the brain and within that bone is the cribriform plate. Dr Day says that when the swab is pushed up against this plate and twisted the procedure is '*depositing things back there*'. She claims that among these '*things*' are nanoparticles that can enter the brain. Researchers have noted that a team at the Gates-funded Johns Hopkins have designed tiny, star-shaped micro-devices that can latch onto intestinal mucosa and release drugs into the body. Mucosa is the thin skin that covers the inside surface of parts of the body such as *the nose* and mouth and produces mucus to protect them. The Johns Hopkins micro-devices are called '*theragrippers*' and were '*inspired*' by a parasitic worm that digs its sharp teeth into a host's intestines. Nasal swabs are also coated in the sterilisation agent ethylene oxide. The US National Cancer Institute posts this explanation on its website:

At room temperature, ethylene oxide is a flammable colorless gas with a sweet odor. It is used primarily to produce other chemicals, including antifreeze. In smaller amounts, ethylene oxide is used as a pesticide and a sterilizing agent. The ability of ethylene oxide to damage DNA makes it an effective sterilizing agent but also accounts for its cancer-causing activity.

The Institute mentions lymphoma and leukaemia as cancers most frequently reported to be associated with occupational exposure to ethylene oxide along with stomach and breast cancers. How does anyone think this is going to work out with the constant testing

regime being inflicted on adults and children at home and at school that will accumulate in the body anything that's on the swab?

## **Doctors know best**

It is vital for people to realise that 'hero' doctors 'know' only what the Big Pharma-dominated medical authorities tell them to 'know' and if they refuse to 'know' what they are told to 'know' they are out the door. They are mostly not physicians or healers, but repeaters of the official narrative – or else. I have seen alleged professional doctors on British television make shocking statements that we are supposed to take seriously. One called 'Dr' Amir Khan, who is actually telling patients how to respond to illness, said that men could take the birth pill to 'help slow down the effects of Covid-19'. In March, 2021, another ridiculous 'Covid study' by an American doctor proposed injecting men with the female sex hormone progesterone as a 'Covid' treatment. British doctor Nighat Arif told the BBC that face coverings were now going to be part of ongoing normal. Yes, the vaccine protects you, she said (evidence?) ... but the way to deal with viruses in the community was always going to come down to hand washing, face covering and keeping a physical distance. That's not what we were told before the 'vaccine' was circulating. Arif said she couldn't imagine ever again going on the underground or in a lift without a mask. I was just thanking my good luck that she was not my doctor when she said – in March, 2021 – that if 'we are *behaving* and we are doing all the right things' she thought we could 'have our nearest and dearest around us at home ... around *Christmas* and *New Year*! Her patronising delivery was the usual school teacher talking to six-year-olds as she repeated every government talking point and probably believed them all. If we have learned anything from the 'Covid' experience surely it must be that humanity's perception of doctors needs a fundamental rethink. NHS 'doctor' Sara Kayat told her television audience that the 'Covid vaccine' would '100 percent prevent hospitalisation and death'. Not even Big Pharma claimed that. We have to stop taking 'experts' at their word without question when so many of them are

clueless and only repeating the party line on which their careers depend. That is not to say there are not brilliant doctors – there are and I have spoken to many of them since all this began – but you won't see them in the mainstream media or quoted by the psychopaths and yes-people in government.

## **Remember the name – Christian Drosten**

German virologist Christian Drosten, Director of Charité Institute of Virology in Berlin, became a national star after the pandemic hoax began. He was feted on television and advised the German government on 'Covid' policy. Most importantly to the wider world Drosten led a group that produced the 'Covid' testing protocol for the PCR test. What a remarkable feat given the PCR cannot test for infectious disease and even more so when you think that Drosten said that his method of testing for SARS-CoV-2 was developed 'without having virus material available'. *He developed a test for a 'virus' that he didn't have and had never seen.* Let that sink in as you survey the global devastation that came from what he did. The whole catastrophe of Drosten's 'test' was based on the alleged genetic sequence published by Chinese scientists on the Internet. We will see in the next chapter that this alleged 'genetic sequence' has never been produced by China or anyone and cannot be when there *is no* SARS-CoV-2. Drosten, however, doesn't seem to let little details like that get in the way. He was the lead author with Victor Corman from the same Charité Hospital of the paper 'Detection of 2019 novel coronavirus (2019-nCoV) by real-time PCR' published in a magazine called *Eurosurveillance*. This became known as the Corman-Drosten paper. In November, 2020, with human society devastated by the effects of the Corman-Drosten test baloney, the protocol was publicly challenged by 22 international scientists and independent researchers from Europe, the United States, and Japan. Among them were senior molecular geneticists, biochemists, immunologists, and microbiologists. They produced a document headed 'External peer review of the RTPCR test to detect SARS-Cov-2 Reveals 10 Major Flaws At The Molecular and Methodological Level: Consequences

For False-Positive Results'. The flaws in the Corman-Drosten test included the following:

- The test is non-specific because of erroneous design
- Results are enormously variable
- The test is unable to discriminate between the whole 'virus' and viral fragments
- It doesn't have positive or negative controls
- The test lacks a standard operating procedure
- It is unsupported by proper peer view

The scientists said the PCR 'Covid' testing protocol was not founded on science and they demanded the Corman-Drosten paper be retracted by *Eurosurveillance*. They said all present and previous Covid deaths, cases, and 'infection rates' should be subject to a massive retroactive inquiry. Lockdowns and travel restrictions should be reviewed and relaxed and those diagnosed through PCR to have 'Covid-19' should not be forced to isolate. Dr Kevin Corbett, a health researcher and nurse educator with a long academic career producing a stream of peer-reviewed publications at many UK universities, made the same point about the PCR test debacle. He said of the scientists' conclusions: 'Every scientific rationale for the development of that test has been totally destroyed by this paper. It's like Hiroshima/Nagasaki to the Covid test.' He said that China hadn't given them an isolated 'virus' when Drosten developed the test. Instead they had developed the test from *a sequence in a gene bank*.' Put another way ... *they made it up!* The scientists were supported in this contention by a Portuguese appeals court which ruled in November, 2020, that PCR tests are unreliable and it is unlawful to quarantine people based solely on a PCR test. The point about China not providing an isolated virus must be true when the 'virus' has never been isolated to this day and the consequences of that will become clear. Drosten and company produced this useless 'protocol' right on cue in January, 2020, just as the 'virus' was said to

be moving westward and it somehow managed to successfully pass a peer-review in 24 hours. In other words there was no peer-review for a test that would be used to decide who had 'Covid' and who didn't across the world. The Cult-created, Gates-controlled World Health Organization immediately recommended all its nearly 200 member countries to use the Drosten PCR protocol to detect 'cases' and 'deaths'. The sting was underway and it continues to this day.

So who is this Christian Drosten that produced the means through which death, destruction and economic catastrophe would be justified? His education background, including his doctoral thesis, would appear to be somewhat shrouded in mystery and his track record is dire as with another essential player in the 'Covid' hoax, the Gates-funded Professor Neil Ferguson at the Gates-funded Imperial College in London of whom more shortly. Drosten predicted in 2003 that the alleged original SARS 'virus' (SARS-1) was an epidemic that could have serious effects on economies and an effective vaccine would take at least two years to produce. Drosten's answer to every alleged 'outbreak' is a vaccine which you won't be shocked to know. What followed were just 774 official deaths worldwide and none in Germany where there were only nine cases. That is even if you believe there ever was a SARS 'virus' when the evidence is zilch and I will expand on this in the next chapter. Drosten claims to be co-discoverer of 'SARS-1' and developed a test for it in 2003. He was screaming warnings about 'swine flu' in 2009 and how it was a widespread infection far more severe than any dangers from a vaccine could be and people should get vaccinated. It would be helpful for Drosten's vocal chords if he simply recorded the words 'the virus is deadly and you need to get vaccinated' and copies could be handed out whenever the latest made-up threat comes along. Drosten's swine flu epidemic never happened, but Big Pharma didn't mind with governments spending hundreds of millions on vaccines that hardly anyone bothered to use and many who did wished they hadn't. A study in 2010 revealed that the risk of dying from swine flu, or H1N1, was no higher than that of the annual seasonal flu which is what at least most of 'it' really was as in



the case of 'Covid-19'. A media investigation into Drosten asked how with such a record of inaccuracy he could be *the* government adviser on these issues. The answer to that question is the same with Drosten, Ferguson and Fauci – they keep on giving the authorities the 'conclusions' and 'advice' they want to hear. Drosten certainly produced the goods for them in January, 2020, with his PCR protocol garbage and provided the foundation of what German internal medicine specialist Dr Claus Köhnlein, co-author of *Virus Mania*, called the 'test pandemic'. The 22 scientists in the *Eurosurveillance* challenge called out conflicts of interest within the Drosten 'protocol' group and with good reason. Olfert Landt, a regular co-author of Drosten 'studies', owns the biotech company TIB Molbiol Syntheselabor GmbH in Berlin which manufactures and sells the tests that Drosten and his mates come up with. They have done this with SARS, Enterotoxigenic E. coli (ETEC), MERS, Zika 'virus', yellow fever, and now 'Covid'. Landt told the *Berliner Zeitung* newspaper:

The testing, design and development came from the Charité [Drosten and Corman]. We simply implemented it immediately in the form of a kit. And if we don't have the virus, which originally only existed in Wuhan, we can make a synthetic gene to simulate the genome of the virus. That's what we did very quickly.

This is more confirmation that the Drosten test was designed without access to the 'virus' and only a synthetic simulation which is what SARS-CoV-2 really is – a computer-generated synthetic fiction. It's quite an enterprise they have going here. A Drosten team decides what the test for something should be and Landt's biotech company flogs it to governments and medical systems across the world. His company must have made an absolute fortune since the 'Covid' hoax began. Dr Reiner Fuellmich, a prominent German consumer protection trial lawyer in Germany and California, is on Drosten's case and that of Tedros at the World Health Organization for crimes against humanity with a class-action lawsuit being prepared in the United States and other legal action in Germany.

## Why China?

Scamming the world with a 'virus' that doesn't exist would seem impossible on the face of it, but not if you have control of the relatively few people that make policy decisions and the great majority of the global media. Remember it's not about changing 'real' reality it's about controlling *perception* of reality. You don't have to make something happen you only have to make people *believe* that it's happening. Renegade Minds understand this and are therefore much harder to swindle. 'Covid-19' is not a 'real' 'virus'. It's a mind virus, like a computer virus, which has infected the minds, not the bodies, of billions. It all started, publically at least, in China and that alone is of central significance. The Cult was behind the revolution led by its asset Mao Zedong, or Chairman Mao, which established the People's Republic of China on October 1st, 1949. It should have been called The Cult's Republic of China, but the name had to reflect the recurring illusion that vicious dictatorships are run by and for the people (see all the 'Democratic Republics' controlled by tyrants). In the same way we have the 'Biden' Democratic Republic of America officially ruled by a puppet tyrant (at least temporarily) on behalf of Cult tyrants. The creation of Mao's merciless communist/fascist dictatorship was part of a frenzy of activity by the Cult at the conclusion of World War Two which, like the First World War, it had instigated through its assets in Germany, Britain, France, the United States and elsewhere. Israel was formed in 1948; the Soviet Union expanded its 'Iron Curtain' control, influence and military power with the Warsaw Pact communist alliance in 1955; the United Nations was formed in 1945 as a Cult precursor to world government; and a long list of world bodies would be established including the World Health Organization (1948), World Trade Organization (1948 under another name until 1995), International Monetary Fund (1945) and World Bank (1944). Human society was redrawn and hugely centralised in the global Problem-Reaction-Solution that was World War Two. All these changes were significant. Israel would become the headquarters of the Sabbatians

and the revolution in China would prepare the ground and control system for the events of 2019/2020.

Renegade Minds know there are no borders except for public consumption. The Cult is a seamless, borderless global entity and to understand the game we need to put aside labels like borders, nations, countries, communism, fascism and democracy. These delude the population into believing that countries are ruled within their borders by a government of whatever shade when these are mere agencies of a global power. America's illusion of democracy and China's communism/fascism are subsidiaries – vehicles – for the same agenda. We may hear about conflict and competition between America and China and on the lower levels that will be true; but at the Cult level they are branches of the same company in the way of the McDonald's example I gave earlier. I have tracked in the books over the years support by US governments of both parties for Chinese Communist Party infiltration of American society through allowing the sale of land, even military facilities, and the acquisition of American business and university influence. All this is underpinned by the infamous stealing of intellectual property and technological know-how. Cult-owned Silicon Valley corporations waive their fraudulent 'morality' to do business with human-rights-free China; Cult-controlled Disney has become China's PR department; and China in effect owns 'American' sports such as basketball which depends for much of its income on Chinese audiences. As a result any sports player, coach or official speaking out against China's horrific human rights record is immediately condemned or fired by the China-worshipping National Basketball Association. One of the first acts of China-controlled Biden was to issue an executive order telling federal agencies to stop making references to the 'virus' by the 'geographic location of its origin'. Long-time Congressman Jerry Nadler warned that criticising China, America's biggest rival, leads to hate crimes against Asian people in the United States. So shut up you bigot. China is fast closing in on Israel as a country that must not be criticised which is apt, really, given that Sabbatians control them both. The two countries have

developed close economic, military, technological and strategic ties which include involvement in China's 'Silk Road' transport and economic initiative to connect China with Europe. Israel was the first country in the Middle East to recognise the establishment of Mao's tyranny in 1950 months after it was established.

## **Project Wuhan – the 'Covid' Psyop**

I emphasise again that the Cult plays the long game and what is happening to the world today is the result of centuries of calculated manipulation following a script to take control step-by-step of every aspect of human society. I will discuss later the common force behind all this that has spanned those centuries and thousands of years if the truth be told. Instigating the Mao revolution in China in 1949 with a 2020 'pandemic' in mind is not only how they work – the 71 years between them is really quite short by the Cult's standards of manipulation preparation. The reason for the Cult's Chinese revolution was to create a fiercely-controlled environment within which an extreme structure for human control could be incubated to eventually be unleashed across the world. We have seen this happen since the 'pandemic' emerged from China with the Chinese control-structure founded on AI technology and tyrannical enforcement sweep across the West. Until the moment when the Cult went for broke in the West and put its fascism on public display Western governments had to pay some lip-service to freedom and democracy to not alert too many people to the tyranny-in-the-making. Freedoms were more subtly eroded and power centralised with covert government structures put in place waiting for the arrival of 2020 when that smokescreen of 'freedom' could be dispensed with. The West was not able to move towards tyranny before 2020 anything like as fast as China which was created as a tyranny and had no limits on how fast it could construct the Cult's blueprint for global control. When the time came to impose that structure on the world it was the same Cult-owned Chinese communist/fascist government that provided the excuse – the 'Covid pandemic'. It was absolutely crucial to the Cult plan for the Chinese response to the 'pandemic' –

draconian lockdowns of the entire population – to become the blueprint that Western countries would follow to destroy the livelihoods and freedom of their people. This is why the Cult-owned, Gates-owned, WHO Director-General Tedros said early on:

The Chinese government is to be congratulated for the extraordinary measures it has taken to contain the outbreak. China is actually setting a new standard for outbreak response and it is not an exaggeration.

*Forbes* magazine said of China: ‘... those measures protected untold millions from getting the disease’. The Rockefeller Foundation ‘epidemic scenario’ document in 2010 said ‘prophetically’:

However, a few countries did fare better – China in particular. The Chinese government’s quick imposition and enforcement of mandatory quarantine for all citizens, as well as its instant and near-hermetic sealing off of all borders, saved millions of lives, stopping the spread of the virus far earlier than in other countries and enabling a swifter post-pandemic recovery.

Once again – *spooky*.

The first official story was the ‘bat theory’ or rather the bat diversion. The source of the ‘virus outbreak’ we were told was a ‘wet market’ in Wuhan where bats and other animals are bought and eaten in horrifically unhygienic conditions. Then another story emerged through the alternative media that the ‘virus’ had been released on purpose or by accident from a BSL-4 (biosafety level 4) laboratory in Wuhan not far from the wet market. The lab was reported to create and work with lethal concoctions and bioweapons. Biosafety level 4 is the highest in the World Health Organization system of safety and containment. Renegade Minds are aware of what I call designer manipulation. The ideal for the Cult is for people to buy its prime narrative which in the opening salvos of the ‘pandemic’ was the wet market story. It knows, however, that there is now a considerable worldwide alternative media of researchers sceptical of anything governments say and they are often given a version of events in a form they can perceive as credible while misdirecting them from the real truth. In this case let them

think that the conspiracy involved is a 'bioweapon virus' released from the Wuhan lab to keep them from the real conspiracy – *there is no 'virus'*. The WHO's current position on the source of the outbreak at the time of writing appears to be: 'We haven't got a clue, mate.' This is a good position to maintain mystery and bewilderment. The inner circle will know where the 'virus' came from – *nowhere*. The bottom line was to ensure the public believed there *was* a 'virus' and it didn't much matter if they thought it was natural or had been released from a lab. The belief that there was a 'deadly virus' was all that was needed to trigger global panic and fear. The population was terrified into handing their power to authority and doing what they were told. They had to or they were 'all gonna die'.

In March, 2020, information began to come my way from real doctors and scientists and my own additional research which had my intuition screaming: 'Yes, that's it! *There is no virus.*' The 'bioweapon' was not the 'virus'; it was the '*vaccine*' already being talked about that would be the bioweapon. My conclusion was further enhanced by happenings in Wuhan. The 'virus' was said to be sweeping the city and news footage circulated of people collapsing in the street (which they've never done in the West with the same 'virus'). The Chinese government was building 'new hospitals' in a matter of ten days to 'cope with demand' such was the virulent nature of the 'virus'. Yet in what seemed like no time the 'new hospitals' closed – even if they even opened – and China declared itself 'virus-free'. It was back to business as usual. This was more propaganda to promote the Chinese draconian lockdowns in the West as the way to 'beat the virus'. Trouble was that we subsequently had lockdown after lockdown, but never business as usual. As the people of the West and most of the rest of the world were caught in an ever-worsening spiral of lockdown, social distancing, masks, isolated old people, families forced apart, and livelihood destruction, it was party-time in Wuhan. Pictures emerged of thousands of people enjoying pool parties and concerts. It made no sense until you realised there never was a 'virus' and the

whole thing was a Cult set-up to transform human society out of one of its major global strongholds – China.

How is it possible to deceive virtually the entire world population into believing there is a deadly virus when there is not even a 'virus' let alone a deadly one? It's nothing like as difficult as you would think and that's clearly true because it happened.

**Postscript:** See end of book Postscript for more on the 'Wuhan lab virus release' story which the authorities and media were pushing heavily in the summer of 2021 to divert attention from the truth that the 'Covid virus' is pure invention.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### ***There is no 'virus'***

*You can fool some of the people all of the time, and all of the people some of the time, but you cannot fool all of the people all of the time*  
Abraham Lincoln

The greatest form of mind control is repetition. The more you repeat the same mantra of alleged 'facts' the more will accept them to be true. It becomes an 'everyone knows that, mate'. If you can also censor any other version or alternative to your alleged 'facts' you are pretty much home and cooking.

By the start of 2020 the Cult owned the global mainstream media almost in its entirety to spew out its 'Covid' propaganda and ignore or discredit any other information and view. Cult-owned social media platforms in Cult-owned Silicon Valley were poised and ready to unleash a campaign of ferocious censorship to obliterate all but the official narrative. To complete the circle many demands for censorship by Silicon Valley were led by the mainstream media as 'journalists' became full-out enforcers for the Cult both as propagandists and censors. Part of this has been the influx of young people straight out of university who have become 'journalists' in significant positions. They have no experience and a headful of programmed perceptions from their years at school and university at a time when today's young are the most perceptually-targeted generations in known human history given the insidious impact of technology. They enter the media perceptually prepared and ready to repeat the narratives of the system that programmed them to



repeat its narratives. The BBC has a truly pathetic 'specialist disinformation reporter' called Marianna Spring who fits this bill perfectly. She is clueless about the world, how it works and what is really going on. Her role is to discredit anyone doing the job that a proper journalist would do and system-serving hacks like Spring wouldn't dare to do or even see the need to do. They are too busy licking the arse of authority which can never be wrong and, in the case of the BBC propaganda programme, *Panorama*, contacting payments systems such as PayPal to have a donations page taken down for a film company making documentaries questioning vaccines. Even the BBC soap opera *EastEnders* included a disgracefully biased scene in which an inarticulate white working class woman was made to look foolish for questioning the 'vaccine' while a well-spoken black man and Asian woman promoted the government narrative. It ticked every BBC box and the fact that the black and minority community was resisting the 'vaccine' had nothing to do with the way the scene was written. The BBC has become a disgusting tyrannical propaganda and censorship operation that should be defunded and disbanded and a free media take its place with a brief to stop censorship instead of demanding it. A BBC 'interview' with Gates goes something like: 'Mr Gates, sir, if I can call you sir, would you like to tell our audience why you are such a great man, a wonderful humanitarian philanthropist, and why you should absolutely be allowed as a software salesman to decide health policy for approaching eight billion people? Thank you, sir, please sir.' Propaganda programming has been incessant and merciless and when all you hear is the same story from the media, repeated by those around you who have only heard the same story, is it any wonder that people on a grand scale believe absolute mendacious garbage to be true? You are about to see, too, why this level of information control is necessary when the official 'Covid' narrative is so nonsensical and unsupportable by the evidence.

## **Structure of Deceit**

The pyramid structure through which the 'Covid' hoax has been manifested is very simple and has to be to work. As few people as possible have to be involved with full knowledge of what they are doing – and why – or the real story would get out. At the top of the pyramid are the inner core of the Cult which controls Bill Gates who, in turn, controls the World Health Organization through his pivotal funding and his puppet Director-General mouthpiece, Tedros. Before he was appointed Tedros was chair of the Gates-founded Global Fund to 'fight against AIDS, tuberculosis and malaria', a board member of the Gates-funded 'vaccine alliance' GAVI, and on the board of another Gates-funded organisation. Gates owns him and picked him for a specific reason – Tedros is a crook and worse. 'Dr' Tedros (he's not a medical doctor, the first WHO chief not to be) was a member of the tyrannical Marxist government of Ethiopia for decades with all its human rights abuses. He has faced allegations of corruption and misappropriation of funds and was exposed three times for covering up cholera epidemics while Ethiopia's health minister. Tedros appointed the mass-murdering genocidal Zimbabwe dictator Robert Mugabe as a WHO goodwill ambassador for public health which, as with Tedros, is like appointing a psychopath to run a peace and love campaign. The move was so ridiculous that he had to drop Mugabe in the face of widespread condemnation. American economist David Steinman, a Nobel peace prize nominee, lodged a complaint with the International Criminal Court in The Hague over alleged genocide by Tedros when he was Ethiopia's foreign minister. Steinman says Tedros was a 'crucial decision maker' who directed the actions of Ethiopia's security forces from 2013 to 2015 and one of three officials in charge when those security services embarked on the 'killing' and 'torturing' of Ethiopians. You can see where Tedros is coming from and it's sobering to think that he has been the vehicle for Gates and the Cult to direct the global response to 'Covid'. Think about that. A psychopathic Cult dictates to psychopath Gates who dictates to psychopath Tedros who dictates how countries of the world must respond to a 'Covid virus' never scientifically shown to exist. At the same time psychopathic Cult-owned Silicon Valley information

giants like Google, YouTube, Facebook and Twitter announced very early on that they would give the Cult/Gates/Tedros/WHO version of the narrative free advertising and censor those who challenged their intelligence-insulting, mendacious story.

The next layer in the global 'medical' structure below the Cult, Gates and Tedros are the chief medical officers and science 'advisers' in each of the WHO member countries which means virtually all of them. Medical officers and arbiters of science (they're not) then take the WHO policy and recommended responses and impose them on their country's population while the political 'leaders' say they are deciding policy (they're clearly not) by 'following the science' on the advice of the 'experts' – the same medical officers and science 'advisers' (dictators). In this way with the rarest of exceptions the entire world followed the same policy of lockdown, people distancing, masks and 'vaccines' dictated by the psychopathic Cult, psychopathic Gates and psychopathic Tedros who we are supposed to believe give a damn about the health of the world population they are seeking to enslave. That, amazingly, is all there is to it in terms of crucial decision-making. Medical staff in each country then follow like sheep the dictates of the shepherds at the top of the national medical hierarchies – chief medical officers and science 'advisers' who themselves follow like sheep the shepherds of the World Health Organization and the Cult. Shepherds at the national level often have major funding and other connections to Gates and his Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation which carefully hands out money like confetti at a wedding to control the entire global medical system from the WHO down.

## **Follow the money**

Christopher Whitty, Chief Medical Adviser to the UK Government at the centre of 'virus' policy, a senior adviser to the government's Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE), and Executive Board member of the World Health Organization, was gifted a grant of \$40 million by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation for malaria research in Africa. The BBC described the unelected Whitty as 'the

official who will probably have the greatest impact on our everyday lives of any individual policymaker in modern times' and so it turned out. What Gates and Tedros have said Whitty has done like his equivalents around the world. Patrick Vallance, co-chair of SAGE and the government's Chief Scientific Adviser, is a former executive of Big Pharma giant GlaxoSmithKline with its fundamental financial and business connections to Bill Gates. In September, 2020, it was revealed that Vallance owned a deferred bonus of shares in GlaxoSmithKline worth £600,000 while the company was 'developing' a 'Covid vaccine'. Move along now – nothing to see here – what could possibly be wrong with that? Imperial College in London, a major player in 'Covid' policy in Britain and elsewhere with its 'Covid-19' Response Team, is funded by Gates and has big connections to China while the now infamous Professor Neil Ferguson, the useless 'computer modeller' at Imperial College is also funded by Gates. Ferguson delivered the dramatically inaccurate excuse for the first lockdowns (much more in the next chapter). The Institute for Health Metrics and Evaluation (IHME) in the United States, another source of outrageously false 'Covid' computer models to justify lockdowns, is bankrolled by Gates who is a vehement promotor of lockdowns. America's version of Whitty and Vallance, the again now infamous Anthony Fauci, has connections to 'Covid vaccine' maker Moderna as does Bill Gates through funding from the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Fauci is director of the National Institute of Allergy and Infectious Diseases (NIAID), a major recipient of Gates money, and they are very close. Deborah Birx who was appointed White House Coronavirus Response Coordinator in February, 2020, is yet another with ties to Gates. Everywhere you look at the different elements around the world behind the coordination and decision making of the 'Covid' hoax there is Bill Gates and his money. They include the World Health Organization; Centers for Disease Control (CDC) in the United States; National Institutes of Health (NIH) of Anthony Fauci; Imperial College and Neil Ferguson; the London School of Hygiene where Chris Whitty worked; Regulatory agencies like the UK Medicines & Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA)

which gave emergency approval for 'Covid vaccines'; Wellcome Trust; GAVI, the Vaccine Alliance; the Coalition for Epidemic Preparedness Innovations (CEPI); Johns Hopkins University which has compiled the false 'Covid' figures; and the World Economic Forum. A [Nationalfile.com](https://www.nationalfile.com) article said:

Gates has a lot of pull in the medical world, he has a multi-million dollar relationship with Dr. Fauci, and Fauci originally took the Gates line supporting vaccines and casting doubt on [the drug hydroxychloroquine]. Coronavirus response team member Dr. Deborah Birx, appointed by former president Obama to serve as United States Global AIDS Coordinator, also sits on the board of a group that has received billions from Gates' foundation, and Birx reportedly used a disputed Bill Gates-funded model for the White House's Coronavirus effort. Gates is a big proponent for a population lockdown scenario for the Coronavirus outbreak.

Another funder of Moderna is the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), the technology-development arm of the Pentagon and one of the most sinister organisations on earth. DARPA had a major role with the CIA covert technology-funding operation In-Q-Tel in the development of Google and social media which is now at the centre of global censorship. Fauci and Gates are extremely close and openly admit to talking regularly about 'Covid' policy, but then why wouldn't Gates have a seat at every national 'Covid' table after his Foundation committed \$1.75 billion to the 'fight against Covid-19'. When passed through our Orwellian Translation Unit this means that he has bought and paid for the Cult-driven 'Covid' response worldwide. Research the major 'Covid' response personnel in your own country and you will find the same Gates funding and other connections again and again. Medical and science chiefs following World Health Organization 'policy' sit atop a medical hierarchy in their country of administrators, doctors and nursing staff. These 'subordinates' are told they must work and behave in accordance with the policy delivered from the 'top' of the national 'health' pyramid which is largely the policy delivered by the WHO which is the policy delivered by Gates and the Cult. The whole 'Covid' narrative has been imposed on medical staff by a climate of fear although great numbers don't even need that to comply. They do so through breathtaking levels of ignorance and

include doctors who go through life simply repeating what Big Pharma and their hierarchical masters tell them to say and believe. No wonder Big Pharma 'medicine' is one of the biggest killers on Planet Earth.

The same top-down system of intimidation operates with regard to the Cult Big Pharma cartel which also dictates policy through national and global medical systems in this way. The Cult and Big Pharma agendas are the same because the former controls and owns the latter. 'Health' administrators, doctors, and nursing staff are told to support and parrot the dictated policy or they will face consequences which can include being fired. How sad it's been to see medical staff meekly repeating and imposing Cult policy without question and most of those who can see through the deceit are only willing to speak anonymously off the record. They know what will happen if their identity is known. This has left the courageous few to expose the lies about the 'virus', face masks, overwhelmed hospitals that aren't, and the dangers of the 'vaccine' that isn't a vaccine. When these medical professionals and scientists, some renowned in their field, have taken to the Internet to expose the truth their articles, comments and videos have been deleted by Cult-owned Facebook, Twitter and YouTube. What a real head-shaker to see YouTube videos with leading world scientists and highly qualified medical specialists with an added link underneath to the notorious Cult propaganda website *Wikipedia* to find the 'facts' about the same subject.

## **HIV – the 'Covid' trial-run**

I'll give you an example of the consequences for health and truth that come from censorship and unquestioning belief in official narratives. The story was told by PCR inventor Kary Mullis in his book *Dancing Naked in the Mind Field*. He said that in 1984 he accepted as just another scientific fact that Luc Montagnier of France's Pasteur Institute and Robert Gallo of America's National Institutes of Health had independently discovered that a 'retrovirus' dubbed HIV (human immunodeficiency virus) caused AIDS. They

were, after all, Mullis writes, specialists in retroviruses. This is how the medical and science pyramids work. Something is announced or *assumed* and then becomes an everybody-knows-that purely through repetition of the assumption as if it is fact. Complete crap becomes accepted truth with no supporting evidence and only repetition of the crap. This is how a 'virus' that doesn't exist became the 'virus' that changed the world. The HIV-AIDS fairy story became a multi-billion pound industry and the media poured out propaganda terrifying the world about the deadly HIV 'virus' that caused the lethal AIDS. By then Mullis was working at a lab in Santa Monica, California, to detect retroviruses with his PCR test in blood donations received by the Red Cross. In doing so he asked a virologist where he could find a reference for HIV being the cause of AIDS. 'You don't need a reference,' the virologist said ... '*Everybody knows it.*' Mullis said he wanted to quote a reference in the report he was doing and he said he felt a little funny about not knowing the source of such an important discovery when everyone else seemed to. The virologist suggested he cite a report by the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) on morbidity and mortality. Mullis read the report, but it only said that an organism had been identified and did not say how. The report did not identify the original scientific work. Physicians, however, *assumed* (key recurring theme) that if the CDC was convinced that HIV caused AIDS then proof must exist. Mullis continues:

I did computer searches. Neither Montagnier, Gallo, nor anyone else had published papers describing experiments which led to the conclusion that HIV probably caused AIDS. I read the papers in *Science* for which they had become well known as AIDS doctors, but all they had said there was that they had found evidence of a past infection by something which was probably HIV in some AIDS patients.

They found antibodies. Antibodies to viruses had always been considered evidence of past disease, not present disease. Antibodies signaled that the virus had been defeated. The patient had saved himself. There was no indication in these papers that this virus caused a disease. They didn't show that everybody with the antibodies had the disease. In fact they found some healthy people with antibodies.

Mullis asked why their work had been published if Montagnier and Gallo hadn't really found this evidence, and why had they been fighting so hard to get credit for the discovery? He says he was hesitant to write 'HIV is the probable cause of AIDS' until he found published evidence to support that. 'Tens of thousands of scientists and researchers were spending billions of dollars a year doing research based on this idea,' Mullis writes. 'The reason had to be there somewhere; otherwise these people would not have allowed their research to settle into one narrow channel of investigation.' He said he lectured about PCR at numerous meetings where people were always talking about HIV and he asked them how they knew that HIV was the cause of AIDS:

Everyone said something. Everyone had the answer at home, in the office, in some drawer. They all knew, and they would send me the papers as soon as they got back. But I never got any papers. Nobody ever sent me the news about how AIDS was caused by HIV.

Eventually Mullis was able to ask Montagnier himself about the reference proof when he lectured in San Diego at the grand opening of the University of California AIDS Research Center. Mullis says this was the last time he would ask his question without showing anger. Montagnier said he should reference the CDC report. 'I read it', Mullis said, and it didn't answer the question. 'If Montagnier didn't know the answer who the hell did?' Then one night Mullis was driving when an interview came on National Public Radio with Peter Duesberg, a prominent virologist at Berkeley and a California Scientist of the Year. Mullis says he finally understood why he could not find references that connected HIV to AIDS – *there weren't any!* No one had ever proved that HIV causes AIDS even though it had spawned a multi-billion pound global industry and the media was repeating this as fact every day in their articles and broadcasts terrifying the shit out of people about AIDS and giving the impression that a positive test for HIV (see 'Covid') was a death sentence. Duesberg was a threat to the AIDS gravy train and the agenda that underpinned it. He was therefore abused and castigated after he told the Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences



there was no good evidence implicating the new 'virus'. Editors rejected his manuscripts and his research funds were deleted. Mullis points out that the CDC has defined AIDS as one of more than 30 diseases *if accompanied* by a positive result on a test that detects antibodies to HIV; but those same diseases are not defined as AIDS cases when antibodies are not detected:

If an HIV-positive woman develops uterine cancer, for example, she is considered to have AIDS. If she is not HIV positive, she simply has uterine cancer. An HIV-positive man with tuberculosis has AIDS; if he tests negative he simply has tuberculosis. If he lives in Kenya or Colombia, where the test for HIV antibodies is too expensive, he is simply presumed to have the antibodies and therefore AIDS, and therefore he can be treated in the World Health Organization's clinic. It's the only medical help available in some places. And it's free, because the countries that support WHO are worried about AIDS.

Mullis accuses the CDC of continually adding new diseases (see ever more 'Covid symptoms') to the grand AIDS definition and of virtually doctoring the books to make it appear as if the disease continued to spread. He cites how in 1993 the CDC enormously broadened its AIDS definition and county health authorities were delighted because they received \$2,500 per year from the Federal government for every reported AIDS case. Ladies and gentlemen, I have just described, via Kary Mullis, the 'Covid pandemic' of 2020 and beyond. Every element is the same and it's been pulled off in the same way by the same networks.

### **The 'Covid virus' exists? Okay – prove it. Er ... still waiting**

What Kary Mullis described with regard to 'HIV' has been repeated with 'Covid'. A claim is made that a new, or 'novel', infection has been found and the entire medical system of the world repeats that as fact exactly as they did with HIV and AIDS. No one in the mainstream asks rather relevant questions such as 'How do you know?' and 'Where is your proof?' The SARS-Cov-2 'virus' and the 'Covid-19 disease' became an overnight 'everybody-knows-that'. The origin could be debated and mulled over, but what you could not suggest was that 'SARS-Cov-2' didn't exist. That would be

ridiculous. 'Everybody knows' the 'virus' exists. Well, I didn't for one along with American proper doctors like Andrew Kaufman and Tom Cowan and long-time American proper journalist Jon Rappaport. We dared to pursue the obvious and simple question: 'Where's the evidence?' The overwhelming majority in medicine, journalism and the general public did not think to ask that. After all, *everyone knew* there was a new 'virus'. Everyone was saying so and I heard it on the BBC. Some would eventually argue that the 'deadly virus' was nothing like as deadly as claimed, but few would venture into the realms of its very existence. Had they done so they would have found that the evidence for that claim had gone AWOL as with HIV causes AIDS. In fact, not even that. For something to go AWOL it has to exist in the first place and scientific proof for a 'SARS-Cov-2' can be filed under nothing, nowhere and zilch.

Dr Andrew Kaufman is a board-certified forensic psychiatrist in New York State, a Doctor of Medicine and former Assistant Professor and Medical Director of Psychiatry at SUNY Upstate Medical University, and Medical Instructor of Hematology and Oncology at the Medical School of South Carolina. He also studied biology at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT) and trained in Psychiatry at Duke University. Kaufman is retired from allopathic medicine, but remains a consultant and educator on natural healing. I saw a video of his very early on in the 'Covid' hoax in which he questioned claims about the 'virus' in the absence of any supporting evidence and with plenty pointing the other way. I did everything I could to circulate his work which I felt was asking the pivotal questions that needed an answer. I can recommend an excellent pull-together interview he did with the website The Last Vagabond entitled *Dr Andrew Kaufman: Virus Isolation, Terrain Theory and Covid-19* and his website is [andrewkaufmanmd.com](http://andrewkaufmanmd.com). Kaufman is not only a forensic psychiatrist; he is forensic in all that he does. He always reads original scientific papers, experiments and studies instead of second-third-fourth-hand reports about the 'virus' in the media which are repeating the repeated repetition of the narrative. When he did so with the original Chinese 'virus' papers Kaufman

realised that there was no evidence of a 'SARS-Cov-2'. They had never – from the start – shown it to exist and every repeat of this claim worldwide was based on the accepted existence of proof that was nowhere to be found – see Kary Mullis and HIV. Here we go again.

## **Let's postulate**

Kaufman discovered that the Chinese authorities immediately concluded that the cause of an illness that broke out among about 200 initial patients in Wuhan was a 'new virus' when there were no grounds to make that conclusion. The alleged 'virus' was not isolated from other genetic material in their samples and then shown through a system known as Koch's postulates to be the causative agent of the illness. The world was told that the SARS-Cov-2 'virus' caused a disease they called 'Covid-19' which had 'flu-like' symptoms and could lead to respiratory problems and pneumonia. If it wasn't so tragic it would almost be funny. *'Flu-like' symptoms? Pneumonia? Respiratory disease?* What in *CHINA* and particularly in *Wuhan*, one of the most polluted cities in the world with a resulting epidemic of respiratory disease?? Three hundred thousand people get pneumonia in China every year and there are nearly a billion cases worldwide of 'flu-like symptoms'. These have a whole range of causes – including pollution in Wuhan – but no other possibility was credibly considered in late 2019 when the world was told there was a new and deadly 'virus'. The global prevalence of pneumonia and 'flu-like systems' gave the Cult networks unlimited potential to re-diagnose these other causes as the mythical 'Covid-19' and that is what they did from the very start. Kaufman revealed how Chinese medical and science authorities (all subordinates to the Cult-owned communist government) took genetic material from the lungs of only a few of the first patients. The material contained their own cells, bacteria, fungi and other microorganisms living in their bodies. The only way you could prove the existence of the 'virus' and its responsibility for the alleged 'Covid-19' was to isolate the virus from all the other material – a process also known as 'purification' – and

then follow the postulates sequence developed in the late 19th century by German physician and bacteriologist Robert Koch which became the 'gold standard' for connecting an alleged causation agent to a disease:

1. The microorganism (bacteria, fungus, virus, etc.) must be present in every case of the disease and all patients must have the same symptoms. It must also *not be present in healthy individuals*.
2. The microorganism must be isolated from the host with the disease. If the microorganism is a bacteria or fungus it must be grown in a pure culture. If it is a virus, it must be purified (i.e. containing no other material except the virus particles) from a clinical sample.
3. The specific disease, with all of its characteristics, must be reproduced when the infectious agent (the purified virus or a pure culture of bacteria or fungi) is inoculated into a healthy, susceptible host.
4. The microorganism must be recoverable from the experimentally infected host as in step 2.

*Not one* of these criteria has been met in the case of 'SARS-Cov-2' and 'Covid-19'. Not ONE. EVER. Robert Koch refers to bacteria and not viruses. What are called 'viral particles' are so minute (hence masks are useless by any definition) that they could only be seen after the invention of the electron microscope in the 1930s and can still only be observed through that means. American bacteriologist and virologist Thomas Milton Rivers, the so-called 'Father of Modern Virology' who was very significantly director of the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research in the 1930s, developed a less stringent version of Koch's postulates to identify 'virus' causation known as 'Rivers criteria'. 'Covid' did not pass that process either. Some even doubt whether any 'virus' can be isolated from other particles containing genetic material in the Koch method. Freedom of Information requests in many countries asking for scientific proof that the 'Covid virus' has been purified and isolated and shown to exist have all come back with a 'we don't have that' and when this happened with a request to the UK Department of Health they added this comment:

However, outside of the scope of the [Freedom of Information Act] and on a discretionary basis, the following information has been advised to us, which may be of interest. Most infectious diseases are caused by viruses, bacteria or fungi. Some bacteria or fungi have the capacity to grow on their own in isolation, for example in colonies on a petri dish. Viruses are different in that they are what we call 'obligate pathogens' – that is, they cannot survive or reproduce without infecting a host ...

... For some diseases, it is possible to establish causation between a microorganism and a disease by isolating the pathogen from a patient, growing it in pure culture and reintroducing it to a healthy organism. These are known as 'Koch's postulates' and were developed in 1882. However, as our understanding of disease and different disease-causing agents has advanced, these are no longer the method for determining causation [Andrew Kaufman asks why in that case are there two published articles falsely claiming to satisfy Koch's postulates].

It has long been known that viral diseases cannot be identified in this way as viruses cannot be grown in 'pure culture'. When a patient is tested for a viral illness, this is normally done by looking for the presence of antigens, or viral genetic code in a host with molecular biology techniques [Kaufman asks how you could know the origin of these chemicals without having a pure culture for comparison].

For the record 'antigens' are defined so:

Invading microorganisms have antigens on their surface that the human body can recognise as being foreign – meaning not belonging to it. When the body recognises a foreign antigen, lymphocytes (white blood cells) produce antibodies, which are complementary in shape to the antigen.

Notwithstanding that this is open to question in relation to 'SARS-Cov-2' the presence of 'antibodies' can have many causes and they are found in people that are perfectly well. Kary Mullis said: 'Antibodies ... had always been considered evidence of past disease, not present disease.'

### **'Covid' really is a *computer* 'virus'**

Where the UK Department of Health statement says 'viruses' are now 'diagnosed' through a 'viral genetic code in a host with molecular biology techniques', they mean ... *the PCR test* which its inventor said cannot test for infectious disease. They have no credible method of connecting a 'virus' to a disease and we will see that there is no scientific proof that any 'virus' causes any disease or there is any such thing as a 'virus' in the way that it is described. Tenacious Canadian researcher Christine Massey and her team made

some 40 Freedom of Information requests to national public health agencies in different countries asking for proof that SARS-CoV-2 has been isolated and not one of them could supply that information. Massey said of her request in Canada: 'Freedom of Information reveals Public Health Agency of Canada has no record of 'SARS-COV-2' isolation performed by anyone, anywhere, ever.' If you accept the comment from the UK Department of Health it's because they can't isolate a 'virus'. Even so many 'science' papers claimed to have isolated the 'Covid virus' until they were questioned and had to admit they hadn't. A reply from the Robert Koch Institute in Germany was typical: 'I am not aware of a paper which purified isolated SARS-CoV-2.' So what the hell was Christian Drosten and his gang using to design the 'Covid' testing protocol that has produced all the illusory Covid' cases and 'Covid' deaths when the head of the Chinese version of the CDC admitted there was a problem right from the start in that the 'virus' had never been isolated/purified? Breathe deeply: What they are calling 'Covid' is actually created by a *computer program* i.e. *they made it up* – er, that's it. They took lung fluid, with many sources of genetic material, from one single person alleged to be infected with Covid-19 by a PCR test which they *claimed*, without clear evidence, contained a 'virus'. They used several computer programs to create a model of a theoretical virus genome sequence from more than fifty-six million small sequences of RNA, each of an unknown source, assembling them like a puzzle with no known solution. The computer filled in the gaps with sequences from bits in the gene bank to make it look like a bat SARS-like coronavirus! A wave of the magic wand and poof, an *in silico* (computer-generated) genome, a scientific fantasy, was created. UK health researcher Dr Kevin Corbett made the same point with this analogy:

... It's like giving you a few bones and saying that's your fish. It could be any fish. Not even a skeleton. Here's a few fragments of bones. That's your fish ... It's all from gene bank and the bits of the virus sequence that weren't there they made up.

They synthetically created them to fill in the blanks. That's what genetics is; it's a code. So it's ABBCCDDDD and you're missing some what you think is EEE so you put it in. It's all

synthetic. You just manufacture the bits that are missing. This is the end result of the geneticization of virology. This is basically a computer virus.

Further confirmation came in an email exchange between British citizen journalist Frances Leader and the government's Medicines & Healthcare Products Regulatory Agency (the Gates-funded MHRA) which gave emergency permission for untested 'Covid vaccines' to be used. The agency admitted that the 'vaccine' is not based on an isolated 'virus', but comes from a *computer-generated model*. Frances Leader was naturally banned from Cult-owned fascist Twitter for making this exchange public. The process of creating computer-generated alleged 'viruses' is called 'in silico' or 'in silicon' – computer chips – and the term 'in silico' is believed to originate with biological experiments using only a computer in 1989. 'Vaccines' involved with 'Covid' are also produced 'in silico' or by computer not a natural process. If the original 'virus' is nothing more than a made-up computer model how can there be 'new variants' of something that never existed in the first place? They are not new 'variants'; they are new *computer models* only minutely different to the original program and designed to further terrify the population into having the 'vaccine' and submitting to fascism. You want a 'new variant'? Click, click, enter – there you go. Tell the medical profession that you have discovered a 'South African variant', 'UK variants' or a 'Brazilian variant' and in the usual HIV-causes-AIDS manner they will unquestioningly repeat it with no evidence whatsoever to support these claims. They will go on television and warn about the dangers of 'new variants' while doing nothing more than repeating what they have been told to be true and knowing that any deviation from that would be career suicide. Big-time insiders will know it's a hoax, but much of the medical community is clueless about the way they are being played and themselves play the public without even being aware they are doing so. What an interesting 'coincidence' that AstraZeneca and Oxford University were conducting 'Covid vaccine trials' in the three countries – the UK, South Africa and Brazil – where the first three 'variants' were claimed to have 'broken out'.

## Here's your 'virus' – it's a unicorn

Dr Andrew Kaufman presented a brilliant analysis describing how the 'virus' was imagined into fake existence when he dissected an article published by *Nature* and written by 19 authors detailing *alleged* 'sequencing of a complete viral genome' of the 'new SARS-CoV-2 virus'. This computer-modelled *in silico* genome was used as a template for all subsequent genome sequencing experiments that resulted in the so-called variants which he said now number more than 6,000. The fake genome was constructed from more than 56 million individual short strands of RNA. Those little pieces were assembled into longer pieces by finding areas of overlapping sequences. The computer programs created over two million possible combinations from which the authors simply chose the longest one. They then compared this to a 'bat virus' and the computer 'alignment' rearranged the sequence and filled in the gaps! They called this computer-generated abomination the 'complete genome'. Dr Tom Cowan, a fellow medical author and collaborator with Kaufman, said such computer-generation constitutes scientific fraud and he makes this superb analogy:

Here is an equivalency: A group of researchers claim to have found a unicorn because they found a piece of a hoof, a hair from a tail, and a snippet of a horn. They then add that information into a computer and program it to re-create the unicorn, and they then claim this computer re-creation is the real unicorn. Of course, they had never actually seen a unicorn so could not possibly have examined its genetic makeup to compare their samples with the actual unicorn's hair, hooves and horn.

The researchers claim they decided which is the real genome of SARS-CoV-2 by 'consensus', sort of like a vote. Again, different computer programs will come up with different versions of the imaginary 'unicorn', so they come together as a group and decide which is the real imaginary unicorn.

This is how the 'virus' that has transformed the world was brought into fraudulent 'existence'. Extraordinary, yes, but as the Nazis said the bigger the lie the more will believe it. Cowan, however, wasn't finished and he went on to identify what he called the real blockbuster in the paper. He quotes this section from a paper written



by virologists and published by the CDC and then explains what it means:

Therefore, we examined the capacity of SARS-CoV-2 to infect and replicate in several common primate and human cell lines, including human adenocarcinoma cells (A549), human liver cells (HUH 7.0), and human embryonic kidney cells (HEK-293T). In addition to Vero E6 and Vero CCL81 cells. ... Each cell line was inoculated at high multiplicity of infection and examined 24h post-infection.

No CPE was observed in any of the cell lines except in Vero cells, which grew to greater than 10 to the 7th power at 24 h post-infection. In contrast, HUH 7.0 and 293T showed only modest viral replication, and A549 cells were incompatible with SARS CoV-2 infection.

Cowan explains that when virologists attempt to prove infection they have three possible 'hosts' or models on which they can test. The first was humans. Exposure to humans was generally not done for ethical reasons and has never been done with SARS-CoV-2 or any coronavirus. The second possible host was animals. Cowan said that forgetting for a moment that they never actually use purified virus when exposing animals they do use solutions that they *claim* contain the virus. Exposure to animals has been done with SARS-CoV-2 in an experiment involving mice and this is what they found: *None of the wild (normal) mice got sick*. In a group of genetically-modified mice, a statistically insignificant number lost weight and had slightly bristled fur, but they experienced nothing like the illness called 'Covid-19'. Cowan said the third method – the one they mostly rely on – is to inoculate solutions they *say* contain the virus onto a variety of tissue cultures. This process had never been shown to kill tissue *unless* the sample material was starved of nutrients and poisoned as *part of the process*. Yes, incredibly, in tissue experiments designed to show the 'virus' is responsible for killing the tissue they starve the tissue of nutrients and add toxic drugs including antibiotics and they do not have control studies to see if it's the starvation and poisoning that is degrading the tissue rather than the 'virus' they allege to be in there somewhere. You want me to pinch you? Yep, I understand. Tom Cowan said this about the whole nonsensical farce as he explains what that quote from the CDC paper really means:

The shocking thing about the above quote is that using their own methods, the virologists found that solutions containing SARS-CoV-2 – even in high amounts – were NOT, I repeat NOT, infective to any of the three human tissue cultures they tested. In plain English, this means they proved, on their terms, that this ‘new coronavirus’ is not infectious to human beings. It is ONLY infective to monkey kidney cells, and only then when you add two potent drugs (gentamicin and amphotericin), known to be toxic to kidneys, to the mix.

My friends, read this again and again. These virologists, published by the CDC, performed a clear proof, on their terms, showing that the SARS-CoV-2 virus is harmless to human beings. That is the only possible conclusion, but, unfortunately, this result is not even mentioned in their conclusion. They simply say they can provide virus stocks cultured only on monkey Vero cells, thanks for coming.

Cowan concluded: ‘If people really understood how this “science” was done, I would hope they would storm the gates and demand honesty, transparency and truth.’ Dr Michael Yeadon, former Vice President and Chief Scientific Adviser at drug giant Pfizer has been a vocal critic of the ‘Covid vaccine’ and its potential for multiple harm. He said in an interview in April, 2021, that ‘not one [vaccine] has the virus. He was asked why vaccines normally using a ‘dead’ version of a disease to activate the immune system were not used for ‘Covid’ and instead we had the synthetic methods of the ‘mRNA Covid vaccine’. Yeadon said that to do the former ‘you’d have to have some of [the virus] wouldn’t you?’ He added: ‘No-one’s got any – seriously.’ Yeadon said that surely they couldn’t have fooled the whole world for a year without having a virus, ‘but oddly enough ask around – no one’s got it’. He didn’t know why with all the ‘great labs’ around the world that the virus had not been isolated – ‘Maybe they’ve been too busy running bad PCR tests and vaccines that people don’t need.’ What is today called ‘science’ is not ‘science’ at all. Science is no longer what is, but whatever people can be manipulated to *believe* that it is. Real science has been hijacked by the Cult to dispense and produce the ‘expert scientists’ and contentions that suit the agenda of the Cult. How big-time this has happened with the ‘Covid’ hoax which is entirely based on fake science delivered by fake ‘scientists’ and fake ‘doctors’. The human-caused climate change hoax is also entirely based on fake science delivered by fake ‘scientists’ and fake ‘climate experts’. In both cases real

scientists, climate experts and doctors have their views suppressed and deleted by the Cult-owned science establishment, media and Silicon Valley. This is the 'science' that politicians claim to be 'following' and a common denominator of 'Covid' and climate are Cult psychopaths Bill Gates and his mate Klaus Schwab at the Gates-funded World Economic Forum. But, don't worry, it's all just a coincidence and absolutely nothing to worry about. Zzzzzzzzz.

## **What is a 'virus' REALLY?**

Dr Tom Cowan is one of many contesting the very existence of viruses let alone that they cause disease. This is understandable when there is no scientific evidence for a disease-causing 'virus'. German virologist Dr Stefan Lanka won a landmark case in 2017 in the German Supreme Court over his contention that there is no such thing as a measles virus. He had offered a big prize for anyone who could prove there is and Lanka won his case when someone sought to claim the money. There is currently a prize of more than 225,000 euros on offer from an Isolate Truth Fund for anyone who can prove the isolation of SARS-CoV-2 and its genetic substance. Lanka wrote in an article headed 'The Misconception Called Virus' that scientists think a 'virus' is causing tissue to become diseased and degraded when in fact it is the *processes they are using* which do that – not a 'virus'. Lanka has done an important job in making this point clear as Cowan did in his analysis of the CDC paper. Lanka says that all claims about viruses as disease-causing pathogens are wrong and based on 'easily recognisable, understandable and verifiable misinterpretations.' Scientists believed they were working with 'viruses' in their laboratories when they were really working with 'typical particles of specific dying tissues or cells ...' Lanka said that the tissue decaying process claimed to be caused by a 'virus' still happens when no alleged 'virus' is involved. It's the *process* that does the damage and not a 'virus'. The genetic sample is deprived of nutrients, removed from its energy supply through removal from the body and then doused in toxic antibiotics to remove any bacteria. He confirms again that establishment scientists do not (pinch me)

conduct control experiments to see if this is the case and if they did they would see the claims that 'viruses' are doing the damage is nonsense. He adds that during the measles 'virus' court case he commissioned an independent laboratory to perform just such a control experiment and the result was that the tissues and cells died in the exact same way as with alleged 'infected' material. This is supported by a gathering number of scientists, doctors and researchers who reject what is called 'germ theory' or the belief in the body being infected by contagious sources emitted by other people. Researchers Dawn Lester and David Parker take the same stance in their highly-detailed and sourced book *What Really Makes You Ill – Why everything you thought you knew about disease is wrong* which was recommended to me by a number of medical professionals genuinely seeking the truth. Lester and Parker say there is no provable scientific evidence to show that a 'virus' can be transmitted between people or people and animals or animals and people:

The definition also claims that viruses are the cause of many diseases, as if this has been definitively proven. But this is not the case; there is no original scientific evidence that definitively demonstrates that any virus is the cause of any disease. The burden of proof for any theory lies with those who proposed it; but none of the existing documents provides 'proof' that supports the claim that 'viruses' are pathogens.

Dr Tom Cowan employs one of his clever analogies to describe the process by which a 'virus' is named as the culprit for a disease when what is called a 'virus' is only material released by cells detoxing themselves from infiltration by chemical or radiation poisoning. The tidal wave of technologically-generated radiation in the 'smart' modern world plus all the toxic food and drink are causing this to happen more than ever. Deluded 'scientists' misread this as a gathering impact of what they wrongly label 'viruses'.

## **Paper can infect houses**

Cowan said in an article for [davidicke.com](http://davidicke.com) – with his tongue only mildly in his cheek – that he believed he had made a tremendous

discovery that may revolutionise science. He had discovered that small bits of paper are alive, 'well alive-ish', can 'infect' houses, and then reproduce themselves inside the house. The result was that this explosion of growth in the paper inside the house causes the house to explode, blowing it to smithereens. His evidence for this new theory is that in the past months he had carefully examined many of the houses in his neighbourhood and found almost no scraps of paper on the lawns and surrounds of the house. There was an occasional stray label, but nothing more. Then he would return to these same houses a week or so later and with a few, not all of them, particularly the old and decrepit ones, he found to his shock and surprise they were littered with stray bits of paper. He knew then that the paper had infected these houses, made copies of itself, and blew up the house. A young boy on a bicycle at one of the sites told him he had seen a demolition crew using dynamite to explode the house the previous week, but Cowan dismissed this as the idle thoughts of silly boys because 'I was on to something big'. He was on to how 'scientists' mistake genetic material in the detoxifying process for something they call a 'virus'. Cowan said of his house and paper story:

If this sounds crazy to you, it's because it should. This scenario is obviously nuts. But consider this admittedly embellished, for effect, current viral theory that all scientists, medical doctors and virologists currently believe.

He takes the example of the 'novel SARS-Cov2' virus to prove the point. First they take someone with an undefined illness called 'Covid-19' and don't even attempt to find any virus in their sputum. Never mind the scientists still describe how this 'virus', which they have not located attaches to a cell receptor, injects its genetic material, in 'Covid's' case, RNA, into the cell. The RNA once inserted exploits the cell to reproduce itself and makes 'thousands, nay millions, of copies of itself ... Then it emerges victorious to claim its next victim':

If you were to look in the scientific literature for proof, actual scientific proof, that uniform SARS-CoV2 viruses have been properly isolated from the sputum of a sick person, that actual spike proteins could be seen protruding from the virus (which has not been found), you would find that such evidence doesn't exist.

If you go looking in the published scientific literature for actual pictures, proof, that these spike proteins or any viral proteins are ever attached to any receptor embedded in any cell membrane, you would also find that no such evidence exists. If you were to look for a video or documented evidence of the intact virus injecting its genetic material into the body of the cell, reproducing itself and then emerging victorious by budding off the cell membrane, you would find that no such evidence exists.

The closest thing you would find is electron micrograph pictures of cellular particles, possibly attached to cell debris, both of which to be seen were stained by heavy metals, a process that completely distorts their architecture within the living organism. This is like finding bits of paper stuck to the blown-up bricks, thereby proving the paper emerged by taking pieces of the bricks on its way out.

## **The Enders baloney**

Cowan describes the 'Covid' story as being just as make-believe as his paper story and he charts back this fantasy to a Nobel Prize winner called John Enders (1897-1985), an American biomedical scientist who has been dubbed 'The Father of Modern Vaccines'. Enders is claimed to have 'discovered' the process of the viral culture which 'proved' that a 'virus' caused measles. Cowan explains how Enders did this 'by using the EXACT same procedure that has been followed by every virologist to find and characterize every new virus since 1954'. Enders took throat swabs from children with measles and immersed them in 2ml of milk. Penicillin (100u/ml) and the antibiotic streptomycin (50,g/ml) were added and the whole mix was centrifuged – rotated at high speed to separate large cellular debris from small particles and molecules as with milk and cream, for example. Cowan says that if the aim is to find little particles of genetic material ('viruses') in the snot from children with measles it would seem that the last thing you would do is mix the snot with other material – milk –that also has genetic material. 'How are you ever going to know whether whatever you found came from the snot or the milk?' He points out that streptomycin is a 'nephrotoxic' or poisonous-to-the-kidney drug. You will see the relevance of that

shortly. Cowan says that it gets worse, much worse, when Enders describes the culture medium upon which the virus 'grows': 'The culture medium consisted of bovine amniotic fluid (90%), beef embryo extract (5%), horse serum (5%), antibiotics and phenol red as an indicator of cell metabolism.' Cowan asks incredulously: 'Did he just say that the culture medium also contained fluids and tissues that are themselves rich sources of genetic material?' The genetic cocktail, or 'medium', is inoculated onto tissue and cells from rhesus monkey *kidney* tissue. This is where the importance of streptomycin comes in and currently-used antimicrobials and other drugs that are *poisonous to kidneys* and used in ALL modern viral cultures (e.g. gentamicin, streptomycin, and amphotericin). Cowan asks: 'How are you ever going to know from this witch's brew where any genetic material comes from as we now have five different sources of rich genetic material in our mix?' Remember, he says, that all genetic material, whether from monkey kidney tissues, bovine serum, milk, etc., is made from the exact same components. The same central question returns: 'How are you possibly going to know that it was the virus that killed the kidney tissue and not the toxic antibiotic and starvation rations on which you are growing the tissue?' John Enders answered the question himself – *you can't*:

A second agent was obtained from an uninoculated culture of monkey kidney cells. The cytopathic changes [death of the cells] it induced in the unstained preparations could not be distinguished with confidence from the viruses isolated from measles.

The death of the cells ('cytopathic changes') happened in exactly the same manner, whether they inoculated the kidney tissue with the measles snot or not, Cowan says. 'This is evidence that the destruction of the tissue, the very proof of viral causation of illness, was not caused by anything in the snot because they saw the same destructive effect when the snot was not even used ... the cytopathic, i.e., cell-killing, changes come from the process of the culture itself, not from any virus in any snot, period.' Enders quotes in his 1957 paper a virologist called Ruckle as reporting similar findings 'and in addition has isolated an agent from monkey kidney tissue that is so

far indistinguishable from human measles virus'. In other words, Cowan says, these particles called 'measles viruses' are simply and clearly breakdown products of the starved and poisoned tissue. For measles 'virus' see all 'viruses' including the so-called 'Covid virus'. Enders, the 'Father of Modern Vaccines', also said:

There is a potential risk in employing cultures of primate cells for the production of vaccines composed of attenuated virus, since the presence of other agents possibly latent in primate tissues cannot be definitely excluded by any known method.

Cowan further quotes from a paper published in the journal *Viruses* in May, 2020, while the 'Covid pandemic' was well underway in the media if not in reality. 'EVs' here refers to particles of genetic debris from our own tissues, such as exosomes of which more in a moment: 'The remarkable resemblance between EVs and viruses has caused quite a few problems in the studies focused on the analysis of EVs released during viral infections.' Later the paper adds that to date a reliable method that can actually guarantee a complete separation (of EVs from viruses) DOES NOT EXIST. This was published at a time when a fairy tale 'virus' was claimed in total certainty to be causing a fairy tale 'viral disease' called 'Covid-19' – a fairy tale that was already well on the way to transforming human society in the image that the Cult has worked to achieve for so long. Cowan concludes his article:

To summarize, there is no scientific evidence that pathogenic viruses exist. What we think of as 'viruses' are simply the normal breakdown products of dead and dying tissues and cells. When we are well, we make fewer of these particles; when we are starved, poisoned, suffocated by wearing masks, or afraid, we make more.

There is no engineered virus circulating and making people sick. People in laboratories all over the world are making genetically modified products to make people sick. These are called vaccines. There is no virome, no 'ecosystem' of viruses, viruses are not 8%, 50% or 100 % of our genetic material. These are all simply erroneous ideas based on the misconception called a virus.

## **What is 'Covid'? Load of bollocks**



The background described here by Cowan and Lanka was emphasised in the first video presentation that I saw by Dr Andrew Kaufman when he asked whether the 'Covid virus' was in truth a natural defence mechanism of the body called 'exosomes'. These are released by cells when in states of toxicity – see the same themes returning over and over. They are released ever more profusely as chemical and radiation toxicity increases and think of the potential effect therefore of 5G alone as its destructive frequencies infest the human energetic information field with a gathering pace (5G went online in Wuhan in 2019 as the 'virus' emerged). I'll have more about this later. Exosomes transmit a warning to the rest of the body that 'Houston, we have a problem'. Kaufman presented images of exosomes and compared them with 'Covid' under an electron microscope and the similarity was remarkable. They both attach to the same cell receptors (*claimed* in the case of 'Covid'), contain the same genetic material in the form of RNA or ribonucleic acid, and both are found in 'viral cell cultures' with damaged or dying cells. James Hildreth MD, President and Chief Executive Officer of the Meharry Medical College at Johns Hopkins, said: 'The virus is fully an exosome in every sense of the word.' Kaufman's conclusion was that there is no 'virus': 'This entire pandemic is a completely manufactured crisis ... there is no evidence of anyone dying from [this] illness.' Dr Tom Cowan and Sally Fallon Morell, authors of *The Contagion Myth*, published a statement with Dr Kaufman in February, 2021, explaining why the 'virus' does not exist and you can read it that in full in the Appendix.

'Virus' theory can be traced to the 'cell theory' in 1858 of German physician Rudolf Virchow (1821-1920) who contended that disease originates from a single cell infiltrated by a 'virus'. Dr Stefan Lanka said that findings and insights with respect to the structure, function and central importance of tissues in the creation of life, which were already known in 1858, comprehensively refute the cell theory. Virchow ignored them. We have seen the part later played by John Enders in the 1950s and Lanka notes that infection theories were only established as a global dogma through the policies and

eugenics of the Third Reich in Nazi Germany (creation of the same Sabbatian cult behind the 'Covid' hoax). Lanka said: 'Before 1933, scientists dared to contradict this theory; after 1933, these critical scientists were silenced'. Dr Tom Cowan's view is that ill-health is caused by too much of something, too little of something, or toxification from chemicals and radiation – not contagion. We must also highlight as a major source of the 'virus' theology a man still called the 'Father of Modern Virology' – Thomas Milton Rivers (1888-1962). There is no way given the Cult's long game policy that it was a coincidence for the 'Father of Modern Virology' to be director of the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research from 1937 to 1956 when he is credited with making the Rockefeller Institute a leader in 'viral research'. Cult Rockefellerers were the force behind the creation of Big Pharma 'medicine', established the World Health Organisation in 1948, and have long and close associations with the Gates family that now runs the WHO during the pandemic hoax through mega-rich Cult gofer and psychopath Bill Gates.

Only a Renegade Mind can see through all this bullshit by asking the questions that need to be answered, not taking 'no' or prevarication for an answer, and certainly not hiding from the truth in fear of speaking it. Renegade Minds have always changed the world for the better and they will change this one no matter how bleak it may currently appear to be.

## CHAPTER SIX

### **Sequence of deceit**

*If you tell the truth, you don't have to remember anything*  
Mark Twain

**A**gainst the background that I have laid out this far the sequence that took us from an invented 'virus' in Cult-owned China in late 2019 to the fascist transformation of human society can be seen and understood in a whole new context.

We were told that a deadly disease had broken out in Wuhan and the world media began its campaign (coordinated by behavioural psychologists as we shall see) to terrify the population into unquestioning compliance. We were shown images of Chinese people collapsing in the street which never happened in the West with what was supposed to be the same condition. In the earliest days when alleged cases and deaths were few the fear register was hysterical in many areas of the media and this would expand into the common media narrative across the world. The real story was rather different, but we were never told that. The Chinese government, one of the Cult's biggest centres of global operation, said they had discovered a new illness with flu-like and pneumonia-type symptoms in a city with such toxic air that it is overwhelmed with flu-like symptoms, pneumonia and respiratory disease. Chinese scientists said it was a new – 'novel' – coronavirus which they called Sars-Cov-2 and that it caused a disease they labelled 'Covid-19'. There was no evidence for this and the 'virus' has never to this day been isolated, purified and its genetic code established from that. It

was from the beginning a computer-generated fiction. Stories of Chinese whistleblowers saying the number of deaths was being suppressed or that the 'new disease' was related to the Wuhan bio-lab misdirected mainstream and alternative media into cul-de-sacs to obscure the real truth – there was no 'virus'.

Chinese scientists took genetic material from the lung fluid of just a few people and said they had found a 'new' disease when this material had a wide range of content. There was no evidence for a 'virus' for the very reasons explained in the last two chapters. The 'virus' has never been shown to (a) exist and (b) cause any disease. People were diagnosed on symptoms that are so widespread in Wuhan and polluted China and with a PCR test that can't detect infectious disease. On this farce the whole global scam was sold to the rest of the world which would also diagnose respiratory disease as 'Covid-19' from symptoms alone or with a PCR test not testing for a 'virus'. Flu miraculously disappeared *worldwide* in 2020 and into 2021 as it was redesignated 'Covid-19'. It was really the same old flu with its 'flu-like' symptoms attributed to 'flu-like' 'Covid-19'. At the same time with very few exceptions the Chinese response of draconian lockdown and fascism was the chosen weapon to respond across the West as recommended by the Cult-owned Tedros at the Cult-owned World Health Organization run by the Cult-owned Gates. All was going according to plan. Chinese scientists – everything in China is controlled by the Cult-owned government – compared their contaminated RNA lung-fluid material with other RNA sequences and said it appeared to be just under 80 percent identical to the SARS-CoV-1 'virus' claimed to be the cause of the SARS (severe acute respiratory syndrome) 'outbreak' in 2003. They decreed that because of this the 'new virus' had to be related and they called it SARS-CoV-2. There are some serious problems with this assumption and *assumption* was all it was. Most 'factual' science turns out to be assumptions repeated into everyone-knows-that. A match of under 80-percent is meaningless. Dr Kaufman makes the point that there's a 96 percent genetic correlation between humans and chimpanzees, but 'no one would say our genetic material is part

of the chimpanzee family'. Yet the Chinese authorities were claiming that a much lower percentage, less than 80 percent, proved the existence of a new 'coronavirus'. For goodness sake human DNA is 60 percent similar to a *banana*.

## **You are feeling sleepy**

The entire 'Covid' hoax is a global Psyop, a psychological operation to program the human mind into believing and fearing a complete fantasy. A crucial aspect of this was what *appeared* to happen in Italy. It was all very well streaming out daily images of an alleged catastrophe in Wuhan, but to the Western mind it was still on the other side of the world in a very different culture and setting. A reaction of 'this could happen to me and my family' was still nothing like as intense enough for the mind-doctors. The Cult needed a Western example to push people over that edge and it chose Italy, one of its major global locations going back to the Roman Empire. An Italian 'Covid' crisis was manufactured in a particular area called Lombardy which just happens to be notorious for its toxic air and therefore respiratory disease. Wuhan, China, *déjà vu*. An hysterical media told horror stories of Italians dying from 'Covid' in their droves and how Lombardy hospitals were being overrun by a tidal wave of desperately ill people needing treatment after being struck down by the 'deadly virus'. Here was the psychological turning point the Cult had planned. Wow, if this is happening in Italy, the Western mind concluded, this indeed could happen to me and my family. Another point is that Italian authorities responded by following the Chinese blueprint so vehemently recommended by the Cult-owned World Health Organization. They imposed fascistic lockdowns on the whole country viciously policed with the help of surveillance drones sweeping through the streets seeking out anyone who escaped from mass house arrest. Livelihoods were destroyed and psychology unravelled in the way we have witnessed since in all lockdown countries. Crucial to the plan was that Italy responded in this way to set the precedent of suspending freedom and imposing fascism in a 'Western liberal democracy'. I emphasised in an

animated video explanation on [davidicke.com](http://davidicke.com) posted in the summer of 2020 how important it was to the Cult to expand the Chinese lockdown model across the West. Without this, and the bare-faced lie that non-symptomatic people could still transmit a 'disease' they didn't have, there was no way locking down the whole population, sick and not sick, could be pulled off. At just the right time and with no evidence Cult operatives and gofers claimed that people without symptoms could pass on the 'disease'. In the name of protecting the 'vulnerable' like elderly people, who lockdowns would kill by the tens of thousands, we had for the first time healthy people told to isolate as well as the sick. The great majority of people who tested positive had no symptoms because there was nothing wrong with them. It was just a trick made possible by a test not testing for the 'virus'.

Months after my animated video the Gates-funded Professor Neil Ferguson at the Gates-funded Imperial College confirmed that I was right. He didn't say it in those terms, naturally, but he did say it. Ferguson will enter the story shortly for his outrageously crazy 'computer models' that led to Britain, the United States and many other countries following the Chinese and now Italian methods of response. Put another way, following the Cult script. Ferguson said that SAGE, the UK government's scientific advisory group which has controlled 'Covid' policy from the start, wanted to follow the Chinese lockdown model (while they all continued to work and be paid), but they wondered if they could possibly, in Ferguson's words, 'get away with it in Europe'. 'Get away with it'? Who the hell do these moronic, arrogant people think they are? This appalling man Ferguson said that once Italy went into national lockdown they realised they, too, could mimic China:

It's a communist one-party state, we said. We couldn't get away with it in Europe, we thought ... and then Italy did it. And we realised we could. Behind this garbage from Ferguson is a simple fact: Doing the same as China in every country was the plan from the start and Ferguson's 'models' would play a central role in achieving that. It's just a coincidence, of course, and absolutely nothing to worry your little head about.

## **Oops, sorry, our mistake**

Once the Italian segment of the Psyop had done the job it was designed to do a very different story emerged. Italian authorities revealed that 99 percent of those who had 'died from Covid-19' in Italy had one, two, three, or more 'co-morbidities' or illnesses and health problems that could have ended their life. The US Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) published a figure of 94 percent for Americans dying of 'Covid' while having other serious medical conditions – on average two to three (some five or six) other potential causes of death. In terms of death from an unproven 'virus' I say it is 100 percent. The other one percent in Italy and six percent in the US would presumably have died from 'Covid's' flu-like symptoms with a range of other possible causes in conjunction with a test not testing for the 'virus'. Fox News reported that even more startling figures had emerged in one US county in which 410 of 422 deaths attributed to 'Covid-19' had other potentially deadly health conditions. The Italian National Health Institute said later that the average age of people dying with a 'Covid-19' diagnosis in Italy was about 81. Ninety percent were over 70 with ten percent over 90. In terms of other reasons to die some 80 percent had two or more chronic diseases with half having three or more including cardiovascular problems, diabetes, respiratory problems and cancer. Why is the phantom 'Covid-19' said to kill overwhelmingly old people and hardly affect the young? Old people continually die of many causes and especially respiratory disease which you can re-diagnose 'Covid-19' while young people die in tiny numbers by comparison and rarely of respiratory disease. Old people 'die of Covid' because they die of other things that can be redesignated 'Covid' and it really is that simple.

## **Flu has flown**

The blueprint was in place. Get your illusory 'cases' from a test not testing for the 'virus' and redesignate other causes of death as 'Covid-19'. You have an instant 'pandemic' from something that is nothing more than a computer-generated fiction. With near-on a

billion people having 'flu-like' symptoms every year the potential was limitless and we can see why flu quickly and apparently miraculously disappeared *worldwide* by being diagnosed 'Covid-19'. The painfully bloody obvious was explained away by the childlike media in headlines like this in the UK '*Independent*': 'Not a single case of flu detected by Public Health England this year as Covid restrictions suppress virus'. I kid you not. The masking, social distancing and house arrest that did not make the 'Covid virus' disappear somehow did so with the 'flu virus'. Even worse the article, by a bloke called Samuel Lovett, suggested that maybe the masking, sanitising and other 'Covid' measures should continue to keep the flu away. With a ridiculousness that disturbs your breathing (it's 'Covid-19') the said Lovett wrote: 'With widespread social distancing and mask-wearing measures in place throughout the UK, the usual routes of transmission for influenza have been blocked.' He had absolutely no evidence to support that statement, but look at the consequences of him acknowledging the obvious. With flu not disappearing at all and only being relabelled 'Covid-19' he would have to contemplate that 'Covid' was a hoax on a scale that is hard to imagine. You need guts and commitment to truth to even go there and that's clearly something Samuel Lovett does not have in abundance. He would never have got it through the editors anyway.

Tens of thousands die in the United States alone every winter from flu including many with pneumonia complications. CDC figures record *45 million* Americans diagnosed with flu in 2017-2018 of which 61,000 died and some reports claim 80,000. Where was the same hysteria then that we have seen with 'Covid-19'? Some 250,000 Americans are admitted to hospital with pneumonia every year with about 50,000 cases proving fatal. About 65 million suffer respiratory disease every year and three million deaths makes this the third biggest cause of death worldwide. You only have to redesignate a portion of all these people 'Covid-19' and you have an instant global pandemic or the *appearance* of one. Why would doctors do this? They are told to do this and all but a few dare not refuse those who must be obeyed. Doctors in general are not researching their own



knowledge and instead take it direct and unquestioned from the authorities that own them and their careers. The authorities say they must now diagnose these symptoms 'Covid-19' and not flu, or whatever, and they do it. Dark suits say put 'Covid-19' on death certificates no matter what the cause of death and the doctors do it. Renegade Minds don't fall for the illusion that doctors and medical staff are all highly-intelligent, highly-principled, seekers of medical truth. *Some are*, but not the majority. They are repeaters, gofers, and yes sir, no sir, purveyors of what the system demands they purvey. The 'Covid' con is not merely confined to diseases of the lungs. Instructions to doctors to put 'Covid-19' on death certificates for anyone dying of *anything* within 28 days (or much more) of a positive test not testing for the 'virus' opened the floodgates. The term dying *with* 'Covid' and not *of* 'Covid' was coined to cover the truth. Whether it was a *with* or an *of* they were all added to the death numbers attributed to the 'deadly virus' compiled by national governments and globally by the Gates-funded Johns Hopkins operation in the United States that was so involved in those 'pandemic' simulations. Fraudulent deaths were added to the ever-growing list of fraudulent 'cases' from false positives from a false test. No wonder Professor Walter Ricciardi, scientific advisor to the Italian minister of health, said after the Lombardy hysteria had done its job that 'Covid' death rates were due to Italy having the second oldest population in the world and to *how hospitals record deaths*:

The way in which we code deaths in our country is very generous in the sense that all the people who die in hospitals with the coronavirus are deemed to be dying of the coronavirus. On re-evaluation by the National Institute of Health, only 12 per cent of death certificates have shown a direct causality from coronavirus, while 88 per cent of patients who have died have at least one pre-morbidity – many had two or three.

This is extraordinary enough when you consider the propaganda campaign to use Italy to terrify the world, but how can they even say twelve percent were genuine when the 'virus' has not been shown to exist, its 'code' is a computer program, and diagnosis comes from a test not testing for it? As in China, and soon the world, 'Covid-19' in

Italy was a redesignation of diagnosis. Lies and corruption were to become the real 'pandemic' fuelled by a pathetically-compliant medical system taking its orders from the tiny few at the top of their national hierarchy who answered to the World Health Organization which answers to Gates and the Cult. Doctors were told – ordered – to diagnose a particular set of symptoms 'Covid-19' and put that on the death certificate for any cause of death if the patient had tested positive with a test not testing for the virus or had 'Covid' symptoms like the flu. The United States even introduced big financial incentives to manipulate the figures with hospitals receiving £4,600 from the Medicare system for diagnosing someone with regular pneumonia, \$13,000 if they made the diagnosis from the same symptoms 'Covid-19' pneumonia, and \$39,000 if they put a 'Covid' diagnosed patient on a ventilator that would almost certainly kill them. A few – painfully and pathetically few – medical whistleblowers revealed (before Cult-owned YouTube deleted their videos) that they had been instructed to 'let the patient crash' and put them straight on a ventilator instead of going through a series of far less intrusive and dangerous methods as they would have done before the pandemic hoax began and the financial incentives kicked in. We are talking cold-blooded murder given that ventilators are so damaging to respiratory systems they are usually the last step before heaven awaits. Renegade Minds never fall for the belief that people in white coats are all angels of mercy and cannot be full-on psychopaths. I have explained in detail in *The Answer* how what I am describing here played out across the world coordinated by the World Health Organization through the medical hierarchies in almost every country.

## **Medical scientist calls it**

Information about the non-existence of the 'virus' began to emerge for me in late March, 2020, and mushroomed after that. I was sent an email by Sir Julian Rose, a writer, researcher, and organic farming promotor, from a medical scientist friend of his in the United States. Even at that early stage in March the scientist was able to explain

how the 'Covid' hoax was being manipulated. He said there were no reliable tests for a specific 'Covid-19 virus' and nor were there any reliable agencies or media outlets for reporting numbers of actual 'Covid-19' cases. We have seen in the long period since then that he was absolutely right. 'Every action and reaction to Covid-19 is based on totally flawed data and we simply cannot make accurate assessments,' he said. Most people diagnosed with 'Covid-19' were showing nothing more than cold and flu-like symptoms 'because most coronavirus strains *are* nothing more than cold/flu-like symptoms'. We had farcical situations like an 84-year-old German man testing positive for 'Covid-19' and his nursing home ordered to quarantine only for him to be found to have a common cold. The scientist described back then why PCR tests and what he called the 'Mickey Mouse test kits' were useless for what they were claimed to be identifying. 'The idea these kits can isolate a specific virus like Covid-19 is nonsense,' he said. Significantly, he pointed out that 'if you want to create a totally false panic about a totally false pandemic – pick a coronavirus'. This is exactly what the Cult-owned Gates, World Economic Forum and Johns Hopkins University did with their Event 201 'simulation' followed by their real-life simulation called the 'pandemic'. The scientist said that all you had to do was select the sickest of people with respiratory-type diseases in a single location – 'say Wuhan' – and administer PCR tests to them. You can then claim that anyone showing 'viral sequences' similar to a coronavirus 'which will inevitably be quite a few' is suffering from a 'new' disease:

Since you already selected the sickest flu cases a fairly high proportion of your sample will go on to die. You can then say this 'new' virus has a CFR [case fatality rate] higher than the flu and use this to infuse more concern and do more tests which will of course produce more 'cases', which expands the testing, which produces yet more 'cases' and so on and so on. Before long you have your 'pandemic', and all you have done is use a simple test kit trick to convert the worst flu and pneumonia cases into something new that doesn't ACTUALLY EXIST [my emphasis].

He said that you then 'just run the same scam in other countries' and make sure to keep the fear message running high 'so that people

will feel panicky and less able to think critically'. The only problem to overcome was the fact *there is no* actual new deadly pathogen and only regular sick people. This meant that deaths from the 'new deadly pathogen' were going to be way too low for a real new deadly virus pandemic, but he said this could be overcome in the following ways – all of which would go on to happen:

1. You can claim this is just the beginning and more deaths are imminent [you underpin this with fantasy 'computer projections']. Use this as an excuse to quarantine everyone and then claim the quarantine prevented the expected millions of dead.
2. You can [say that people] 'minimizing' the dangers are irresponsible and bully them into not talking about numbers.
3. You can talk crap about made up numbers hoping to blind people with pseudoscience.
4. You can start testing well people (who, of course, will also likely have shreds of coronavirus [RNA] in them) and thus inflate your 'case figures' with 'asymptomatic carriers' (you will of course have to spin that to sound deadly even though any virologist knows the more symptom-less cases you have the less deadly is your pathogen).

The scientist said that if you take these simple steps 'you can have your own entirely manufactured pandemic up and running in weeks'. His analysis made so early in the hoax was brilliantly prophetic of what would actually unfold. Pulling all the information together in these recent chapters we have this is simple 1, 2, 3, of how you can delude virtually the entire human population into believing in a 'virus' that doesn't exist:

- A 'Covid case' is someone who tests positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'.
- A 'Covid death' is someone who dies of *any cause* within 28 days (or much longer) of testing positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'.
- Asymptomatic means there is nothing wrong with you, but they claim you can pass on what you don't have to justify locking

down (quarantining) healthy people in totality.

The foundations of the hoax are that simple. A study involving ten million people in Wuhan, published in November, 2020, demolished the whole lie about those without symptoms passing on the 'virus'. They found '300 asymptomatic cases' and traced their contacts to find that not one of them was detected with the 'virus'.

'Asymptomatic' patients and their contacts were isolated for no less than two weeks and nothing changed. I know it's all crap, but if you are going to claim that those without symptoms can transmit 'the virus' then you must produce evidence for that and they never have. Even World Health Organization official Dr Maria Van Kerkhove, head of the emerging diseases and zoonosis unit, said as early as June, 2020, that she doubted the validity of asymptomatic transmission. She said that 'from the data we have, it still seems to be rare that an asymptomatic person actually transmits onward to a secondary individual' and by 'rare' she meant that she couldn't cite any case of asymptomatic transmission.

### **The Ferguson factor**

The problem for the Cult as it headed into March, 2020, when the script had lockdown due to start, was that despite all the manipulation of the case and death figures they still did not have enough people alleged to have died from 'Covid' to justify mass house arrest. This was overcome in the way the scientist described: 'You can claim this is just the beginning and more deaths are imminent ... Use this as an excuse to quarantine everyone and then claim the quarantine prevented the expected millions of dead.' Enter one Professor Neil Ferguson, the Gates-funded 'epidemiologist' at the Gates-funded Imperial College in London. Ferguson is Britain's Christian Drosten in that he has a dire record of predicting health outcomes, but is still called upon to advise government on the next health outcome when another 'crisis' comes along. This may seem to be a strange and ridiculous thing to do. Why would you keep turning for policy guidance to people who have a history of being

monumentally wrong? Ah, but it makes sense from the Cult point of view. These 'experts' keep on producing predictions that suit the Cult agenda for societal transformation and so it was with Neil Ferguson as he revealed his horrific (and clearly insane) computer model predictions that allowed lockdowns to be imposed in Britain, the United States and many other countries. Ferguson does not have even an A-level in biology and would appear to have no formal training in computer modelling, medicine or epidemiology, according to Derek Winton, an MSc in Computational Intelligence. He wrote an article somewhat aghast at what Ferguson did which included taking no account of respiratory disease 'seasonality' which means it is far worse in the winter months. Who would have thought that respiratory disease could be worse in the winter? Well, certainly not Ferguson.

The massively China-connected Imperial College and its bizarre professor provided the excuse for the long-incubated Chinese model of human control to travel westward at lightning speed. Imperial College confirms on its website that it collaborates with the Chinese Research Institute; publishes more than 600 research papers every year with Chinese research institutions; has 225 Chinese staff; 2,600 Chinese students – the biggest international group; 7,000 former students living in China which is the largest group outside the UK; and was selected for a tour by China's President Xi Jinping during his state visit to the UK in 2015. The college takes major donations from China and describes itself as the UK's number one university collaborator with Chinese research institutions. The China communist/fascist government did not appear phased by the woeful predictions of Ferguson and Imperial when during the lockdown that Ferguson induced the college signed a five-year collaboration deal with China tech giant Huawei that will have Huawei's indoor 5G network equipment installed at the college's West London tech campus along with an 'AI cloud platform'. The deal includes Chinese sponsorship of Imperial's Venture Catalyst entrepreneurship competition. Imperial is an example of the enormous influence the Chinese government has within British and North American

universities and research centres – and further afield. Up to 200 academics from more than a dozen UK universities are being investigated on suspicion of ‘unintentionally’ helping the Chinese government build weapons of mass destruction by ‘transferring world-leading research in advanced military technology such as aircraft, missile designs and cyberweapons’. Similar scandals have broken in the United States, but it’s all a coincidence. Imperial College serves the agenda in many other ways including the promotion of every aspect of the United Nations Agenda 21/2030 (the Great Reset) and produced computer models to show that human-caused ‘climate change’ is happening when in the real world it isn’t. Imperial College is driving the climate agenda as it drives the ‘Covid’ agenda (both Cult hoaxes) while Patrick Vallance, the UK government’s Chief Scientific Adviser on ‘Covid’, was named Chief Scientific Adviser to the UN ‘climate change’ conference known as COP26 hosted by the government in Glasgow, Scotland. ‘Covid’ and ‘climate’ are fundamentally connected.

## **Professor Woeful**

From Imperial’s bosom came Neil Ferguson still advising government despite his previous disasters and it was announced early on that he and other key people like UK Chief Medical Adviser Chris Whitty had caught the ‘virus’ as the propaganda story was being sold. Somehow they managed to survive and we had Prime Minister Boris Johnson admitted to hospital with what was said to be a severe version of the ‘virus’ in this same period. His whole policy and demeanour changed when he returned to Downing Street. It’s a small world with these government advisors – especially in their communal connections to Gates – and Ferguson had partnered with Whitty to write a paper called ‘Infectious disease: Tough choices to reduce Ebola transmission’ which involved another scare-story that didn’t happen. Ferguson’s ‘models’ predicted that up to 150,000 could die from ‘mad cow disease’, or BSE, and its version in sheep if it was transmitted to humans. BSE was not transmitted and instead triggered by an organophosphate pesticide used to treat a pest on

cows. Fewer than 200 deaths followed from the human form. Models by Ferguson and his fellow incompetents led to the unnecessary culling of millions of pigs, cattle and sheep in the foot and mouth outbreak in 2001 which destroyed the lives and livelihoods of farmers and their families who had often spent decades building their herds and flocks. Vast numbers of these animals did not have foot and mouth and had no contact with the infection. Another 'expert' behind the cull was Professor Roy Anderson, a computer modeller at Imperial College specialising in the epidemiology of *human*, not animal, disease. Anderson has served on the Bill and Melinda Gates Grand Challenges in Global Health advisory board and chairs another Gates-funded organisation. Gates is everywhere.

In a precursor to the 'Covid' script Ferguson backed closing schools 'for prolonged periods' over the swine flu 'pandemic' in 2009 and said it would affect a third of the world population if it continued to spread at the speed he claimed to be happening. His mates at Imperial College said much the same and a news report said: 'One of the authors, the epidemiologist and disease modeller Neil Ferguson, who sits on the World Health Organisation's emergency committee for the outbreak, said the virus had "full pandemic potential".' Professor Liam Donaldson, the Chris Whitty of his day as Chief Medical Officer, said the worst case could see 30 percent of the British people infected by swine flu with 65,000 dying. Ferguson and Donaldson were indeed proved correct when at the end of the year the number of deaths attributed to swine flu was 392. The term 'expert' is rather liberally applied unfortunately, not least to complete idiots. Swine flu 'projections' were great for GlaxoSmithKline (GSK) as millions rolled in for its Pandemrix influenza vaccine which led to brain damage with children most affected. The British government (taxpayers) paid out more than £60 million in compensation after GSK was given immunity from prosecution. Yet another 'Covid' déjà vu. Swine flu was supposed to have broken out in Mexico, but Dr Wolfgang Wodarg, a German doctor, former member of parliament and critic of the 'Covid' hoax, observed 'the spread of swine flu' in Mexico City at the time. He



said: 'What we experienced in Mexico City was a very mild flu which did not kill more than usual – which killed even fewer people than usual.' Hyping the fear against all the facts is not unique to 'Covid' and has happened many times before. Ferguson is reported to have over-estimated the projected death toll of bird flu (H5N1) by some three million-fold, but bird flu vaccine makers again made a killing from the scare. This is some of the background to the Neil Ferguson who produced the perfectly-timed computer models in early 2020 predicting that half a million people would die in Britain without draconian lockdown and 2.2 million in the United States. Politicians panicked, people panicked, and lockdowns of alleged short duration were instigated to 'flatten the curve' of cases gleaned from a test not testing for the 'virus'. I said at the time that the public could forget the 'short duration' bit. This was an agenda to destroy the livelihoods of the population and force them into mass control through dependency and there was going to be nothing 'short' about it. American researcher Daniel Horowitz described the consequences of the 'models' spewed out by Gates-funded Ferguson and Imperial College:

What led our government and the governments of many other countries into panic was a single Imperial College of UK study, funded by global warming activists, that predicted 2.2 million deaths if we didn't lock down the country. In addition, the reported 8-9% death rate in Italy scared us into thinking there was some other mutation of this virus that they got, which might have come here.

Together with the fact that we were finally testing and had the ability to actually report new cases, we thought we were headed for a death spiral. But again ... we can't flatten a curve if we don't know when the curve started.

How about it *never* started?

## **Giving them what they want**

An investigation by German news outlet *Welt Am Sonntag* (*World on Sunday*) revealed how in March, 2020, the German government gathered together 'leading scientists from several research institutes and universities' and 'together, they were to produce a [modelling]

paper that would serve as legitimization for further tough political measures'. The Cult agenda was justified by computer modelling not based on evidence or reality; it was specifically constructed to justify the Cult demand for lockdowns all over the world to destroy the independent livelihoods of the global population. All these modellers and everyone responsible for the 'Covid' hoax have a date with a trial like those in Nuremberg after World War Two when Nazis faced the consequences of their war crimes. These corrupt-beyond-belief 'modellers' wrote the paper according to government instructions and it said that if lockdown measures were lifted then up to one million Germans would die from 'Covid-19' adding that some would die 'agonizingly at home, gasping for breath' unable to be treated by hospitals that couldn't cope. All lies. No matter – it gave the Cult all that it wanted. What did long-time government 'modeller' Neil Ferguson say? If the UK and the United States didn't lockdown half a million would die in Britain and 2.2 million Americans. Anyone see a theme here? 'Modellers' are such a crucial part of the lockdown strategy that we should look into their background and follow the money. Researcher Rosemary Frei produced an excellent article headlined 'The Modelling-paper Mafiosi'. She highlights a guy called John Edmunds, a British epidemiologist, and professor in the Faculty of Epidemiology and Population Health at the London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine. He studied at Imperial College. Edmunds is a member of government 'Covid' advisory bodies which have been dictating policy, the New and Emerging Respiratory Virus Threats Advisory Group (NERVTAG) and the Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE).

Ferguson, another member of NERVTAG and SAGE, led the way with the original 'virus' and Edmunds has followed in the 'variant' stage and especially the so-called UK or Kent variant known as the 'Variant of Concern' (VOC) B.1.1.7. He said in a co-written report for the Centre for Mathematical modelling of Infectious Diseases at the London School of Hygiene and Tropical Medicine, with input from the Centre's 'Covid-19' Working Group, that there was 'a realistic

possibility that VOC B.1.1.7 is associated with an increased risk of death compared to non-VOC viruses'. Fear, fear, fear, get the vaccine, fear, fear, fear, get the vaccine. Rosemary Frei reveals that almost all the paper's authors and members of the modelling centre's 'Covid-19' Working Group receive funding from the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation and/or the associated Gates-funded Wellcome Trust. The paper was published by e-journal *Medrx* <sup>xiv</sup> which only publishes papers not peer-reviewed and the journal was established by an organisation headed by Facebook's Mark Zuckerberg and his missus. What a small world it is. Frei discovered that Edmunds is on the Scientific Advisory Board of the Coalition for Epidemic Preparedness Innovations (CEPI) which was established by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation, Klaus Schwab's Davos World Economic Forum and Big Pharma giant Wellcome. CEPI was 'launched in Davos [in 2017] to develop vaccines to stop future epidemics', according to its website. 'Our mission is to accelerate the development of vaccines against emerging infectious diseases and enable equitable access to these vaccines for people during outbreaks.' What kind people they are. Rosemary Frei reveals that Public Health England (PHE) director Susan Hopkins is an author of her organisation's non-peer-reviewed reports on 'new variants'. Hopkins is a professor of infectious diseases at London's Imperial College which is gifted tens of millions of dollars a year by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Gates-funded modelling disaster Neil Ferguson also co-authors Public Health England reports and he spoke in December, 2020, about the potential danger of the B.1.1.7. 'UK variant' promoted by Gates-funded modeller John Edmunds. When I come to the 'Covid vaccines' the 'new variants' will be shown for what they are – bollocks.

## **Connections, connections**

All these people and modellers are lockdown-obsessed or, put another way, they demand what the Cult demands. Edmunds said in January, 2021, that to ease lockdowns too soon would be a disaster and they had to 'vaccinate much, much, much more widely than the

elderly'. Rosemary Frei highlights that Edmunds is married to Jeanne Pimenta who is described in a LinkedIn profile as director of epidemiology at GlaxoSmithKline (GSK) and she held shares in the company. Patrick Vallance, co-chair of SAGE and the government's Chief Scientific Adviser, is a former executive of GSK and has a deferred bonus of shares in the company worth £600,000. GSK has serious business connections with Bill Gates and is collaborating with mRNA-'vaccine' company CureVac to make 'vaccines' for the new variants that Edmunds is talking about. GSK is planning a 'Covid vaccine' with drug giant Sanofi. Puppets Prime Minister Boris Johnson announced in the spring of 2021 that up to 60 million vaccine doses were to be made at the GSK facility at Barnard Castle in the English North East. Barnard Castle, with a population of just 6,000, was famously visited in breach of lockdown rules in April, 2020, by Johnson aide Dominic Cummings who said that he drove there 'to test his eyesight' before driving back to London. Cummings would be better advised to test his integrity – not that it would take long. The GSK facility had nothing to do with his visit then although I'm sure Patrick Vallance would have been happy to arrange an introduction and some tea and biscuits. Ruthless psychopath Gates has made yet another fortune from vaccines in collaboration with Big Pharma companies and gushes at the phenomenal profits to be made from vaccines – more than a 20-to-1 return as he told one interviewer. Gates also tweeted in December, 2019, with the foreknowledge of what was coming: 'What's next for our foundation? I'm particularly excited about what the next year could mean for one of the best buys in global health: vaccines.'

Modeller John Edmunds is a big promotor of vaccines as all these people appear to be. He's the dean of the London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine's Faculty of Epidemiology and Population Health which is primarily funded by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation and the Gates-established and funded GAVI vaccine alliance which is the Gates vehicle to vaccinate the world. The organisation Doctors Without Borders has described GAVI as being 'aimed more at supporting drug-industry desires to promote new

products than at finding the most efficient and sustainable means for fighting the diseases of poverty'. But then that's why the psychopath Gates created it. John Edmunds said in a video that the London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine is involved in every aspect of vaccine development including large-scale clinical trials. He contends that mathematical modelling can show that vaccines protect individuals and society. That's on the basis of shit in and shit out, I take it. Edmunds serves on the UK Vaccine Network as does Ferguson and the government's foremost 'Covid' adviser, the grim-faced, dark-eyed Chris Whitty. The Vaccine Network says it works 'to support the government to identify and shortlist targeted investment opportunities for the most promising vaccines and vaccine technologies that will help combat infectious diseases with epidemic potential, and to address structural issues related to the UK's broader vaccine infrastructure'. Ferguson is acting Director of the Imperial College Vaccine Impact Modelling Consortium which has funding from the Bill and Melina Gates Foundation and the Gates-created GAVI 'vaccine alliance'. Anyone wonder why these characters see vaccines as the answer to every problem? Ferguson is wildly enthusiastic in his support for GAVI's campaign to vaccinate children en masse in poor countries. You would expect someone like Gates who has constantly talked about the need to reduce the population to want to fund vaccines to keep more people alive. I'm sure that's why he does it. The John Edmunds London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine (LSHTM) has a Vaccines Manufacturing Innovation Centre which develops, tests and commercialises vaccines. Rosemary Frei writes:

The vaccines centre also performs affiliated activities like combating 'vaccine hesitancy'. The latter includes the Vaccine Confidence Project. The project's stated purpose is, among other things, 'to provide analysis and guidance for early response and engagement with the public to ensure sustained confidence in vaccines and immunisation'. The Vaccine Confidence Project's director is LSHTM professor Heidi Larson. For more than a decade she's been researching how to combat vaccine hesitancy.

How the bloody hell can blokes like John Edmunds and Neil Ferguson with those connections and financial ties model 'virus' case

and death projections for the government and especially in a way that gives their paymasters like Gates exactly what they want? It's insane, but this is what you find throughout the world.

### **'Covid' is not dangerous, oops, wait, yes it is**

Only days before Ferguson's nightmare scenario made Jackboot Johnson take Britain into a China-style lockdown to save us from a deadly 'virus' the UK government website gov.uk was reporting something very different to Ferguson on a page of official government guidance for 'high consequence infectious diseases (HCID)'. It said this about 'Covid-19':

*As of 19 March 2020, COVID-19 is no longer considered to be a high consequence infectious diseases (HCID) in the UK [my emphasis].* The 4 nations public health HCID group made an interim recommendation in January 2020 to classify COVID-19 as an HCID. This was based on consideration of the UK HCID criteria about the virus and the disease with information available during the early stages of the outbreak.

Now that more is known about COVID-19, the public health bodies in the UK have reviewed the most up to date information about COVID-19 against the UK HCID criteria. They have determined that several features have now changed; in particular, more information is available about mortality rates (low overall), and there is now greater clinical awareness and a specific and sensitive laboratory test, the availability of which continues to increase. The Advisory Committee on Dangerous Pathogens (ACDP) is also of the opinion that COVID-19 should no longer be classified as an HCID.

Soon after the government had been exposed for downgrading the risk they upgraded it again and everyone was back to singing from the same Cult hymn book. Ferguson and his fellow Gates clones indicated that lockdowns and restrictions would have to continue until a Gates-funded vaccine was developed. Gates said the same because Ferguson and his like were repeating the Gates script which is the Cult script. 'Flatten the curve' became an ongoing nightmare of continuing lockdowns with periods in between of severe restrictions in pursuit of destroying independent incomes and had nothing to do with protecting health about which the Cult gives not a shit. Why wouldn't Ferguson be pushing a vaccine 'solution' when he's owned by vaccine-obsessive Gates who makes a fortune from them and

when Ferguson heads the Vaccine Impact Modelling Consortium at Imperial College funded by the Gates Foundation and GAVI, the 'vaccine alliance', created by Gates as his personal vaccine promotion operation? To compound the human catastrophe that Ferguson's 'models' did so much to create he was later exposed for breaking his own lockdown rules by having sexual liaisons with his married girlfriend Antonia Staats at his home while she was living at another location with her husband and children. Staats was a 'climate' activist and senior campaigner at the Soros-funded Avaaz which I wouldn't trust to tell me that grass is green. Ferguson had to resign as a government advisor over this hypocrisy in May, 2020, but after a period of quiet he was back being quoted by the ridiculous media on the need for more lockdowns and a vaccine rollout. Other government-advising 'scientists' from Imperial College held the fort in his absence and said lockdown could be indefinite until a vaccine was found. The Cult script was being sung by the payrolled choir. I said there was no intention of going back to 'normal' when the 'vaccine' came because the 'vaccine' is part of a very different agenda that I will discuss in Human 2.0. Why would the Cult want to let the world go back to normal when destroying that normal forever was the whole point of what was happening? House arrest, closing businesses and schools through lockdown, (un)social distancing and masks all followed the Ferguson fantasy models. Again as I predicted (these people are so predictable) when the 'vaccine' arrived we were told that house arrest, lockdown, (un)social distancing and masks would still have to continue. I will deal with the masks in the next chapter because they are of fundamental importance.

## **Where's the 'pandemic'?**

Any mildly in-depth assessment of the figures revealed what was really going on. Cult-funded and controlled organisations still have genuine people working within them such is the number involved. So it is with Genevieve Briand, assistant program director of the Applied Economics master's degree program at Johns Hopkins

University. She analysed the impact that 'Covid-19' had on deaths from *all* causes in the United States using official data from the CDC for the period from early February to early September, 2020. She found that allegedly 'Covid' *related*-deaths exceeded those from heart disease which she found strange with heart disease always the biggest cause of fatalities. Her research became even more significant when she noted the sudden decline in 2020 of *all* non-'Covid' deaths: 'This trend is completely contrary to the pattern observed in all previous years ... the total decrease in deaths by other causes almost exactly equals the increase in deaths by Covid-19.' This was such a game, set and match in terms of what was happening that Johns Hopkins University deleted the article on the grounds that it 'was being used to support false and dangerous inaccuracies about the impact of the pandemic'. No – because it exposed the scam from official CDC figures and this was confirmed when those figures were published in January, 2021. Here we can see the effect of people dying from heart attacks, cancer, road accidents and gunshot wounds – *anything* – having 'Covid-19' on the death certificate along with those diagnosed from 'symptoms' who had even not tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'. I am not kidding with the gunshot wounds, by the way. Brenda Bock, coroner in Grand County, Colorado, revealed that two gunshot victims tested positive for the 'virus' within the previous 30 days and were therefore classified as 'Covid deaths'. Bock said: 'These two people had tested positive for Covid, but that's not what killed them. A gunshot wound is what killed them.' She said she had not even finished her investigation when the state listed the gunshot victims as deaths due to the 'virus'. The death and case figures for 'Covid-19' are an absolute joke and yet they are repeated like parrots by the media, politicians and alleged medical 'experts'. The official Cult narrative is the only show in town.

Genevieve Briand found that deaths from all causes were not exceptional in 2020 compared with previous years and a Spanish magazine published figures that said the same about Spain which was a 'Covid' propaganda hotspot at one point. *Discovery Salud*, a



health and medicine magazine, quoted government figures which showed how 17,000 *fewer* people died in Spain in 2020 than in 2019 and more than 26,000 fewer than in 2018. The age-standardised mortality rate for England and Wales when age distribution is taken into account was significantly lower in 2020 than the 1970s, 80s and 90s, and was only the ninth highest since 2000. Where is the 'pandemic'?

Post mortems and autopsies virtually disappeared for 'Covid' deaths amid claims that 'virus-infected' bodily fluids posed a risk to those carrying out the autopsy. This was rejected by renowned German pathologist and forensic doctor Klaus Püschel who said that he and his staff had by then done 150 autopsies on 'Covid' patients with no problems at all. He said they were needed to know why some 'Covid' patients suffered blood clots and not severe respiratory infections. The 'virus' is, after all, called SARS or 'severe acute respiratory syndrome'. I highlighted in the spring of 2020 this phenomenon and quoted New York intensive care doctor Cameron Kyle-Sidell who posted a soon deleted YouTube video to say that they had been told to prepare to treat an infectious disease called 'Covid-19', but that was not what they were dealing with. Instead he likened the lung condition of the most severely ill patients to what you would expect with cabin depressurisation in a plane at 30,000 feet or someone dropped on the top of Everest without oxygen or acclimatisation. I have never said this is not happening to a small minority of alleged 'Covid' patients – I am saying this is not caused by a phantom 'contagious virus'. Indeed Kyle-Sidell said that 'Covid-19' was not the disease they were told was coming their way. 'We are operating under a medical paradigm that is untrue,' he said, and he believed they were treating the wrong disease: 'These people are being slowly starved of oxygen.' Patients would take off their oxygen masks in a state of fear and stress and while they were blue in the face on the brink of death. They did not look like patients dying of pneumonia. You can see why they don't want autopsies when their virus doesn't exist and there is another condition in some people that they don't wish to be uncovered. I should add here that

the 5G system of millimetre waves was being rapidly introduced around the world in 2020 and even more so now as they fire 5G at the Earth from satellites. At 60 gigahertz within the 5G range that frequency interacts with the oxygen molecule and stops people breathing in sufficient oxygen to be absorbed into the bloodstream. They are installing 5G in schools and hospitals. The world is not mad or anything. 5G can cause major changes to the lungs and blood as I detail in *The Answer* and these consequences are labelled 'Covid-19', the alleged symptoms of which can be caused by 5G and other electromagnetic frequencies as cells respond to radiation poisoning.

### **The 'Covid death' scam**

Dr Scott Jensen, a Minnesota state senator and medical doctor, exposed 'Covid' Medicare payment incentives to hospitals and death certificate manipulation. He said he was sent a seven-page document by the US Department of Health 'coaching' him on how to fill out death certificates which had never happened before. The document said that he didn't need to have a laboratory test for 'Covid-19' to put that on the death certificate and that shocked him when death certificates are supposed to be about facts. Jensen described how doctors had been 'encouraged, if not pressured' to make a diagnosis of 'Covid-19' if they thought it was probable or '*presumed*'. No positive test was necessary – not that this would have mattered anyway. He said doctors were told to diagnose 'Covid' by symptoms when these were the same as colds, allergies, other respiratory problems, and certainly with influenza which 'disappeared' in the 'Covid' era. A common sniffle was enough to get the dreaded verdict. Ontario authorities decreed that a single care home resident with *one* symptom from a long list must lead to the isolation of the entire home. Other courageous doctors like Jensen made the same point about death figure manipulation and how deaths by other causes were falling while 'Covid-19 deaths' were rising at the same rate due to re-diagnosis. Their videos rarely survive long on YouTube with its Cult-supporting algorithms courtesy of CEO Susan Wojcicki and her bosses at Google. Figure-tampering was so glaring

and ubiquitous that even officials were letting it slip or outright saying it. UK chief scientific adviser Patrick Vallance said on one occasion that 'Covid' on the death certificate doesn't mean 'Covid' was the cause of death (so why the hell is it there?) and we had the rare sight of a BBC reporter telling the truth when she said: 'Someone could be successfully treated for Covid, in say April, discharged, and then in June, get run over by a bus and die ... That person would still be counted as a Covid death in England.' Yet the BBC and the rest of the world media went on repeating the case and death figures as if they were real. Illinois Public Health Director Dr Ngozi Ezike revealed the deceit while her bosses must have been clenching their buttocks:

If you were in a hospice and given a few weeks to live and you were then found to have Covid that would be counted as a Covid death. [There might be] a clear alternate cause, but it is still listed as a Covid death. So everyone listed as a Covid death doesn't mean that was the cause of the death, but that they had Covid at the time of death.

Yes, a 'Covid virus' never shown to exist and tested for with a test not testing for the 'virus'. In the first period of the pandemic hoax through the spring of 2020 the process began of designating almost everything a 'Covid' death and this has continued ever since. I sat in a restaurant one night listening to a loud conversation on the next table where a family was discussing in bewilderment how a relative who had no symptoms of 'Covid', and had died of a long-term problem, could have been diagnosed a death by the 'virus'. I could understand their bewilderment. If they read this book they will know why this medical fraud has been perpetrated the world over.

## **Some media truth shock**

The media ignored the evidence of death certificate fraud until eventually one columnist did speak out when she saw it first-hand. Bel Mooney is a long-time national newspaper journalist in Britain currently working for the *Daily Mail*. Her article on February 19th, 2021, carried this headline: 'My dad Ted passed three Covid tests

and died of a chronic illness yet he's officially one of Britain's 120,000 victims of the virus and is far from alone ... so how many more are there?' She told how her 99-year-old father was in a care home with a long-standing chronic obstructive pulmonary disease and vascular dementia. Maybe, but he was still aware enough to tell her from the start that there was no 'virus' and he refused the 'vaccine' for that reason. His death was not unexpected given his chronic health problems and Mooney said she was shocked to find that 'Covid-19' was declared the cause of death on his death certificate. She said this was a 'bizarre and unacceptable untruth' for a man with long-time health problems who had tested negative twice at the home for the 'virus'. I was also shocked by this story although not by what she said. I had been highlighting the death certificate manipulation for ten months. It was the confirmation that a professional full-time journalist only realised this was going on when it affected her directly and neither did she know that whether her dad tested positive or negative was irrelevant with the test not testing for the 'virus'. Where had she been? She said she did not believe in 'conspiracy theories' without knowing I'm sure that this and 'conspiracy theorists' were terms put into widespread circulation by the CIA in the 1960s to discredit those who did not accept the ridiculous official story of the Kennedy assassination. A blanket statement of 'I don't believe in conspiracy theories' is always bizarre. The dictionary definition of the term alone means the world is drowning in conspiracies. What she said was even more daft when her dad had just been affected by the 'Covid' conspiracy. Why else does she think that 'Covid-19' was going on the death certificates of people who died of something else?

To be fair once she saw from personal experience what was happening she didn't mince words. Mooney was called by the care home on the morning of February 9th to be told her father had died in his sleep. When she asked for the official cause of death what came back was 'Covid-19'. Mooney challenged this and was told there had been deaths from Covid on the dementia floor (confirmed by a test not testing for the 'virus') so they considered it 'reasonable

to assume'. 'But doctor,' Mooney rightly protested, 'an assumption isn't a diagnosis.' She said she didn't blame the perfectly decent and sympathetic doctor – 'he was just doing his job'. Sorry, but that's *bullshit*. He wasn't doing his job at all. He was putting a false cause of death on the death certificate and that is a criminal offence for which he should be brought to account and the same with the millions of doctors worldwide who have done the same. They were not doing their job they were following orders and that must not wash at new Nuremberg trials any more than it did at the first ones. Mooney's doctor was 'assuming' (presuming) as he was told to, but 'just following orders' makes no difference to his actions. A doctor's job is to serve the patient and the truth, not follow orders, but that's what they have done all over the world and played a central part in making the 'Covid' hoax possible with all its catastrophic consequences for humanity. Shame on them and they must answer for their actions. Mooney said her disquiet worsened when she registered her father's death by telephone and was told by the registrar there had been very many other cases like hers where 'the deceased' had not tested positive for 'Covid' yet it was recorded as the cause of death. The test may not matter, but those involved at their level *think* it matters and it shows a callous disregard for accurate diagnosis. The pressure to do this is coming from the top of the national 'health' pyramids which in turn obey the World Health Organization which obeys Gates and the Cult. Mooney said the registrar agreed that this must distort the national figures adding that 'the strangest thing is that every winter we record countless deaths from flu, and this winter there have been none. Not one!' She asked if the registrar thought deaths from flu were being misdiagnosed and lumped together with 'Covid' deaths. The answer was a 'puzzled yes'. Mooney said that the funeral director said the same about 'Covid' deaths which had nothing to do with 'Covid'. They had lost count of the number of families upset by this and other funeral companies in different countries have had the same experience. Mooney wrote:

The nightly shroud-waving and shocking close-ups of pain imposed on us by the TV news bewildered and terrified the population into eager compliance with lockdowns. We were invited to 'save the NHS' and to grieve for strangers – the real-life loved ones behind those shocking death counts. Why would the public imagine what I now fear, namely that the way Covid-19 death statistics are compiled might make the numbers seem greater than they are?

Oh, just a little bit – like 100 percent.

## **Do the maths**

Mooney asked why a country would wish to skew its mortality figures by wrongly certifying deaths? What had been going on? Well, if you don't believe in conspiracies you will never find the answer which is that *it's a conspiracy*. She did, however, describe what she had discovered as a 'national scandal'. In reality it's a global scandal and happening everywhere. Pillars of this conspiracy were all put into place before the button was pressed with the Drosten PCR protocol and high amplifications to produce the cases and death certificate changes to secure illusory 'Covid' deaths. Mooney notes that normally two doctors were needed to certify a death, with one having to know the patient, and how the rules were changed in the spring of 2020 to allow one doctor to do this. In the same period 'Covid deaths' were decreed to be all cases where Covid-19 was put on the death certificate even without a positive test or any symptoms. Mooney asked: 'How many of the 30,851 (as of January 15) care home resident deaths with Covid-19 on the certificate (32.4 per cent of all deaths so far) were based on an assumption, like that of my father? And what has that done to our national psyche?' All of them is the answer to the first question and it has devastated and dismantled the national psyche, actually the global psyche, on a colossal scale. In the UK case and death data is compiled by organisations like Public Health England (PHE) and the Office for National Statistics (ONS). Mooney highlights the insane policy of counting a death from any cause as 'Covid-19' if this happens within 28 days of a positive test (with a test not testing for the 'virus') and she points out that ONS statistics reflect deaths 'involving Covid' 'or due to Covid' which meant in practice any

death where 'Covid-19' was mentioned on the death certificate. She described the consequences of this fraud:

Most people will accept the narrative they are fed, so panicky governments here and in Europe witnessed the harsh measures enacted in totalitarian China and jumped into lockdown. Headlines about Covid deaths tolled like the knell that would bring doomsday to us all. Fear stalked our empty streets. Politicians parroted the frankly ridiculous aim of 'zero Covid' and shut down the economy, while most British people agreed that lockdown was essential and (astonishingly to me, as a patriotic Brit) even wanted more restrictions.

For what? Lies on death certificates? Never mind the grim toll of lives ruined, suicides, schools closed, rising inequality, depression, cancelled hospital treatments, cancer patients in a torture of waiting, poverty, economic devastation, loneliness, families kept apart, and so on. How many lives have been lost as a direct result of lockdown?

She said that we could join in a national chorus of shock and horror at reaching the 120,000 death toll which was surely certain to have been totally skewed all along, but what about the human cost of lockdown justified by these 'death figures'? *The British Medical Journal* had reported a 1,493 percent increase in cases of children taken to Great Ormond Street Hospital with abusive head injuries alone and then there was the effect on families:

Perhaps the most shocking thing about all this is that families have been kept apart – and obeyed the most irrational, changing rules at the whim of government – because they believed in the statistics. They succumbed to fear, which his generation rejected in that war fought for freedom. Dad (God rest his soul) would be angry. And so am I.

Another theme to watch is that in the winter months when there are more deaths from all causes they focus on 'Covid' deaths and in the summer when the British Lung Foundation says respiratory disease plummets by 80 percent they rage on about 'cases'. Either way fascism on population is always the answer.

## **Nazi eugenics in the 21st century**

Elderly people in care homes have been isolated from their families month after lonely month with no contact with relatives and grandchildren who were banned from seeing them. We were told

that lockdown fascism was to 'protect the vulnerable' like elderly people. At the same time Do Not Resuscitate (DNR) orders were placed on their medical files so that if they needed resuscitation it wasn't done and 'Covid-19' went on their death certificates. Old people were not being 'protected' they were being culled – murdered in truth. DNR orders were being decreed for disabled and young people with learning difficulties or psychological problems. The UK Care Quality Commission, a non-departmental body of the Department of Health and Social Care, found that 34 percent of those working in health and social care were pressured into placing 'do not attempt cardiopulmonary resuscitation' orders on 'Covid' patients who suffered from disabilities and learning difficulties without involving the patient or their families in the decision. UK judges ruled that an elderly woman with dementia should have the DNA-manipulating 'Covid vaccine' against her son's wishes and that a man with severe learning difficulties should have the jab despite his family's objections. Never mind that many had already died. The judiciary always supports doctors and government in fascist dictatorships. They wouldn't dare do otherwise. A horrific video was posted showing fascist officers from Los Angeles police forcibly giving the 'Covid' shot to women with special needs who were screaming that they didn't want it. The same fascists are seen giving the jab to a sleeping elderly woman in a care home. This is straight out of the Nazi playbook. Hitler's Nazis committed mass murder of the mentally ill and physically disabled throughout Germany and occupied territories in the programme that became known as Aktion T4, or just T4. Sabbatian-controlled Hitler and his grotesque crazies set out to kill those they considered useless and unnecessary. The Reich Committee for the Scientific Registering of Hereditary and Congenital Illnesses registered the births of babies identified by physicians to have 'defects'. By 1941 alone more than 5,000 children were murdered by the state and it is estimated that in total the number of innocent people killed in Aktion T4 was between 275,000 and 300,000. Parents were told their children had been sent away for 'special treatment' never to return. It is rather pathetic to see claims about plans for new extermination camps being dismissed today



when the same force behind current events did precisely that 80 years ago. Margaret Sanger was a Cult operative who used 'birth control' to sanitise her programme of eugenics. Organisations she founded became what is now Planned Parenthood. Sanger proposed that 'the whole dysgenic population would have its choice of segregation or sterilization'. These included epileptics, 'feeble-minded', and prostitutes. Sanger opposed charity because it perpetuated 'human waste'. She reveals the Cult mentality and if anyone thinks that extermination camps are a 'conspiracy theory' their naivety is touching if breathtakingly stupid.

If you don't believe that doctors can act with callous disregard for their patients it is worth considering that doctors and medical staff agreed to put government-decreed DNR orders on medical files and do nothing when resuscitation is called for. I don't know what you call such people in your house. In mine they are Nazis from the Josef Mengele School of Medicine. Phenomenal numbers of old people have died worldwide from the effects of lockdown, depression, lack of treatment, the 'vaccine' (more later) and losing the will to live. A common response at the start of the manufactured pandemic was to remove old people from hospital beds and transfer them to nursing homes. The decision would result in a mass cull of elderly people in those homes through lack of treatment – *not* 'Covid'. Care home whistleblowers have told how once the 'Covid' era began doctors would not come to their homes to treat patients and they were begging for drugs like antibiotics that often never came. The most infamous example was ordered by New York governor Andrew Cuomo, brother of a moronic CNN host, who amazingly was given an Emmy Award for his handling of the 'Covid crisis' by the ridiculous Wokers that hand them out. Just how ridiculous could be seen in February, 2021, when a Department of Justice and FBI investigation began into how thousands of old people in New York died in nursing homes after being discharged from hospital to make way for 'Covid' patients on Cuomo's say-so – and how he and his staff covered up these facts. This couldn't have happened to a nicer psychopath. Even then there was a 'Covid' spin. Reports said that

thousands of old people who tested positive for 'Covid' in hospital were transferred to nursing homes to both die of 'Covid' and transmit it to others. No – they were in hospital because they were ill and the fact that they tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' is irrelevant. They were ill often with respiratory diseases ubiquitous in old people near the end of their lives. Their transfer out of hospital meant that their treatment stopped and many would go on to die.

### **They're old. Who gives a damn?**

I have exposed in the books for decades the Cult plan to cull the world's old people and even to introduce at some point what they call a 'demise pill' which at a certain age everyone would take and be out of here by law. In March, 2021, Spain legalised euthanasia and assisted suicide following the Netherlands, Belgium, Luxembourg and Canada on the Tiptoe to the demise pill. Treatment of old people by many 'care' homes has been a disgrace in the 'Covid' era. There are many, many, caring staff – I know some. There have, however, been legions of stories about callous treatment of old people and their families. Police were called when families came to take their loved ones home in the light of isolation that was killing them. They became prisoners of the state. Care home residents in insane, fascist Ontario, Canada, were not allowed to leave their *room* once the 'Covid' hoax began. UK staff have even wheeled elderly people away from windows where family members were talking with them. Oriana Criscuolo from Stockport in the English North West dropped off some things for her 80-year-old father who has Parkinson's disease and dementia and she wanted to wave to him through a ground-floor window. She was told that was 'illegal'. When she went anyway they closed the curtains in the middle of the day. Oriana said:

It's just unbelievable. I cannot understand how care home staff – people who are being paid to care – have become so uncaring. Their behaviour is inhumane and cruel. It's beyond belief.

She was right and this was not a one-off. What a way to end your life in such loveless circumstances. UK registered nurse Nicky Millen, a proper old school nurse for 40 years, said that when she started her career care was based on dignity, choice, compassion and empathy. Now she said 'the things that are important to me have gone out of the window.' She was appalled that people were dying without their loved ones and saying goodbye on iPads. Nicky described how a distressed 89-year-old lady stroked her face and asked her 'how many paracetamol would it take to finish me off'. Life was no longer worth living while not seeing her family. Nicky said she was humiliated in front of the ward staff and patients for letting the lady stroke her face and giving her a cuddle. Such is the dehumanisation that the 'Covid' hoax has brought to the surface. Nicky worked in care homes where patients told her they were being held prisoner. 'I want to live until I die', one said to her. 'I had a lady in tears because she hadn't seen her great-grandson.' Nicky was compassionate old school meeting psychopathic New Normal. She also said she had worked on a 'Covid' ward with no 'Covid' patients. Jewish writer Shai Held wrote an article in March, 2020, which was headlined 'The Staggering, Heartless Cruelty Toward the Elderly'. What he described was happening from the earliest days of lockdown. He said 'the elderly' were considered a group and not unique individuals (the way of the Woke). Shai Held said:

Notice how the all-too-familiar rhetoric of dehumanization works: 'The elderly' are bunched together as a faceless mass, all of them considered culprits and thus effectively deserving of the suffering the pandemic will inflict upon them. Lost entirely is the fact that the elderly are individual human beings, each with a distinctive face and voice, each with hopes and dreams, memories and regrets, friendships and marriages, loves lost and loves sustained.

'The elderly' have become another dehumanised group for which anything goes and for many that has resulted in cold disregard for their rights and their life. The distinctive face that Held talks about is designed to be deleted by masks until everyone is part of a faceless mass.

## **'War-zone' hospitals myth**

Again and again medical professionals have told me what was really going on and how hospitals 'overrun like war zones' according to the media were virtually empty. The mantra from medical whistleblowers was please don't use my name or my career is over. Citizen journalists around the world sneaked into hospitals to film evidence exposing the 'war-zone' lie. They really *were* largely empty with closed wards and operating theatres. I met a hospital worker in my town on the Isle of Wight during the first lockdown in 2020 who said the only island hospital had never been so quiet. Lockdown was justified by the psychopaths to stop hospitals being overrun. At the same time that the island hospital was near-empty the military arrived here to provide *extra beds*. It was all propaganda to ramp up the fear to ensure compliance with fascism as were never-used temporary hospitals with thousands of beds known as Nightingales and never-used make-shift mortuaries opened by the criminal UK government. A man who helped to install those extra island beds attributed to the army said they were never used and the hospital was empty. Doctors and nurses 'stood around talking or on their phones, wandering down to us to see what we were doing'. There were no masks or social distancing. He accused the useless local island paper, the *County Press*, of 'pumping the fear as if our hospital was overrun and we only have one so it should have been'. He described ambulances parked up with crews outside in deck chairs. When his brother called an ambulance he was told there was a two-hour backlog which he called 'bullshit'. An old lady on the island fell 'and was in a bad way', but a caller who rang for an ambulance was told the situation wasn't urgent enough. Ambulance stations were working under capacity while people would hear ambulances with sirens blaring driving through the streets. When those living near the stations realised what was going on they would follow them as they left, circulated around an urban area with the sirens going, and then came back without stopping. All this was to increase levels of fear and the same goes for the 'ventilator shortage crisis' that cost tens of millions for hastily produced ventilators never to be used.

Ambulance crews that agreed to be exploited in this way for fear propaganda might find themselves a mirror. I wish them well with that. Empty hospitals were the obvious consequence of treatment and diagnoses of non-'Covid' conditions cancelled and those involved handed a death sentence. People have been dying at home from undiagnosed and untreated cancer, heart disease and other life-threatening conditions to allow empty hospitals to deal with a 'pandemic' that wasn't happening.

## **Death of the innocent**

'War-zones' have been laying off nursing staff, even doctors where they can. There was no work for them. Lockdown was justified by saving lives and protecting the vulnerable they were actually killing with DNR orders and preventing empty hospitals being 'overrun'. In Britain the mantra of stay at home to 'save the NHS' was everywhere and across the world the same story was being sold when it was all lies. Two California doctors, Dan Erickson and Artin Massihi at Accelerated Urgent Care in Bakersfield, held a news conference in April, 2020, to say that intensive care units in California were 'empty, essentially', with hospitals shutting floors, not treating patients and laying off doctors. The California health system was working at minimum capacity 'getting rid of doctors because we just don't have the volume'. They said that people with conditions such as heart disease and cancer were not coming to hospital out of fear of 'Covid-19'. Their video was deleted by Susan Wojcicki's Cult-owned YouTube after reaching five million views. Florida governor Ron Desantis, who rejected the severe lockdowns of other states and is being targeted for doing so, said that in March, 2020, every US governor was given models claiming they would run out of hospital beds in days. That was never going to happen and the 'modellers' knew it. Deceit can be found at every level of the system. Urgent children's operations were cancelled including fracture repairs and biopsies to spot cancer. Eric Nicholls, a consultant paediatrician, said 'this is obviously concerning and we need to return to normal operating and to increase capacity as soon as possible'. Psychopaths

in power were rather less concerned *because* they are psychopaths. Deletion of urgent care and diagnosis has been happening all over the world and how many kids and others have died as a result of the actions of these cold and heartless lunatics dictating 'health' policy? The number must be stratospheric. Richard Sullivan, professor of cancer and global health at King's College London, said people feared 'Covid' more than cancer such was the campaign of fear. 'Years of lost life will be quite dramatic', Sullivan said, with 'a huge amount of avoidable mortality'. Sarah Woolnough, executive director for policy at Cancer Research UK, said there had been a 75 percent drop in urgent referrals to hospitals by family doctors of people with suspected cancer. Sullivan said that 'a lot of services have had to scale back – we've seen a dramatic decrease in the amount of elective cancer surgery'. Lockdown deaths worldwide has been absolutely fantastic with the *New York Post* reporting how data confirmed that 'lockdowns end more lives than they save':

There was a sharp decline in visits to emergency rooms and an increase in fatal heart attacks because patients didn't receive prompt treatment. Many fewer people were screened for cancer. Social isolation contributed to excess deaths from dementia and Alzheimer's.

Researchers predicted that the social and economic upheaval would lead to tens of thousands of "deaths of despair" from drug overdoses, alcoholism and suicide. As unemployment surged and mental-health and substance-abuse treatment programs were interrupted, the reported levels of anxiety, depression and suicidal thoughts increased dramatically, as did alcohol sales and fatal drug overdoses.

This has been happening while nurses and other staff had so much time on their hands in the 'war-zones' that Tic-Tok dancing videos began appearing across the Internet with medical staff dancing around in empty wards and corridors as people died at home from causes that would normally have been treated in hospital.

## **Mentions in dispatches**

One brave and truth-committed whistleblower was Louise Hampton, a call handler with the UK NHS who made a viral Internet video saying she had done 'fuck all' during the 'pandemic'

which was 'a load of bollocks'. She said that 'Covid-19' was rebranded flu and of course she lost her job. This is what happens in the medical and endless other professions now when you tell the truth. Louise filmed inside 'war-zone' accident and emergency departments to show they were empty and I mean *empty* as in no one there. The mainstream media could have done the same and blown the gaff on the whole conspiracy. They haven't to their eternal shame. Not that most 'journalists' seem capable of manifesting shame as with the psychopaths they slavishly repeat without question. The relative few who were admitted with serious health problems were left to die alone with no loved ones allowed to see them because of 'Covid' rules and they included kids dying without the comfort of mum and dad at their bedside while the evil behind this couldn't give a damn. It was all good fun to them. A Scottish NHS staff nurse publicly quit in the spring of 2021 saying: 'I can no longer be part of the lies and the corruption by the government.' She said hospitals 'aren't full, the beds aren't full, beds have been shut, wards have been shut'. Hospitals were never busy throughout 'Covid'. The staff nurse said that Nicola Sturgeon, tragically the leader of the Scottish government, was on television saying save the hospitals and the NHS – 'but the beds are empty' and 'we've not seen flu, we always see flu every year'. She wrote to government and spoke with her union Unison (the unions are Cult-compromised and *useless*, but nothing changed. Many of her colleagues were scared of losing their jobs if they spoke out as they wanted to. She said nursing staff were being affected by wearing masks all day and 'my head is splitting every shift from wearing a mask'. The NHS is part of the fascist tyranny and must be dismantled so we can start again with human beings in charge. (Ironically, hospitals were reported to be busier again when official 'Covid' cases *fell* in spring/summer of 2021 and many other conditions required treatment at the same time as *the fake vaccine rollout*.)

I will cover the 'Covid vaccine' scam in detail later, but it is another indicator of the sickening disregard for human life that I am highlighting here. The DNA-manipulating concoctions do not fulfil

the definition of a 'vaccine', have never been used on humans before and were given only emergency approval because trials were not completed and they continued using the unknowing public. The result was what a NHS senior nurse with responsibility for 'vaccine' procedure said was 'genocide'. She said the 'vaccines' were not 'vaccines'. They had not been shown to be safe and claims about their effectiveness by drug companies were 'poetic licence'. She described what was happening as a 'horrid act of human annihilation'. The nurse said that management had instigated a policy of not providing a Patient Information Leaflet (PIL) before people were 'vaccinated' even though health care professionals are supposed to do this according to protocol. Patients should also be told that they are taking part in an ongoing clinical trial. Her challenges to what is happening had seen her excluded from meetings and ridiculed in others. She said she was told to 'watch my step ... or I would find myself surplus to requirements'. The nurse, who spoke anonymously in fear of her career, said she asked her NHS manager why he/she was content with taking part in genocide against those having the 'vaccines'. The reply was that everyone had to play their part and to 'put up, shut up, and get it done'. Government was 'leaning heavily' on NHS management which was clearly leaning heavily on staff. This is how the global 'medical' hierarchy operates and it starts with the Cult and its World Health Organization.

She told the story of a doctor who had the Pfizer jab and when questioned had no idea what was in it. The doctor had never read the literature. We have to stop treating doctors as intellectual giants when so many are moral and medical pygmies. The doctor did not even know that the 'vaccines' were not fully approved or that their trials were ongoing. They were, however, asking their patients if they minded taking part in follow-ups for research purposes – yes, the *ongoing clinical trial*. The nurse said the doctor's ignorance was not rare and she had spoken to a hospital consultant who had the jab without any idea of the background or that the 'trials' had not been completed. Nurses and pharmacists had shown the same ignorance.



‘My NHS colleagues have forsaken their duty of care, broken their code of conduct – Hippocratic Oath – and have been brainwashed just the same as the majority of the UK public through propaganda ...’ She said she had not been able to recruit a single NHS colleague, doctor, nurse or pharmacist to stand with her and speak out. Her union had refused to help. She said that if the genocide came to light she would not hesitate to give evidence at a Nuremberg-type trial against those in power who could have affected the outcomes but didn’t.

## **And all for what?**

To put the nonsense into perspective let’s say the ‘virus’ does exist and let’s go completely crazy and accept that the official manipulated figures for cases and deaths are accurate. *Even then* a study by Stanford University epidemiologist Dr John Ioannidis published on the World Health Organization website produced an average infection to fatality rate of ... *0.23 percent!* Ioannidis said: ‘If one could sample equally from all locations globally, the median infection fatality rate might even be substantially lower than the 0.23% observed in my analysis.’ For healthy people under 70 it was ... *0.05 percent!* This compares with the 3.4 percent claimed by the Cult-owned World Health Organization when the hoax was first played and maximum fear needed to be generated. An updated Stanford study in April, 2021, put the ‘infection’ to ‘fatality’ rate at just 0.15 percent. Another team of scientists led by Megan O’Driscoll and Henrik Salje studied data from 45 countries and published their findings on the Nature website. For children and young people the figure is so small it virtually does not register although authorities will be hyping dangers to the young when they introduce DNA-manipulating ‘vaccines’ for children. The O’Driscoll study produced an average infection-fatality figure of 0.003 for children from birth to four; 0.001 for 5 to 14; 0.003 for 15 to 19; and it was still only 0.456 up to 64. To claim that children must be ‘vaccinated’ to protect them from ‘Covid’ is an obvious lie and so there must be another reason and there is. What’s more the average age of a ‘Covid’ death is akin

to the average age that people die in general. The average age of death in England is about 80 for men and 83 for women. The average age of death from alleged 'Covid' is between 82 and 83. California doctors, Dan Erickson and Artin Massihi, said at their April media conference that projection models of millions of deaths had been 'woefully inaccurate'. They produced detailed figures showing that Californians had a 0.03 chance of dying from 'Covid' based on the number of people who tested positive (with a test not testing for the 'virus'). Erickson said there was a 0.1 percent chance of dying from 'Covid' in the *state* of New York, not just the city, and a 0.05 percent chance in Spain, a centre of 'Covid-19' hysteria at one stage. The Stanford studies supported the doctors' data with fatality rate estimates of 0.23 and 0.15 percent. How close are these figures to my estimate of *zero*? Death-rate figures claimed by the World Health Organization at the start of the hoax were some 15 times higher. The California doctors said there was no justification for lockdowns and the economic devastation they caused. Everything they had ever learned about quarantine was that you quarantine the *sick* and not the healthy. They had never seen this before and it made no medical sense.

Why in the in the light of all this would governments and medical systems the world over say that billions must go under house arrest; lose their livelihood; in many cases lose their mind, their health and their life; force people to wear masks dangerous to health and psychology; make human interaction and even family interaction a criminal offence; ban travel; close restaurants, bars, watching live sport, concerts, theatre, and any activity involving human togetherness and discourse; and closing schools to isolate children from their friends and cause many to commit suicide in acts of hopelessness and despair? The California doctors said lockdown consequences included increased child abuse, partner abuse, alcoholism, depression, and other impacts they were seeing every day. Who would do that to the entire human race if not mentally-ill psychopaths of almost unimaginable extremes like Bill Gates? We must face the reality of what we are dealing with and come out of

denial. Fascism and tyranny are made possible only by the target population submitting and acquiescing to fascism and tyranny. The whole of human history shows that to be true. Most people naively and unquestioning believed what they were told about a 'deadly virus' and meekly and weakly submitted to house arrest. Those who didn't believe it – at least in total – still submitted in fear of the consequences of not doing so. For the rest who wouldn't submit draconian fines have been imposed, brutal policing by psychopaths *for* psychopaths, and condemnation from the meek and weak who condemn the Pushbackers on behalf of the very force that has them, too, in its gunights. 'Pathetic' does not even begin to suffice. Britain's brainless 'Health' Secretary Matt Hancock warned anyone lying to border officials about returning from a list of 'hotspot' countries could face a jail sentence of up to ten years which is more than for racially-aggravated assault, incest and attempting to have sex with a child under 13. Hancock is a lunatic, but he has the state apparatus behind him in a Cult-led chain reaction and the same with UK 'Vaccine Minister' Nadhim Zahawi, a prominent member of the mega-Cult secret society, Le Cercle, which featured in my earlier books. The Cult enforces its will on governments and medical systems; government and medical systems enforce their will on business and police; business enforces its will on staff who enforce it on customers; police enforce the will of the Cult on the population and play their essential part in creating a world of fascist control that their own children and grandchildren will have to live in their entire lives. It is a hierarchical pyramid of imposition and acquiescence and, yes indeed, of clinical insanity.

Does anyone bright enough to read this book have to ask what the answer is? I think not, but I will reveal it anyway in the fewest of syllables: Tell the psychos and their moronic lackeys to fuck off and let's get on with our lives. We are many – They are few.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

### **War on your mind**

*One believes things because one has been conditioned to believe them*

*Aldous Huxley, Brave New World*

I have described the 'Covid' hoax as a 'Psyop' and that is true in every sense and on every level in accordance with the definition of that term which is psychological warfare. Break down the 'Covid pandemic' to the foundation themes and it is psychological warfare on the human individual and collective mind.

The same can be said for the entire human belief system involving every subject you can imagine. Huxley was right in his contention that people believe what they are conditioned to believe and this comes from the repetition throughout their lives of the same falsehoods. They spew from government, corporations, media and endless streams of 'experts' telling you what the Cult wants you to believe and often believing it themselves (although *far* from always). 'Experts' are rewarded with 'prestigious' jobs and titles and as agents of perceptual programming with regular access to the media. The Cult has to control the narrative – control *information* – or they lose control of the vital, crucial, without-which-they-cannot-prevail public perception of reality. The foundation of that control today is the Internet made possible by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), the incredibly sinister technological arm of the Pentagon. The Internet is the result of military technology.

DARPA openly brags about establishing the Internet which has been a long-term project to lasso the minds of the global population. I have said for decades the plan is to control information to such an extreme that eventually no one would see or hear anything that the Cult does not approve. We are closing in on that end with ferocious censorship since the 'Covid' hoax began and in my case it started back in the 1990s in terms of books and speaking venues. I had to create my own publishing company in 1995 precisely because no one else would publish my books even then. I think they're all still running.

## **Cult Internet**

To secure total control of information they needed the Internet in which pre-programmed algorithms can seek out 'unclean' content for deletion and even stop it being posted in the first place. The Cult had to dismantle print and non-Internet broadcast media to ensure the transfer of information to the appropriate-named 'Web' – a critical expression of the *Cult* web. We've seen the ever-quicken demise of traditional media and control of what is left by a tiny number of corporations operating worldwide. Independent journalism in the mainstream is already dead and never was that more obvious than since the turn of 2020. The Cult wants all information communicated via the Internet to globally censor and allow the plug to be pulled any time. Lockdowns and forced isolation has meant that communication between people has been through electronic means and no longer through face-to-face discourse and discussion. Cult psychopaths have targeted the bars, restaurants, sport, venues and meeting places in general for this reason. None of this is by chance and it's to stop people gathering in any kind of privacy or number while being able to track and monitor all Internet communications and block them as necessary. Even private messages between individuals have been censored by these fascists that control Cult fronts like Facebook, Twitter, Google and YouTube which are all officially run by Sabbatian place-people and from the background by higher-level Sabbatian place people.

Facebook, Google, Amazon and their like were seed-funded and supported into existence with money-no-object infusions of funds either directly or indirectly from DARPA and CIA technology arm In-Q-Tel. The Cult plays the long game and prepares very carefully for big plays like 'Covid'. Amazon is another front in the psychological war and pretty much controls the global market in book sales and increasingly publishing. Amazon's limitless funds have deleted fantastic numbers of independent publishers to seize global domination on the way to deciding which books can be sold and circulated and which cannot. Moves in that direction are already happening. Amazon's leading light Jeff Bezos is the grandson of Lawrence Preston Gise who worked with DARPA predecessor ARPA. Amazon has big connections to the CIA and the Pentagon. The plan I have long described went like this:

1. Employ military technology to establish the Internet.
2. Sell the Internet as a place where people can freely communicate without censorship and allow that to happen until the Net becomes the central and irreversible pillar of human society. If the Internet had been highly censored from the start many would have rejected it.
3. Fund and manipulate major corporations into being to control the circulation of information on your Internet using cover stories about geeks in garages to explain how they came about. Give them unlimited funds to expand rapidly with no need to make a profit for years while non-Cult companies who need to balance the books cannot compete. You know that in these circumstances your Googles, YouTubes, Facebooks and Amazons are going to secure near monopolies by either crushing or buying up the opposition.
4. Allow freedom of expression on both the Internet and communication platforms to draw people in until the Internet is the central and irreversible pillar of human society and your communication corporations have reached a stage of near monopoly domination.
5. Then unleash your always-planned frenzy of censorship on the basis of 'where else are you going to go?' and continue to expand that until nothing remains that the Cult does not want its human targets to see.

The process was timed to hit the 'Covid' hoax to ensure the best chance possible of controlling the narrative which they knew they had to do at all costs. They were, after all, about to unleash a 'deadly virus' that didn't really exist. If you do that in an environment of free-flowing information and opinion you would be dead in the

water before you could say Gates is a psychopath. The network was in place through which the Cult-created-and-owned World Health Organization could dictate the 'Covid' narrative and response policy slavishly supported by Cult-owned Internet communication giants and mainstream media while those telling a different story were censored. Google, YouTube, Facebook and Twitter openly announced that they would do this. What else would we expect from Cult-owned operations like Facebook which former executives have confirmed set out to make the platform more addictive than cigarettes and coldly manipulates emotions of its users to sow division between people and groups and scramble the minds of the young? If Zuckerberg lives out the rest of his life without going to jail for crimes against humanity, and most emphatically against the young, it will be a travesty of justice. Still, no matter, cause and effect will catch up with him eventually and the same with Sergey Brin and Larry Page at Google with its CEO Sundar Pichai who fix the Google search results to promote Cult narratives and hide the opposition. Put the same key words into Google and other search engines like DuckDuckGo and you will see how different results can be. Wikipedia is another intensely biased 'encyclopaedia' which skews its content to the Cult agenda. YouTube links to Wikipedia's version of 'Covid' and 'climate change' on video pages in which experts in their field offer a different opinion (even that is increasingly rare with Wojcicki censorship). Into this 'Covid' silence-them network must be added government media censors, sorry 'regulators', such as Ofcom in the UK which imposed tyrannical restrictions on British broadcasters that had the effect of banning me from ever appearing. Just to debate with me about my evidence and views on 'Covid' would mean breaking the fascistic impositions of Ofcom and its CEO career government bureaucrat Melanie Dawes. Gutless British broadcasters tremble at the very thought of fascist Ofcom.

## **Psychos behind 'Covid'**

The reason for the 'Covid' catastrophe in all its facets and forms can be seen by whom and what is driving the policies worldwide in such a coordinated way. Decisions are not being made to protect health, but to target psychology. The dominant group guiding and 'advising' government policy are not medical professionals. They are psychologists and behavioural scientists. Every major country has its own version of this phenomenon and I'll use the British example to show how it works. In many ways the British version has been affecting the wider world in the form of the huge behaviour manipulation network in the UK which operates in other countries. The network involves private companies, government, intelligence and military. The Cabinet Office is at the centre of the government 'Covid' Psyop and part-owns, with 'innovation charity' Nesta, the Behavioural Insights Team (BIT) which claims to be independent of government but patently isn't. The BIT was established in 2010 and its job is to manipulate the psyche of the population to acquiesce to government demands and so much more. It is also known as the 'Nudge Unit', a name inspired by the 2009 book by two ultra-Zionists, Cass Sunstein and Richard Thaler, called *Nudge: Improving Decisions About Health, Wealth, and Happiness*. The book, as with the Behavioural Insights Team, seeks to 'nudge' behaviour (manipulate it) to make the public follow patterns of action and perception that suit those in authority (the Cult). Sunstein is so skilled at this that he advises the World Health Organization and the UK Behavioural Insights Team and was Administrator of the White House Office of Information and Regulatory Affairs in the Obama administration. Biden appointed him to the Department of Homeland Security – another ultra-Zionist in the fold to oversee new immigration laws which is another policy the Cult wants to control. Sunstein is desperate to silence anyone exposing conspiracies and co-authored a 2008 report on the subject in which suggestions were offered to ban 'conspiracy theorizing' or impose 'some kind of tax, financial or otherwise, on those who disseminate such theories'. I guess a psychiatrist's chair is out of the question?



Sunstein's mate Richard Thaler, an 'academic affiliate' of the UK Behavioural Insights Team, is a proponent of 'behavioural economics' which is defined as the study of 'the effects of psychological, cognitive, emotional, cultural and social factors on the decisions of individuals and institutions'. Study the effects so they can be manipulated to be what you want them to be. Other leading names in the development of behavioural economics are ultra-Zionists Daniel Kahneman and Robert J. Shiller and they, with Thaler, won the Nobel Memorial Prize in Economic Sciences for their work in this field. The Behavioural Insights Team is operating at the heart of the UK government and has expanded globally through partnerships with several universities including Harvard, Oxford, Cambridge, University College London (UCL) and Pennsylvania. They claim to have 'trained' (reframed) 20,000 civil servants and run more than 750 projects involving 400 randomised controlled trials in dozens of countries' as another version of mind reframers Common Purpose. BIT works from its office in New York with cities and their agencies, as well as other partners, across the United States and Canada – this is a company part-owned by the British government Cabinet Office. An executive order by President Cult-servant Obama established a US Social and Behavioral Sciences Team in 2015. They all have the same reason for being and that's to brainwash the population directly and by brainwashing those in positions of authority.

### **'Covid' mind game**

Another prime aspect of the UK mind-control network is the 'independent' [joke] Scientific Pandemic Insights Group on Behaviours (SPI-B) which 'provides behavioural science advice aimed at anticipating and helping people adhere to interventions that are recommended by medical or epidemiological experts'. That means manipulating public perception and behaviour to do whatever government tells them to do. It's disgusting and if they really want the public to be 'safe' this lot should all be under lock and key. According to the government website SPI-B consists of

'behavioural scientists, health and social psychologists, anthropologists and historians' and advises the Whitty-Vallance-led Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE) which in turn advises the government on 'the science' (it doesn't) and 'Covid' policy. When politicians say they are being guided by 'the science' this is the rabble in each country they are talking about and that 'science' is dominated by behaviour manipulators to enforce government fascism through public compliance. The Behaviour Insight Team is headed by psychologist David Solomon Halpern, a visiting professor at King's College London, and connects with a national and global web of other civilian and military organisations as the Cult moves towards its goal of fusing them into one fascistic whole in every country through its 'Fusion Doctrine'. The behaviour manipulation network involves, but is not confined to, the Foreign Office; National Security Council; government communications headquarters (GCHQ); MI5; MI6; the Cabinet Office-based Media Monitoring Unit; and the Rapid Response Unit which 'monitors digital trends to spot emerging issues; including misinformation and disinformation; and identifies the best way to respond'.

There is also the 77th Brigade of the UK military which operates like the notorious Israeli military's Unit 8200 in manipulating information and discussion on the Internet by posing as members of the public to promote the narrative and discredit those who challenge it. Here we have the military seeking to manipulate *domestic* public opinion while the Nazis in government are fine with that. Conservative Member of Parliament Tobias Ellwood, an advocate of lockdown and control through 'vaccine passports', is a Lieutenant Colonel reservist in the 77th Brigade which connects with the military operation jHub, the 'innovation centre' for the Ministry of Defence and Strategic Command. jHub has also been involved with the civilian National Health Service (NHS) in 'symptom tracing' the population. The NHS is a key part of this mind control network and produced a document in December, 2020, explaining to staff how to use psychological manipulation with different groups and ages to get them to have the DNA-manipulating 'Covid vaccine'

that's designed to cumulatively rewrite human genetics. The document, called 'Optimising Vaccination Roll Out – Do's and Dont's for all messaging, documents and "communications" in the widest sense', was published by NHS England and the NHS Improvement *Behaviour Change Unit* in partnership with Public Health England and Warwick Business School. I hear the mantra about 'save the NHS' and 'protect the NHS' when we need to scrap the NHS and start again. The current version is far too corrupt, far too anti-human and totally compromised by Cult operatives and their assets. UK government broadcast media censor Ofcom will connect into this web – as will the BBC with its tremendous Ofcom influence – to control what the public see and hear and dictate mass perception. Nuremberg trials must include personnel from all these organisations.

## **The fear factor**

The 'Covid' hoax has led to the creation of the UK Cabinet Office-connected Joint Biosecurity Centre (JBC) which is officially described as providing 'expert advice on pandemics' using its independent [all Cult operations are 'independent'] analytical function to provide real-time analysis about infection outbreaks to identify and respond to outbreaks of Covid-19'. Another role is to advise the government on a response to spikes in infections – 'for example by closing schools or workplaces in local areas where infection levels have risen'. Put another way, promoting the Cult agenda. The Joint Biosecurity Centre is modelled on the Joint Terrorism Analysis Centre which analyses intelligence to set 'terrorism threat levels' and here again you see the fusion of civilian and military operations and intelligence that has led to military intelligence producing documents about 'vaccine hesitancy' and how it can be combated. Domestic civilian matters and opinions should not be the business of the military. The Joint Biosecurity Centre is headed by Tom Hurd, director general of the Office for Security and Counter-Terrorism from the establishment-to-its-fingertips Hurd family. His father is former Foreign Secretary Douglas Hurd. How coincidental that Tom

Hurd went to the elite Eton College and Oxford University with Boris Johnson. Imperial College with its ridiculous computer modeller Neil Ferguson will connect with this gigantic web that will itself interconnect with similar set-ups in other major and not so major countries. Compared with this Cult network the politicians, be they Boris Johnson, Donald Trump or Joe Biden, are bit-part players 'following the science'. The network of psychologists was on the 'Covid' case from the start with the aim of generating maximum fear of the 'virus' to ensure compliance by the population. A government behavioural science group known as SPI-B produced a paper in March, 2020, for discussion by the main government science advisory group known as SAGE. It was headed 'Options for increasing adherence to social distancing measures' and it said the following in a section headed 'Persuasion':

- A substantial number of people still do not feel sufficiently personally threatened; it could be that they are reassured by the low death rate in their demographic group, although levels of concern may be rising. Having a good understanding of the risk has been found to be positively associated with adoption of COVID-19 social distancing measures in Hong Kong.
- The perceived level of personal threat needs to be increased among those who are complacent, using hard-hitting evaluation of options for increasing social distancing emotional messaging. To be effective this must also empower people by making clear the actions they can take to reduce the threat.
- Responsibility to others: There seems to be insufficient understanding of, or feelings of responsibility about, people's role in transmitting the infection to others ... Messaging about actions need to be framed positively in terms of protecting oneself and the community, and increase confidence that they will be effective.
- Some people will be more persuaded by appeals to play by the rules, some by duty to the community, and some to personal risk.

All these different approaches are needed. The messaging also needs to take account of the realities of different people's lives. Messaging needs to take account of the different motivational levers and circumstances of different people.

All this could be achieved the SPI-B psychologists said by *using the media to increase the sense of personal threat* which translates as terrify the shit out of the population, including children, so they all do what we want. That's not happened has it? Those excuses for 'journalists' who wouldn't know journalism if it bit them on the arse (the great majority) have played their crucial part in serving this Cult-government Psyop to enslave their own kids and grandkids. How they live with themselves I have no idea. The psychological war has been underpinned by constant government 'Covid' propaganda in almost every television and radio ad break, plus the Internet and print media, which has pounded out the fear with taxpayers footing the bill for their own programming. The result has been people terrified of a 'virus' that doesn't exist or one with a tiny fatality rate even if you believe it does. People walk down the street and around the shops wearing face-nappies damaging their health and psychology while others report those who refuse to be that naïve to the police who turn up in their own face-nappies. I had a cameraman come to my flat and he was so frightened of 'Covid' he came in wearing a mask and refused to shake my hand in case he caught something. He had – naïveitis – and the thought that he worked in the mainstream media was both depressing and made his behaviour perfectly explainable. The fear which has gripped the minds of so many and frozen them into compliance has been carefully cultivated by these psychologists who are really psychopaths. If lives get destroyed and a lot of young people commit suicide it shows our plan is working. SPI-B then turned to compulsion on the public to comply. 'With adequate preparation, rapid change can be achieved', it said. Some countries had introduced mandatory self-isolation on a wide scale without evidence of major public unrest and a large majority of the UK's population appeared to be supportive of more coercive measures with 64 percent of adults saying they would

support putting London under a lockdown (watch the 'polls' which are designed to make people believe that public opinion is in favour or against whatever the subject in hand).

For 'aggressive protective measures' to be effective, the SPI-B paper said, special attention should be devoted to those population groups that are more at risk. Translated from the Orwellian this means making the rest of population feel guilty for not protecting the 'vulnerable' such as old people which the Cult and its agencies were about to kill on an industrial scale with lockdown, lack of treatment and the Gates 'vaccine'. Psychopath psychologists sold their guilt-trip so comprehensively that Los Angeles County Supervisor Hilda Solis reported that children were apologising (from a distance) to their parents and grandparents for bringing 'Covid' into their homes and getting them sick. '... These apologies are just some of the last words that loved ones will ever hear as they die alone,' she said. Gut-wrenchingly Solis then used this childhood tragedy to tell children to stay at home and 'keep your loved ones alive'. Imagine heaping such potentially life-long guilt on a kid when it has absolutely nothing to do with them. These people are deeply disturbed and the psychologists behind this even more so.

## **Uncivil war – divide and rule**

Professional mind-controllers at SPI-B wanted the media to increase a sense of responsibility to others (do as you're told) and promote 'positive messaging' for those actions while in contrast to invoke 'social disapproval' by the unquestioning, obedient, community of anyone with a mind of their own. Again the compliant Goebbels-like media obliged. This is an old, old, trick employed by tyrannies the world over throughout human history. You get the target population to keep the target population in line – *your* line. SPI-B said this could 'play an important role in preventing anti-social behaviour or discouraging failure to enact pro-social behaviour'. For 'anti-social' in the Orwellian parlance of SPI-B see any behaviour that government doesn't approve. SPI-B recommendations said that 'social disapproval' should be accompanied by clear messaging and

promotion of strong collective identity – hence the government and celebrity mantra of ‘we’re all in this together’. Sure we are. The mind doctors have such contempt for their targets that they think some clueless comedian, actor or singer telling them to do what the government wants will be enough to win them over. We have had UK comedian Lenny Henry, actor Michael Caine and singer Elton John wheeled out to serve the propagandists by urging people to have the DNA-manipulating ‘Covid’ non-‘vaccine’. The role of Henry and fellow black celebrities in seeking to coax a ‘vaccine’ reluctant black community into doing the government’s will was especially stomach-turning. An emotion-manipulating script and carefully edited video featuring these black ‘celebs’ was such an insult to the intelligence of black people and where’s the self-respect of those involved selling their souls to a fascist government agenda? Henry said he heard black people’s ‘legitimate worries and concerns’, but people must ‘trust the facts’ when they were doing exactly that by not having the ‘vaccine’. They had to include the obligatory reference to Black Lives Matter with the line ... ‘Don’t let coronavirus cost even more black lives – because we matter’. My god, it was pathetic. ‘I know the vaccine is safe and what it does.’ How? ‘I’m a comedian and it says so in my script.’

SPI-B said social disapproval needed to be carefully managed to avoid victimisation, scapegoating and misdirected criticism, but they knew that their ‘recommendations’ would lead to exactly that and the media were specifically used to stir-up the divide-and-conquer hostility. Those who conform like good little baa, baas, are praised while those who have seen through the tidal wave of lies are ‘Covidiot’. The awake have been abused by the fast asleep for not conforming to fascism and impositions that the awake know are designed to endanger their health, dehumanise them, and tear asunder the very fabric of human society. We have had the curtain-twitchers and morons reporting neighbours and others to the face-napped police for breaking ‘Covid rules’ with fascist police delighting in posting links and phone numbers where this could be done. The Cult cannot impose its will without a compliant police

and military or a compliant population willing to play their part in enslaving themselves and their kids. The words of a pastor in Nazi Germany are so appropriate today:

First they came for the socialists and I did not speak out because I was not a socialist.

Then they came for the trade unionists and I did not speak out because I was not a trade unionist.

Then they came for the Jews and I did not speak out because I was not a Jew.

Then they came for me and there was no one left to speak for me.

Those who don't learn from history are destined to repeat it and so many are.

### **'Covid' rules: Rewiring the mind**

With the background laid out to this gigantic national and global web of psychological manipulation we can put 'Covid' rules into a clear and sinister perspective. Forget the claims about protecting health. 'Covid' rules are about dismantling the human mind, breaking the human spirit, destroying self-respect, and then putting Humpty Dumpty together again as a servile, submissive slave. Social isolation through lockdown and distancing have devastating effects on the human psyche as the psychological psychopaths well know and that's the real reason for them. Humans need contact with each other, discourse, closeness and touch, or they eventually, and literally, go crazy. Masks, which I will address at some length, fundamentally add to the effects of isolation and the Cult agenda to dehumanise and de-individualise the population. To do this while knowing – in fact *seeking* – this outcome is the very epitome of evil and psychologists involved in this *are* the epitome of evil. They must like all the rest of the Cult demons and their assets stand trial for crimes against humanity on a scale that defies the imagination. Psychopaths in uniform use isolation to break enemy troops and agents and make them subservient and submissive to tell what they know. The technique is rightly considered a form of torture and



torture is most certainly what has been imposed on the human population.

Clinically-insane American psychologist Harry Harlow became famous for his isolation experiments in the 1950s in which he separated baby monkeys from their mothers and imprisoned them for months on end in a metal container or 'pit of despair'. They soon began to show mental distress and depression as any idiot could have predicted. Harlow put other monkeys in steel chambers for three, six or twelve months while denying them any contact with animals or humans. He said that the effects of total social isolation for six months were 'so devastating and debilitating that we had assumed initially that twelve months of isolation would not produce any additional decrement'; but twelve months of isolation 'almost obliterated the animals socially'. This is what the Cult and its psychopaths are doing to you and your children. Even monkeys in partial isolation in which they were not allowed to form relationships with other monkeys became 'aggressive and hostile, not only to others, but also towards their own bodies'. We have seen this in the young as a consequence of lockdown. UK government psychopaths launched a public relations campaign telling people not to hug each other even after they received the 'Covid-19 vaccine' which we were told with more lies would allow a return to 'normal life'. A government source told *The Telegraph*: 'It will be along the lines that it is great that you have been vaccinated, but if you are going to visit your family and hug your grandchildren there is a chance you are going to infect people you love.' The source was apparently speaking from a secure psychiatric facility. Janet Lord, director of Birmingham University's Institute of Inflammation and Ageing, said that parents and grandparents should avoid hugging their children. Well, how can I put it, Ms Lord? Fuck off. Yep, that'll do.

### **Destroying the kids – where are the parents?**

Observe what has happened to people enslaved and isolated by lockdown as suicide and self-harm has soared worldwide,

particularly among the young denied the freedom to associate with their friends. A study of 49,000 people in English-speaking countries concluded that almost half of young adults are at clinical risk of mental health disorders. A national survey in America of 1,000 currently enrolled high school and college students found that 5 percent reported attempting suicide during the pandemic. Data from the US CDC's National Syndromic Surveillance Program from January 1st to October 17th, 2020, revealed a 31 percent increase in mental health issues among adolescents aged 12 to 17 compared with 2019. The CDC reported that America in general suffered the biggest drop in life expectancy since World War Two as it fell by a year in the first half of 2020 as a result of 'deaths of despair' – overdoses and suicides. Deaths of despair have leapt by more than 20 percent during lockdown and include the highest number of fatal overdoses ever recorded in a single year – 81,000. Internet addiction is another consequence of being isolated at home which lowers interest in physical activities as kids fall into inertia and what's the point? Children and young people are losing hope and giving up on life, sometimes literally. A 14-year-old boy killed himself in Maryland because he had 'given up' when his school district didn't reopen; an 11-year-old boy shot himself during a zoom class; a teenager in Maine succumbed to the isolation of the 'pandemic' when he ended his life after experiencing a disrupted senior year at school. Children as young as nine have taken their life and all these stories can be repeated around the world. Careers are being destroyed before they start and that includes those in sport in which promising youngsters have not been able to take part. The plan of the psycho-psychologists is working all right. Researchers at Cambridge University found that lockdowns cause significant harm to children's mental health. Their study was published in the *Archives of Disease in Childhood*, and followed 168 children aged between 7 and 11. The researchers concluded:

During the UK lockdown, children's depression symptoms have increased substantially, relative to before lockdown. The scale of this effect has direct relevance for the continuation of different elements of lockdown policy, such as complete or partial school closures ...

... Specifically, we observed a statistically significant increase in ratings of depression, with a medium-to-large effect size. Our findings emphasise the need to incorporate the potential impact of lockdown on child mental health in planning the ongoing response to the global pandemic and the recovery from it.

Not a chance when the Cult's psycho-psychologists were getting exactly what they wanted. The UK's Royal College of Paediatrics and Child Health has urged parents to look for signs of eating disorders in children and young people after a three to four fold increase. Specialists say the 'pandemic' is a major reason behind the rise. You don't say. The College said isolation from friends during school closures, exam cancellations, loss of extra-curricular activities like sport, and an increased use of social media were all contributory factors along with fears about the virus (psycho-psychologists again), family finances, and students being forced to quarantine. Doctors said young people were becoming severely ill by the time they were seen with 'Covid' regulations reducing face-to-face consultations. Nor is it only the young that have been devastated by the psychopaths. Like all bullies and cowards the Cult is targeting the young, elderly, weak and infirm. A typical story was told by a British lady called Lynn Parker who was not allowed to visit her husband in 2020 for the last ten and half months of his life 'when he needed me most' between March 20th and when he died on December 19th. This vacates the criminal and enters the territory of evil. The emotional impact on the immune system alone is immense as are the number of people of all ages worldwide who have died as a result of Cult-demanded, Gates-demanded, lockdowns.

## **Isolation is torture**

The experience of imposing solitary confinement on millions of prisoners around the world has shown how a large percentage become 'actively psychotic and/or acutely suicidal'. Social isolation has been found to trigger 'a specific psychiatric syndrome, characterized by hallucinations; panic attacks; overt paranoia; diminished impulse control; hypersensitivity to external stimuli; and difficulties with thinking, concentration and memory'. Juan Mendez,

a United Nations rapporteur (investigator), said that isolation is a form of torture. Research has shown that even after isolation prisoners find it far more difficult to make social connections and I remember chatting to a shop assistant after one lockdown who told me that when her young son met another child again he had no idea how to act or what to do. Hannah Flanagan, Director of Emergency Services at Journey Mental Health Center in Dane County, Wisconsin, said: 'The specificity about Covid social distancing and isolation that we've come across as contributing factors to the suicides are really new to us this year.' But they are not new to those that devised them. They are getting the effect they want as the population is psychologically dismantled to be rebuilt in a totally different way. Children and the young are particularly targeted. They will be the adults when the full-on fascist AI-controlled technocracy is planned to be imposed and they are being prepared to meekly submit. At the same time older people who still have a memory of what life was like before – and how fascist the new normal really is – are being deleted. You are going to see efforts to turn the young against the old to support this geriatric genocide. Hannah Flanagan said the big increase in suicide in her county proved that social isolation is not only harmful, but deadly. Studies have shown that isolation from others is one of the main risk factors in suicide and even more so with women. Warnings that lockdown could create a 'perfect storm' for suicide were ignored. After all this was one of the *reasons* for lockdown. Suicide, however, is only the most extreme of isolation consequences. There are many others. Dr Dhruv Khullar, assistant professor of healthcare policy at Weill Cornell Medical College, said in a *New York Times* article in 2016 long before the fake 'pandemic':

A wave of new research suggests social separation is bad for us. Individuals with less social connection have disrupted sleep patterns, altered immune systems, more inflammation and higher levels of stress hormones. One recent study found that isolation increases the risk of heart disease by 29 percent and stroke by 32 percent. Another analysis that pooled data from 70 studies and 3.4 million people found that socially isolated individuals had a 30 percent higher risk of dying in the next seven years, and that this effect was largest in middle age.

Loneliness can accelerate cognitive decline in older adults, and isolated individuals are twice as likely to die prematurely as those with more robust social interactions. These effects start early: Socially isolated children have significantly poorer health 20 years later, even after controlling for other factors. All told, loneliness is as important a risk factor for early death as obesity and smoking.

There you have proof from that one article alone four years before 2020 that those who have enforced lockdown, social distancing and isolation knew what the effect would be and that is even more so with professional psychologists that have been driving the policy across the globe. We can go back even further to the years 2000 and 2003 and the start of a major study on the effects of isolation on health by Dr Janine Gronewold and Professor Dirk M. Hermann at the University Hospital in Essen, Germany, who analysed data on 4,316 people with an average age of 59 who were recruited for the long-term research project. They found that socially isolated people are more than 40 percent more likely to have a heart attack, stroke, or other major cardiovascular event and nearly 50 percent more likely to die from any cause. Given the financial Armageddon unleashed by lockdown we should note that the study found a relationship between increased cardiovascular risk and lack of financial support. After excluding other factors social isolation was still connected to a 44 percent increased risk of cardiovascular problems and a 47 percent increased risk of death by any cause. Lack of financial support was associated with a 30 percent increase in the risk of cardiovascular health events. Dr Gronewold said it had been known for some time that feeling lonely or lacking contact with close friends and family can have an impact on physical health and the study had shown that having strong social relationships is of high importance for heart health. Gronewold said they didn't understand yet why people who are socially isolated have such poor health outcomes, but this was obviously a worrying finding, particularly during these times of prolonged social distancing. Well, it can be explained on many levels. You only have to identify the point in the body where people feel loneliness and missing people they are parted from – it's in the centre of the chest where they feel the ache of loneliness and the ache of missing people. 'My heart aches for

you' ... 'My heart aches for some company.' I will explain this more in the chapter Escaping Wetiko, but when you realise that the body is the mind – they are expressions of each other – the reason why state of the mind dictates state of the body becomes clear.

American psychologist Ranjit Powar was highlighting the effects of lockdown isolation as early as April, 2020. She said humans have evolved to be social creatures and are wired to live in interactive groups. Being isolated from family, friends and colleagues could be unbalancing and traumatic for most people and could result in short or even long-term psychological and physical health problems. An increase in levels of anxiety, aggression, depression, forgetfulness and hallucinations were possible psychological effects of isolation. 'Mental conditions may be precipitated for those with underlying pre-existing susceptibilities and show up in many others without any pre-condition.' Powar said personal relationships helped us cope with stress and if we lost this outlet for letting off steam the result can be a big emotional void which, for an average person, was difficult to deal with. 'Just a few days of isolation can cause increased levels of anxiety and depression' – so what the hell has been the effect on the global population of *18 months* of this at the time of writing? Powar said: 'Add to it the looming threat of a dreadful disease being repeatedly hammered in through the media and you have a recipe for many shades of mental and physical distress.' For those with a house and a garden it is easy to forget that billions have had to endure lockdown isolation in tiny overcrowded flats and apartments with nowhere to go outside. The psychological and physical consequences of this are unimaginable and with lunatic and abusive partners and parents the consequences have led to tremendous increases in domestic and child abuse and alcoholism as people seek to shut out the horror. Ranjit Powar said:

Staying in a confined space with family is not all a rosy picture for everyone. It can be extremely oppressive and claustrophobic for large low-income families huddled together in small single-room houses. Children here are not lucky enough to have many board/electronic games or books to keep them occupied.

Add to it the deep insecurity of running out of funds for food and basic necessities. On the other hand, there are people with dysfunctional family dynamics, such as domineering, abusive or alcoholic partners, siblings or parents which makes staying home a period of trial. Incidence of suicide and physical abuse against women has shown a worldwide increase. Heightened anxiety and depression also affect a person's immune system, making them more susceptible to illness.

To think that Powar's article was published on April 11th, 2020.

## **Six-feet fantasy**

Social (unsocial) distancing demanded that people stay six feet or two metres apart. UK government advisor Robert Dingwall from the New and Emerging Respiratory Virus Threats Advisory Group said in a radio interview that the two-metre rule was 'conjured up out of nowhere' and was not based on science. No, it was not based on *medical* science, but it didn't come out of nowhere. The distance related to *psychological* science. Six feet/two metres was adopted in many countries and we were told by people like the criminal Anthony Fauci and his ilk that it was founded on science. Many schools could not reopen because they did not have the space for six-foot distancing. Then in March, 2021, after a year of six-foot 'science', a study published in the *Journal of Infectious Diseases* involving more than 500,000 students and almost 100,000 staff over 16 weeks revealed no significant difference in 'Covid' cases between six feet and three feet and Fauci changed his tune. Now three feet was okay. There is no difference between six feet and three *inches* when there is no 'virus' and they got away with six feet for psychological reasons for as long as they could. I hear journalists and others talk about 'unintended consequences' of lockdown. They are not *unintended* at all; they have been coldly-calculated for a specific outcome of human control and that's why super-psychopaths like Gates have called for them so vehemently. Super-psychopath psychologists have demanded them and psychopathic or clueless, spineless, politicians have gone along with them by 'following the science'. But it's not science at all. 'Science' is not what is; it's only what people can be manipulated to believe it is. The whole 'Covid' catastrophe is

founded on mind control. Three word or three statement mantras issued by the UK government are a well-known mind control technique and so we've had 'Stay home/protect the NHS/save lives', 'Stay alert/control the virus/save lives' and 'hands/face/space'. One of the most vocal proponents of extreme 'Covid' rules in the UK has been Professor Susan Michie, a member of the British Communist Party, who is not a medical professional. Michie is the director of the Centre for Behaviour Change at University College London. She is a *behavioural psychologist* and another filthy rich 'Marxist' who praised China's draconian lockdown. She was known by fellow students at Oxford University as 'Stalin's nanny' for her extreme Marxism. Michie is an influential member of the UK government's Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE) and behavioural manipulation groups which have dominated 'Covid' policy. She is a consultant adviser to the World Health Organization on 'Covid-19' and behaviour. Why the hell are lockdowns anything to do with her when they are claimed to be about health? Why does a behavioural psychologist from a group charged with changing the behaviour of the public want lockdown, human isolation and mandatory masks? Does that question really need an answer? Michie *absolutely* has to explain herself before a Nuremberg court when humanity takes back its world again and even more so when you see the consequences of masks that she demands are compulsory. This is a Michie classic:

The benefits of getting primary school children to wear masks is that regardless of what little degree of transmission is occurring in those age groups it could help normalise the practice. Young children wearing masks may be more likely to get their families to accept masks.

Those words alone should carry a prison sentence when you ponder on the callous disregard for children involved and what a statement it makes about the mind and motivations of Susan Michie. What a lovely lady and what she said there encapsulates the mentality of the psychopaths behind the 'Covid' horror. Let us compare what Michie said with a countrywide study in Germany published at [researchsquare.com](https://www.researchsquare.com) involving 25,000 school children and 17,854 health complaints submitted by parents. Researchers



found that masks are harming children physically, psychologically, and behaviourally with 24 health issues associated with mask wearing. They include: shortness of breath (29.7%); dizziness (26.4%); increased headaches (53%); difficulty concentrating (50%); drowsiness or fatigue (37%); and malaise (42%). Nearly a third of children experienced more sleep issues than before and a quarter developed new fears. Researchers found health issues and other impairments in 68 percent of masked children covering their faces for an average of 4.5 hours a day. Hundreds of those taking part experienced accelerated respiration, tightness in the chest, weakness, and short-term impairment of consciousness. A reminder of what Michie said again:

The benefits of getting primary school children to wear masks is that regardless of what little degree of transmission is occurring in those age groups it could help normalise the practice. Young children wearing masks may be more likely to get their families to accept masks.

Psychopaths in government and psychology now have children and young people – plus all the adults – wearing masks for hours on end while clueless teachers impose the will of the psychopaths on the young they should be protecting. What the hell are parents doing?

## **Cult lab rats**

We have some schools already imposing on students microchipped buzzers that activate when they get 'too close' to their pals in the way they do with lab rats. How apt. To the Cult and its brain-dead servants our children *are* lab rats being conditioned to be unquestioning, dehumanised slaves for the rest of their lives. Children and young people are being weaned and frightened away from the most natural human instincts including closeness and touch. I have tracked in the books over the years how schools were banning pupils from greeting each other with a hug and the whole Cult-induced Me Too movement has terrified men and boys from a relaxed and natural interaction with female friends and work colleagues to the point where many men try never to be in a room

alone with a woman that's not their partner. Airhead celebrities have as always played their virtue-signalling part in making this happen with their gross exaggeration. For every monster like Harvey Weinstein there are at least tens of thousands of men that don't treat women like that; but everyone must be branded the same and policy changed for them as well as the monster. I am going to be using the word 'dehumanise' many times in this chapter because that is what the Cult is seeking to do and it goes very deep as we shall see. Don't let them kid you that social distancing is planned to end one day. That's not the idea. We are seeing more governments and companies funding and producing wearable gadgets to keep people apart and they would not be doing that if this was meant to be short-term. A tech start-up company backed by GCHQ, the British Intelligence and military surveillance headquarters, has created a social distancing wrist sensor that alerts people when they get too close to others. The CIA has also supported tech companies developing similar devices. The wearable sensor was developed by Tended, one of a number of start-up companies supported by GCHQ (see the CIA and DARPA). The device can be worn on the wrist or as a tag on the waistband and will vibrate whenever someone wearing the device breaches social distancing and gets anywhere near natural human contact. The company had a lucky break in that it was developing a distancing sensor when the 'Covid' hoax arrived which immediately provided a potentially enormous market. How fortunate. The government in big-time Cult-controlled Ontario in Canada is investing \$2.5 million in wearable contact tracing technology that 'will alert users if they may have been exposed to the Covid-19 in the workplace and will beep or vibrate if they are within six feet of another person'. Facedrive Inc., the technology company behind this, was founded in 2016 with funding from the Ontario Together Fund and obviously they, too, had a prophet on the board of directors. The human surveillance and control technology is called TraceSCAN and would be worn by the human cyborgs in places such as airports, workplaces, construction sites, care homes and ... *schools*.

I emphasise schools with children and young people the prime targets. You know what is planned for society as a whole if you keep your eyes on the schools. They have always been places where the state program the next generation of slaves to be its compliant worker-ants – or Woker-ants these days; but in the mist of the ‘Covid’ madness they have been transformed into mind laboratories on a scale never seen before. Teachers and head teachers are just as programmed as the kids – often more so. Children are kept apart from human interaction by walk lanes, classroom distancing, staggered meal times, masks, and the rolling-out of buzzer systems. Schools are now physically laid out as a laboratory maze for lab-rats. Lunatics at a school in Anchorage, Alaska, who should be prosecuted for child abuse, took away desks and forced children to kneel (know your place) on a mat for five hours a day while wearing a mask and using their chairs as a desk. How this was supposed to impact on a ‘virus’ only these clinically insane people can tell you and even then it would be clap-trap. The school banned recess (interaction), art classes (creativity), and physical exercise (getting body and mind moving out of inertia). Everyone behind this outrage should be in jail or better still a mental institution. The behavioural manipulators are all for this dystopian approach to schools. Professor Susan Michie, the mind-doctor and British Communist Party member, said it was wrong to say that schools were safe. They had to be made so by ‘distancing’, masks and ventilation (sitting all day in the cold). I must ask this lady round for dinner on a night I know I am going to be out and not back for weeks. She probably wouldn’t be able to make it, anyway, with all the visits to her own psychologist she must have block-booked.

## **Masking identity**

I know how shocking it must be for you that a behaviour manipulator like Michie wants everyone to wear masks which have long been a feature of mind-control programs like the infamous MKUltra in the United States, but, there we are. We live and learn. I spent many years from 1996 to right across the millennium

researching mind control in detail on both sides of the Atlantic and elsewhere. I met a large number of mind-control survivors and many had been held captive in body and mind by MKUltra. MK stands for mind-control, but employs the German spelling in deference to the Nazis spirited out of Germany at the end of World War Two by Operation Paperclip in which the US authorities, with help from the Vatican, transported Nazi mind-controllers and engineers to America to continue their work. Many of them were behind the creation of NASA and they included Nazi scientist and SS officer Wernher von Braun who swapped designing V-2 rockets to bombard London with designing the Saturn V rockets that powered the NASA moon programme's Apollo craft. I think I may have mentioned that the Cult has no borders. Among Paperclip escapees was Josef Mengele, the Angel of Death in the Nazi concentration camps where he conducted mind and genetic experiments on children often using twins to provide a control twin to measure the impact of his 'work' on the other. If you want to observe the Cult mentality in all its extremes of evil then look into the life of Mengele. I have met many people who suffered mercilessly under Mengele in the United States where he operated under the name Dr Greene and became a stalwart of MKUltra programming and torture. Among his locations was the underground facility in the Mojave Desert in California called the China Lake Naval Weapons Station which is almost entirely below the surface. My books *The Biggest Secret*, *Children of the Matrix* and *The Perception Deception* have the detailed background to MKUltra.

The best-known MKUltra survivor is American Cathy O'Brien. I first met her and her late partner Mark Phillips at a conference in Colorado in 1996. Mark helped her escape and deprogram from decades of captivity in an offshoot of MKUltra known as Project Monarch in which 'sex slaves' were provided for the rich and famous including Father George Bush, Dick Cheney and the Clintons. Read Cathy and Mark's book *Trance-Formation of America* and if you are new to this you will be shocked to the core. I read it in 1996 shortly before, with the usual synchronicity of my life, I found

myself given a book table at the conference right next to hers. MKUltra never ended despite being very publicly exposed (only a small part of it) in the 1970s and continues in other guises. I am still in touch with Cathy. She contacted me during 2020 after masks became compulsory in many countries to tell me how they were used as part of MKUltra programming. I had been observing 'Covid regulations' and the relationship between authority and public for months. I saw techniques that I knew were employed on individuals in MKUltra being used on the global population. I had read many books and manuals on mind control including one called *Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars* which came to light in the 1980s and was a guide on how to perceptually program on a mass scale. 'Silent Weapons' refers to mind-control. I remembered a line from the manual as governments, medical authorities and law enforcement agencies have so obviously talked to – or rather at – the adult population since the 'Covid' hoax began as if they are children. The document said:

If a person is spoken to by a T.V. advertiser as if he were a twelve-year-old, then, due to suggestibility, he will, with a certain probability, respond or react to that suggestion with the uncritical response of a twelve-year-old and will reach in to his economic reservoir and deliver its energy to buy that product on impulse when he passes it in the store.

That's why authority has spoken to adults like children since all this began.

## **Why did Michael Jackson wear masks?**

Every aspect of the 'Covid' narrative has mind-control as its central theme. Cathy O'Brien wrote an article for [davidicke.com](http://davidicke.com) about the connection between masks and mind control. Her daughter Kelly who I first met in the 1990s was born while Cathy was still held captive in MKUltra. Kelly was forced to wear a mask as part of her programming from the age of *two* to dehumanise her, target her sense of individuality and reduce the amount of oxygen her brain and body received. *Bingo*. This is the real reason for compulsory

masks, why they have been enforced en masse, and why they seek to increase the number they demand you wear. First one, then two, with one disgraceful alleged 'doctor' recommending four which is nothing less than a death sentence. Where and how often they must be worn is being expanded for the purpose of mass mind control and damaging respiratory health which they can call 'Covid-19'. Canada's government headed by the man-child Justin Trudeau, says it's fine for children of two and older to wear masks. An insane 'study' in Italy involving just 47 children concluded there was no problem for babies as young as *four months* wearing them. Even after people were 'vaccinated' they were still told to wear masks by the criminal that is Anthony Fauci. Cathy wrote that mandating masks is allowing the authorities literally to control the air we breathe which is what was done in MKUltra. You might recall how the singer Michael Jackson wore masks and there is a reason for that. He was subjected to MKUltra mind control through Project Monarch and his psyche was scrambled by these simpletons. Cathy wrote:

In MKUltra Project Monarch mind control, Michael Jackson had to wear a mask to silence his voice so he could not reach out for help. Remember how he developed that whisper voice when he wasn't singing? Masks control the mind from the outside in, like the redefining of words is doing. By controlling what we can and cannot say for fear of being labeled racist or beaten, for example, it ultimately controls thought that drives our words and ultimately actions (or lack thereof).

Likewise, a mask muffles our speech so that we are not heard, which controls voice ... words ... mind. This is Mind Control. Masks are an obvious mind control device, and I am disturbed so many people are complying on a global scale. Masks depersonalize while making a person feel as though they have no voice. It is a barrier to others. People who would never choose to comply but are forced to wear a mask in order to keep their job, and ultimately their family fed, are compromised. They often feel shame and are subdued. People have stopped talking with each other while media controls the narrative.

The 'no voice' theme has often become literal with train passengers told not to speak to each other in case they pass on the 'virus', singing banned for the same reason and bonkers California officials telling people riding roller coasters that they cannot shout and scream. Cathy said she heard every day from healed MKUltra survivors who cannot wear a mask without flashing back on ways

their breathing was controlled – ‘from ball gags and penises to water boarding’. She said that through the years when she saw images of people in China wearing masks ‘due to pollution’ that it was really to control their oxygen levels. ‘I knew it was as much of a population control mechanism of depersonalisation as are burkas’, she said. Masks are another Chinese communist/fascist method of control that has been swept across the West as the West becomes China at lightning speed since we entered 2020.

## **Mask-19**

There are other reasons for mandatory masks and these include destroying respiratory health to call it ‘Covid-19’ and stunting brain development of children and the young. Dr Margarite Griesz-Brisson MD, PhD, is a Consultant Neurologist and Neurophysiologist and the Founder and Medical Director of the London Neurology and Pain Clinic. Her CV goes down the street and round the corner. She is clearly someone who cares about people and won’t parrot the propaganda. Griesz-Brisson has a PhD in pharmacology, with special interest in neurotoxicology, environmental medicine, neuroregeneration and neuroplasticity (the way the brain can change in the light of information received). She went public in October, 2020, with a passionate warning about the effects of mask-wearing laws:

The reinhalation of our exhaled air will without a doubt create oxygen deficiency and a flooding of carbon dioxide. We know that the human brain is very sensitive to oxygen deprivation. There are nerve cells for example in the hippocampus that can’t be longer than 3 minutes without oxygen – they cannot survive. The acute warning symptoms are headaches, drowsiness, dizziness, issues in concentration, slowing down of reaction time – reactions of the cognitive system.

Oh, I know, let’s tell bus, truck and taxi drivers to wear them and people working machinery. How about pilots, doctors and police? Griesz-Brisson makes the important point that while the symptoms she mentions may fade as the body readjusts this does not alter the fact that people continue to operate in oxygen deficit with long list of

potential consequences. She said it was well known that neurodegenerative diseases take years or decades to develop. 'If today you forget your phone number, the breakdown in your brain would have already started 20 or 30 years ago.' She said degenerative processes in your brain are getting amplified as your oxygen deprivation continues through wearing a mask. Nerve cells in the brain are unable to divide themselves normally in these circumstances and lost nerve cells will no longer be regenerated. 'What is gone is gone.' Now consider that people like shop workers and *schoolchildren* are wearing masks for hours every day. What in the name of sanity is going to be happening to them? 'I do not wear a mask, I need my brain to think', Griesz-Brisson said, 'I want to have a clear head when I deal with my patients and not be in a carbon dioxide-induced anaesthesia'. If you are told to wear a mask anywhere ask the organisation, police, store, whatever, for their risk assessment on the dangers and negative effects on mind and body of enforcing mask-wearing. They won't have one because it has never been done not even by government. All of them must be subject to class-action lawsuits as the consequences come to light. They don't do mask risk assessments for an obvious reason. They know what the conclusions would be and independent scientific studies that *have* been done tell a horror story of consequences.

### **'Masks are criminal'**

Dr Griesz-Brisson said that for children and adolescents, masks are an absolute no-no. They had an extremely active and adaptive immune system and their brain was incredibly active with so much to learn. 'The child's brain, or the youth's brain, is thirsting for oxygen.' The more metabolically active an organ was, the more oxygen it required; and in children and adolescents every organ was metabolically active. Griesz-Brisson said that to deprive a child's or adolescent's brain of oxygen, or to restrict it in any way, was not only dangerous to their health, it was absolutely criminal. 'Oxygen deficiency inhibits the development of the brain, and the damage that has taken place as a result CANNOT be reversed.' Mind



manipulators of MKUltra put masks on two-year-olds they wanted to neurologically rewire and you can see why. Griesz-Brisson said a child needs the brain to learn and the brain needs oxygen to function. 'We don't need a clinical study for that. This is simple, indisputable physiology.' Consciously and purposely induced oxygen deficiency was an absolutely deliberate health hazard, and an absolute medical contraindication which means that 'this drug, this therapy, this method or measure should not be used, and is not allowed to be used'. To coerce an entire population to use an absolute medical contraindication by force, she said, there had to be definite and serious reasons and the reasons must be presented to competent interdisciplinary and independent bodies to be verified and authorised. She had this warning of the consequences that were coming if mask wearing continued:

When, in ten years, dementia is going to increase exponentially, and the younger generations couldn't reach their god-given potential, it won't help to say 'we didn't need the masks'. I know how damaging oxygen deprivation is for the brain, cardiologists know how damaging it is for the heart, pulmonologists know how damaging it is for the lungs. Oxygen deprivation damages every single organ. Where are our health departments, our health insurance, our medical associations? It would have been their duty to be vehemently against the lockdown and to stop it and stop it from the very beginning.

Why do the medical boards issue punishments to doctors who give people exemptions? Does the person or the doctor seriously have to prove that oxygen deprivation harms people? What kind of medicine are our doctors and medical associations representing? Who is responsible for this crime? The ones who want to enforce it? The ones who let it happen and play along, or the ones who don't prevent it?

All of the organisations and people she mentions there either answer directly to the Cult or do whatever hierarchical levels above them tell them to do. The outcome of both is the same. 'It's not about masks, it's not about viruses, it's certainly not about your health', Griesz-Brisson said. 'It is about much, much more. I am not participating. I am not afraid.' They were taking our air to breathe and there was no unfounded medical exemption from face masks. Oxygen deprivation was dangerous for every single brain. It had to be the free decision of every human being whether they want to

wear a mask that was absolutely ineffective to protect themselves from a virus. She ended by rightly identifying where the responsibility lies for all this:

The imperative of the hour is personal responsibility. We are responsible for what we think, not the media. We are responsible for what we do, not our superiors. We are responsible for our health, not the World Health Organization. And we are responsible for what happens in our country, not the government.

Halle-bloody-lujah.

### **But surgeons wear masks, right?**

Independent studies of mask-wearing have produced a long list of reports detailing mental, emotional and physical dangers. What a definition of insanity to see police officers imposing mask-wearing on the public which will cumulatively damage their health while the police themselves wear masks that will cumulatively damage *their* health. It's utter madness and both public and police do this because 'the government says so' – yes a government of brain-donor idiots like UK Health Secretary Matt Hancock reading the 'follow the science' scripts of psychopathic, lunatic psychologists. The response you get from Stockholm syndrome sufferers defending the very authorities that are destroying them and their families is that 'surgeons wear masks'. This is considered the game, set and match that they must work and don't cause oxygen deficit. Well, actually, scientific studies have shown that they *do* and oxygen levels are monitored in operating theatres to compensate. Surgeons wear masks to stop spittle and such like dropping into open wounds – not to stop 'viral particles' which are so miniscule they can only be seen through an electron microscope. Holes in the masks are significantly bigger than 'viral particles' and if you sneeze or cough they will breach the mask. I watched an incredibly disingenuous 'experiment' that claimed to prove that masks work in catching 'virus' material from the mouth and nose. They did this with a slow motion camera and the mask did block big stuff which stayed inside the mask and

against the face to be breathed in or cause infections on the face as we have seen with many children. 'Viral particles', however, would never have been picked up by the camera as they came through the mask when they are far too small to be seen. The 'experiment' was therefore disingenuous *and* useless.

Studies have concluded that wearing masks in operating theatres (and thus elsewhere) make no difference to preventing infection while the opposite is true with toxic shite building up in the mask and this had led to an explosion in tooth decay and gum disease dubbed by dentists 'mask mouth'. You might have seen the Internet video of a furious American doctor urging people to take off their masks after a four-year-old patient had been rushed to hospital the night before and nearly died with a lung infection that doctors sourced to mask wearing. A study in the journal *Cancer Discovery* found that inhalation of harmful microbes can contribute to advanced stage lung cancer in adults and long-term use of masks can help breed dangerous pathogens. Microbiologists have said frequent mask wearing creates a moist environment in which microbes can grow and proliferate before entering the lungs. The Canadian Agency for Drugs and Technologies in Health, or CADTH, a Canadian national organisation that provides research and analysis to healthcare decision-makers, said this as long ago as 2013 in a report entitled 'Use of Surgical Masks in the Operating Room: A Review of the Clinical Effectiveness and Guidelines'. It said:

- No evidence was found to support the use of surgical face masks to reduce the frequency of surgical site infections
- No evidence was found on the effectiveness of wearing surgical face masks to protect staff from infectious material in the operating room.
- Guidelines recommend the use of surgical face masks by staff in the operating room to protect both operating room staff and patients (despite the lack of evidence).

We were told that the world could go back to 'normal' with the arrival of the 'vaccines'. When they came, fraudulent as they are, the story changed as I knew that it would. We are in the midst of transforming 'normal', not going back to it. Mary Ramsay, head of immunisation at Public Health England, echoed the words of US criminal Anthony Fauci who said masks and other regulations must stay no matter if people are vaccinated. The Fauci idiot continued to wear two masks – different colours so both could be clearly seen – after he *claimed* to have been vaccinated. Senator Rand Paul told Fauci in one exchange that his double-masks were 'theatre' and he was right. It's all theatre. Mary Ramsay back-tracked on the vaccine-return-to-normal theme when she said the public may need to wear masks and social-distance for years despite the jabs. 'People have got used to those lower-level restrictions now, and [they] can live with them', she said telling us what the idea has been all along. 'The vaccine does not give you a pass, even if you have had it, you must continue to follow all the guidelines' said a Public Health England statement which reneged on what we had been told before and made having the 'vaccine' irrelevant to 'normality' even by the official story. Spain's fascist government trumped everyone by passing a law mandating the wearing of masks on the beach and even when swimming in the sea. The move would have devastated what's left of the Spanish tourist industry, posed potential breathing dangers to swimmers and had Northern European sunbathers walking around with their forehead brown and the rest of their face white as a sheet. The ruling was so crazy that it had to be retracted after pressure from public and tourist industry, but it confirmed where the Cult wants to go with masks and how clinically insane authority has become. The determination to make masks permanent and hide the serious dangers to body and mind can be seen in the censorship of scientist Professor Denis Rancourt by Bill Gates-funded academic publishing website ResearchGate over his papers exposing the dangers and uselessness of masks. Rancourt said:

ResearchGate today has permanently locked my account, which I have had since 2015. Their reasons graphically show the nature of their attack against democracy, and their corruption of

science ... By their obscene non-logic, a scientific review of science articles reporting on harms caused by face masks has a 'potential to cause harm'. No criticism of the psychological device (face masks) is tolerated, if the said criticism shows potential to influence public policy.

This is what happens in a fascist world.

## **Where are the 'greens' (again)?**

Other dangers of wearing masks especially regularly relate to the inhalation of minute plastic fibres into the lungs and the deluge of discarded masks in the environment and oceans. Estimates predicted that more than 1.5 billion disposable masks will end up in the world's oceans every year polluting the water with tons of plastic and endangering marine wildlife. Studies project that humans are using 129 billion face masks each month worldwide – about three million a minute. Most are disposable and made from plastic, non-biodegradable microfibers that break down into smaller plastic particles that become widespread in ecosystems. They are littering cities, clogging sewage channels and turning up in bodies of water. I have written in other books about the immense amounts of microplastics from endless sources now being absorbed into the body. Rolf Halden, director of the Arizona State University (ASU) Biodesign Center for Environmental Health Engineering, was the senior researcher in a 2020 study that analysed 47 human tissue samples and found microplastics in all of them. 'We have detected these chemicals of plastics in every single organ that we have investigated', he said. I wrote in *The Answer* about the world being deluged with microplastics. A study by the Worldwide Fund for Nature (WWF) found that people are consuming on average every week some 2,000 tiny pieces of plastic mostly through water and also through marine life and the air. Every year humans are ingesting enough microplastics to fill a heaped dinner plate and in a life-time of 79 years it is enough to fill two large waste bins. Marco Lambertini, WWF International director general said: 'Not only are plastics polluting our oceans and waterways and killing marine life – it's in all of us and we can't escape consuming plastics,' American

geologists found tiny plastic fibres, beads and shards in rainwater samples collected from the remote slopes of the Rocky Mountain National Park near Denver, Colorado. Their report was headed: 'It is raining plastic.' Rachel Adams, senior lecturer in Biomedical Science at Cardiff Metropolitan University, said that among health consequences are internal inflammation and immune responses to a 'foreign body'. She further pointed out that microplastics become carriers of toxins including mercury, pesticides and dioxins (a known cause of cancer and reproductive and developmental problems). These toxins accumulate in the fatty tissues once they enter the body through microplastics. Now this is being compounded massively by people putting plastic on their face and throwing it away.

Workers exposed to polypropylene plastic fibres known as 'flock' have developed 'flock worker's lung' from inhaling small pieces of the flock fibres which can damage lung tissue, reduce breathing capacity and exacerbate other respiratory problems. *Now ...* commonly used surgical masks have three layers of melt-blown textiles made of ... polypropylene. We have billions of people putting these microplastics against their mouth, nose and face for hours at a time day after day in the form of masks. How does anyone think that will work out? I mean – what could possibly go wrong? We posted a number of scientific studies on this at [davidicke.com](http://davidicke.com), but when I went back to them as I was writing this book the links to the science research website where they were hosted were dead. Anything that challenges the official narrative in any way is either censored or vilified. The official narrative is so unsupportable by the evidence that only deleting the truth can protect it. A study by Chinese scientists still survived – with the usual twist which it why it was still active, I guess. Yes, they found that virtually all the masks they tested increased the daily intake of microplastic fibres, but people should still wear them because the danger from the 'virus' was worse said the crazy 'team' from the Institute of Hydrobiology in Wuhan. Scientists first discovered microplastics in lung tissue of some patients who died of lung cancer

in the 1990s. Subsequent studies have confirmed the potential health damage with the plastic degrading slowly and remaining in the lungs to accumulate in volume. Wuhan researchers used a machine simulating human breathing to establish that masks shed up to nearly 4,000 microplastic fibres in a month with reused masks producing more. Scientists said some masks are laced with toxic chemicals and a variety of compounds seriously restricted for both health and environmental reasons. They include cobalt (used in blue dye) and formaldehyde known to cause watery eyes, burning sensations in the eyes, nose, and throat, plus coughing, wheezing and nausea. No – that must be ‘Covid-19’.

## **Mask ‘worms’**

There is another and potentially even more sinister content of masks. Mostly new masks of different makes filmed under a microscope around the world have been found to contain strange black fibres or ‘worms’ that appear to move or ‘crawl’ by themselves and react to heat and water. The nearest I have seen to them are the self-replicating fibres that are pulled out through the skin of those suffering from Morgellons disease which has been connected to the phenomena of ‘chemtrails’ which I will bring into the story later on. Morgellons fibres continue to grow outside the body and have a form of artificial intelligence. Black ‘worm’ fibres in masks have that kind of feel to them and there is a nanotechnology technique called ‘worm micelles’ which carry and release drugs or anything else you want to deliver to the body. For sure the suppression of humanity by mind altering drugs is the Cult agenda big time and the more excuses they can find to gain access to the body the more opportunities there are to make that happen whether through ‘vaccines’ or masks pushed against the mouth and nose for hours on end.

So let us summarise the pros and cons of masks:

*Against masks:* Breathing in your own carbon dioxide; depriving the body and brain of sufficient oxygen; build-up of toxins in the mask that can be breathed into the lungs and cause rashes on the face and 'mask-mouth'; breathing microplastic fibres and toxic chemicals into the lungs; dehumanisation and deleting individualisation by literally making people faceless; destroying human emotional interaction through facial expression and deleting parental connection with their babies which look for guidance to their facial expression.

*For masks:* They don't protect you from a 'virus' that doesn't exist and even if it did 'viral' particles are so minute they are smaller than the holes in the mask.

Governments, police, supermarkets, businesses, transport companies, and all the rest who seek to impose masks have done no risk assessment on their consequences for health and psychology and are now open to group lawsuits when the impact becomes clear with a cumulative epidemic of respiratory and other disease. Authorities will try to exploit these effects and hide the real cause by dubbing them 'Covid-19'. Can you imagine setting out to force the population to wear health-destroying masks without doing any assessment of the risks? It is criminal and it is evil, but then how many people targeted in this way, who see their children told to wear them all day at school, have asked for a risk assessment? Billions can't be imposed upon by the few unless the billions allow it. Oh, yes, with just a tinge of irony, 85 percent of all masks made worldwide come from *China*.

## **Wash your hands in toxic shite**

'Covid' rules include the use of toxic sanitisers and again the health consequences of constantly applying toxins to be absorbed through the skin is obvious to any level of Renegade Mind. America's Food and Drug Administration (FDA) said that sanitisers are drugs and issued a warning about 75 dangerous brands which contain



methanol used in antifreeze and can cause death, kidney damage and blindness. The FDA circulated the following warning even for those brands that it claims to be safe:

Store hand sanitizer out of the reach of pets and children, and children should use it only with adult supervision. Do not drink hand sanitizer. This is particularly important for young children, especially toddlers, who may be attracted by the pleasant smell or brightly colored bottles of hand sanitizer.

Drinking even a small amount of hand sanitizer can cause alcohol poisoning in children. (However, there is no need to be concerned if your children eat with or lick their hands after using hand sanitizer.) During this coronavirus pandemic, poison control centers have had an increase in calls about accidental ingestion of hand sanitizer, so it is important that adults monitor young children's use.

Do not allow pets to swallow hand sanitizer. If you think your pet has eaten something potentially dangerous, call your veterinarian or a pet poison control center right away. Hand sanitizer is flammable and should be stored away from heat and flames. When using hand sanitizer, rub your hands until they feel completely dry before performing activities that may involve heat, sparks, static electricity, or open flames.

There you go, perfectly safe, then, and that's without even a mention of the toxins absorbed through the skin. Come on kids – sanitise your hands everywhere you go. It will save you from the 'virus'. Put all these elements together of the 'Covid' normal and see how much health and psychology is being cumulatively damaged, even devastated, to 'protect your health'. Makes sense, right? They are only imposing these things because they care, right? *Right?*

## **Submitting to insanity**

Psychological reframing of the population goes very deep and is done in many less obvious ways. I hear people say how contradictory and crazy 'Covid' rules are and how they are ever changing. This is explained away by dismissing those involved as idiots. It is a big mistake. The Cult is delighted if its cold calculation is perceived as incompetence and idiocy when it is anything but. Oh, yes, there are idiots within the system – lots of them – but they are *administering* the Cult agenda, mostly unknowingly. They are not deciding and dictating it. The bulwark against tyranny is self-

respect, always has been, always will be. It is self-respect that has broken every tyranny in history. By its very nature self-respect will not bow to oppression and its perpetrators. There is so little self-respect that it's always the few that overturn dictators. Many may eventually follow, but the few with the iron spines (self-respect) kick it off and generate the momentum. The Cult targets self-respect in the knowledge that once this has gone only submission remains. Crazy, contradictory, ever-changing 'Covid' rules are systematically applied by psychologists to delete self-respect. They *want* you to see that the rules make no sense. It is one thing to decide to do something when *you* have made the choice based on evidence and logic. You still retain your self-respect. It is quite another when you can see what you are being told to do is insane, ridiculous and makes no sense, and *yet you still do it*. Your self-respect is extinguished and this has been happening as ever more obviously stupid and nonsensical things have been demanded and the great majority have complied even when they can see they are stupid and nonsensical.

People walk around in face-nappies knowing they are damaging their health and make no difference to a 'virus'. They do it in fear of not doing it. I know it's daft, but I'll do it anyway. When that happens something dies inside of you and submissive reframing has begun. Next there's a need to hide from yourself that you have conceded your self-respect and you convince yourself that you have not really submitted to fear and intimidation. You begin to believe that you are complying with craziness because it's the right thing to do. When first you concede your self-respect of  $2+2 = 4$  to  $2+2 = 5$  you *know* you are compromising your self-respect. Gradually to avoid facing that fact you begin to *believe* that  $2+2=5$ . You have been reframed and I have been watching this process happening in the human psyche on an industrial scale. The Cult is working to break your spirit and one of its major tools in that war is humiliation. I read how former American soldier Bradley Manning (later Chelsea Manning after a sex-change) was treated after being jailed for supplying WikiLeaks with documents exposing the enormity of

government and elite mendacity. Manning was isolated in solitary confinement for eight months, put under 24-hour surveillance, forced to hand over clothing before going to bed, and stand naked for every roll call. This is systematic humiliation. The introduction of anal swab 'Covid' tests in China has been done for the same reason to delete self-respect and induce compliant submission. Anal swabs are mandatory for incoming passengers in parts of China and American diplomats have said they were forced to undergo the indignity which would have been calculated humiliation by the Cult-owned Chinese government that has America in its sights.

### **Government-people: An abusive relationship**

Spirit-breaking psychological techniques include giving people hope and apparent respite from tyranny only to take it away again. This happened in the UK during Christmas, 2020, when the psychopsychologists and their political lackeys announced an easing of restrictions over the holiday only to reimpose them almost immediately on the basis of yet another lie. There is a big psychological difference between getting used to oppression and being given hope of relief only to have that dashed. Psychologists know this and we have seen the technique used repeatedly. Then there is traumatising people before you introduce more extreme regulations that require compliance. A perfect case was the announcement by the dark and sinister Whitty and Vallance in the UK that 'new data' predicted that 4,000 could die every day over the winter of 2020/2021 if we did not lockdown again. I think they call it lying and after traumatising people with that claim out came Jackboot Johnson the next day with new curbs on human freedom. Psychologists know that a frightened and traumatised mind becomes suggestable to submission and behaviour reframing. Underpinning all this has been to make people fearful and suspicious of each other and see themselves as a potential danger to others. In league with deleted self-respect you have the perfect psychological recipe for self-loathing. The relationship between authority and public is now demonstrably the same as that of

subservience to an abusive partner. These are signs of an abusive relationship explained by psychologist Leslie Becker-Phelps:

**Psychological and emotional abuse:** Undermining a partner's self-worth with verbal attacks, name-calling, and belittling. Humiliating the partner in public, unjustly accusing them of having an affair, or interrogating them about their every behavior. Keeping partner confused or off balance by saying they were just kidding or blaming the partner for 'making' them act this way ... Feigning in public that they care while turning against them in private. This leads to victims frequently feeling confused, incompetent, unworthy, hopeless, and chronically self-doubting. [Apply these techniques to how governments have treated the population since New Year, 2020, and the parallels are obvious.]

**Physical abuse:** The abuser might physically harm their partner in a range of ways, such as grabbing, hitting, punching, or shoving them. They might throw objects at them or harm them with a weapon. [Observe the physical harm imposed by masks, lockdown, and so on.]

**Threats and intimidation:** One way abusers keep their partners in line is by instilling fear. They might be verbally threatening, or give threatening looks or gestures. Abusers often make it known that they are tracking their partner's every move. They might destroy their partner's possessions, threaten to harm them, or threaten to harm their family members. Not surprisingly, victims of this abuse often feel anxiety, fear, and panic. [No words necessary.]

**Isolation:** Abusers often limit their partner's activities, forbidding them to talk or interact with friends or family. They might limit access to a car or even turn off their phone. All of this might be done by physically holding them against their will, but is often accomplished through psychological abuse and intimidation. The more isolated a person feels, the fewer resources they have to help gain perspective on their situation and to escape from it. [No words necessary.]

**Economic abuse:** Abusers often make their partners beholden to them for money by controlling access to funds of any kind. They might prevent their partner from getting a job or withhold access to money they earn from a job. This creates financial dependency that makes leaving the relationship very difficult. [See destruction of livelihoods and the proposed meagre 'guaranteed income' so long as you do whatever you are told.]

**Using children:** An abuser might disparage their partner's parenting skills, tell their children lies about their partner, threaten to take custody of their children, or threaten to harm their children. These tactics instil fear and often elicit compliance. [See reframed social service mafia and how children are being mercilessly abused by the state over 'Covid' while their parents look on too frightened to do anything.]

A further recurring trait in an abusive relationship is the abused blaming themselves for their abuse and making excuses for the abuser. We have the public blaming each other for lockdown abuse by government and many making excuses for the government while attacking those who challenge the government. How often we have heard authorities say that rules are being imposed or reimposed only because people have refused to 'behave' and follow the rules. We don't want to do it – it's *you*.

Renegade Minds are an antidote to all of these things. They will never concede their self-respect no matter what the circumstances. Even when apparent humiliation is heaped upon them they laugh in its face and reflect back the humiliation on the abuser where it belongs. Renegade Minds will never wear masks they know are only imposed to humiliate, suppress and damage both physically and psychologically. Consequences will take care of themselves and they will never break their spirit or cause them to concede to tyranny. UK newspaper columnist Peter Hitchens was one of the few in the mainstream media to speak out against lockdowns and forced vaccinations. He then announced he had taken the jab. He wanted to see family members abroad and he believed vaccine passports were inevitable even though they had not yet been introduced. Hitchens

has a questioning and critical mind, but not a Renegade one. If he had no amount of pressure would have made him concede. Hitchens excused his action by saying that the battle has been lost. Renegade Minds never accept defeat when freedom is at stake and even if they are the last one standing the self-respect of not submitting to tyranny is more important than any outcome or any consequence.

That's why Renegade Minds are the only minds that ever changed anything worth changing.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

### **'Reframing' insanity**

*Insanity is relative. It depends on who has who locked in what cage*  
Ray Bradbury

'R'eframing' a mind means simply to change its perception and behaviour. This can be done subconsciously to such an extent that subjects have no idea they have been 'reframed' while to any observer changes in behaviour and attitudes are obvious.

Human society is being reframed on a ginormous scale since the start of 2020 and here we have the reason why psychologists rather than doctors have been calling the shots. Ask most people who have succumbed to 'Covid' reframing if they have changed and most will say 'no'; but they *have* and fundamentally. The Cult's long-game has been preparing for these times since way back and crucial to that has been to prepare both population and officialdom mentally and emotionally. To use the mind-control parlance they had to reframe the population with a mentality that would submit to fascism and reframe those in government and law enforcement to impose fascism or at least go along with it. The result has been the fact-deleted mindlessness of 'Wokeness' and officialdom that has either enthusiastically or unquestioningly imposed global tyranny demanded by reframed politicians on behalf of psychopathic and deeply evil cultists. 'Cognitive reframing' identifies and challenges the way someone sees the world in the form of situations, experiences and emotions and then restructures those perceptions to view the same set of circumstances in a different way. This can have

benefits if the attitudes are personally destructive while on the other side it has the potential for individual and collective mind control which the subject has no idea has even happened.

Cognitive therapy was developed in the 1960s by Aaron T. Beck who was born in Rhode Island in 1921 as the son of Jewish immigrants from the Ukraine. He became interested in the techniques as a treatment for depression. Beck's daughter Judith S. Beck is prominent in the same field and they founded the Beck Institute for Cognitive Behavior Therapy in Philadelphia in 1994. Cognitive reframing, however, began to be used worldwide by those with a very dark agenda. The Cult reframes politicians to change their attitudes and actions until they are completely at odds with what they once appeared to stand for. The same has been happening to government administrators at all levels, law enforcement, military and the human population. Cultists love mind control for two main reasons: It allows them to control what people think, do and say to secure agenda advancement and, by definition, it calms their legendary insecurity and fear of the unexpected. I have studied mind control since the time I travelled America in 1996. I may have been talking to next to no one in terms of an audience in those years, but my goodness did I gather a phenomenal amount of information and knowledge about so many things including the techniques of mind control. I have described this in detail in other books going back to *The Biggest Secret* in 1998. I met a very large number of people recovering from MKUltra and its offshoots and successors and I began to see how these same techniques were being used on the population in general. This was never more obvious than since the 'Covid' hoax began.

## **Reframing the enforcers**

I have observed over the last two decades and more the very clear transformation in the dynamic between the police, officialdom and the public. I tracked this in the books as the relationship mutated from one of serving the public to seeing them as almost the enemy and certainly a lower caste. There has always been a class divide



based on income and always been some psychopathic, corrupt, and big-I-am police officers. This was different. Wholesale change was unfolding in the collective dynamic; it was less about money and far more about position and perceived power. An us-and-them was emerging. Noses were lifted skyward by government administration and law enforcement and their attitude to the public they were *supposed* to be serving changed to one of increasing contempt, superiority and control. The transformation was so clear and widespread that it had to be planned. Collective attitudes and dynamics do not change naturally and organically that quickly on that scale. I then came across an organisation in Britain called Common Purpose created in the late 1980s by Julia Middleton who would work in the office of Deputy Prime Minister John Prescott during the long and disastrous premiership of war criminal Tony Blair. When Blair speaks the Cult is speaking and the man should have been in jail a long time ago. Common Purpose proclaims itself to be one of the biggest 'leadership development' organisations in the world while functioning as a *charity* with all the financial benefits which come from that. It hosts 'leadership development' courses and programmes all over the world and claims to have 'brought together' what it calls 'leaders' from more than 100 countries on six continents. The modus operandi of Common Purpose can be compared with the work of the UK government's reframing network that includes the Behavioural Insights Team 'nudge unit' and 'Covid' reframing specialists at SPI-B. WikiLeaks described Common Purpose long ago as 'a hidden virus in our government and schools' which is unknown to the general public: 'It recruits and trains "leaders" to be loyal to the directives of Common Purpose and the EU, instead of to their own departments, which they then undermine or subvert, the NHS [National Health Service] being an example.' This is a vital point to understand the 'Covid' hoax. The NHS, and its equivalent around the world, has been utterly reframed in terms of administrators and much of the medical personnel with the transformation underpinned by recruitment policies. The outcome has been the criminal and psychopathic behaviour of the

NHS over 'Covid' and we have seen the same in every other major country. WikiLeaks said Common Purpose trainees are 'learning to rule without regard to democracy' and to usher in a police state (current events explained). Common Purpose operated like a 'glue' and had members in the NHS, BBC, police, legal profession, church, many of Britain's 7,000 quangos, local councils, the Civil Service, government ministries and Parliament, and controlled many RDA's (Regional Development Agencies). Here we have one answer for how and why British institutions and their like in other countries have changed so negatively in relation to the public. This further explains how and why the beyond-disgraceful reframed BBC has become a propaganda arm of 'Covid' fascism. They are all part of a network pursuing the same goal.

By 2019 Common Purpose was quoting a figure of 85,000 'leaders' that had attended its programmes. These 'students' of all ages are known as Common Purpose 'graduates' and they consist of government, state and local government officials and administrators, police chiefs and officers, and a whole range of others operating within the national, local and global establishment. Cressida Dick, Commissioner of the London Metropolitan Police, is the Common Purpose graduate who was the 'Gold Commander' that oversaw what can only be described as the murder of Brazilian electrician Jean Charles de Menezes in 2005. He was held down by psychopathic police and shot seven times in the head by a psychopathic lunatic after being mistaken for a terrorist when he was just a bloke going about his day. Dick authorised officers to pursue and keep surveillance on de Menezes and ordered that he be stopped from entering the underground train system. Police psychopaths took her at her word clearly. She was 'disciplined' for this outrage by being *promoted* – eventually to the top of the 'Met' police where she has been a disaster. Many Chief Constables controlling the police in different parts of the UK are and have been Common Purpose graduates. I have heard the 'graduate' network described as a sort of Mafia or secret society operating within the fabric of government at all levels pursuing a collective policy

ingrained at Common Purpose training events. Founder Julia Middleton herself has said:

Locally and internationally, Common Purpose graduates will be 'lighting small fires' to create change in their organisations and communities ... The Common Purpose effect is best illustrated by the many stories of small changes brought about by leaders, who themselves have changed.

A Common Purpose mission statement declared:

Common Purpose aims to improve the way society works by expanding the vision, decision-making ability and influence of all kinds of leaders. The organisation runs a variety of educational programmes for leaders of all ages, backgrounds and sectors, in order to provide them with the inspirational, information and opportunities they need to change the world.

Yes, but into what? Since 2020 the answer has become clear.

## **NLP and the Delphi technique**

Common Purpose would seem to be a perfect name or would common programming be better? One of the foundation methods of reaching 'consensus' (group think) is by setting the agenda theme and then encouraging, cajoling or pressuring everyone to agree a 'consensus' in line with the core theme promoted by Common Purpose. The methodology involves the 'Delphi technique', or an adaption of it, in which opinions are expressed that are summarised by a 'facilitator or change agent' at each stage. Participants are 'encouraged' to modify their views in the light of what others have said. Stage by stage the former individual opinions are merged into group consensus which just happens to be what Common Purpose wants them to believe. A key part of this is to marginalise anyone refusing to concede to group think and turn the group against them to apply pressure to conform. We are seeing this very technique used on the general population to make 'Covid' group-thinkers hostile to those who have seen through the bullshit. People can be reframed by using perception manipulation methods such as Neuro-Linguistic Programming (NLP) in which you change perception with the use of

carefully constructed language. An NLP website described the technique this way:

... A method of influencing brain behaviour (the 'neuro' part of the phrase) through the use of language (the 'linguistic' part) and other types of communication to enable a person to 'recode' the way the brain responds to stimuli (that's the 'programming') and manifest new and better behaviours. Neuro-Linguistic Programming often incorporates hypnosis and self-hypnosis to help achieve the change (or 'programming') that is wanted.

British alternative media operation UKColumn has done very detailed research into Common Purpose over a long period. I quoted co-founder and former naval officer Brian Gerrish in my book *Remember Who You Are*, published in 2011, as saying the following years before current times:

It is interesting that many of the mothers who have had children taken by the State speak of the Social Services people being icily cool, emotionless and, as two ladies said in slightly different words, '... like little robots'. We know that NLP is cumulative, so people can be given small imperceptible doses of NLP in a course here, another in a few months, next year etc. In this way, major changes are accrued in their personality, but the day by day change is almost unnoticeable.

In these and other ways 'graduates' have had their perceptions uniformly reframed and they return to their roles in the institutions of government, law enforcement, legal profession, military, 'education', the UK National Health Service and the whole swathe of the establishment structure to pursue a common agenda preparing for the 'post-industrial', 'post-democratic' society. I say 'preparing' but we are now there. 'Post-industrial' is code for the Great Reset and 'post-democratic' is 'Covid' fascism. UKColumn has spoken to partners of those who have attended Common Purpose 'training'. They have described how personalities and attitudes of 'graduates' changed very noticeably for the worse by the time they had completed the course. They had been 'reframed' and told they are the 'leaders' – the special ones – who know better than the population. There has also been the very demonstrable recruitment of psychopaths and narcissists into government administration at all

levels and law enforcement. If you want psychopathy hire psychopaths and you get a simple cause and effect. If you want administrators, police officers and 'leaders' to perceive the public as lesser beings who don't matter then employ narcissists. These personalities are identified using 'psychometrics' that identifies knowledge, abilities, attitudes and personality traits, mostly through carefully-designed questionnaires and tests. As this policy has passed through the decades we have had power-crazy, power-trippers appointed into law enforcement, security and government administration in preparation for current times and the dynamic between public and law enforcement/officialdom has been transformed. UKColumn's Brian Gerrish said of the narcissistic personality:

Their love of themselves and power automatically means that they will crush others who get in their way. I received a major piece of the puzzle when a friend pointed out that when they made public officials re-apply for their own jobs several years ago they were also required to do psychometric tests. This was undoubtedly the start of the screening process to get 'their' sort of people in post.

How obvious that has been since 2020 although it was clear what was happening long before if people paid attention to the changing public-establishment dynamic.

## **Change agents**

At the centre of events in 'Covid' Britain is the National Health Service (NHS) which has behaved disgracefully in slavishly following the Cult agenda. The NHS management structure is awash with Common Purpose graduates or 'change agents' working to a common cause. Helen Bevan, a Chief of Service Transformation at the NHS Institute for Innovation and Improvement, co-authored a document called 'Towards a million change agents, a review of the social movements literature: implications for large scale change in the NHS'. The document compared a project management approach to that of change and social movements where 'people change

themselves and each other – peer to peer’. Two definitions given for a ‘social movement’ were:

*A group of people who consciously attempt to build a radically new social order; involves people of a broad range of social backgrounds; and deploys politically confrontational and socially disruptive tactics* – Cyrus Zirakzadeh 1997

*Collective challenges, based on common purposes and social solidarities, in sustained interaction with elites, opponents, and authorities* – Sidney Tarrow 1994

Helen Bevan wrote another NHS document in which she defined ‘framing’ as ‘the process by which leaders construct, articulate and put across their message in a powerful and compelling way in order to win people to their cause and call them to action’. I think I could come up with another definition that would be rather more accurate. The National Health Service and institutions of Britain and the wider world have been taken over by reframed ‘change agents’ and that includes everything from the United Nations to national governments, local councils and social services which have been kidnapping children from loving parents on an extraordinary and gathering scale on the road to the end of parenthood altogether. Children from loving homes are stolen and kidnapped by the state and put into the ‘care’ (inversion) of the local authority through council homes, foster parents and forced adoption. At the same time children are allowed to be abused without response while many are under council ‘care’. UKColumn highlighted the Common Purpose connection between South Yorkshire Police and Rotherham council officers in the case of the scandal in that area of the sexual exploitation of children to which the authorities turned not one blind eye, but both:

We were alarmed to discover that the Chief Executive, the Strategic Director of Children and Young People's Services, the Manager for the Local Strategic Partnership, the Community Cohesion Manager, the Cabinet Member for Cohesion, the Chief Constable and his predecessor had all attended Leadership training courses provided by the pseudo-charity Common Purpose.

Once 'change agents' have secured positions of hire and fire within any organisation things start to move very quickly. Personnel are then hired and fired on the basis of whether they will work towards the agenda the change agent represents. If they do they are rapidly promoted even though they may be incompetent. Those more qualified and skilled who are pre-Common Purpose 'old school' see their careers stall and even disappear. This has been happening for decades in every institution of state, police, 'health' and social services and all of them have been transformed as a result in their attitudes to their jobs and the public. Medical professions, including nursing, which were once vocations for the caring now employ many cold, callous and couldn't give a shit personality types. The UKColumn investigation concluded:

By blurring the boundaries between people, professions, public and private sectors, responsibility and accountability, Common Purpose encourages 'graduates' to believe that as new selected leaders, they can work together, outside of the established political and social structures, to achieve a paradigm shift or CHANGE – so called 'Leading Beyond Authority'. In doing so, the allegiance of the individual becomes 'reframed' on CP colleagues and their NETWORK.

## **Reframing the Face-Nappies**

Nowhere has this process been more obvious than in the police where recruitment of psychopaths and development of unquestioning mind-controlled group-thinkers have transformed law enforcement into a politically-correct 'Woke' joke and a travesty of what should be public service. Today they wear their face-nappies like good little gofers and enforce 'Covid' rules which are fascism under another name. Alongside the specifically-recruited psychopaths we have software minds incapable of free thought. Brian Gerrish again:

An example is the policeman who would not get on a bike for a press photo because he had not done the cycling proficiency course. Normal people say this is political correctness gone mad. Nothing could be further from the truth. The policeman has been reframed, and in his reality it is perfect common sense not to get on the bike 'because he hasn't done the cycling course'.

Another example of this is where the police would not rescue a boy from a pond until they had taken advice from above on the 'risk assessment'. A normal person would have arrived, perhaps thought of the risk for a moment, and dived in. To the police now 'reframed', they followed 'normal' procedure.

There are shocking cases of reframed ambulance crews doing the same. Sheer unthinking stupidity of London Face-Nappies headed by Common Purpose graduate Cressida Dick can be seen in their behaviour at a vigil in March, 2021, for a murdered woman, Sarah Everard. A police officer had been charged with the crime. Anyone with a brain would have left the vigil alone in the circumstances. Instead they 'manhandled' women to stop them breaking 'Covid rules' to betray classic reframing. Minds in the thrall of perception control have no capacity for seeing a situation on its merits and acting accordingly. 'Rules is rules' is their only mind-set. My father used to say that rules and regulations are for the guidance of the intelligent and the blind obedience of the idiot. Most of the intelligent, decent, coppers have gone leaving only the other kind and a few old school for whom the job must be a daily nightmare. The combination of psychopaths and rule-book software minds has been clearly on public display in the 'Covid' era with automaton robots in uniform imposing fascistic 'Covid' regulations on the population without any personal initiative or judging situations on their merits. There are thousands of examples around the world, but I'll make my point with the infamous Derbyshire police in the English East Midlands – the ones who think pouring dye into beauty spots and using drones to track people walking in the countryside away from anyone is called 'policing'. To them there are rules decreed by the government which they have to enforce and in their bewildered state a group gathering in a closed space and someone walking alone in the countryside are the same thing. It is beyond idiocy and enters the realm of clinical insanity.



Police officers in Derbyshire said they were 'horrified' – *horrified* – to find 15 to 20 'irresponsible' kids playing a football match at a closed leisure centre 'in breach of coronavirus restrictions'. When they saw the police the kids ran away leaving their belongings behind and the reframed men and women of Derbyshire police were seeking to establish their identities with a view to fining their parents. The most natural thing for youngsters to do – kicking a ball about – is turned into a criminal activity and enforced by the moronic software programs of Derbyshire police. You find the same mentality in every country. These barely conscious 'horrified' officers said they had to take action because 'we need to ensure these rules are being followed' and 'it is of the utmost importance that you ensure your children are following the rules and regulations for Covid-19'. Had any of them done ten seconds of research to see if this parroting of their masters' script could be supported by any evidence? Nope. Reframed people don't think – others think for them and that's the whole idea of reframing. I have seen police officers one after the other repeating without question word for word what officialdom tells them just as I have seen great swathes of the public doing the same. Ask either for 'their' opinion and out spews what they have been told to think by the official narrative. Police and public may seem to be in different groups, but their mentality is the same. Most people do whatever they are told in fear not doing so or because they believe what officialdom tells them; almost the entirety of the police do what they are told for the same reason. Ultimately it's the tiny inner core of the global Cult that's telling both what to do.

So Derbyshire police were 'horrified'. Oh, really? Why did they think those kids were playing football? It was to relieve the psychological consequences of lockdown and being denied human contact with their friends and interaction, touch and discourse vital to human psychological health. Being denied this month after month has dismantled the psyche of many children and young people as depression and suicide have exploded. Were Derbyshire police *horrified by that*? Are you kidding? Reframed people don't have those

mental and emotional processes that can see how the impact on the psychological health of youngsters is far more dangerous than any 'virus' even if you take the mendacious official figures to be true. The reframed are told (programmed) how to act and so they do. The Derbyshire Chief Constable in the first period of lockdown when the black dye and drones nonsense was going on was Peter Goodman. He was the man who severed the connection between his force and the Derbyshire Constabulary *Male Voice* Choir when he decided that it was not inclusive enough to allow women to join. The fact it was a male voice choir making a particular sound produced by male voices seemed to elude a guy who terrifyingly ran policing in Derbyshire. He retired weeks after his force was condemned as disgraceful by former Supreme Court Justice Jonathan Sumption for their behaviour over extreme lockdown impositions. Goodman was replaced by his deputy Rachel Swann who was in charge when her officers were 'horrificed'. The police statement over the boys committing the hanging-offence of playing football included the line about the youngsters being 'irresponsible in the times we are all living through' missing the point that the real relevance of the 'times we are all living through' is the imposition of fascism enforced by psychopaths and reframed minds of police officers playing such a vital part in establishing the fascist tyranny that their own children and grandchildren will have to live in their entire lives. As a definition of insanity that is hard to beat although it might be run close by imposing masks on people that can have a serious effect on their health while wearing a face nappy all day themselves. Once again public and police do it for the same reason – the authorities tell them to and who are they to have the self-respect to say no?

## **Wokers in uniform**

How reframed do you have to be to arrest a *six-year-old* and take him to court for *picking a flower* while waiting for a bus? Brain dead police and officialdom did just that in North Carolina where criminal proceedings happen regularly for children under nine. Attorney Julie Boyer gave the six-year-old crayons and a colouring book

during the 'flower' hearing while the 'adults' decided his fate. County Chief District Court Judge Jay Corpening asked: 'Should a child that believes in Santa Claus, the Easter Bunny and the tooth fairy be making life-altering decisions?' Well, of course not, but common sense has no meaning when you have a common purpose and a reframed mind. Treating children in this way, and police operating in American schools, is all part of the psychological preparation for children to accept a police state as normal all their adult lives. The same goes for all the cameras and biometric tracking technology in schools. Police training is focused on reframing them as snowflake Wokers and this is happening in the military. Pentagon top brass said that 'training sessions on extremism' were needed for troops who asked why they were so focused on the Capitol Building riot when Black Lives Matter riots were ignored. What's the difference between them some apparently and rightly asked. Actually, there is a difference. Five people died in the Capitol riot, only one through violence, and that was a police officer shooting an unarmed protestor. BLM riots killed at least 25 people and cost billions. Asking the question prompted the psychopaths and reframed minds that run the Pentagon to say that more 'education' (programming) was needed. Troop training is all based on psychological programming to make them fodder for the Cult – 'Military men are just dumb, stupid animals to be used as pawns in foreign policy' as Cult-to-his-DNA former Secretary of State Henry Kissinger famously said. Governments see the police in similar terms and it's time for those among them who can see this to defend the people and stop being enforcers of the Cult agenda upon the people.

The US military, like the country itself, is being targeted for destruction through a long list of Woke impositions. Cult-owned gaga 'President' Biden signed an executive order when he took office to allow taxpayer money to pay for transgender surgery for active military personnel and veterans. Are you a man soldier? No, I'm a LGBTQIA+ with a hint of Skoliosexual and Spectrasexual. Oh, good man. Bad choice of words you bigot. The Pentagon announced in March, 2021, the appointment of the first 'diversity and inclusion

officer' for US Special Forces. Richard Torres-Estrada arrived with the publication of a 'D&I Strategic Plan which will guide the enterprise-wide effort to institutionalize and sustain D&I'. If you think a Special Forces 'Strategic Plan' should have something to do with defending America you haven't been paying attention. Defending Woke is now the military's new role. Torres-Estrada has posted images comparing Donald Trump with Adolf Hitler and we can expect no bias from him as a representative of the supposedly non-political Pentagon. Cable news host Tucker Carlson said: 'The Pentagon is now the Yale faculty lounge but with cruise missiles.' Meanwhile Secretary of Defense Lloyd Austin, a board member of weapons-maker Raytheon with stock and compensation interests in October, 2020, worth \$1.4 million, said he was purging the military of the 'enemy within' – anyone who isn't Woke and supports Donald Trump. Austin refers to his targets as 'racist extremists' while in true Woke fashion being himself a racist extremist. Pentagon documents pledge to 'eradicate, eliminate and conquer all forms of racism, sexism and homophobia'. The definitions of these are decided by 'diversity and inclusion committees' peopled by those who see racism, sexism and homophobia in every situation and opinion. Woke (the Cult) is dismantling the US military and purging testosterone as China expands its military and gives its troops 'masculinity training'. How do we think that is going to end when this is all Cult coordinated? The US military, like the British military, is controlled by Woke and spineless top brass who just go along with it out of personal career interests.

### **'Woke' means fast asleep**

Mind control and perception manipulation techniques used on individuals to create group-think have been unleashed on the global population in general. As a result many have no capacity to see the obvious fascist agenda being installed all around them or what 'Covid' is really all about. Their brains are firewalled like a computer system not to process certain concepts, thoughts and realisations that are bad for the Cult. The young are most targeted as the adults they

will be when the whole fascist global state is planned to be fully implemented. They need to be prepared for total compliance to eliminate all pushback from entire generations. The Cult has been pouring billions into taking complete control of 'education' from schools to universities via its operatives and corporations and not least Bill Gates as always. The plan has been to transform 'education' institutions into programming centres for the mentality of 'Woke'. James McConnell, professor of psychology at the University of Michigan, wrote in *Psychology Today* in 1970:

The day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis, and astute manipulation of reward and punishment, to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behaviour. It should then be possible to achieve a very rapid and highly effective type of brainwashing that would allow us to make dramatic changes in a person's behaviour and personality ...

... We should reshape society so that we all would be trained from birth to want to do what society wants us to do. We have the techniques to do it... no-one owns his own personality you acquired, and there's no reason to believe you should have the right to refuse to acquire a new personality if your old one is anti-social.

This was the potential for mass brainwashing in 1970 and the mentality there displayed captures the arrogant psychopathy that drives it forward. I emphasise that not all young people have succumbed to Woke programming and those that haven't are incredibly impressive people given that today's young are the most perceptually-targeted generations in history with all the technology now involved. Vast swathes of the young generations, however, have fallen into the spell – and that's what it is – of Woke. The Woke mentality and perceptual program is founded on *inversion* and you will appreciate later why that is so significant. Everything with Woke is inverted and the opposite of what it is claimed to be. Woke was a term used in African-American culture from the 1900s and referred to an awareness of social and racial justice. This is not the meaning of the modern version or 'New Woke' as I call it in *The Answer*. Oh, no, Woke today means something very different no matter how much Wokers may seek to hide that and insist Old Woke and New

Woke are the same. See if you find any 'awareness of social justice' here in the modern variety:

- Woke demands 'inclusivity' while excluding anyone with a different opinion and calls for mass censorship to silence other views.
- Woke claims to stand against oppression when imposing oppression is the foundation of all that it does. It is the driver of political correctness which is nothing more than a Cult invention to manipulate the population to silence itself.
- Woke believes itself to be 'liberal' while pursuing a global society that can only be described as fascist (see 'anti-fascist' fascist Antifa).
- Woke calls for 'social justice' while spreading injustice wherever it goes against the common 'enemy' which can be easily identified as a differing view.
- Woke is supposed to be a metaphor for 'awake' when it is solid-gold asleep and deep in a Cult-induced coma that meets the criteria for 'off with the fairies'.

I state these points as obvious facts if people only care to look. I don't do this with a sense of condemnation. We need to appreciate that the onslaught of perceptual programming on the young has been incessant and merciless. I can understand why so many have been reframed, or, given their youth, framed from the start to see the world as the Cult demands. The Cult has had access to their minds day after day in its 'education' system for their entire formative years. Perception is formed from information received and the Cult-created system is a life-long download of information delivered to elicit a particular perception, thus behaviour. The more this has expanded into still new extremes in recent decades and ever-increasing censorship has deleted other opinions and information why wouldn't that lead to a perceptual reframing on a mass scale? I

have described already cradle-to-grave programming and in more recent times the targeting of young minds from birth to adulthood has entered the stratosphere. This has taken the form of skewing what is 'taught' to fit the Cult agenda and the omnipresent techniques of group-think to isolate non-believers and pressure them into line. There has always been a tendency to follow the herd, but we really are in a new world now in relation to that. We have parents who can see the 'Covid' hoax told by their children not to stop them wearing masks at school, being 'Covid' tested or having the 'vaccine' in fear of the peer-pressure consequences of being different. What is 'peer-pressure' if not pressure to conform to group-think? Renegade Minds never group-think and always retain a set of perceptions that are unique to them. Group-think is always underpinned by consequences for not group-thinking. Abuse now aimed at those refusing DNA-manipulating 'Covid vaccines' are a potent example of this. The biggest pressure to conform comes from the very group which is itself being manipulated. 'I am programmed to be part of a hive mind and so you must be.'

Woke control structures in 'education' now apply to every mainstream organisation. Those at the top of the 'education' hierarchy (the Cult) decide the policy. This is imposed on governments through the Cult network; governments impose it on schools, colleges and universities; their leadership impose the policy on teachers and academics and they impose it on children and students. At any level where there is resistance, perhaps from a teacher or university lecturer, they are targeted by the authorities and often fired. Students themselves regularly demand the dismissal of academics (increasingly few) at odds with the narrative that the students have been programmed to believe in. It is quite a thought that students who are being targeted by the Cult become so consumed by programmed group-think that they launch protests and demand the removal of those who are trying to push back against those targeting the students. Such is the scale of perceptual inversion. We see this with 'Covid' programming as the Cult imposes the rules via psycho-psychologists and governments on

shops, transport companies and businesses which impose them on their staff who impose them on their customers who pressure Pushbackers to conform to the will of the Cult which is in the process of destroying them and their families. Scan all aspects of society and you will see the same sequence every time.

## **Fact free Woke and hijacking the 'left'**

There is no more potent example of this than 'Woke', a mentality only made possible by the deletion of factual evidence by an 'education' system seeking to produce an ever more uniform society. Why would you bother with facts when you don't know any? Deletion of credible history both in volume and type is highly relevant. Orwell said: 'Who controls the past controls the future: who controls the present controls the past.' They who control the perception of the past control the perception of the future and they who control the present control the perception of the past through the writing and deleting of history. Why would you oppose the imposition of Marxism in the name of Wokeism when you don't know that Marxism cost at least 100 million lives in the 20th century alone? Watch videos and read reports in which Woker generations are asked basic historical questions – it's mind-blowing. A survey of 2,000 people found that six percent of millennials (born approximately early 1980s to early 2000s) believed the Second World War (1939-1945) broke out with the assassination of President Kennedy (in 1963) and one in ten thought Margaret Thatcher was British Prime Minister at the time. She was in office between 1979 and 1990. We are in a post-fact society. Provable facts are no defence against the fascism of political correctness or Silicon Valley censorship. Facts don't matter anymore as we have witnessed with the 'Covid' hoax. Sacrificing uniqueness to the Woke group-think religion is all you are required to do and that means thinking for yourself is the biggest Woke no, no. All religions are an expression of group-think and censorship and Woke is just another religion with an orthodoxy defended by group-think and censorship. Burned at



the stake becomes burned on Twitter which leads back eventually to burned at the stake as Woke humanity regresses to ages past.

The biggest Woke inversion of all is its creators and funders. I grew up in a traditional left of centre political household on a council estate in Leicester in the 1950s and 60s – you know, the left that challenged the power of wealth-hoarding elites and threats to freedom of speech and opinion. In those days students went on marches defending freedom of speech while today's Wokers march for its deletion. What on earth could have happened? Those very elites (collectively the Cult) that we opposed in my youth and early life have funded into existence the antithesis of that former left and hijacked the 'brand' while inverting everything it ever stood for. We have a mentality that calls itself 'liberal' and 'progressive' while acting like fascists. Cult billionaires and their corporations have funded themselves into control of 'education' to ensure that Woke programming is unceasing throughout the formative years of children and young people and that non-Wokers are isolated (that word again) whether they be students, teachers or college professors. The Cult has funded into existence the now colossal global network of Woke organisations that have spawned and promoted all the 'causes' on the Cult wish-list for global transformation and turned Wokers into demanders of them. Does anyone really think it's a coincidence that the Cult agenda for humanity is a carbon (sorry) copy of the societal transformations desired by Woke?? These are only some of them:

**Political correctness:** The means by which the Cult deletes all public debates that it knows it cannot win if we had the free-flow of information and evidence.

**Human-caused 'climate change':** The means by which the Cult seeks to transform society into a globally-controlled dictatorship imposing its will over the fine detail of everyone's lives 'to save the planet' which doesn't actually need saving.

**Transgender obsession:** Preparing collective perception to accept the 'new human' which would not have genders because it would be created technologically and not through procreation. I'll have much more on this in Human 2.0.

**Race obsession:** The means by which the Cult seeks to divide and rule the population by triggering racial division through the perception that society is more racist than ever when the opposite is the case. Is it perfect in that regard? No. But to compare today with the racism of apartheid and segregation brought to an end by the civil rights movement in the 1960s is to insult the memory of that movement and inspirations like Martin Luther King. Why is the 'anti-racism' industry (which it is) so dominated by privileged white people?

**White supremacy:** This is a label used by privileged white people to demonise poor and deprived white people pushing back on tyranny to marginalise and destroy them. White people are being especially targeted as the dominant race by number within Western society which the Cult seeks to transform in its image. If you want to change a society you must weaken and undermine its biggest group and once you have done that by using the other groups you next turn on them to do the same ... 'Then they came for the Jews and I was not a Jew so I did nothing.'

**Mass migration:** The mass movement of people from the Middle East, Africa and Asia into Europe, from the south into the United States and from Asia into Australia are another way the Cult seeks to dilute the racial, cultural and political influence of white people on Western society. White people ask why their governments appear to be working against them while being politically and culturally biased towards incoming cultures. Well, here's your answer. In the same way sexually 'straight' people, men and women, ask why the

authorities are biased against them in favour of other sexualities. The answer is the same – that's the way the Cult wants it to be for very sinister motives.

These are all central parts of the Cult agenda and central parts of the Woke agenda and Woke was created and continues to be funded to an immense degree by Cult billionaires and corporations. If anyone begins to say 'coincidence' the syllables should stick in their throat.

### **Billionaire 'social justice warriors'**

Joe Biden is a 100 percent-owned asset of the Cult and the Wokers' man in the White House whenever he can remember his name and for however long he lasts with his rapidly diminishing cognitive function. Even walking up the steps of an aircraft without falling on his arse would appear to be a challenge. He's not an empty-shell puppet or anything. From the minute Biden took office (or the Cult did) he began his executive orders promoting the Woke wish-list. You will see the Woke agenda imposed ever more severely because it's really the *Cult* agenda. Woke organisations and activist networks spawned by the Cult are funded to the extreme so long as they promote what the Cult wants to happen. Woke is funded to promote 'social justice' by billionaires who become billionaires by destroying social justice. The social justice mantra is only a cover for dismantling social justice and funded by billionaires that couldn't give a damn about social justice. Everything makes sense when you see that. One of Woke's premier funders is Cult billionaire financier George Soros who said: 'I am basically there to make money, I cannot and do not look at the social consequences of what I do.' This is the same Soros who has given more than \$32 billion to his Open Society Foundations global Woke network and funded Black Lives Matter, mass immigration into Europe and the United States, transgender activism, climate change activism, political correctness and groups targeting 'white supremacy' in the form of privileged white thugs that dominate Antifa. What a scam it all is and when

you are dealing with the unquestioning fact-free zone of Woke scamming them is child's play. All you need to pull it off in all these organisations are a few in-the-know agents of the Cult and an army of naïve, reframed, uninformed, narcissistic, know-nothings convinced of their own self-righteousness, self-purity and virtue.

Soros and fellow billionaires and billionaire corporations have poured hundreds of millions into Black Lives Matter and connected groups and promoted them to a global audience. None of this is motivated by caring about black people. These are the billionaires that have controlled and exploited a system that leaves millions of black people in abject poverty and deprivation which they do absolutely nothing to address. The same Cult networks funding BLM were behind the *slave trade*! Black Lives Matter hijacked a phrase that few would challenge and they have turned this laudable concept into a political weapon to divide society. You know that BLM is a fraud when it claims that *All Lives Matter*, the most inclusive statement of all, is 'racist'. BLM and its Cult masters don't want to end racism. To them it's a means to an end to control all of humanity never mind the colour, creed, culture or background. What has destroying the nuclear family got to do with ending racism? Nothing – but that is one of the goals of BLM and also happens to be a goal of the Cult as I have been exposing in my books for decades. Stealing children from loving parents and giving schools ever more power to override parents is part of that same agenda. BLM is a Marxist organisation and why would that not be the case when the Cult created Marxism *and* BLM? Patrisse Cullors, a BLM co-founder, said in a 2015 video that she and her fellow organisers, including co-founder Alicia Garza, are 'trained Marxists'. The lady known after marriage as Patrisse Khan-Cullors bought a \$1.4 million home in 2021 in one of the whitest areas of California with a black population of just 1.6 per cent and has so far bought *four* high-end homes for a total of \$3.2 million. How very Marxist. There must be a bit of spare in the BLM coffers, however, when Cult corporations and billionaires have handed over the best part of \$100 million. Many black people can see that Black Lives Matter is not

working for them, but against them, and this is still more confirmation. Black journalist Jason Whitlock, who had his account suspended by Twitter for simply linking to the story about the 'Marxist's' home buying spree, said that BLM leaders are 'making millions of dollars off the backs of these dead black men who they wouldn't spit on if they were on fire and alive'.

## **Black Lies Matter**

Cult assets and agencies came together to promote BLM in the wake of the death of career criminal George Floyd who had been jailed a number of times including for forcing his way into the home of a black woman with others in a raid in which a gun was pointed at her stomach. Floyd was filmed being held in a Minneapolis street in 2020 with the knee of a police officer on his neck and he subsequently died. It was an appalling thing for the officer to do, but the same technique has been used by police on peaceful protestors of lockdown without any outcry from the Woke brigade. As unquestioning supporters of the Cult agenda Wokers have supported lockdown and all the 'Covid' claptrap while attacking anyone standing up to the tyranny imposed in its name. Court documents would later include details of an autopsy on Floyd by County Medical Examiner Dr Andrew Baker who concluded that Floyd had taken a fatal level of the drug fentanyl. None of this mattered to fact-free, question-free, Woke. Floyd's death was followed by worldwide protests against police brutality amid calls to defund the police. Throwing babies out with the bathwater is a Woke speciality. In the wake of the murder of British woman Sarah Everard a Green Party member of the House of Lords, Baroness Jones of Moulsecoomb (Nincompoopia would have been better), called for a 6pm curfew for all men. This would be in breach of the Geneva Conventions on war crimes which ban collective punishment, but that would never have crossed the black and white Woke mind of Baroness Nincompoopia who would have been far too convinced of her own self-righteousness to compute such details. Many American cities did defund the police in the face of Floyd riots

and after \$15 million was deleted from the police budget in Washington DC under useless Woke mayor Muriel Bowser car-jacking alone rose by 300 percent and within six months the US capital recorded its highest murder rate in 15 years. The same happened in Chicago and other cities in line with the Cult/Soros plan to bring fear to streets and neighbourhoods by reducing the police, releasing violent criminals and not prosecuting crime. This is the mob-rule agenda that I have warned in the books was coming for so long. Shootings in the area of Minneapolis where Floyd was arrested increased by 2,500 percent compared with the year before. Defunding the police over George Floyd has led to a big increase in dead people with many of them black. Police protection for politicians making these decisions stayed the same or increased as you would expect from professional hypocrites. The Cult doesn't actually want to abolish the police. It wants to abolish local control over the police and hand it to federal government as the psychopaths advance the Hunger Games Society. Many George Floyd protests turned into violent riots with black stores and businesses destroyed by fire and looting across America fuelled by Black Lives Matter. Woke doesn't do irony. If you want civil rights you must loot the liquor store and the supermarket and make off with a smart TV. It's the only way.

### **It's not a race war – it's a class war**

Black people are patronised by privileged blacks and whites alike and told they are victims of white supremacy. I find it extraordinary to watch privileged blacks supporting the very system and bloodline networks behind the slave trade and parroting the same Cult-serving manipulative crap of their privileged white, often billionaire, associates. It is indeed not a race war but a class war and colour is just a diversion. Black Senator Cory Booker and black Congresswoman Maxine Waters, more residents of Nincompoopia, personify this. Once you tell people they are victims of someone else you devalue both their own responsibility for their plight and the power they have to impact on their reality and experience. Instead

we have: 'You are only in your situation because of whiteness – turn on them and everything will change.' It won't change. Nothing changes in our lives unless *we* change it. Crucial to that is never seeing yourself as a victim and always as the creator of your reality. Life is a simple sequence of choice and consequence. Make different choices and you create different consequences. *You* have to make those choices – not Black Lives Matter, the Woke Mafia and anyone else that seeks to dictate your life. Who are they these Wokers, an emotional and psychological road traffic accident, to tell you what to do? Personal empowerment is the last thing the Cult and its Black Lives Matter want black people or anyone else to have. They claim to be defending the underdog while *creating* and perpetuating the underdog. The Cult's worst nightmare is human unity and if they are going to keep blacks, whites and every other race under economic servitude and control then the focus must be diverted from what they have in common to what they can be manipulated to believe divides them. Blacks have to be told that their poverty and plight is the fault of the white bloke living on the street in the same poverty and with the same plight they are experiencing. The difference is that your plight black people is due to him, a white supremacist with 'white privilege' living on the street. Don't unite as one human family against your mutual oppressors and suppressors – fight the oppressor with the white face who is as financially deprived as you are. The Cult knows that as its 'Covid' agenda moves into still new levels of extremism people are going to respond and it has been spreading the seeds of disunity everywhere to stop a united response to the evil that targets *all of us*.

Racist attacks on 'whiteness' are getting ever more outrageous and especially through the American Democratic Party which has an appalling history for anti-black racism. Barack Obama, Joe Biden, Hillary Clinton and Nancy Pelosi all eulogised about Senator Robert Byrd at his funeral in 2010 after a nearly 60-year career in Congress. Byrd was a brutal Ku Klux Klan racist and a violent abuser of Cathy O'Brien in MKUltra. He said he would never fight in the military 'with a negro by my side' and 'rather I should die a thousand times,

and see Old Glory trampled in the dirt never to rise again, than to see this beloved land of ours become degraded by race mongrels, a throwback to the blackest specimen from the wilds'. Biden called Byrd a 'very close friend and mentor'. These 'Woke' hypocrites are not anti-racist they are anti-poor and anti-people not of their perceived class. Here is an illustration of the scale of anti-white racism to which we have now descended. Seriously Woke and moronic *New York Times* contributor Damon Young described whiteness as a 'virus' that 'like other viruses will not die until there are no bodies left for it to infect'. He went on: '... the only way to stop it is to locate it, isolate it, extract it, and kill it.' Young can say that as a black man with no consequences when a white man saying the same in reverse would be facing a jail sentence. *That's* racism. We had super-Woke numbskull senators Tammy Duckworth and Mazie Hirono saying they would object to future Biden Cabinet appointments if he did not nominate more Asian Americans and Pacific Islanders. Never mind the ability of the candidate what do they look like? Duckworth said: 'I will vote for racial minorities and I will vote for LGBTQ, but anyone else I'm not voting for.' Appointing people on the grounds of race is illegal, but that was not a problem for this ludicrous pair. They were on-message and that's a free pass in any situation.

## **Critical race racism**

White children are told at school they are intrinsically racist as they are taught the divisive 'critical race theory'. This claims that the law and legal institutions are inherently racist and that race is a socially constructed concept used by white people to further their economic and political interests at the expense of people of colour. White is a 'virus' as we've seen. Racial inequality results from 'social, economic, and legal differences that white people create between races to maintain white interests which leads to poverty and criminality in minority communities'. I must tell that to the white guy sleeping on the street. The principal of East Side Community School in New York sent white parents a manifesto that called on



them to become 'white traitors' and advocate for full 'white abolition'. These people are teaching your kids when they urgently need a psychiatrist. The 'school' included a chart with 'eight white identities' that ranged from 'white supremacist' to 'white abolition' and defined the behaviour white people must follow to end 'the regime of whiteness'. Woke blacks and their privileged white associates are acting exactly like the slave owners of old and Ku Klux Klan racists like Robert Byrd. They are too full of their own self-purity to see that, but it's true. Racism is not a body type; it's a state of mind that can manifest through any colour, creed or culture.

Another racial fraud is '*equity*'. Not equality of treatment and opportunity – equity. It's a term spun as equality when it means something very different. Equality in its true sense is a raising up while '*equity*' is a race to the bottom. Everyone in the same level of poverty is '*equity*'. Keep everyone down – that's equity. The Cult doesn't want anyone in the human family to be empowered and BLM leaders, like all these 'anti-racist' organisations, continue their privileged, pampered existence by perpetuating the perception of gathering racism. When is the last time you heard an 'anti-racist' or 'anti-Semitism' organisation say that acts of racism and discrimination have *fallen*? It's not in the interests of their fundraising and power to influence and the same goes for the professional soccer anti-racism operation, Kick It Out. Two things confirmed that the Black Lives Matter riots in the summer of 2020 were Cult creations. One was that while anti-lockdown protests were condemned in this same period for 'transmitting 'Covid' the authorities supported mass gatherings of Black Lives Matter supporters. I even saw self-deluding people claiming to be doctors say the two types of protest were not the same. No – the non-existent 'Covid' was in favour of lockdowns and attacked those that protested against them while 'Covid' supported Black Lives Matter and kept well away from its protests. The whole thing was a joke and as lockdown protestors were arrested, often brutally, by reframed Face-Nappies we had the grotesque sight of police officers taking the knee to Black Lives Matter, a Cult-funded Marxist

organisation that supports violent riots and wants to destroy the nuclear family and white people.

### **He's not white? Shucks!**

Woke obsession with race was on display again when ten people were shot dead in Boulder, Colorado, in March, 2021. Cult-owned Woke TV channels like CNN said the shooter appeared to be a white man and Wokers were on Twitter condemning 'violent white men' with the usual mantras. Then the shooter's name was released as Ahmad Al Aliwi Alissa, an anti-Trump Arab-American, and the sigh of disappointment could be heard five miles away. Never mind that ten people were dead and what that meant for their families. Race baiting was all that mattered to these sick Cult-serving people like Barack Obama who exploited the deaths to further divide America on racial grounds which is his job for the Cult. This is the man that 'racist' white Americans made the first black president of the United States and then gave him a second term. Not-very-bright Obama has become filthy rich on the back of that and today appears to have a big influence on the Biden administration. Even so he's still a downtrodden black man and a victim of white supremacy. This disingenuous fraud reveals the contempt he has for black people when he puts on a Deep South Alabama accent whenever he talks to them, no, *at* them.

Another BLM red flag was how the now fully-Woke (fully-Cult) and fully-virtue-signalled professional soccer authorities had their teams taking the knee before every match in support of Marxist Black Lives Matter. Soccer authorities and clubs displayed 'Black Lives Matter' on the players' shirts and flashed the name on electronic billboards around the pitch. Any fans that condemned what is a Freemasonic taking-the-knee ritual were widely condemned as you would expect from the Woke virtue-signallers of professional sport and the now fully-Woke media. We have reverse racism in which you are banned from criticising any race or culture except for white people for whom anything goes – say what you like, no problem. What has this got to do with racial harmony and

equality? We've had black supremacists from Black Lives Matter telling white people to fall to their knees in the street and apologise for their white supremacy. Black supremacists acting like white supremacist slave owners of the past couldn't breach their self-obsessed, race-obsessed sense of self-purity. Joe Biden appointed a race-obsessed black supremacist Kristen Clarke to head the Justice Department Civil Rights Division. Clarke claimed that blacks are endowed with 'greater mental, physical and spiritual abilities' than whites. If anyone reversed that statement they would be vilified. Clarke is on-message so no problem. She's never seen a black-white situation in which the black figure is anything but a virtuous victim and she heads the Civil Rights Division which should treat everyone the same or it isn't civil rights. Another perception of the Renegade Mind: If something or someone is part of the Cult agenda they will be supported by Woke governments and media no matter what. If they're not, they will be condemned and censored. It really is that simple and so racist Clarke prospers despite (make that because of) her racism.

## **The end of culture**

Biden's administration is full of such racial, cultural and economic bias as the Cult requires the human family to be divided into warring factions. We are now seeing racially-segregated graduations and everything, but everything, is defined through the lens of perceived 'racism'. We have 'racist' mathematics, 'racist' food and even 'racist' *plants*. World famous Kew Gardens in London said it was changing labels on plants and flowers to tell its pre-'Covid' more than two million visitors a year how racist they are. Kew director Richard Deverell said this was part of an effort to 'move quickly to decolonise collections' after they were approached by one Ajay Chhabra 'an actor with an insight into how sugar cane was linked to slavery'. They are *plants* you idiots. 'Decolonisation' in the Woke manual really means colonisation of society with its mentality and by extension colonisation by the Cult. We are witnessing a new Chinese-style 'Cultural Revolution' so essential to the success of all

Marxist takeovers. Our cultural past and traditions have to be swept away to allow a new culture to be built-back-better. Woke targeting of long-standing Western cultural pillars including historical monuments and cancelling of historical figures is what happened in the Mao revolution in China which 'purged remnants of capitalist and traditional elements from Chinese society' and installed Maoism as the dominant ideology'. For China see the Western world today and for 'dominant ideology' see Woke. Better still see Marxism or Maoism. The 'Covid' hoax has specifically sought to destroy the arts and all elements of Western culture from people meeting in a pub or restaurant to closing theatres, music venues, sports stadiums, places of worship and even banning *singing*. Destruction of Western society is also why criticism of any religion is banned except for Christianity which again is the dominant religion as white is the numerically-dominant race. Christianity may be fading rapidly, but its history and traditions are weaved through the fabric of Western society. Delete the pillars and other structures will follow until the whole thing collapses. I am not a Christian defending that religion when I say that. I have no religion. It's just a fact. To this end Christianity has itself been turned Woke to usher its own downfall and its ranks are awash with 'change agents' – knowing and unknowing – at every level including Pope Francis (*definitely* knowing) and the clueless Archbishop of Canterbury Justin Welby (possibly not, but who can be sure?). Woke seeks to coordinate attacks on Western culture, traditions, and ways of life through 'intersectionality' defined as 'the complex, cumulative way in which the effects of multiple forms of discrimination (such as racism, sexism, and classism) combine, overlap, or intersect especially in the experiences of marginalised individuals or groups'. Wade through the Orwellian Woke-speak and this means coordinating disparate groups in a common cause to overthrow freedom and liberal values.

The entire structure of public institutions has been infested with Woke – government at all levels, political parties, police, military, schools, universities, advertising, media and trade unions. This abomination has been achieved through the Cult web by appointing

Wokers to positions of power and battering non-Wokers into line through intimidation, isolation and threats to their job. Many have been fired in the wake of the empathy-deleted, vicious hostility of 'social justice' Wokers and the desire of gutless, spineless employers to virtue-signal their Wokeness. Corporations are filled with Wokers today, most notably those in Silicon Valley. Ironically at the top they are not Woke at all. They are only exploiting the mentality their Cult masters have created and funded to censor and enslave while the Wokers cheer them on until it's their turn. Thus the Woke 'liberal left' is an inversion of the traditional liberal left. Campaigning for justice on the grounds of power and wealth distribution has been replaced by campaigning for identity politics. The genuine traditional left would never have taken money from today's billionaire abusers of fairness and justice and nor would the billionaires have wanted to fund that genuine left. It would not have been in their interests to do so. The division of opinion in those days was between the haves and have nots. This all changed with Cult manipulated and funded identity politics. The division of opinion today is between Wokers and non-Wokers and not income brackets. Cult corporations and their billionaires may have taken wealth disparity to cataclysmic levels of injustice, but as long as they speak the language of Woke, hand out the dosh to the Woke network and censor the enemy they are 'one of us'. Billionaires who don't give a damn about injustice are laughing at them till their bellies hurt. Wokers are not even close to self-aware enough to see that. The transformed 'left' dynamic means that Wokers who drone on about 'social justice' are funded by billionaires that have destroyed social justice the world over. It's *why* they are billionaires.

## **The climate con**

Nothing encapsulates what I have said more comprehensively than the hoax of human-caused global warming. I have detailed in my books over the years how Cult operatives and organisations were the pump-primers from the start of the climate con. A purpose-built vehicle for this is the Club of Rome established by the Cult in 1968

with the Rockefellers and Rothschilds centrally involved all along. Their gofer frontman Maurice Strong, a Canadian oil millionaire, hosted the Earth Summit in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, in 1992 where the global 'green movement' really expanded in earnest under the guiding hand of the Cult. The Earth Summit established Agenda 21 through the Cult-created-and-owned United Nations to use the illusion of human-caused climate change to justify the transformation of global society to save the world from climate disaster. It is a No-Problem-Reaction-Solution sold through governments, media, schools and universities as whole generations have been terrified into believing that the world was going to end in their lifetimes unless what old people had inflicted upon them was stopped by a complete restructuring of how everything is done. Chill, kids, it's all a hoax. Such restructuring is precisely what the Cult agenda demands (purely by coincidence of course). Today this has been given the codename of the Great Reset which is only an updated term for Agenda 21 and its associated Agenda 2030. The latter, too, is administered through the UN and was voted into being by the General Assembly in 2015. Both 21 and 2030 seek centralised control of all resources and food right down to the raindrops falling on your own land. These are some of the demands of Agenda 21 established in 1992. See if you recognise this society emerging today:

- End national sovereignty
- State planning and management of all land resources, ecosystems, deserts, forests, mountains, oceans and fresh water; agriculture; rural development; biotechnology; and ensuring '*equity*'
- The state to 'define the role' of business and financial resources
- Abolition of private property
- 'Restructuring' the family unit (see BLM)
- Children raised by the state
- People told what their job will be
- Major restrictions on movement
- Creation of 'human settlement zones'

- Mass resettlement as people are forced to vacate land where they live
- Dumbing down education
- Mass global depopulation in pursuit of all the above

The United Nations was created as a Trojan horse for world government. With the climate con of critical importance to promoting that outcome you would expect the UN to be involved. Oh, it's involved all right. The UN is promoting Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030 justified by 'climate change' while also driving the climate hoax through its Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC), one of the world's most corrupt organisations. The IPCC has been lying ferociously and constantly since the day it opened its doors with the global media hanging unquestioningly on its every mendacious word. The Green movement is entirely Woke and has long lost its original environmental focus since it was co-opted by the Cult. An obsession with 'global warming' has deleted its values and scrambled its head. I experienced a small example of what I mean on a beautiful country walk that I have enjoyed several times a week for many years. The path merged into the fields and forests and you felt at one with the natural world. Then a 'Green' organisation, the Hampshire and Isle of Wight Wildlife Trust, took over part of the land and proceeded to cut down a large number of trees, including mature ones, to install a horrible big, bright steel 'this-is-ours-stay-out' fence that destroyed the whole atmosphere of this beautiful place. No one with a feel for nature would do that. Day after day I walked to the sound of chainsaws and a magnificent mature weeping willow tree that I so admired was cut down at the base of the trunk. When I challenged a Woke young girl in a green shirt (of course) about this vandalism she replied: 'It's a weeping willow – it will grow back.' This is what people are paying for when they donate to the Hampshire and Isle of Wight Wildlife Trust and many other 'green' organisations today. It is not the environmental movement that I knew and instead has become a support-system – as with Extinction Rebellion – for a very dark agenda.

## Private jets for climate justice

The Cult-owned, Gates-funded, World Economic Forum and its founder Klaus Schwab were behind the emergence of Greta Thunberg to harness the young behind the climate agenda and she was invited to speak to the world at ... the UN. Schwab published a book, *Covid-19: The Great Reset* in 2020 in which he used the 'Covid' hoax and the climate hoax to lay out a new society straight out of Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030. Bill Gates followed in early 2021 when he took time out from destroying the world to produce a book in his name about the way to save it. Gates flies across the world in private jets and admitted that 'I probably have one of the highest greenhouse gas footprints of anyone on the planet ... my personal flying alone is gigantic.' He has also bid for the planet's biggest private jet operator. Other climate change saviours who fly in private jets include John Kerry, the US Special Presidential Envoy for Climate, and actor Leonardo DiCaprio, a 'UN Messenger of Peace with special focus on climate change'. These people are so full of bullshit they could corner the market in manure. We mustn't be sceptical, though, because the Gates book, *How to Avoid a Climate Disaster: The Solutions We Have and the Breakthroughs We Need*, is a genuine attempt to protect the world and not an obvious pile of excrement attributed to a mega-psychopath aimed at selling his masters' plans for humanity. The Gates book and the other shite-pile by Klaus Schwab could have been written by the same person and may well have been. Both use 'climate change' and 'Covid' as the excuses for their new society and by coincidence the Cult's World Economic Forum and Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation promote the climate hoax and hosted Event 201 which pre-empted with a 'simulation' the very 'coronavirus' hoax that would be simulated for real on humanity within weeks. The British 'royal' family is promoting the 'Reset' as you would expect through Prince 'climate change caused the war in Syria' Charles and his hapless son Prince William who said that we must 'reset our relationship with nature and our trajectory as a species' to avoid a climate disaster. Amazing how many promoters of the 'Covid' and 'climate change' control



systems are connected to Gates and the World Economic Forum. A 'study' in early 2021 claimed that carbon dioxide emissions must fall by the equivalent of a global lockdown roughly every two years for the next decade to save the planet. The 'study' appeared in the same period that the Schwab mob claimed in a video that lockdowns destroying the lives of billions are good because they make the earth 'quieter' with less 'ambient noise'. They took down the video amid a public backlash for such arrogant, empathy-deleted stupidity. You see, however, where they are going with this. Corinne Le Quéré, a professor at the Tyndall Centre for Climate Change Research, University of East Anglia, was lead author of the climate lockdown study, and she writes for ... the World Economic Forum. Gates calls in 'his' book for changing 'every aspect of the economy' (long-time Cult agenda) and for humans to eat synthetic 'meat' (predicted in my books) while cows and other farm animals are eliminated. Australian TV host and commentator Alan Jones described what carbon emission targets would mean for farm animals in Australia alone if emissions were reduced as demanded by 35 percent by 2030 and zero by 2050:

Well, let's take agriculture, the total emissions from agriculture are about 75 million tonnes of carbon dioxide, equivalent. Now reduce that by 35 percent and you have to come down to 50 million tonnes, I've done the maths. So if you take for example 1.5 million cows, you're going to have to reduce the herd by 525,000 [by] 2030, nine years, that's 58,000 cows a year. The beef herd's 30 million, reduce that by 35 percent, that's 10.5 million, which means 1.2 million cattle have to go every year between now and 2030. This is insanity!

There are 75 million sheep. Reduce that by 35 percent, that's 26 million sheep, that's almost 3 million a year. So under the Paris Agreement over 30 million beasts, dairy cows, cattle, pigs and sheep would go. More than 8,000 every minute of every hour for the next decade, do these people know what they're talking about?

Clearly they don't at the level of campaigners, politicians and administrators. The Cult *does* know; that's the outcome it wants. We are faced with not just a war on humanity. Animals and the natural world are being targeted and I have been saying since the 'Covid' hoax began that the plan eventually was to claim that the 'deadly virus' is able to jump from animals, including farm animals and

domestic pets, to humans. Just before this book went into production came this story: 'Russia registers world's first Covid-19 vaccine for cats & dogs as makers of Sputnik V warn pets & farm animals could spread virus'. The report said 'top scientists warned that the deadly pathogen could soon begin spreading through homes and farms' and 'the next stage is the infection of farm and domestic animals'. Know the outcome and you'll see the journey. Think what that would mean for animals and keep your eye on a term called zoonosis or zoonotic diseases which transmit between animals and humans. The Cult wants to break the connection between animals and people as it does between people and people. Farm animals fit with the Cult agenda to transform food from natural to synthetic.

## **The gas of life is killing us**

There can be few greater examples of Cult inversion than the condemnation of carbon dioxide as a dangerous pollutant when it is the gas of life. Without it the natural world would be dead and so we would all be dead. We breathe in oxygen and breathe out carbon dioxide while plants produce oxygen and absorb carbon dioxide. It is a perfect symbiotic relationship that the Cult wants to dismantle for reasons I will come to in the final two chapters. Gates, Schwab, other Cult operatives and mindless repeaters, want the world to be 'carbon neutral' by at least 2050 and the earlier the better. 'Zero carbon' is the cry echoed by lunatics calling for 'Zero Covid' when we already have it. These carbon emission targets will deindustrialise the world in accordance with Cult plans – the post-industrial, post-democratic society – and with so-called renewables like solar and wind not coming even close to meeting human energy needs blackouts and cold are inevitable. Texans got the picture in the winter of 2021 when a snow storm stopped wind turbines and solar panels from working and the lights went down along with water which relies on electricity for its supply system. Gates wants everything to be powered by electricity to ensure that his masters have the kill switch to stop all human activity, movement, cooking, water and warmth any time they like. The climate lie is so

stupendously inverted that it claims we must urgently reduce carbon dioxide when we *don't have enough*.

Co2 in the atmosphere is a little above 400 parts per million when the optimum for plant growth is 2,000 ppm and when it falls anywhere near 150 ppm the natural world starts to die and so do we. It fell to as low as 280 ppm in an 1880 measurement in Hawaii and rose to 413 ppm in 2019 with industrialisation which is why the planet has become *greener* in the industrial period. How insane then that psychopathic madman Gates is not satisfied only with blocking the rise of Co2. He's funding technology to suck it out of the atmosphere. The reason why will become clear. The industrial era is not destroying the world through Co2 and has instead turned around a potentially disastrous ongoing fall in Co2. Greenpeace co-founder and scientist Patrick Moore walked away from Greenpeace in 1986 and has exposed the green movement for fear-mongering and lies. He said that 500 million years ago there was *17 times* more Co2 in the atmosphere than we have today and levels have been falling for hundreds of millions of years. In the last 150 million years Co2 levels in Earth's atmosphere had reduced by *90 percent*. Moore said that by the time humanity began to unlock carbon dioxide from fossil fuels we were at '38 seconds to midnight' and in that sense: 'Humans are [the Earth's] salvation.' Moore made the point that only half the Co2 emitted by fossil fuels stays in the atmosphere and we should remember that all pollution pouring from chimneys that we are told is carbon dioxide is in fact nothing of the kind. It's pollution. Carbon dioxide is an invisible gas.

William Happer, Professor of Physics at Princeton University and long-time government adviser on climate, has emphasised the Co2 deficiency for maximum growth and food production. Greenhouse growers don't add carbon dioxide for a bit of fun. He said that most of the warming in the last 100 years, after the earth emerged from the super-cold period of the 'Little Ice Age' into a natural warming cycle, was over by 1940. Happer said that a peak year for warming in 1988 can be explained by a 'monster El Nino' which is a natural and cyclical warming of the Pacific that has nothing to do with 'climate

change'. He said the effect of Co2 could be compared to painting a wall with red paint in that once two or three coats have been applied it didn't matter how much more you slapped on because the wall will not get much redder. Almost all the effect of the rise in Co2 has already happened, he said, and the volume in the atmosphere would now have to *double* to increase temperature by a single degree. Climate hoaxers know this and they have invented the most ridiculously complicated series of 'feedback' loops to try to overcome this rather devastating fact. You hear puppet Greta going on cluelessly about feedback loops and this is why.

### **The Sun affects temperature? No you *climate denier***

Some other nonsense to contemplate: Climate graphs show that rises in temperature do not follow rises in Co2 – *it's the other way round* with a lag between the two of some 800 years. If we go back 800 years from present time we hit the Medieval Warm Period when temperatures were higher than now without any industrialisation and this was followed by the Little Ice Age when temperatures plummeted. The world was still emerging from these centuries of serious cold when many climate records began which makes the ever-repeated line of the 'hottest year since records began' meaningless when you are not comparing like with like. The coldest period of the Little Ice Age corresponded with the lowest period of sunspot activity when the Sun was at its least active. Proper scientists will not be at all surprised by this when it confirms the obvious fact that earth temperature is affected by the scale of Sun activity and the energetic power that it subsequently emits; but when is the last time you heard a climate hoaxer talking about the Sun as a source of earth temperature?? Everything has to be focussed on Co2 which makes up just 0.117 percent of so-called greenhouse gases and only a fraction of even that is generated by human activity. The rest is natural. More than 90 percent of those greenhouse gases are water vapour and clouds ([Fig 9](#)). Ban moisture I say. Have you noticed that the climate hoaxers no longer use the polar bear as their promotion image? That's because far from becoming extinct polar

bear communities are stable or thriving. Joe Bastardi, American meteorologist, weather forecaster and outspoken critic of the climate lie, documents in his book *The Climate Chronicles* how weather patterns and events claimed to be evidence of climate change have been happening since long before industrialisation: 'What happened before naturally is happening again, as is to be expected given the cyclical nature of the climate due to the design of the planet.' If you read the detailed background to the climate hoax in my other books you will shake your head and wonder how anyone could believe the crap which has spawned a multi-trillion dollar industry based on absolute garbage (see HIV causes AIDs and Sars-Cov-2 causes 'Covid-19'). Climate and 'Covid' have much in common given they have the same source. They both have the contradictory *everything* factor in which everything is explained by reference to them. It's hot – 'it's climate change'. It's cold – 'it's climate change'. I got a sniffle – 'it's Covid'. I haven't got a sniffle – 'it's Covid'. Not having a sniffle has to be a symptom of 'Covid'. Everything is and not having a sniffle is especially dangerous if you are a slow walker. For sheer audacity I offer you a Cambridge University 'study' that actually linked 'Covid' to 'climate change'. It had to happen eventually. They concluded that climate change played a role in 'Covid-19' spreading from animals to humans because ... wait for it ... I kid you not ... *the two groups were forced closer together as populations grow*. Er, that's it. The whole foundation on which this depended was that 'Bats are the likely zoonotic origin of SARS-CoV-1 and SARS-CoV-2'. Well, they are not. They are nothing to do with it. Apart from bats not being the origin and therefore 'climate change' effects on bats being irrelevant I am in awe of their academic insight. Where would we be without them? Not where we are that's for sure.

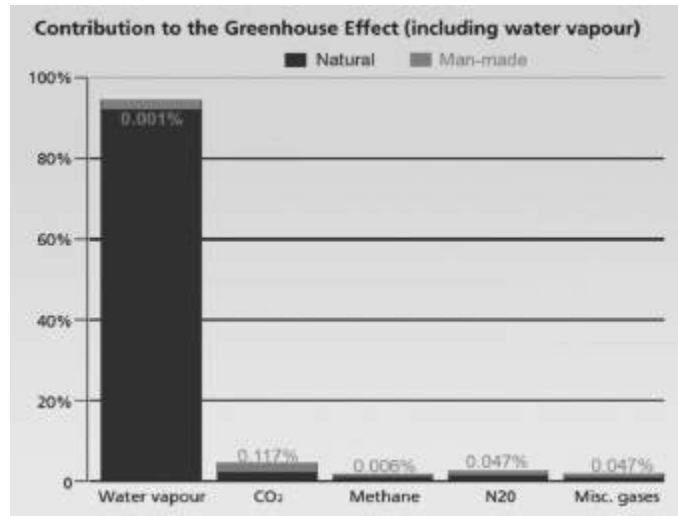


**Figure 9:** The idea that the gas of life is disastrously changing the climate is an insult to brain cell activity.

One other point about the weather is that climate modification is now well advanced and not every major weather event is natural – or earthquake come to that. I cover this subject at some length in other books. China is openly planning a rapid expansion of its weather modification programme which includes changing the climate in an area more than one and a half times the size of India. China used weather manipulation to ensure clear skies during the 2008 Olympics in Beijing. I have quoted from US military documents detailing how to employ weather manipulation as a weapon of war and they did that in the 1960s and 70s during the conflict in Vietnam with Operation Popeye manipulating monsoon rains for military purposes. Why would there be international treaties on weather modification if it wasn't possible? Of course it is. Weather is energetic information and it can be changed.

### **How was the climate hoax pulled off? See 'Covid'**

If you can get billions to believe in a 'virus' that doesn't exist you can get them to believe in human-caused climate change that doesn't exist. Both are being used by the Cult to transform global society in the way it has long planned. Both hoaxes have been achieved in pretty much the same way. First you declare a lie is a fact. There's a

'virus' you call SARS-Cov-2 or humans are warming the planet with their behaviour. Next this becomes, via Cult networks, the foundation of government, academic and science policy and belief. Those who parrot the mantra are given big grants to produce research that confirms the narrative is true and ever more 'symptoms' are added to make the 'virus'/'climate change' sound even more scary. Scientists and researchers who challenge the narrative have their grants withdrawn and their careers destroyed. The media promote the lie as the unquestionable truth and censor those with an alternative view or evidence. A great percentage of the population believe what they are told as the lie becomes an everybody-knows-that and the believing-masses turn on those with a mind of their own. The technique has been used endlessly throughout human history. Wokers are the biggest promoters of the climate lie *and* 'Covid' fascism because their minds are owned by the Cult; their sense of self-righteous self-purity knows no bounds; and they exist in a bubble of reality in which facts are irrelevant and only get in the way of looking without seeing.

Running through all of this like veins in a blue cheese is control of information, which means control of perception, which means control of behaviour, which collectively means control of human society. The Cult owns the global media and Silicon Valley fascists for the simple reason that it *has* to. Without control of information it can't control perception and through that human society. Examine every facet of the Cult agenda and you will see that anything supporting its introduction is never censored while anything pushing back is always censored. I say again: Psychopaths that know why they are doing this must go before Nuremberg trials and those that follow their orders must trot along behind them into the same dock. 'I was just following orders' didn't work the first time and it must not work now. Nuremberg trials must be held all over the world before public juries for politicians, government officials, police, compliant doctors, scientists and virologists, and all Cult operatives such as Gates, Tedros, Fauci, Vallance, Whitty, Ferguson, Zuckerberg, Wojcicki, Brin, Page, Dorsey, the whole damn lot of

them – including, no *especially*, the psychopath psychologists. Without them and the brainless, gutless excuses for journalists that have repeated their lies, none of this could be happening. Nobody can be allowed to escape justice for the psychological and economic Armageddon they are all responsible for visiting upon the human race.

As for the compliant, unquestioning, swathes of humanity, and the self-obsessed, all-knowing ignorance of the Wokers ... don't start me. God help their kids. God help their grandkids. God *help them*.



## CHAPTER NINE

### **We must have it? So what is it?**

*Well I won't back down. No, I won't back down. You can stand me  
up at the Gates of Hell. But I won't back down*

**Tom Petty**

I will now focus on the genetically-manipulating 'Covid vaccines' which do not meet this official definition of a vaccine by the US Centers for Disease Control (CDC): 'A product that stimulates a person's immune system to produce immunity to a specific disease, protecting the person from that disease.' On that basis 'Covid vaccines' are not a vaccine in that the makers don't even claim they stop infection or transmission.

They are instead part of a multi-levelled conspiracy to change the nature of the human body and what it means to be 'human' and to depopulate an enormous swathe of humanity. What I shall call Human 1.0 is on the cusp of becoming Human 2.0 and for very sinister reasons. Before I get to the 'Covid vaccine' in detail here's some background to vaccines in general. Government regulators do not test vaccines – the makers do – and the makers control which data is revealed and which isn't. Children in America are given 50 vaccine doses by age six and 69 by age 19 and the effect of the whole combined schedule has never been tested. Autoimmune diseases when the immune system attacks its own body have soared in the mass vaccine era and so has disease in general in children and the young. Why wouldn't this be the case when vaccines target the *immune system*? The US government gave Big Pharma drug

companies immunity from prosecution for vaccine death and injury in the 1986 National Childhood Vaccine Injury Act (NCVIA) and since then the government (taxpayer) has been funding compensation for the consequences of Big Pharma vaccines. The criminal and satanic drug giants can't lose and the vaccine schedule has increased dramatically since 1986 for this reason. There is no incentive to make vaccines safe and a big incentive to make money by introducing ever more. Even against a ridiculously high bar to prove vaccine liability, and with the government controlling the hearing in which it is being challenged for compensation, the vaccine court has so far paid out more than \$4 billion. These are the vaccines we are told are safe and psychopaths like Zuckerberg censor posts saying otherwise. The immunity law was even justified by a ruling that vaccines by their nature were 'unavoidably unsafe'.

Check out the ingredients of vaccines and you will be shocked if you are new to this. *They put that in children's bodies?? What??* Try aluminium, a brain toxin connected to dementia, aborted foetal tissue and formaldehyde which is used to embalm corpses. World-renowned aluminium expert Christopher Exley had his research into the health effect of aluminium in vaccines shut down by Keele University in the UK when it began taking funding from the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Research when diseases 'eradicated' by vaccines began to decline and you will find the fall began long *before* the vaccine was introduced. Sometimes the fall even plateaued after the vaccine. Diseases like scarlet fever for which there was no vaccine declined in the same way because of environmental and other factors. A perfect case in point is the polio vaccine. Polio began when lead arsenate was first sprayed as an insecticide and residues remained in food products. Spraying started in 1892 and the first US polio epidemic came in Vermont in 1894. The simple answer was to stop spraying, but Rockefeller-created Big Pharma had a better idea. Polio was decreed to be caused by the *poliovirus* which 'spreads from person to person and can infect a person's spinal cord'. Lead arsenate was replaced by the lethal DDT which had the same effect of causing paralysis by damaging the brain and central nervous

system. Polio plummeted when DDT was reduced and then banned, but the vaccine is still given the credit for something it didn't do. Today by far the biggest cause of polio is the vaccines promoted by Bill Gates. Vaccine justice campaigner Robert Kennedy Jr, son of assassinated (by the Cult) US Attorney General Robert Kennedy, wrote:

In 2017, the World Health Organization (WHO) reluctantly admitted that the global explosion in polio is predominantly vaccine strain. The most frightening epidemics in Congo, Afghanistan, and the Philippines, are all linked to vaccines. In fact, by 2018, 70% of global polio cases were vaccine strain.

Vaccines make fortunes for Cult-owned Gates and Big Pharma while undermining the health and immune systems of the population. We had a glimpse of the mentality behind the Big Pharma cartel with a report on WION (World is One News), an international English language TV station based in India, which exposed the extraordinary behaviour of US drug company Pfizer over its 'Covid vaccine'. The WION report told how Pfizer had made fantastic demands of Argentina, Brazil and other countries in return for its 'vaccine'. These included immunity from prosecution, even for Pfizer negligence, government insurance to protect Pfizer from law suits and handing over as collateral sovereign assets of the country to include Argentina's bank reserves, military bases and embassy buildings. Pfizer demanded the same of Brazil in the form of waiving sovereignty of its assets abroad; exempting Pfizer from Brazilian laws; and giving Pfizer immunity from all civil liability. This is a 'vaccine' developed with government funding. Big Pharma is evil incarnate as a creation of the Cult and all must be handed tickets to Nuremberg.

### **Phantom 'vaccine' for a phantom 'disease'**

I'll expose the 'Covid vaccine' fraud and then go on to the wider background of why the Cult has set out to 'vaccinate' every man, woman and child on the planet for an alleged 'new disease' with a survival rate of 99.77 percent (or more) even by the grotesquely-

manipulated figures of the World Health Organization and Johns Hopkins University. The 'infection' to 'death' ratio is 0.23 to 0.15 percent according to Stanford epidemiologist Dr John Ioannidis and while estimates vary the danger remains tiny. I say that if the truth be told the fake infection to fake death ratio is zero. Never mind all the evidence I have presented here and in *The Answer* that there is no 'virus' let us just focus for a moment on that death-rate figure of say 0.23 percent. The figure includes all those worldwide who have tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' and then died within 28 days or even longer of any other cause – *any other cause*. Now subtract all those illusory 'Covid' deaths on the global data sheets from the 0.23 percent. What do you think you would be left with? *Zero*. A vaccination has never been successfully developed for a so-called coronavirus. They have all failed at the animal testing stage when they caused hypersensitivity to what they were claiming to protect against and made the impact of a disease far worse. Cult-owned vaccine corporations got around that problem this time by bypassing animal trials, going straight to humans and making the length of the 'trials' before the public rollout as short as they could get away with. Normally it takes five to ten years or more to develop vaccines that still cause demonstrable harm to many people and that's without including the long-term effects that are never officially connected to the vaccination. 'Covid' non-vaccines have been officially produced and approved in a matter of months from a standing start and part of the reason is that (a) they were developed before the 'Covid' hoax began and (b) they are based on computer programs and not natural sources. Official non-trials were so short that government agencies gave *emergency*, not full, approval. 'Trials' were not even completed and full approval cannot be secured until they are. Public 'Covid vaccination' is actually a *continuation of the trial*. Drug company 'trials' are not scheduled to end until 2023 by which time a lot of people are going to be dead. Data on which government agencies gave this emergency approval was supplied by the Big Pharma corporations themselves in the form of Pfizer/BioNTech, AstraZeneca, Moderna, Johnson & Johnson, and

others, and this is the case with all vaccines. By its very nature *emergency* approval means drug companies do not have to prove that the 'vaccine' is 'safe and effective'. How could they with trials way short of complete? Government regulators only have to *believe* that they *could* be safe and effective. It is criminal manipulation to get products in circulation with no testing worth the name. Agencies giving that approval are infested with Big Pharma-connected place-people and they act in the interests of Big Pharma (the Cult) and not the public about whom they do not give a damn.

## **More human lab rats**

'Covid vaccines' produced in record time by Pfizer/BioNTech and Moderna employ a technique *never approved before for use on humans*. They are known as mRNA 'vaccines' and inject a synthetic version of 'viral' mRNA or 'messenger RNA'. The key is in the term 'messenger'. The body works, or doesn't, on the basis of information messaging. Communications are constantly passing between and within the genetic system and the brain. Change those messages and you change the state of the body and even its very nature and you can change psychology and behaviour by the way the brain processes information. I think you are going to see significant changes in personality and perception of many people who have had the 'Covid vaccine' synthetic potions. Insider Aldous Huxley predicted the following in 1961 and mRNA 'vaccines' can be included in the term 'pharmacological methods':

There will be, in the next generation or so, a pharmacological method of making people love their servitude, and producing dictatorship without tears, so to speak, producing a kind of painless concentration camp for entire societies, so that people will in fact have their own liberties taken away from them, but rather enjoy it, because they will be distracted from any desire to rebel by propaganda or brainwashing, or brainwashing enhanced by pharmacological methods. And this seems to be the final revolution.

Apologists claim that mRNA synthetic 'vaccines' don't change the DNA genetic blueprint because RNA does not affect DNA only the other way round. This is so disingenuous. A process called 'reverse

transcription' can convert RNA into DNA and be integrated into DNA in the cell nucleus. This was highlighted in December, 2020, by scientists at Harvard and Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT). Geneticists report that more than 40 percent of mammalian genomes results from reverse transcription. On the most basic level if messaging changes then that sequence must lead to changes in DNA which is receiving and transmitting those communications. How can introducing synthetic material into cells not change the cells where DNA is located? The process is known as transfection which is defined as 'a technique to insert foreign nucleic acid (DNA or RNA) into a cell, typically with the intention of altering the properties of the cell'. Researchers at the Sloan Kettering Institute in New York found that changes in messenger RNA can deactivate tumour-suppressing proteins and thereby promote cancer. This is what happens when you mess with messaging. 'Covid vaccine' maker Moderna was founded in 2010 by Canadian stem cell biologist Derrick J. Rossi after his breakthrough discovery in the field of transforming and reprogramming stem cells. These are neutral cells that can be programmed to become any cell including sperm cells. Moderna was therefore founded on the principle of genetic manipulation and has never produced any vaccine or drug before its genetically-manipulating synthetic 'Covid' shite. Look at the name – Mode-RNA or Modify-RNA. Another important point is that the US Supreme Court has ruled that genetically-modified DNA, or complementary DNA (cDNA) synthesized in the laboratory from messenger RNA, can be patented and owned. These psychopaths are doing this to the human body.

Cells replicate synthetic mRNA in the 'Covid vaccines' and in theory the body is tricked into making antigens which trigger antibodies to target the 'virus spike proteins' which as Dr Tom Cowan said have *never been seen*. Cut the crap and these 'vaccines' deliver *self-replicating* synthetic material to the cells with the effect of changing human DNA. The more of them you have the more that process is compounded while synthetic material is all the time self-replicating. 'Vaccine'-maker Moderna describes mRNA as 'like

software for the cell' and so they are messing with the body's software. What happens when you change the software in a computer? Everything changes. For this reason the Cult is preparing a production line of mRNA 'Covid vaccines' and a long list of excuses to use them as with all the 'variants' of a 'virus' never shown to exist. The plan is further to transfer the mRNA technique to other vaccines mostly given to children and young people. The cumulative consequences will be a transformation of human DNA through a constant infusion of synthetic genetic material which will kill many and change the rest. Now consider that governments that have given emergency approval for a vaccine that's not a vaccine; never been approved for humans before; had no testing worth the name; and the makers have been given immunity from prosecution for any deaths or adverse effects suffered by the public. The UK government awarded *permanent legal indemnity* to itself and its employees for harm done when a patient is being treated for 'Covid-19' or 'suspected Covid-19'. That is quite a thought when these are possible 'side-effects' from the 'vaccine' (they are not 'side', they are effects) listed by the US Food and Drug Administration:

Guillain-Barre syndrome; acute disseminated encephalomyelitis; transverse myelitis; encephalitis; myelitis; encephalomyelitis; meningoencephalitis; meningitis; encephalopathy; convulsions; seizures; stroke; narcolepsy; cataplexy; anaphylaxis; acute myocardial infarction (heart attack); myocarditis; pericarditis; autoimmune disease; death; implications for pregnancy, and birth outcomes; other acute demyelinating diseases; non anaphylactic allergy reactions; thrombocytopenia ; disseminated intravascular coagulation; venous thromboembolism; arthritis; arthralgia; joint pain; Kawasaki disease; multisystem inflammatory syndrome in children; vaccine enhanced disease. The latter is the way the 'vaccine' has the potential to make diseases far worse than they would otherwise be.

UK doctor and freedom campaigner Vernon Coleman described the conditions in this list as 'all unpleasant, most of them very serious, and you can't get more serious than death'. The thought that anyone at all has had the 'vaccine' in these circumstances is testament to the potential that humanity has for clueless, unquestioning, stupidity and for many that programmed stupidity has already been terminal.

## **An insider speaks**

Dr Michael Yeadon is a former Vice President, head of research and Chief Scientific Adviser at vaccine giant Pfizer. Yeadon worked on the inside of Big Pharma, but that did not stop him becoming a vocal critic of 'Covid vaccines' and their potential for multiple harms, including infertility in women. By the spring of 2021 he went much further and even used the no, no, term 'conspiracy'. When you begin to see what is going on it is impossible not to do so. Yeadon spoke out in an interview with freedom campaigner James Delingpole and I mentioned earlier how he said that no one had samples of 'the virus'. He explained that the mRNA technique originated in the anti-cancer field and ways to turn on and off certain genes which could be advantageous if you wanted to stop cancer growing out of control. 'That's the origin of them. They are a very unusual application, really.' Yeadon said that treating a cancer patient with an aggressive procedure might be understandable if the alternative was dying, but it was quite another thing to use the same technique as a public health measure. Most people involved wouldn't catch the infectious agent you were vaccinating against and if they did they probably wouldn't die:

If you are really using it as a public health measure you really want to as close as you can get to zero side-effects ... I find it odd that they chose techniques that were really cutting their teeth in the field of oncology and I'm worried that in using gene-based vaccines that have to be injected in the body and spread around the body, get taken up into some cells, and the regulators haven't quite told us which cells they get taken up into ... you are going to be generating a wide range of responses ... with multiple steps each of which could go well or badly.



I doubt the Cult intends it to go well. Yeadon said that you can put any gene you like into the body through the 'vaccine'. 'You can certainly give them a gene that would do them some harm if you wanted.' I was intrigued when he said that when used in the cancer field the technique could turn genes on and off. I explore this process in *The Answer* and with different genes having different functions you could create mayhem – physically and psychologically – if you turned the wrong ones on and the right ones off. I read reports of an experiment by researchers at the University of Washington's school of computer science and engineering in which they encoded DNA to infect computers. The body is itself a biological computer and if human DNA can inflict damage on a computer why can't the computer via synthetic material mess with the human body? It can. The Washington research team said it was possible to insert malicious malware into 'physical DNA strands' and corrupt the computer system of a gene sequencing machine as it 'reads gene letters and stores them as binary digits 0 and 1'. They concluded that hackers could one day use blood or spit samples to access computer systems and obtain sensitive data from police forensics labs or infect genome files. It is at this level of digital interaction that synthetic 'vaccines' need to be seen to get the full picture and that will become very clear later on. Michael Yeadon said it made no sense to give the 'vaccine' to younger people who were in no danger from the 'virus'. What was the benefit? It was all downside with potential effects:

The fact that my government in what I thought was a civilised, rational country, is raining [the 'vaccine'] on people in their 30s and 40s, even my children in their 20s, they're getting letters and phone calls, I know this is not right and any of you doctors who are vaccinating you know it's not right, too. They are not at risk. They are not at risk from the disease, so you are now hoping that the side-effects are so rare that you get away with it. You don't give new technology ... that you don't understand to 100 percent of the population.

Blood clot problems with the AstraZeneca 'vaccine' have been affecting younger people to emphasise the downside risks with no benefit. AstraZeneca's version, produced with Oxford University, does not use mRNA, but still gets its toxic cocktail inside cells where

it targets DNA. The Johnson & Johnson 'vaccine' which uses a similar technique has also produced blood clot effects to such an extent that the United States paused its use at one point. They are all 'gene therapy' (cell modification) procedures and not 'vaccines'. The truth is that once the content of these injections enter cells we have no idea what the effect will be. People can speculate and some can give very educated opinions and that's good. In the end, though, only the makers know what their potions are designed to do and even they won't know every last consequence. Michael Yeadon was scathing about doctors doing what they knew to be wrong. 'Everyone's mute', he said. Doctors in the NHS must know this was not right, coming into work and injecting people. 'I don't know how they sleep at night. I know I couldn't do it. I know that if I were in that position I'd have to quit.' He said he knew enough about toxicology to know this was not a good risk-benefit. Yeadon had spoken to seven or eight university professors and all except two would not speak out publicly. Their universities had a policy that no one said anything that countered the government and its medical advisors. They were afraid of losing their government grants. This is how intimidation has been used to silence the truth at every level of the system. I say silence, but these people could still speak out if they made that choice. Yeadon called them 'moral cowards' – 'This is about your children and grandchildren's lives and you have just buggered off and left it.'

## **'Variant' nonsense**

Some of his most powerful comments related to the alleged 'variants' being used to instil more fear, justify more lockdowns, and introduce more 'vaccines'. He said government claims about 'variants' were nonsense. He had checked the alleged variant 'codes' and they were 99.7 percent identical to the 'original'. This was the human identity difference equivalent to putting a baseball cap on and off or wearing it the other way round. A 0.3 percent difference would make it impossible for that 'variant' to escape immunity from the 'original'. This made no sense of having new 'vaccines' for

‘variants’. He said there would have to be at least a *30 percent* difference for that to be justified and even then he believed the immune system would still recognise what it was. Gates-funded ‘variant modeller’ and ‘vaccine’-pusher John Edmunds might care to comment. Yeadon said drug companies were making new versions of the ‘vaccine’ as a ‘top up’ for ‘variants’. Worse than that, he said, the ‘regulators’ around the world like the MHRA in the UK had got together and agreed that because ‘vaccines’ for ‘variants’ were so similar to the first ‘vaccines’ *they did not have to do safety studies*. How transparently sinister that is. This is when Yeadon said: ‘There is a conspiracy here.’ There was no need for another vaccine for ‘variants’ and yet we were told that there was and the country had shut its borders because of them. ‘They are going into hundreds of millions of arms without passing ‘go’ or any regulator. Why did they do that? Why did they pick this method of making the vaccine?’

The reason had to be something bigger than that it seemed and ‘it’s not protection against the virus’. It’s was a far bigger project that meant politicians and advisers were willing to do things and not do things that knowingly resulted in avoidable deaths – ‘that’s already happened when you think about lockdown and deprivation of health care for a year.’ He spoke of people prepared to do something that results in the avoidable death of their fellow human beings and it not bother them. This is the penny-drop I have been working to get across for more than 30 years – the level of pure evil we are dealing with. Yeadon said his friends and associates could not believe there could be that much evil, but he reminded them of Stalin, Pol Pot and Hitler and of what Stalin had said: ‘One death is a tragedy. A million? A statistic.’ He could not think of a benign explanation for why you need top-up vaccines ‘which I’m sure you don’t’ and for the regulators ‘to just get out of the way and wave them through’. Why would the regulators do that when they were still wrestling with the dangers of the ‘parent’ vaccine? He was clearly shocked by what he had seen since the ‘Covid’ hoax began and now he was thinking the previously unthinkable:

If you wanted to depopulate a significant proportion of the world and to do it in a way that doesn't involve destruction of the environment with nuclear weapons, poisoning everyone with anthrax or something like that, and you wanted plausible deniability while you had a multi-year infectious disease crisis, I actually don't think you could come up with a better plan of work than seems to be in front of me. I can't say that's what they are going to do, but I can't think of a benign explanation why they are doing it.

He said he never thought that they would get rid of 99 percent of humans, but now he wondered. 'If you wanted to that this would be a hell of a way to do it – it would be unstoppable folks.' Yeadon had concluded that those who submitted to the 'vaccine' would be allowed to have some kind of normal life (but for how long?) while screws were tightened to coerce and mandate the last few percent. 'I think they'll put the rest of them in a prison camp. I wish I was wrong, but I don't think I am.' Other points he made included: There were no coronavirus vaccines then suddenly they all come along at the same time; we have no idea of the long term affect with trials so short; coercing or forcing people to have medical procedures is against the Nuremberg Code instigated when the Nazis did just that; people should at least delay having the 'vaccine'; a quick Internet search confirms that masks don't reduce respiratory viral transmission and 'the government knows that'; they have smashed civil society and they know that, too; two dozen peer-reviewed studies show no connection between lockdown and reducing deaths; he knew from personal friends the elite were still flying around and going on holiday while the public were locked down; the elite were not having the 'vaccines'. He was also asked if 'vaccines' could be made to target difference races. He said he didn't know, but the document by the Project for the New American Century in September, 2000, said developing 'advanced forms of biological warfare that can target *specific genotypes* may transform biological warfare from the realm of terror to a politically useful tool.' Oh, they're evil all right. Of that we can be *absolutely* sure.

## **Another cull of old people**

We have seen from the CDC definition that the mRNA 'Covid vaccine' is not a vaccine and nor are the others that *claim* to reduce 'severity of symptoms' in *some* people, but not protect from infection or transmission. What about all the lies about returning to 'normal' if people were 'vaccinated'? If they are not claimed to stop infection and transmission of the alleged 'virus', how does anything change? This was all lies to manipulate people to take the jabs and we are seeing that now with masks and distancing still required for the 'vaccinated'. How did they think that elderly people with fragile health and immune responses were going to be affected by infusing their cells with synthetic material and other toxic substances? They *knew* that in the short and long term it would be devastating and fatal as the culling of the old that began with the first lockdowns was continued with the 'vaccine'. Death rates in care homes soared immediately residents began to be 'vaccinated' – infused with synthetic material. Brave and committed whistleblower nurses put their careers at risk by exposing this truth while the rest kept their heads down and their mouths shut to put their careers before those they are supposed to care for. A long-time American Certified Nursing Assistant who gave his name as James posted a video in which he described emotionally what happened in his care home when vaccination began. He said that during 2020 very few residents were sick with 'Covid' and no one died during the entire year; but shortly after the Pfizer mRNA injections 14 people died within two weeks and many others were near death. 'They're dropping like flies', he said. Residents who walked on their own before the shot could no longer and they had lost their ability to conduct an intelligent conversation. The home's management said the sudden deaths were caused by a 'super-spreader' of 'Covid-19'. Then how come, James asked, that residents who refused to take the injections were not sick? It was a case of inject the elderly with mRNA synthetic potions and blame their illness and death that followed on the 'virus'. James described what was happening in care homes as 'the greatest crime of genocide this country has ever seen'. Remember the NHS staff nurse from earlier who used the same

word 'genocide' for what was happening with the 'vaccines' and that it was an 'act of human annihilation'. A UK care home whistleblower told a similar story to James about the effect of the 'vaccine' in deaths and 'outbreaks' of illness dubbed 'Covid' after getting the jab. She told how her care home management and staff had zealously imposed government regulations and no one was allowed to even question the official narrative let alone speak out against it. She said the NHS was even worse. Again we see the results of reframing. A worker at a local care home where I live said they had not had a single case of 'Covid' there for almost a year and when the residents were 'vaccinated' they had 19 positive cases in two weeks with eight dying.

### **It's not the 'vaccine' – honest**

The obvious cause and effect was being ignored by the media and most of the public. Australia's health minister Greg Hunt (a former head of strategy at the World Economic Forum) was admitted to hospital after he had the 'vaccine'. He was suffering according to reports from the skin infection 'cellulitis' and it must have been a severe case to have warranted days in hospital. Immediately the authorities said this was nothing to do with the 'vaccine' when an effect of some vaccines is a 'cellulitis-like reaction'. We had families of perfectly healthy old people who died after the 'vaccine' saying that if only they had been given the 'vaccine' earlier they would still be alive. As a numbskull rating that is off the chart. A father of four 'died of Covid' at aged 48 when he was taken ill two days after having the 'vaccine'. The man, a health administrator, had been 'shielding during the pandemic' and had 'not really left the house' until he went for the 'vaccine'. Having the 'vaccine' and then falling ill and dying does not seem to have qualified as a possible cause and effect and 'Covid-19' went on his death certificate. His family said they had no idea how he 'caught the virus'. A family member said: 'Tragically, it could be that going for a vaccination ultimately led to him catching Covid ...The sad truth is that they are never going to know where it came from.' The family warned people to remember

that the virus still existed and was 'very real'. So was their stupidity. Nurses and doctors who had the first round of the 'vaccine' were collapsing, dying and ending up in a hospital bed while they or their grieving relatives were saying they'd still have the 'vaccine' again despite what happened. I kid you not. You mean if your husband returned from the dead he'd have the same 'vaccine' again that killed him??

Doctors at the VCU Medical Center in Richmond, Virginia, said the Johnson & Johnson 'vaccine' was to blame for a man's skin peeling off. Patient Richard Terrell said: 'It all just happened so fast. My skin peeled off. It's still coming off on my hands now.' He said it was stinging, burning and itching and when he bent his arms and legs it was very painful with 'the skin swollen and rubbing against itself'. Pfizer/BioNTech and Moderna vaccines use mRNA to change the cell while the Johnson & Johnson version uses DNA in a process similar to AstraZeneca's technique. Johnson & Johnson and AstraZeneca have both had their 'vaccines' paused by many countries after causing serious blood problems. Terrell's doctor Fnu Nutan said he could have died if he hadn't got medical attention. It sounds terrible so what did Nutan and Terrell say about the 'vaccine' now? Oh, they still recommend that people have it. A nurse in a hospital bed 40 minutes after the vaccination and unable to swallow due to throat swelling was told by a doctor that he lost mobility in his arm for 36 hours following the vaccination. What did he say to the ailing nurse? 'Good for you for getting the vaccination.' We are dealing with a serious form of cognitive dissonance madness in both public and medical staff. There is a remarkable correlation between those having the 'vaccine' and trumpeting the fact and suffering bad happenings shortly afterwards. Witold Rogiewicz, a Polish doctor, made a video of his 'vaccination' and ridiculed those who were questioning its safety and the intentions of Bill Gates: 'Vaccinate yourself to protect yourself, your loved ones, friends and also patients. And to mention quickly I have info for anti-vaxxers and anti-Covidors if you want to contact Bill Gates you can do this through me.' He further ridiculed the dangers of 5G. Days later he

was dead, but naturally the vaccination wasn't mentioned in the verdict of 'heart attack'.

## **Lies, lies and more lies**

So many members of the human race have slipped into extreme states of insanity and unfortunately they include reframed doctors and nursing staff. Having a 'vaccine' and dying within minutes or hours is not considered a valid connection while death from any cause within 28 days or longer of a positive test with a test not testing for the 'virus' means 'Covid-19' goes on the death certificate. How could that 'vaccine'-death connection not have been made except by calculated deceit? US figures in the initial rollout period to February 12th, 2020, revealed that a third of the deaths reported to the CDC after 'Covid vaccines' happened within 48 hours. Five men in the UK suffered an 'extremely rare' blood clot problem after having the AstraZeneca 'vaccine', but no causal link was established said the Gates-funded Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA) which had given the 'vaccine' emergency approval to be used. Former Pfizer executive Dr Michael Yeadon explained in his interview how the procedures could cause blood coagulation and clots. People who should have been at no risk were dying from blood clots in the brain and he said he had heard from medical doctor friends that people were suffering from skin bleeding and massive headaches. The AstraZeneca 'shot' was stopped by some 20 countries over the blood clotting issue and still the corrupt MHRA, the European Medicines Agency (EMA) and the World Health Organization said that it should continue to be given even though the EMA admitted that it 'still cannot rule out definitively' a link between blood clotting and the 'vaccine'. Later Marco Cavaleri, head of EMA vaccine strategy, said there was indeed a clear link between the 'vaccine' and thrombosis, but they didn't know why. So much for the trials showing the 'vaccine' is safe. Blood clots were affecting younger people who would be under virtually no danger from 'Covid' even if it existed which makes it all the more stupid and sinister.



The British government responded to public alarm by wheeling out June Raine, the terrifyingly weak infant school headmistress sound-alike who heads the UK MHRA drug 'regulator'. The idea that she would stand up to Big Pharma and government pressure is laughable and she told us that all was well in the same way that she did when allowing untested, never-used-on-humans-before, genetically-manipulating 'vaccines' to be exposed to the public in the first place. Mass lying is the new normal of the 'Covid' era. The MHRA later said 30 cases of rare blood clots had by then been connected with the AstraZeneca 'vaccine' (that means a lot more in reality) while stressing that the benefits of the jab in preventing 'Covid-19' outweighed any risks. A more ridiculous and disingenuous statement with callous disregard for human health it is hard to contemplate. Immediately after the mendacious 'all-clears' two hospital workers in Denmark experienced blood clots and cerebral haemorrhaging following the AstraZeneca jab and one died. Top Norwegian health official Pål Andre Holme said the 'vaccine' was the only common factor: 'There is nothing in the patient history of these individuals that can give such a powerful immune response ... I am confident that the antibodies that we have found are the cause, and I see no other explanation than it being the vaccine which triggers it.' Strokes, a clot or bleed in the brain, were clearly associated with the 'vaccine' from word of mouth and whistleblower reports. Similar consequences followed with all these 'vaccines' that we were told were so safe and as the numbers grew by the day it was clear we were witnessing human carnage.

## **Learning the hard way**

A woman interviewed by UKColumn told how her husband suffered dramatic health effects after the vaccine when he'd been in good health all his life. He went from being a little unwell to losing all feeling in his legs and experiencing 'excruciating pain'. Misdiagnosis followed twice at Accident and Emergency (an 'allergy' and 'sciatica') before he was admitted to a neurology ward where doctors said his serious condition had been caused by the

‘vaccine’. Another seven ‘vaccinated’ people were apparently being treated on the same ward for similar symptoms. The woman said he had the ‘vaccine’ because they believed media claims that it was safe. ‘I didn’t think the government would give out a vaccine that does this to somebody; I believed they would be bringing out a vaccination that would be safe.’ What a tragic way to learn that lesson. Another woman posted that her husband was transporting stroke patients to hospital on almost every shift and when he asked them if they had been ‘vaccinated’ for ‘Covid’ they all replied ‘yes’. One had a ‘massive brain bleed’ the day after his second dose. She said her husband reported the ‘just been vaccinated’ information every time to doctors in A and E only for them to ignore it, make no notes and appear annoyed that it was even mentioned. This particular report cannot be verified, but it expresses a common theme that confirms the monumental underreporting of ‘vaccine’ consequences. Interestingly as the ‘vaccines’ and their brain blood clot/stroke consequences began to emerge the UK National Health Service began a publicity campaign telling the public what to do in the event of a stroke. A Scottish NHS staff nurse who quit in disgust in March, 2021, said:

I have seen traumatic injuries from the vaccine, they’re not getting reported to the yellow card [adverse reaction] scheme, they’re treating the symptoms, not asking why, why it’s happening. It’s just treating the symptoms and when you speak about it you’re dismissed like you’re crazy, I’m not crazy, I’m not crazy because every other colleague I’ve spoken to is terrified to speak out, they’ve had enough.

Videos appeared on the Internet of people uncontrollably shaking after the ‘vaccine’ with no control over muscles, limbs and even their face. A Scottish mother broke out in a severe rash all over her body almost immediately after she was given the AstraZeneca ‘vaccine’. The pictures were horrific. Leigh King, a 41-year-old hairdresser from Lanarkshire said: ‘Never in my life was I prepared for what I was about to experience ... My skin was so sore and constantly hot ... I have never felt pain like this ...’ But don’t you worry, the ‘vaccine’ is perfectly safe. Then there has been the effect on medical

staff who have been pressured to have the 'vaccine' by psychopathic 'health' authorities and government. A London hospital consultant who gave the name K. Polyakova wrote this to the *British Medical Journal* or *BMJ*:

I am currently struggling with ... the failure to report the reality of the morbidity caused by our current vaccination program within the health service and staff population. The levels of sickness after vaccination is unprecedented and staff are getting very sick and some with neurological symptoms which is having a huge impact on the health service function. Even the young and healthy are off for days, some for weeks, and some requiring medical treatment. Whole teams are being taken out as they went to get vaccinated together.

Mandatory vaccination in this instance is stupid, unethical and irresponsible when it comes to protecting our staff and public health. We are in the voluntary phase of vaccination, and encouraging staff to take an unlicensed product that is impacting on their immediate health ... it is clearly stated that these vaccine products do not offer immunity or stop transmission. In which case why are we doing it?

Not to protect health that's for sure. Medical workers are lauded by governments for agenda reasons when they couldn't give a toss about them any more than they can for the population in general. Schools across America faced the same situation as they closed due to the high number of teachers and other staff with bad reactions to the Pfizer/BioNTech, Moderna, and Johnson & Johnson 'Covid vaccines' all of which were linked to death and serious adverse effects. The *BMJ* took down the consultant's comments pretty quickly on the grounds that they were being used to spread 'disinformation'. They were exposing the truth about the 'vaccine' was the real reason. The cover-up is breathtaking.

## **Hiding the evidence**

The scale of the 'vaccine' death cover-up worldwide can be confirmed by comparing official figures with the personal experience of the public. I heard of many people in my community who died immediately or soon after the vaccine that would never appear in the media or even likely on the official totals of 'vaccine' fatalities and adverse reactions when only about ten percent are estimated to be

reported and I have seen some estimates as low as one percent in a Harvard study. In the UK alone by April 29th, 2021, some 757,654 adverse reactions had been officially reported from the Pfizer/BioNTech, Oxford/AstraZeneca and Moderna 'vaccines' with more than a thousand deaths linked to jabs and that means an estimated ten times this number in reality from a ten percent reporting rate percentage. That's seven million adverse reactions and 10,000 potential deaths and a one percent reporting rate would be ten times *those* figures. In 1976 the US government pulled the swine flu vaccine after 53 deaths. The UK data included a combined 10,000 eye disorders from the 'Covid vaccines' with more than 750 suffering visual impairment or blindness and again multiply by the estimated reporting percentages. As 'Covid cases' officially fell hospitals virtually empty during the 'Covid crisis' began to fill up with a range of other problems in the wake of the 'vaccine' rollout. The numbers across America have also been catastrophic. Deaths linked to *all* types of vaccine increased by 6,000 *percent* in the first quarter of 2021 compared with 2020. A 39-year-old woman from Ogden, Utah, died four days after receiving a second dose of Moderna's 'Covid vaccine' when her liver, heart and kidneys all failed despite the fact that she had no known medical issues or conditions. Her family sought an autopsy, but Dr Erik Christensen, Utah's chief medical examiner, said proving vaccine injury as a cause of death almost never happened. He could think of only one instance where an autopsy would name a vaccine as the official cause of death and that would be anaphylaxis where someone received a vaccine and died almost instantaneously. 'Short of that, it would be difficult for us to definitively say this is the vaccine,' Christensen said. If that is true this must be added to the estimated ten percent (or far less) reporting rate of vaccine deaths and serious reactions and the conclusion can only be that vaccine deaths and serious reactions – including these 'Covid' potions' – are phenomenally understated in official figures. The same story can be found everywhere. Endless accounts of deaths and serious reactions among the public, medical

and care home staff while official figures did not even begin to reflect this.

Professional script-reader Dr David Williams, a 'top public-health official' in Ontario, Canada, insulted our intelligence by claiming only four serious adverse reactions and no deaths from the more than 380,000 vaccine doses then given. This bore no resemblance to what people knew had happened in their own circles and we had Dirk Huyer in charge of getting millions vaccinated in Ontario while at the same time he was Chief Coroner for the province investigating causes of death including possible death from the vaccine. An aide said he had stepped back from investigating deaths, but evidence indicated otherwise. Rosemary Frei, who secured a Master of Science degree in molecular biology at the Faculty of Medicine at Canada's University of Calgary before turning to investigative journalism, was one who could see that official figures for 'vaccine' deaths and reactions made no sense. She said that doctors seldom reported adverse events and when people got really sick or died after getting a vaccination they would attribute that to anything except the vaccines. It had been that way for years and anyone who wondered aloud whether the 'Covid vaccines' or other shots cause harm is immediately branded as 'anti-vax' and 'anti-science'. This was 'career-threatening' for health professionals. Then there was the huge pressure to support the push to 'vaccinate' billions in the quickest time possible. Frei said:

So that's where we're at today. More than half a million vaccine doses have been given to people in Ontario alone. The rush is on to vaccinate all 15 million of us in the province by September. And the mainstream media are screaming for this to be sped up even more. That all adds up to only a very slim likelihood that we're going to be told the truth by officials about how many people are getting sick or dying from the vaccines.

What is true of Ontario is true of everywhere.

### **They KNEW – and still did it**

The authorities knew what was going to happen with multiple deaths and adverse reactions. The UK government's Gates-funded

and Big Pharma-dominated Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA) hired a company to employ AI in compiling the projected reactions to the 'vaccine' that would otherwise be uncountable. The request for applications said: 'The MHRA urgently seeks an Artificial Intelligence (AI) software tool to process the expected high volume of Covid-19 vaccine Adverse Drug Reaction ...' This was from the agency, headed by the disingenuous June Raine, that gave the 'vaccines' emergency approval and the company was hired before the first shot was given. 'We are going to kill and maim you – is that okay?' 'Oh, yes, perfectly fine – I'm very grateful, thank you, doctor.' The range of 'Covid vaccine' adverse reactions goes on for page after page in the MHRA criminally underreported 'Yellow Card' system and includes affects to eyes, ears, skin, digestion, blood and so on. Raine's MHRA amazingly claimed that the 'overall safety experience ... is so far as expected from the clinical trials'. The death, serious adverse effects, deafness and blindness were *expected*? When did they ever mention that? If these human tragedies were expected then those that gave approval for the use of these 'vaccines' must be guilty of crimes against humanity including murder – a definition of which is 'killing a person with malice aforethought or with recklessness manifesting extreme indifference to the value of human life.' People involved at the MHRA, the CDC in America and their equivalent around the world must go before Nuremberg trials to answer for their callous inhumanity. We are only talking here about the immediate effects of the 'vaccine'. The longer-term impact of the DNA synthetic manipulation is the main reason they are so hysterically desperate to inoculate the entire global population in the shortest possible time.

Africa and the developing world are a major focus for the 'vaccine' depopulation agenda and a mass vaccination sales-pitch is underway thanks to caring people like the Rockefellers and other Cult assets. The Rockefeller Foundation, which pre-empted the 'Covid pandemic' in a document published in 2010 that 'predicted' what happened a decade later, announced an initial \$34.95 million grant in February, 2021, 'to ensure more equitable access to Covid-19

testing and vaccines' among other things in Africa in collaboration with '24 organizations, businesses, and government agencies'. The pan-Africa initiative would focus on 10 countries: Burkina Faso, Ethiopia, Ghana, Kenya, Nigeria, Rwanda, South Africa, Tanzania, Uganda, and Zambia'. Rajiv Shah, President of the Rockefeller Foundation and former administrator of CIA-controlled USAID, said that if Africa was not mass-vaccinated (to change the DNA of its people) it was a 'threat to all of humanity' and not fair on Africans. When someone from the Rockefeller Foundation says they want to do something to help poor and deprived people and countries it is time for a belly-laugh. They are doing this out of the goodness of their 'heart' because 'vaccinating' the entire global population is what the 'Covid' hoax set out to achieve. Official 'decolonisation' of Africa by the Cult was merely a prelude to financial colonisation on the road to a return to physical colonisation. The 'vaccine' is vital to that and the sudden and convenient death of the 'Covid' sceptic president of Tanzania can be seen in its true light. A lot of people in Africa are aware that this is another form of colonisation and exploitation and they need to stand their ground.

### **The 'vaccine is working' scam**

A potential problem for the Cult was that the 'vaccine' is meant to change human DNA and body messaging and not to protect anyone from a 'virus' never shown to exist. The vaccine couldn't work because it was not designed to work and how could they make it *appear* to be working so that more people would have it? This was overcome by lowering the amplification rate of the PCR test to produce fewer 'cases' and therefore fewer 'deaths'. Some of us had been pointing out since March, 2020, that the amplification rate of the test not testing for the 'virus' had been made artificially high to generate positive tests which they could call 'cases' to justify lockdowns. The World Health Organization recommended an absurdly high 45 amplification cycles to ensure the high positives required by the Cult and then remained silent on the issue until January 20th, 2021 – Biden's Inauguration Day. This was when the

'vaccinations' were seriously underway and on that day the WHO recommended after discussions with America's CDC that laboratories *lowered their testing amplification*. Dr David Samadi, a certified urologist and health writer, said the WHO was encouraging all labs to reduce their cycle count for PCR tests. He said the current cycle was much too high and was 'resulting in any particle being declared a positive case'. Even one mainstream news report I saw said this meant the number of 'Covid' infections may have been 'dramatically inflated'. Oh, just a little bit. The CDC in America issued new guidance to laboratories in April, 2021, to use 28 cycles *but only for 'vaccinated' people*. The timing of the CDC/WHO interventions were cynically designed to make it appear the 'vaccines' were responsible for falling cases and deaths when the real reason can be seen in the following examples. New York's state lab, the Wadsworth Center, identified 872 positive tests in July, 2020, based on a threshold of 40 cycles. When the figure was lowered to 35 cycles 43 percent of the 872 were no longer 'positives'. At 30 cycles the figure was 63 percent. A Massachusetts lab found that between 85 to 90 percent of people who tested positive in July with a cycle threshold of 40 would be negative at 30 cycles, Ashish Jha, MD, director of the Harvard Global Health Institute, said: 'I'm really shocked that it could be that high ... Boy, does it really change the way we need to be thinking about testing.' I'm shocked that I could see the obvious in the spring of 2020, with no medical background, and most medical professionals still haven't worked it out. No, that's not shocking – it's terrifying.

Three weeks after the WHO directive to lower PCR cycles the London *Daily Mail* ran this headline: 'Why ARE Covid cases plummeting? New infections have fallen 45% in the US and 30% globally in the past 3 weeks but experts say vaccine is NOT the main driver because only 8% of Americans and 13% of people worldwide have received their first dose.' They acknowledged that the drop could not be attributed to the 'vaccine', but soon this morphed throughout the media into the 'vaccine' has caused cases and deaths to fall when it was the PCR threshold. In December, 2020, there was



chaos at English Channel ports with truck drivers needing negative 'Covid' tests before they could board a ferry home for Christmas. The government wanted to remove the backlog as fast as possible and they brought in troops to do the 'testing'. Out of 1,600 drivers just 36 tested positive and the rest were given the all clear to cross the Channel. I guess the authorities thought that 36 was the least they could get away with without the unquestioning catching on. The amplification trick which most people believed in the absence of information in the mainstream applied more pressure on those refusing the 'vaccine' to succumb when it 'obviously worked'. The truth was the exact opposite with deaths in care homes soaring with the 'vaccine' and in Israel the term used was 'skyrocket'. A re-analysis of published data from the Israeli Health Ministry led by Dr Hervé Seligmann at the Medicine Emerging Infectious and Tropical Diseases at Aix-Marseille University found that Pfizer's 'Covid vaccine' killed 'about 40 times more [elderly] people than the disease itself would have killed' during a five-week vaccination period and *260 times* more younger people than would have died from the 'virus' even according to the manipulated 'virus' figures. Dr Seligmann and his co-study author, Haim Yativ, declared after reviewing the Israeli 'vaccine' death data: 'This is a new Holocaust.'

Then, in mid-April, 2021, after vast numbers of people worldwide had been 'vaccinated', the story changed with clear coordination. The UK government began to prepare the ground for more future lockdowns when Nuremberg-destined Boris Johnson told yet another whopper. He said that cases had fallen because of *lockdowns* not 'vaccines'. Lockdowns are irrelevant when *there is no 'virus'* and the test and fraudulent death certificates are deciding the number of 'cases' and 'deaths'. Study after study has shown that lockdowns don't work and instead kill and psychologically destroy people. Meanwhile in the United States Anthony Fauci and Rochelle Walensky, the ultra-Zionist head of the CDC, peddled the same line. More lockdown was the answer and not the 'vaccine', a line repeated on cue by the moron that is Canadian Prime Minister Justin Trudeau. Why all the hysteria to get everyone 'vaccinated' if lockdowns and

not 'vaccines' made the difference? None of it makes sense on the face of it. Oh, but it does. The Cult wants lockdowns *and* the 'vaccine' and if the 'vaccine' is allowed to be seen as the total answer lockdowns would no longer be justified when there are still livelihoods to destroy. 'Variants' and renewed upward manipulation of PCR amplification are planned to instigate never-ending lockdown *and* more 'vaccines'.

### **You *must* have it – we're desperate**

Israel, where the Jewish and Arab population are ruled by the Sabbatian Cult, was the front-runner in imposing the DNA-manipulating 'vaccine' on its people to such an extent that Jewish refusers began to liken what was happening to the early years of Nazi Germany. This would seem to be a fantastic claim. Why would a government of Jewish people be acting like the Nazis did? If you realise that the Sabbatian Cult was behind the Nazis and that Sabbatians hate Jews the pieces start to fit and the question of why a 'Jewish' government would treat Jews with such callous disregard for their lives and freedom finds an answer. Those controlling the government of Israel *aren't Jewish* – they're Sabbatian. Israeli lawyer Tamir Turgal was one who made the Nazi comparison in comments to German lawyer Reiner Fuellmich who is leading a class action lawsuit against the psychopaths for crimes against humanity. Turgal described how the Israeli government was vaccinating children and pregnant women on the basis that there was no evidence that this was dangerous when they had no evidence that it *wasn't* dangerous either. They just had no evidence. This was medical experimentation and Turgal said this breached the Nuremberg Code about medical experimentation and procedures requiring informed consent and choice. Think about that. A Nuremberg Code developed because of Nazi experimentation on Jews and others in concentration camps by people like the evil-beyond-belief Josef Mengele is being breached by the *Israeli* government; but when you know that it's a *Sabbatian* government along with its intelligence and military agencies like Mossad, Shin Bet and the Israeli Defense Forces, and that Sabbatians

were the force behind the Nazis, the kaleidoscope comes into focus. What have we come to when Israeli Jews are suing their government for violating the Nuremberg Code by essentially making Israelis subject to a medical experiment using the controversial 'vaccines'? It's a shocker that this has to be done in the light of what happened in Nazi Germany. The Anshe Ha-Emet, or 'People of the Truth', made up of Israeli doctors, lawyers, campaigners and public, have launched a lawsuit with the International Criminal Court. It says:

When the heads of the Ministry of Health as well as the prime minister presented the vaccine in Israel and began the vaccination of Israeli residents, the vaccinated were not advised, that, in practice, they are taking part in a medical experiment and that their consent is required for this under the Nuremberg Code.

The irony is unbelievable, but easily explained in one word: Sabbatians. The foundation of Israeli 'Covid' apartheid is the 'green pass' or 'green passport' which allows Jews and Arabs who have had the DNA-manipulating 'vaccine' to go about their lives – to work, fly, travel in general, go to shopping malls, bars, restaurants, hotels, concerts, gyms, swimming pools, theatres and sports venues, while non-'vaccinated' are banned from all those places and activities. Israelis have likened the 'green pass' to the yellow stars that Jews in Nazi Germany were forced to wear – the same as the yellow stickers that a branch of UK supermarket chain Morrisons told exempt mask-wearers they had to display when shopping. How very sensitive. The Israeli system is blatant South African-style apartheid on the basis of compliance or non-compliance to fascism rather than colour of the skin. How appropriate that the Sabbatian Israeli government was so close to the pre-Mandela apartheid regime in Pretoria. The Sabbatian-instigated 'vaccine passport' in Israel is planned for everywhere. Sabbatians struck a deal with Pfizer that allowed them to lead the way in the percentage of a national population infused with synthetic material and the result was catastrophic. Israeli freedom activist Shai Dannon told me how chairs were appearing on beaches that said 'vaccinated only'. Health Minister Yuli Edelstein said that anyone unwilling or unable to get

the jabs that 'confer immunity' will be 'left behind'. The man's a liar. Not even the makers claim the 'vaccines' confer immunity. When you see those figures of 'vaccine' deaths these psychopaths were saying that you must take the chance the 'vaccine' will kill you or maim you while knowing it will change your DNA or lockdown for you will be permanent. That's fascism. The Israeli parliament passed a law to allow personal information of the non-vaccinated to be shared with local and national authorities for three months. This was claimed by its supporters to be a way to 'encourage' people to be vaccinated. Hadas Ziv from Physicians for Human Rights described this as a 'draconian law which crushed medical ethics and the patient rights'. But that's the idea, the Sabbatians would reply.

### **Your papers, please**

Sabbatian Israel was leading what has been planned all along to be a global 'vaccine pass' called a 'green passport' without which you would remain in permanent lockdown restriction and unable to do anything. This is how badly – *desperately* – the Cult is to get everyone 'vaccinated'. The term and colour 'green' was not by chance and related to the psychology of fusing the perception of the green climate hoax with the 'Covid' hoax and how the 'solution' to both is the same Great Reset. Lying politicians, health officials and psychologists denied there were any plans for mandatory vaccinations or restrictions based on vaccinations, but they knew that was exactly what was meant to happen with governments of all countries reaching agreements to enforce a global system. 'Free' Denmark and 'free' Sweden unveiled digital vaccine certification. Cyprus, Czech Republic, Estonia, Greece, Hungary, Iceland, Italy, Poland, Portugal, Slovakia, and Spain have all committed to a vaccine passport system and the rest including the whole of the EU would follow. The satanic UK government will certainly go this way despite mendacious denials and at the time of writing it is trying to manipulate the public into having the 'vaccine' so they could go abroad on a summer holiday. How would that work without something to prove you had the synthetic toxicity injected into you?

Documents show that the EU's European Commission was moving towards 'vaccine certificates' in 2018 and 2019 before the 'Covid' hoax began. They knew what was coming. Abracadabra – Ursula von der Leyen, the German President of the Commission, announced in March, 2021, an EU 'Digital Green Certificate' – green again – to track the public's 'Covid status'. The passport sting is worldwide and the Far East followed the same pattern with South Korea ruling that only those with 'vaccination' passports – again the *green* pass – would be able to 'return to their daily lives'.

Bill Gates has been preparing for this 'passport' with other Cult operatives for years and beyond the paper version is a Gates-funded 'digital tattoo' to identify who has been vaccinated and who hasn't. The 'tattoo' is reported to include a substance which is externally readable to confirm who has been vaccinated. This is a bio-luminous light-generating enzyme (think fireflies) called ... *Luciferase*. Yes, named after the Cult 'god' Lucifer the 'light bringer' of whom more to come. Gates said he funded the readable tattoo to ensure children in the developing world were vaccinated and no one was missed out. He cares so much about poor kids as we know. This was just the cover story to develop a vaccine tagging system for everyone on the planet. Gates has been funding the ID2020 'alliance' to do just that in league with other lovely people at Microsoft, GAVI, the Rockefeller Foundation, Accenture and IDEO.org. He said in interviews in March, 2020, before any 'vaccine' publicly existed, that the world must have a globalised digital certificate to track the 'virus' and who had been vaccinated. Gates knew from the start that the mRNA vaccines were coming and when they would come and that the plan was to tag the 'vaccinated' to marginalise the intelligent and stop them doing anything including travel. Evil just doesn't suffice. Gates was exposed for offering a \$10 million bribe to the Nigerian House of Representatives to invoke compulsory 'Covid' vaccination of all Nigerians. Sara Cunial, a member of the Italian Parliament, called Gates a 'vaccine criminal'. She urged the Italian President to hand him over to the International Criminal Court for crimes against

humanity and condemned his plans to 'chip the human race' through ID2020.

You know it's a long-planned agenda when war criminal and Cult gofer Tony Blair is on the case. With the scale of arrogance only someone as dark as Blair can muster he said: 'Vaccination in the end is going to be your route to liberty.' Blair is a disgusting piece of work and he confirms that again. The media has given a lot of coverage to a bloke called Charlie Mullins, founder of London's biggest independent plumbing company, Pimlico Plumbers, who has said he won't employ anyone who has not been vaccinated or have them go to any home where people are not vaccinated. He said that if he had his way no one would be allowed to walk the streets if they have not been vaccinated. Gates was cheering at the time while I was alerting the white coats. The plan is that people will qualify for 'passports' for having the first two doses and then to keep it they will have to have all the follow ups and new ones for invented 'variants' until human genetics is transformed and many are dead who can't adjust to the changes. Hollywood celebrities – the usual propaganda stunt – are promoting something called the WELL Health-Safety Rating to verify that a building or space has 'taken the necessary steps to prioritize the health and safety of their staff, visitors and other stakeholders'. They included Lady Gaga, Jennifer Lopez, Michael B. Jordan, Robert DeNiro, Venus Williams, Wolfgang Puck, Deepak Chopra and 17th Surgeon General Richard Carmona. Yawn. WELL Health-Safety has big connections with China. Parent company Delos is headed by former Goldman Sachs partner Paul Scialla. This is another example – and we will see so many others – of using the excuse of 'health' to dictate the lives and activities of the population. I guess one confirmation of the 'safety' of buildings is that only 'vaccinated' people can go in, right?

## **Electronic concentration camps**

I wrote decades ago about the plans to restrict travel and here we are for those who refuse to bow to tyranny. This can be achieved in one go with air travel if the aviation industry makes a blanket decree.

The 'vaccine' and guaranteed income are designed to be part of a global version of China's social credit system which tracks behaviour 24/7 and awards or deletes 'credits' based on whether your behaviour is supported by the state or not. I mean your entire lifestyle – what you do, eat, say, everything. Once your credit score falls below a certain level consequences kick in. In China tens of millions have been denied travel by air and train because of this. All the locations and activities denied to refusers by the 'vaccine' passports will be included in one big mass ban on doing almost anything for those that don't bow their head to government. It's beyond fascist and a new term is required to describe its extremes – I guess fascist technocracy will have to do. The way the Chinese system of technological – technocratic – control is sweeping the West can be seen in the Los Angeles school system and is planned to be expanded worldwide. Every child is required to have a 'Covid'-tracking app scanned daily before they can enter the classroom. The so-called Daily Pass tracking system is produced by Gates' Microsoft which I'm sure will shock you rigid. The pass will be scanned using a barcode (one step from an inside-the-body barcode) and the information will include health checks, 'Covid' tests and vaccinations. Entry codes are for one specific building only and access will only be allowed if a student or teacher has a negative test with a test not testing for the 'virus', has no symptoms of anything alleged to be related to 'Covid' (symptoms from a range of other illness), and has a temperature under 100 degrees. No barcode, no entry, is planned to be the case for everywhere and not only schools.

Kids are being psychologically prepared to accept this as 'normal' their whole life which is why what they can impose in schools is so important to the Cult and its gofers. Long-time American freedom campaigner John Whitehead of the Rutherford Institute was not exaggerating when he said: 'Databit by databit, we are building our own electronic concentration camps.' Canada under its Cult gofer prime minister Justin Trudeau has taken a major step towards the real thing with people interned against their will if they test positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' when they arrive at a Canadian

airport. They are jailed in internment hotels often without food or water for long periods and with many doors failing to lock there have been sexual assaults. The interned are being charged sometimes \$2,000 for the privilege of being abused in this way. Trudeau is fully on board with the Cult and says the 'Covid pandemic' has provided an opportunity for a global 'reset' to permanently change Western civilisation. His number two, Deputy Prime Minister Chrystia Freeland, is a trustee of the World Economic Forum and a Rhodes Scholar. The Trudeau family have long been servants of the Cult. See *The Biggest Secret* and Cathy O'Brien's book *Trance-Formation of America* for the horrific background to Trudeau's father Pierre Trudeau another Canadian prime minister. Hide your fascism behind the façade of a heart-on-the-sleeve liberal. It's a well-honed Cult technique.

### **What can the 'vaccine' really do?**

We have a 'virus' never shown to exist and 'variants' of the 'virus' that have also never been shown to exist except, like the 'original', as computer-generated fictions. Even if you believe there's a 'virus' the 'case' to 'death' rate is in the region of 0.23 to 0.15 percent and those 'deaths' are concentrated among the very old around the same average age that people die anyway. In response to this lack of threat (in truth none) psychopaths and idiots, knowingly and unknowingly answering to Gates and the Cult, are seeking to 'vaccinate' every man, woman and child on Planet Earth. Clearly the 'vaccine' is not about 'Covid' – none of this ever has been. So what is it all about *really*? Why the desperation to infuse genetically-manipulating synthetic material into everyone through mRNA fraudulent 'vaccines' with the intent of doing this over and over with the excuses of 'variants' and other 'virus' inventions? Dr Sherri Tenpenny, an osteopathic medical doctor in the United States, has made herself an expert on vaccines and their effects as a vehement campaigner against their use. Tenpenny was board certified in emergency medicine, the director of a level two trauma centre for 12 years, and moved to Cleveland in 1996 to start an integrative



medicine practice which has treated patients from all 50 states and some 17 other countries. Weaning people off pharmaceutical drugs is a speciality.

She became interested in the consequences of vaccines after attending a meeting at the National Vaccine Information Center in Washington DC in 2000 where she 'sat through four days of listening to medical doctors and scientists and lawyers and parents of vaccine injured kids' and asked: 'What's going on?' She had never been vaccinated and never got ill while her father was given a list of vaccines to be in the military and was 'sick his entire life'. The experience added to her questions and she began to examine vaccine documents from the Centers for Disease Control (CDC). After reading the first one, the 1998 version of *The General Recommendations of Vaccination*, she thought: 'This is it?' The document was poorly written and bad science and Tenpenny began 20 years of research into vaccines that continues to this day. She began her research into 'Covid vaccines' in March, 2020, and she describes them as 'deadly'. For many, as we have seen, they already have been. Tenpenny said that in the first 30 days of the 'vaccine' rollout in the United States there had been more than 40,000 adverse events reported to the vaccine adverse event database. A document had been delivered to her the day before that was 172 pages long. 'We have over 40,000 adverse events; we have over 3,100 cases of [potentially deadly] anaphylactic shock; we have over 5,000 neurological reactions.' Effects ranged from headaches to numbness, dizziness and vertigo, to losing feeling in hands or feet and paraesthesia which is when limbs 'fall asleep' and people have the sensation of insects crawling underneath their skin. All this happened in the first 30 days and remember that only about *ten percent* (or far less) of adverse reactions and vaccine-related deaths are estimated to be officially reported. Tenpenny said:

So can you think of one single product in any industry, any industry, for as long as products have been made on the planet that within 30 days we have 40,000 people complaining of side effects that not only is still on the market but ... we've got paid actors telling us how great

they are for getting their vaccine. We're offering people \$500 if they will just get their vaccine and we've got nurses and doctors going; 'I got the vaccine, I got the vaccine'.

Tenpenny said they were not going to be 'happy dancing folks' when they began to suffer Bell's palsy (facial paralysis), neuropathies, cardiac arrhythmias and autoimmune reactions that kill through a blood disorder. 'They're not going to be so happy, happy then, but we're never going to see pictures of those people' she said. Tenpenny described the 'vaccine' as 'a well-designed killing tool'.

## **No off-switch**

Bad as the initial consequences had been Tenpenny said it would be maybe 14 months before we began to see the 'full ravage' of what is going to happen to the 'Covid vaccinated' with full-out consequences taking anything between two years and 20 years to show. You can understand why when you consider that variations of the 'Covid vaccine' use mRNA (messenger RNA) to in theory activate the immune system to produce protective antibodies without using the actual 'virus'. How can they when it's a computer program and they've never isolated what they claim is the 'real thing'? Instead they use *synthetic* mRNA. They are inoculating synthetic material into the body which through a technique known as the Trojan horse is absorbed into cells to change the nature of DNA. Human DNA is changed by an infusion of messenger RNA and with each new 'vaccine' of this type it is changed even more. Say so and you are banned by Cult Internet platforms. The contempt the contemptuous Mark Zuckerberg has for the truth and human health can be seen in an internal Facebook video leaked to the Project Veritas investigative team in which he said of the 'Covid vaccines': '... I share some caution on this because we just don't know the long term side-effects of basically modifying people's DNA and RNA.' At the same time this disgusting man's Facebook was censoring and banning anyone saying exactly the same. He must go before a Nuremberg trial for crimes against humanity when he *knows* that he

is censoring legitimate concerns and denying the right of informed consent on behalf of the Cult that owns him. People have been killed and damaged by the very 'vaccination' technique he cast doubt on himself when they may not have had the 'vaccine' with access to information that he denied them. The plan is to have at least annual 'Covid vaccinations', add others to deal with invented 'variants', and change all other vaccines into the mRNA system. Pfizer executives told shareholders at a virtual Barclays Global Healthcare Conference in March, 2021, that the public may need a third dose of 'Covid vaccine', plus regular yearly boosters and the company planned to hike prices to milk the profits in a 'significant opportunity for our vaccine'. These are the professional liars, cheats and opportunists who are telling you their 'vaccine' is safe. Given this volume of mRNA planned to be infused into the human body and its ability to then replicate we will have a transformation of human genetics from biological to synthetic biological – exactly the long-time Cult plan for reasons we'll see – and many will die. Sherri Tenpenny said of this replication:

It's like having an on-button but no off-button and that whole mechanism ... they actually give it a name and they call it the Trojan horse mechanism, because it allows that [synthetic] virus and that piece of that [synthetic] virus to get inside of your cells, start to replicate and even get inserted into other parts of your DNA as a Trojan-horse.

Ask the overwhelming majority of people who have the 'vaccine' what they know about the contents and what they do and they would reply: 'The government says it will stop me getting the virus.' Governments give that false impression on purpose to increase take-up. You can read Sherri Tenpenny's detailed analysis of the health consequences in her blog at [Vaxxter.com](https://vaxxter.com), but in summary these are some of them. She highlights the statement by Bill Gates about how human beings can become their own 'vaccine manufacturing machine'. The man is insane. ['Vaccine'-generated] 'antibodies' carry synthetic messenger RNA into the cells and the damage starts, Tenpenny contends, and she says that lungs can be adversely affected through varying degrees of pus and bleeding which

obviously affects breathing and would be dubbed 'Covid-19'. Even more sinister was the impact of 'antibodies' on macrophages, a white blood cell of the immune system. They consist of Type 1 and Type 2 which have very different functions. She said Type 1 are 'hyper-vigilant' white blood cells which 'gobble up' bacteria etc. However, in doing so, this could cause inflammation and in extreme circumstances be fatal. She says these affects are mitigated by Type 2 macrophages which kick in to calm down the system and stop it going rogue. They clear up dead tissue debris and reduce inflammation that the Type 1 'fire crews' have caused. Type 1 kills the infection and Type 2 heals the damage, she says. This is her punchline with regard to 'Covid vaccinations': She says that mRNA 'antibodies' block Type 2 macrophages by attaching to them and deactivating them. This meant that when the Type 1 response was triggered by infection there was nothing to stop that getting out of hand by calming everything down. There's an on-switch, but no off-switch, she says. What follows can be 'over and out, see you when I see you'.

## **Genetic suicide**

Tenpenny also highlights the potential for autoimmune disease – the body attacking itself – which has been associated with vaccines since they first appeared. Infusing a synthetic foreign substance into cells could cause the immune system to react in a panic believing that the body is being overwhelmed by an invader (it is) and the consequences can again be fatal. There is an autoimmune response known as a 'cytokine storm' which I have likened to a homeowner panicked by an intruder and picking up a gun to shoot randomly in all directions before turning the fire on himself. The immune system unleashes a storm of inflammatory response called cytokines to a threat and the body commits hara-kiri. The lesson is that you mess with the body's immune response at your peril and these 'vaccines' seriously – fundamentally – mess with immune response. Tenpenny refers to a consequence called anaphylactic shock which is a severe and highly dangerous allergic reaction when the immune system

floods the body with chemicals. She gives the example of having a bee sting which primes the immune system and makes it sensitive to those chemicals. When people are stung again maybe years later the immune response can be so powerful that it leads to anaphylactic shock. Tenpenny relates this 'shock' with regard to the 'Covid vaccine' to something called polyethylene glycol or PEG. Enormous numbers of people have become sensitive to this over decades of use in a whole range of products and processes including food, drink, skin creams and 'medicine'. Studies have claimed that some 72 percent of people have antibodies triggered by PEG compared with two percent in the 1960s and allergic hypersensitive reactions to this become a gathering cause for concern. Tenpenny points out that the 'mRNA vaccine' is coated in a 'bubble' of polyethylene glycol which has the potential to cause anaphylactic shock through immune sensitivity. Many reports have appeared of people reacting this way after having the 'Covid vaccine'. What do we think is going to happen as humanity has more and more of these 'vaccines'? Tenpenny said: 'All these pictures we have seen with people with these rashes ... these weepy rashes, big reactions on their arms and things like that – it's an acute allergic reaction most likely to the polyethylene glycol that you've been previously primed and sensitised to.'

Those who have not studied the conspiracy and its perpetrators at length might think that making the population sensitive to PEG and then putting it in these 'vaccines' is just a coincidence. It is not. It is instead testament to how carefully and coldly-planned current events have been and the scale of the conspiracy we are dealing with. Tenpenny further explains that the 'vaccine' mRNA procedure can breach the blood-brain barrier which protects the brain from toxins and other crap that will cause malfunction. In this case they could make two proteins corrupt brain function to cause Amyotrophic lateral sclerosis (ALS), a progressive nervous system disease leading to loss of muscle control, and frontal lobe degeneration – Alzheimer's and dementia. Immunologist J. Bart Classon published a paper connecting mRNA 'vaccines' to prion

disease which can lead to Alzheimer's and other forms of neurodegenerative disease while others have pointed out the potential to affect the placenta in ways that make women infertile. This will become highly significant in the next chapter when I will discuss other aspects of this non-vaccine that relate to its nanotechnology and transmission from the injected to the uninjected.

## **Qualified in idiocy**

Tenpenny describes how research has confirmed that these 'vaccine'-generated antibodies can interact with a range of other tissues in the body and attack many other organs including the lungs. 'This means that if you have a hundred people standing in front of you that all got this shot they could have a hundred different symptoms.' Anyone really think that Cult gofers like the Queen, Tony Blair, Christopher Whitty, Anthony Fauci, and all the other psychopaths have really had this 'vaccine' in the pictures we've seen? Not a bloody chance. Why don't doctors all tell us about all these dangers and consequences of the 'Covid vaccine'? Why instead do they encourage and pressure patients to have the shot? Don't let's think for a moment that doctors and medical staff can't be stupid, lazy, and psychopathic and that's without the financial incentives to give the jab. Tenpenny again:

Some people are going to die from the vaccine directly but a large number of people are going to start to get horribly sick and get all kinds of autoimmune diseases 42 days to maybe a year out. What are they going to do, these stupid doctors who say; 'Good for you for getting that vaccine.' What are they going to say; 'Oh, it must be a mutant, we need to give an extra dose of that vaccine.'

Because now the vaccine, instead of one dose or two doses we need three or four because the stupid physicians aren't taking the time to learn anything about it. If I can learn this sitting in my living room reading a 19 page paper and several others so can they. There's nothing special about me, I just take the time to do it.

Remember how Sara Kayat, the NHS and TV doctor, said that the 'Covid vaccine' would '100 percent prevent hospitalisation and death'. Doctors can be idiots like every other profession and they

should not be worshipped as infallible. They are not and far from it. Behind many medical and scientific 'experts' lies an uninformed prat trying to hide themselves from you although in the 'Covid' era many have failed to do so as with UK narrative-repeating 'TV doctor' Hilary Jones. Pushing back against the minority of proper doctors and scientists speaking out against the 'vaccine' has been the entire edifice of the Cult global state in the form of governments, medical systems, corporations, mainstream media, Silicon Valley, and an army of compliant doctors, medical staff and scientists willing to say anything for money and to enhance their careers by promoting the party line. If you do that you are an 'expert' and if you won't you are an 'anti-vaxxer' and 'Covidiot'. The pressure to be 'vaccinated' is incessant. We have even had reports claiming that the 'vaccine' can help cure cancer and Alzheimer's and make the lame walk. I am waiting for the announcement that it can bring you coffee in the morning and cook your tea. Just as the symptoms of 'Covid' seem to increase by the week so have the miracles of the 'vaccine'. American supermarket giant Kroger Co. offered nearly 500,000 employees in 35 states a \$100 bonus for having the 'vaccine' while donut chain Krispy Kreme promised 'vaccinated' customers a free glazed donut every day for the rest of 2021. Have your DNA changed and you will get a doughnut although we might not have to give you them for long. Such offers and incentives confirm the desperation.

Perhaps the worse vaccine-stunt of them all was UK 'Health' Secretary Matt-the-prat Hancock on live TV after watching a clip of someone being 'vaccinated' when the roll-out began. Hancock faked tears so badly it was embarrassing. Brain-of-Britain Piers Morgan, the lockdown-supporting, 'vaccine' supporting, 'vaccine' passport-supporting, TV host played along with Hancock – 'You're quite emotional about that' he said in response to acting so atrocious it would have been called out at a school nativity which will presumably today include Mary and Jesus in masks, wise men keeping their camels six feet apart, and shepherds under tent arrest. System-serving Morgan tweeted this: 'Love the idea of covid vaccine passports for everywhere: flights, restaurants, clubs, football, gyms,

shops etc. It's time covid-denying, anti-vaxxer loonies had their bullsh\*t bluff called & bar themselves from going anywhere that responsible citizens go.' If only I could aspire to his genius. To think that Morgan, who specialises in shouting over anyone he disagrees with, was lauded as a free speech hero when he lost his job after storming off the set of his live show like a child throwing his dolly out of the pram. If he is a free speech hero we are in real trouble. I have no idea what 'bullsh\*t' means, by the way, the \* throws me completely.

The Cult is desperate to infuse its synthetic DNA-changing concoction into everyone and has been using every lie, trick and intimidation to do so. The question of '*Why?*' we shall now address.



## CHAPTER TEN

### Human 2.0

*I believe that at the end of the century the use of words and general educated opinion will have altered so much that one will be able to speak of machines thinking without expecting to be contradicted –*  
Alan Turing (1912-1954), the ‘Father of artificial intelligence’

I have been exposing for decades the plan to transform the human body from a biological to a synthetic-biological state. The new human that I will call Human 2.0 is planned to be connected to artificial intelligence and a global AI ‘Smart Grid’ that would operate as one global system in which AI would control everything from your fridge to your heating system to your car to your mind. Humans would no longer be ‘human’, but post-human and sub-human, with their thinking and emotional processes replaced by AI.

What I said sounded crazy and beyond science fiction and I could understand that. To any balanced, rational, mind it *is* crazy. Today, however, that world is becoming reality and it puts the ‘Covid vaccine’ into its true context. Ray Kurzweil is the ultra-Zionist ‘computer scientist, inventor and futurist’ and co-founder of the Singularity University. Singularity refers to the merging of humans with machines or ‘transhumanism’. Kurzweil has said humanity would be connected to the cyber ‘cloud’ in the period of the ever-recurring year of 2030:

Our thinking ... will be a hybrid of biological and non-biological thinking ... humans will be able to extend their limitations and ‘think in the cloud’ ... We’re going to put gateways to the

cloud in our brains ... We're going to gradually merge and enhance ourselves ... In my view, that's the nature of being human – we transcend our limitations. As the technology becomes vastly superior to what we are then the small proportion that is still human gets smaller and smaller and smaller until it's just utterly negligible.

They are trying to sell this end-of-humanity-as-we-know-it as the next stage of 'evolution' when we become super-human and 'like the gods'. They are lying to you. Shocked, eh? The population, and again especially the young, have been manipulated into addiction to technologies designed to enslave them for life. First they induced an addiction to smartphones (holdables); next they moved to technology on the body (wearables); and then began the invasion of the body (implantables). I warned way back about the plan for microchipped people and we are now entering that era. We should not be diverted into thinking that this refers only to chips we can see. Most important are the nanochips known as smart dust, neural dust and nanobots which are far too small to be seen by the human eye. Nanotechnology is everywhere, increasingly in food products, and released into the atmosphere by the geoengineering of the skies funded by Bill Gates to 'shut out the Sun' and 'save the planet from global warming'. Gates has been funding a project to spray millions of tonnes of chalk (calcium carbonate) into the stratosphere over Sweden to 'dim the Sun' and cool the Earth. Scientists warned the move could be disastrous for weather systems in ways no one can predict and opposition led to the Swedish space agency announcing that the 'experiment' would not be happening as planned in the summer of 2021; but it shows where the Cult is going with dimming the impact of the Sun and there's an associated plan to change the planet's atmosphere. Who gives psychopath Gates the right to dictate to the entire human race and dismantle planetary systems? The world will not be safe while this man is at large.

The global warming hoax has made the Sun, like the gas of life, something to fear when both are essential to good health and human survival (more inversion). The body transforms sunlight into vital vitamin D through a process involving ... *cholesterol*. This is the cholesterol we are also told to fear. We are urged to take Big Pharma

statin drugs to reduce cholesterol and it's all systematic. Reducing cholesterol means reducing vitamin D uptake with all the multiple health problems that will cause. At least if you take statins long term it saves the government from having to pay you a pension. The delivery system to block sunlight is widely referred to as chemtrails although these have a much deeper agenda, too. They appear at first to be contrails or condensation trails streaming from aircraft into cold air at high altitudes. Contrails disperse very quickly while chemtrails do not and spread out across the sky before eventually their content falls to earth. Many times I have watched aircraft cross-cross a clear blue sky releasing chemtrails until it looks like a cloudy day. Chemtrails contain many things harmful to humans and the natural world including toxic heavy metals, aluminium (see Alzheimer's) and nanotechnology. Ray Kurzweil reveals the reason without actually saying so: 'Nanobots will infuse all the matter around us with information. Rocks, trees, everything will become these intelligent creatures.' How do you deliver that? *From the sky*. Self-replicating nanobots would connect everything to the Smart Grid. The phenomenon of Morgellons disease began in the chemtrail era and the correlation has led to it being dubbed the 'chemtrail disease'. Self-replicating fibres appear in the body that can be pulled out through the skin. Morgellons fibres continue to grow outside the body and have a form of artificial intelligence. I cover this at greater length in *Phantom Self*.

### **'Vaccine' operating system**

'Covid vaccines' with their self-replicating synthetic material are also designed to make the connection between humanity and Kurzweil's 'cloud'. American doctor and dedicated campaigner for truth, Carrie Madej, an Internal Medicine Specialist in Georgia with more than 20 years medical experience, has highlighted the nanotechnology aspect of the fake 'vaccines'. She explains how one of the components in at least the Moderna and Pfizer synthetic potions are 'lipid nanoparticles' which are 'like little tiny computer bits' – a 'sci-fi substance' known as nanobots and hydrogel which can be 'triggered

at any moment to deliver its payload' and act as 'biosensors'. The synthetic substance had 'the ability to accumulate data from your body like your breathing, your respiration, thoughts and emotions, all kind of things' and each syringe could carry a *million* nanobots:

This substance because it's like little bits of computers in your body, crazy, but it's true, it can do that, [and] obviously has the ability to act through Wi-Fi. It can receive and transmit energy, messages, frequencies or impulses. That issue has never been addressed by these companies. What does that do to the human?

Just imagine getting this substance in you and it can react to things all around you, the 5G, your smart device, your phones, what is happening with that? What if something is triggering it, too, like an impulse, a frequency? We have something completely foreign in the human body.

Madej said her research revealed that electromagnetic (EMF) frequencies emitted by phones and other devices had increased dramatically in the same period of the 'vaccine' rollout and she was seeing more people with radiation problems as 5G and other electromagnetic technology was expanded and introduced to schools and hospitals. She said she was 'floored with the EMF coming off' the devices she checked. All this makes total sense and syncs with my own work of decades when you think that Moderna refers in documents to its mRNA 'vaccine' as an 'operating system':

Recognizing the broad potential of mRNA science, we set out to create an mRNA technology platform that functions very much like an operating system on a computer. It is designed so that it can plug and play interchangeably with different programs. In our case, the 'program' or 'app' is our mRNA drug – the unique mRNA sequence that codes for a protein ...

... Our MRNA Medicines – 'The 'Software Of Life': When we have a concept for a new mRNA medicine and begin research, fundamental components are already in place. Generally, the only thing that changes from one potential mRNA medicine to another is the coding region – the actual genetic code that instructs ribosomes to make protein. Utilizing these instruction sets gives our investigational mRNA medicines a software-like quality. We also have the ability to combine different mRNA sequences encoding for different proteins in a single mRNA investigational medicine.

Who needs a real ‘virus’ when you can create a computer version to justify infusing your operating system into the entire human race on the road to making living, breathing people into cyborgs? What is missed with the ‘vaccines’ is the *digital* connection between synthetic material and the body that I highlighted earlier with the study that hacked a computer with human DNA. On one level the body is digital, based on mathematical codes, and I’ll have more about that in the next chapter. Those who ridiculously claim that mRNA ‘vaccines’ are not designed to change human genetics should explain the words of Dr Tal Zaks, chief medical officer at Moderna, in a 2017 TED talk. He said that over the last 30 years ‘we’ve been living this phenomenal digital scientific revolution, and I’m here today to tell you, that we are actually *hacking the software of life*, and that it’s changing the way we think about prevention and treatment of disease’:

In every cell there’s this thing called messenger RNA, or mRNA for short, that transmits the critical information from the DNA in our genes to the protein, which is really the stuff we’re all made out of. This is the critical information that determines what the cell will do. So we think about it as an operating system. So if you could change that, if you could introduce a line of code, or change a line of code, it turns out, that has profound implications for everything, from the flu to cancer.

Zaks should more accurately have said that this has profound implications for the human genetic code and the nature of DNA. Communications within the body go both ways and not only one. But, hey, no, the ‘Covid vaccine’ will not affect your genetics. Cult fact-checkers say so even though the man who helped to develop the mRNA technique says that it does. Zaks said in 2017:

If you think about what it is we’re trying to do. We’ve taken information and our understanding of that information and how that information is transmitted in a cell, and we’ve taken our understanding of medicine and how to make drugs, and we’re fusing the two. We think of it as information therapy.

I have been writing for decades that the body is an information field communicating with itself and the wider world. This is why

radiation which is information can change the information field of body and mind through phenomena like 5G and change their nature and function. 'Information therapy' means to change the body's information field and change the way it operates. DNA is a receiver-transmitter of information and can be mutated by information like mRNA synthetic messaging. Technology to do this has been ready and waiting in the underground bases and other secret projects to be rolled out when the 'Covid' hoax was played. 'Trials' of such short and irrelevant duration were only for public consumption. When they say the 'vaccine' is 'experimental' that is not true. It may appear to be 'experimental' to those who don't know what's going on, but the trials have already been done to ensure the Cult gets the result it desires. Zaks said that it took decades to sequence the human genome, completed in 2003, but now they could do it in a week. By 'they' he means scientists operating in the public domain. In the secret projects they were sequencing the genome in a week long before even 2003.

## **Deluge of mRNA**

Highly significantly the Moderna document says the guiding premise is that if using mRNA as a medicine works for one disease then it should work for many diseases. They were leveraging the flexibility afforded by their platform and the fundamental role mRNA plays in protein synthesis to pursue mRNA medicines for a broad spectrum of diseases. Moderna is confirming what I was saying through 2020 that multiple 'vaccines' were planned for 'Covid' (and later invented 'variants') and that previous vaccines would be converted to the mRNA system to infuse the body with massive amounts of genetically-manipulating synthetic material to secure a transformation to a synthetic-biological state. The 'vaccines' are designed to kill stunning numbers as part of the long-exposed Cult depopulation agenda and transform the rest. Given this is the goal you can appreciate why there is such hysterical demand for every human to be 'vaccinated' for an alleged 'disease' that has an estimated 'infection' to 'death' ratio of 0.23-0.15 percent. As I write

children are being given the 'vaccine' in trials (their parents are a disgrace) and ever-younger people are being offered the vaccine for a 'virus' that even if you believe it exists has virtually zero chance of harming them. Horrific effects of the 'trials' on a 12-year-old girl were revealed by a family member to be serious brain and gastric problems that included a bowel obstruction and the inability to swallow liquids or solids. She was unable to eat or drink without throwing up, had extreme pain in her back, neck and abdomen, and was paralysed from the waist down which stopped her urinating unaided. When the girl was first taken to hospital doctors said it was all in her mind. She was signed up for the 'trial' by her parents for whom no words suffice. None of this 'Covid vaccine' insanity makes any sense unless you see what the 'vaccine' really is – a body-changer. Synthetic biology or 'SynBio' is a fast-emerging and expanding scientific discipline which includes everything from genetic and molecular engineering to electrical and computer engineering. Synthetic biology is defined in these ways:

- A multidisciplinary area of research that seeks to create new biological parts, devices, and systems, or to redesign systems that are already found in nature.
- The use of a mixture of physical engineering and genetic engineering to create new (and therefore synthetic) life forms.
- An emerging field of research that aims to combine the knowledge and methods of biology, engineering and related disciplines in the design of chemically-synthesized DNA to create organisms with novel or enhanced characteristics and traits (synthetic organisms including humans).

We now have synthetic blood, skin, organs and limbs being developed along with synthetic body parts produced by 3D printers. These are all elements of the synthetic human programme and this comment by Kurzweil's co-founder of the Singularity University,

Peter Diamandis, can be seen in a whole new light with the 'Covid' hoax and the sanctions against those that refuse the 'vaccine':

Anybody who is going to be resisting the progress forward [to transhumanism] is going to be resisting evolution and, fundamentally, they will die out. It's not a matter of whether it's good or bad. It's going to happen.

'Resisting evolution'? What absolute bollocks. The arrogance of these people is without limit. His 'it's going to happen' mantra is another way of saying 'resistance is futile' to break the spirit of those pushing back and we must not fall for it. Getting this genetically-transforming 'vaccine' into everyone is crucial to the Cult plan for total control and the desperation to achieve that is clear for anyone to see. Vaccine passports are a major factor in this and they, too, are a form of resistance is futile. It's NOT. The paper funded by the Rockefeller Foundation for the 2013 'health conference' in China said:

We will interact more with artificial intelligence. The use of robotics, bio-engineering to augment human functioning is already well underway and will advance. Re-engineering of humans into potentially separate and unequal forms through genetic engineering or mixed human-robots raises debates on ethics and equality.

A new demography is projected to emerge after 2030 [that year again] of technologies (robotics, genetic engineering, nanotechnology) producing robots, engineered organisms, 'nanobots' and artificial intelligence (AI) that can self-replicate. Debates will grow on the implications of an impending reality of human designed life.

What is happening today is so long planned. The world army enforcing the will of the world government is intended to be a robot army, not a human one. Today's military and its technologically 'enhanced' troops, pilotless planes and driverless vehicles are just stepping stones to that end. Human soldiers are used as Cult fodder and its time they woke up to that and worked for the freedom of the population instead of their own destruction and their family's destruction – the same with the police. Join us and let's sort this out. The phenomenon of enforce my own destruction is widespread in the 'Covid' era with Woker 'luvvies' in the acting and entertainment



industries supporting 'Covid' rules which have destroyed their profession and the same with those among the public who put signs on the doors of their businesses 'closed due to Covid – stay safe' when many will never reopen. It's a form of masochism and most certainly insanity.

## **Transgender = transhumanism**

When something explodes out of nowhere and is suddenly everywhere it is always the Cult agenda and so it is with the tidal wave of claims and demands that have infiltrated every aspect of society under the heading of 'transgenderism'. The term 'trans' is so 'in' and this is the dictionary definition:

A prefix meaning 'across', 'through', occurring ... in loanwords from Latin, used in particular for denoting movement or conveyance from place to place (transfer; transmit; transplant) or complete change (transform; transmute), or to form adjectives meaning 'crossing', 'on the other side of', or 'going beyond' the place named (transmontane; transnational; trans-Siberian).

Transgender means to go beyond gender and transhuman means to go beyond human. Both are aspects of the Cult plan to transform the human body to a synthetic state with *no gender*. Human 2.0 is not designed to procreate and would be produced technologically with no need for parents. The new human would mean the end of parents and so men, and increasingly women, are being targeted for the deletion of their rights and status. Parental rights are disappearing at an ever-quickenning speed for the same reason. The new human would have no need for men or women when there is no procreation and no gender. Perhaps the transgender movement that appears to be in a permanent state of frenzy might now contemplate on how it is being used. This was never about transgender rights which are only the interim excuse for confusing gender, particularly in the young, on the road to *fusing* gender. Transgender activism is not an end; it is a *means* to an end. We see again the technique of creative destruction in which you destroy the status quo to 'build back better' in the form that you want. The gender status quo had to be

destroyed by persuading the Cult-created Woke mentality to believe that you can have 100 genders or more. A programme for 9 to 12 year olds produced by the Cult-owned BBC promoted the 100 genders narrative. The very idea may be the most monumental nonsense, but it is not what is true that counts, only what you can make people *believe* is true. Once the gender of  $2 + 2 = 4$  has been dismantled through indoctrination, intimidation and  $2 + 2 = 5$  then the new no-gender normal can take its place with Human 2.0.

Aldous Huxley revealed the plan in his prophetic *Brave New World* in 1932:

Natural reproduction has been done away with and children are created, decanted', and raised in 'hatcheries and conditioning centres'. From birth, people are genetically designed to fit into one of five castes, which are further split into 'Plus' and 'Minus' members and designed to fulfil predetermined positions within the social and economic strata of the World State.

How could Huxley know this in 1932? For the same reason George Orwell knew about the Big Brother state in 1948, Cult insiders I have quoted knew about it in 1969, and I have known about it since the early 1990s. If you are connected to the Cult or you work your balls off to uncover the plan you can predict the future. The process is simple. If there is a plan for the world and nothing intervenes to stop it then it will happen. Thus if you communicate the plan ahead of time you are perceived to have predicted the future, but you haven't. You have revealed the plan which without intervention will become the human future. The whole reason I have done what I have is to alert enough people to inspire an intervention and maybe at last that time has come with the Cult and its intentions now so obvious to anyone with a brain in working order.

## **The future is here**

Technological wombs that Huxley described to replace parent procreation are already being developed and they are only the projects we know about in the public arena. Israeli scientists told *The Times of Israel* in March, 2021, that they have grown 250-cell embryos

into mouse fetuses with fully formed organs using artificial wombs in a development they say could pave the way for gestating humans outside the womb. Professor Jacob Hanna of the Weizmann Institute of Science said:

We took mouse embryos from the mother at day five of development, when they are just of 250 cells, and had them in the incubator from day five until day 11, by which point they had grown all their organs.

By day 11 they make their own blood and have a beating heart, a fully developed brain. Anybody would look at them and say, 'this is clearly a mouse foetus with all the characteristics of a mouse.' It's gone from being a ball of cells to being an advanced foetus.

A special liquid is used to nourish embryo cells in a laboratory dish and they float on the liquid to duplicate the first stage of embryonic development. The incubator creates all the right conditions for its development, Hanna said. The liquid gives the embryo 'all the nutrients, hormones and sugars they need' along with a custom-made electronic incubator which controls gas concentration, pressure and temperature. The cutting-edge in the underground bases and other secret locations will be light years ahead of that, however, and this was reported by the London *Guardian* in 2017:

We are approaching a biotechnological breakthrough. Ectogenesis, the invention of a complete external womb, could completely change the nature of human reproduction. In April this year, researchers at the Children's Hospital of Philadelphia announced their development of an artificial womb.

The article was headed 'Artificial wombs could soon be a reality. What will this mean for women?' What would it mean for children is an even bigger question. No mother to bond with only a machine in preparation for a life of soulless interaction and control in a world governed by machines (see the *Matrix* movies). Now observe the calculated manipulations of the 'Covid' hoax as human interaction and warmth has been curtailed by distancing, isolation and fear with people communicating via machines on a scale never seen before.

These are all dots in the same picture as are all the personal assistants, gadgets and children's toys through which kids and adults communicate with AI as if it is human. The AI 'voice' on Sat-Nav should be included. All these things are psychological preparation for the Cult endgame. Before you can make a physical connection with AI you have to make a psychological connection and that is what people are being conditioned to do with this ever gathering human-AI interaction. Movies and TV programmes depicting the transhuman, robot dystopia relate to a phenomenon known as 'pre-emptive programming' in which the world that is planned is portrayed everywhere in movies, TV and advertising. This is conditioning the conscious and subconscious mind to become familiar with the planned reality to dilute resistance when it happens for real. What would have been a shock such is the change is made less so. We have young children put on the road to transgender transition surgery with puberty blocking drugs at an age when they could never be able to make those life-changing decisions.

Rachel Levine, a professor of paediatrics and psychiatry who believes in treating children this way, became America's highest-ranked openly-transgender official when she was confirmed as US Assistant Secretary at the Department of Health and Human Services after being nominated by Joe Biden (the Cult). Activists and governments press for laws to deny parents a say in their children's transition process so the kids can be isolated and manipulated into agreeing to irreversible medical procedures. A Canadian father Robert Hoogland was denied bail by the Vancouver Supreme Court in 2021 and remained in jail for breaching a court order that he stay silent over his young teenage daughter, a minor, who was being offered life-changing hormone therapy without parental consent. At the age of 12 the girl's 'school counsellor' said she may be transgender, referred her to a doctor and told the school to treat her like a boy. This is another example of state-serving schools imposing ever more control over children's lives while parents have ever less.

Contemptible and extreme child abuse is happening all over the world as the Cult gender-fusion operation goes into warp-speed.

### **Why the war on men – and now women?**

The question about what artificial wombs mean for women should rightly be asked. The answer can be seen in the deletion of women's rights involving sport, changing rooms, toilets and status in favour of people in male bodies claiming to identify as women. I can identify as a mountain climber, but it doesn't mean I can climb a mountain any more than a biological man can be a biological woman. To believe so is a triumph of belief over factual reality which is the very perceptual basis of everything Woke. Women's sport is being destroyed by allowing those with male bodies who say they identify as female to 'compete' with girls and women. Male body 'women' dominate 'women's' competition with their greater muscle mass, bone density, strength and speed. With that disadvantage sport for women loses all meaning. To put this in perspective nearly 300 American high school boys can run faster than the quickest woman sprinter in the world. Women are seeing their previously protected spaces invaded by male bodies simply because they claim to identify as women. That's all they need to do to access all women's spaces and activities under the Biden 'Equality Act' that destroys equality for women with the usual Orwellian Woke inversion. Male sex offenders have already committed rapes in women's prisons after claiming to identify as women to get them transferred. Does this not matter to the Woke 'equality' hypocrites? Not in the least. What matters to Cult manipulators and funders behind transgender activists is to advance gender fusion on the way to the no-gender 'human'. When you are seeking to impose transparent nonsense like this, or the 'Covid' hoax, the only way the nonsense can prevail is through censorship and intimidation of dissenters, deletion of factual information, and programming of the unquestioning, bewildered and naive. You don't have to scan the world for long to see that all these things are happening.

Many women's rights organisations have realised that rights and status which took such a long time to secure are being eroded and that it is systematic. Kara Dansky of the global Women's Human Rights Campaign said that Biden's transgender executive order immediately he took office, subsequent orders, and Equality Act legislation that followed 'seek to erase women and girls in the law as a category'. *Exactly*. I said during the long ago-started war on men (in which many women play a crucial part) that this was going to turn into a war on them. The Cult is phasing out *both* male and female genders. To get away with that they are brought into conflict so they are busy fighting each other while the Cult completes the job with no unity of response. Unity, people, *unity*. We need unity everywhere. Transgender is the only show in town as the big step towards the no-gender human. It's not about rights for transgender people and never has been. Woke political correctness is deleting words relating to genders to the same end. Wokers believe this is to be 'inclusive' when the opposite is true. They are deleting words describing gender because gender *itself* is being deleted by Human 2.0. Terms like 'man', 'woman', 'mother' and 'father' are being deleted in the universities and other institutions to be replaced by the *no*-gender, not trans-gender, 'individuals' and 'guardians'. Women's rights campaigner Maria Keffler of Partners for Ethical Care said: 'Children are being taught from kindergarten upward that some boys have a vagina, some girls have a penis, and that kids can be any gender they want to be.' Do we really believe that suddenly countries all over the world at the same time had the idea of having drag queens go into schools or read transgender stories to very young children in the local library? It's coldly-calculated confusion of gender on the way to the fusion of gender. Suzanne Vierling, a psychologist from Southern California, made another important point:

Yesterday's slave woman who endured gynecological medical experiments is today's girl-child being butchered in a booming gender-transitioning sector. Ovaries removed, pushing her into menopause and osteoporosis, uncharted territory, and parents' rights and authority decimated.

The erosion of parental rights is a common theme in line with the Cult plans to erase the very concept of parents and 'ovaries removed, pushing her into menopause' means what? Those born female lose the ability to have children – another way to discontinue humanity as we know it.

## **Eliminating Human 1.0 (before our very eyes)**

To pave the way for Human 2.0 you must phase out Human 1.0. This is happening through plummeting sperm counts and making women infertile through an onslaught of chemicals, radiation (including smartphones in pockets of men) and mRNA 'vaccines'. Common agriculture pesticides are also having a devastating impact on human fertility. I have been tracking collapsing sperm counts in the books for a long time and in 2021 came a book by fertility scientist and reproductive epidemiologist Shanna Swan, *Count Down: How Our Modern World Is Threatening Sperm Counts, Altering Male and Female Reproductive Development and Imperiling the Future of the Human Race*. She reports how the global fertility rate dropped by *half* between 1960 and 2016 with America's birth rate 16 percent below where it needs to be to sustain the population. Women are experiencing declining egg quality, more miscarriages, and more couples suffer from infertility. Other findings were an increase in erectile dysfunction, infant boys developing more genital abnormalities, male problems with conception, and plunging levels of the male hormone testosterone which would explain why so many men have lost their backbone and masculinity. This has been very evident during the 'Covid' hoax when women have been prominent among the Pushbackers and big strapping blokes have bowed their heads, covered their faces with a nappy and quietly submitted. Mind control expert Cathy O'Brien also points to how global education introduced the concept of 'we're all winners' in sport and classrooms: 'Competition was defused, and it in turn defused a sense of fighting back.' This is another version of the 'equity' doctrine in which you drive down rather than raise up. What a contrast in Cult-controlled China with its global ambitions

where the government published plans in January, 2021, to 'cultivate masculinity' in boys from kindergarten through to high school in the face of a 'masculinity crisis'. A government adviser said boys would be soon become 'delicate, timid and effeminate' unless action was taken. Don't expect any similar policy in the targeted West. A 2006 study showed that a 65-year-old man in 2002 had testosterone levels 15 percent lower than a 65-year-old man in 1987 while a 2020 study found a similar story with young adults and adolescents. Men are getting prescriptions for testosterone replacement therapy which causes an even greater drop in sperm count with up to 99 percent seeing sperm counts drop to zero during the treatment. More sperm is defective and malfunctioning with some having two heads or not pursuing an egg.

A class of *synthetic* chemicals known as phthalates are being blamed for the decline. These are found everywhere in plastics, shampoos, cosmetics, furniture, flame retardants, personal care products, pesticides, canned foods and even receipts. Why till receipts? Everyone touches them. Let no one delude themselves that all this is not systematic to advance the long-time agenda for human body transformation. Phthalates mimic hormones and disrupt the hormone balance causing testosterone to fall and genital birth defects in male infants. Animals and fish have been affected in the same way due to phthalates and other toxins in rivers. When fish turn gay or change sex through chemicals in rivers and streams it is a pointer to why there has been such an increase in gay people and the sexually confused. It doesn't matter to me what sexuality people choose to be, but if it's being affected by chemical pollution and consumption then we need to know. Does anyone really think that this is not connected to the transgender agenda, the war on men and the condemnation of male 'toxic masculinity'? You watch this being followed by 'toxic femininity'. It's already happening. When breastfeeding becomes 'chest-feeding', pregnant women become pregnant people along with all the other Woke claptrap you know that the world is going insane and there's a Cult scam in progress. Transgender activists are promoting the Cult agenda while Cult



billionaires support and fund the insanity as they laugh themselves to sleep at the sheer stupidity for which humans must be infamous in galaxies far, far away.

### **‘Covid vaccines’ and female infertility**

We can now see why the ‘vaccine’ has been connected to potential infertility in women. Dr Michael Yeadon, former Vice President and Chief Scientific Advisor at Pfizer, and Dr Wolfgang Wodarg in Germany, filed a petition with the European Medicines Agency in December, 2020, urging them to stop trials for the Pfizer/BioNTech shot and all other mRNA trials until further studies had been done. They were particularly concerned about possible effects on fertility with ‘vaccine’-produced antibodies attacking the protein Syncytin-1 which is responsible for developing the placenta. The result would be infertility ‘of indefinite duration’ in women who have the ‘vaccine’ with the placenta failing to form. Section 10.4.2 of the Pfizer/BioNTech trial protocol says that pregnant women or those who might become so should not have mRNA shots. Section 10.4 warns men taking mRNA shots to ‘be abstinent from heterosexual intercourse’ and not to donate sperm. The UK government said that it *did not know* if the mRNA procedure had an effect on fertility. *Did not know?* These people have to go to jail. UK government advice did not recommend at the start that pregnant women had the shot and said they should avoid pregnancy for at least two months after ‘vaccination’. The ‘advice’ was later updated to pregnant women should only have the ‘vaccine’ if the benefits outweighed the risks to mother and foetus. What the hell is that supposed to mean? Then ‘spontaneous abortions’ began to appear and rapidly increase on the adverse reaction reporting schemes which include only a fraction of adverse reactions. Thousands and ever-growing numbers of ‘vaccinated’ women are describing changes to their menstrual cycle with heavier blood flow, irregular periods and menstruating again after going through the menopause – all links to reproduction effects. Women are passing blood clots and the lining of their uterus while men report erectile dysfunction and blood effects. Most

significantly of all *unvaccinated* women began to report similar menstrual changes after interaction with '*vaccinated*' people and men and children were also affected with bleeding noses, blood clots and other conditions. 'Shedding' is when vaccinated people can emit the content of a vaccine to affect the unvaccinated, but this is different. 'Vaccinated' people were not shedding a 'live virus' allegedly in 'vaccines' as before because the fake 'Covid vaccines' involve synthetic material and other toxicity. Doctors exposing what is happening prefer the term 'transmission' to shedding. Somehow those that have had the shots are transmitting effects to those that haven't. Dr Carrie Madej said the nano-content of the 'vaccines' can 'act like an antenna' to others around them which fits perfectly with my own conclusions. This 'vaccine' transmission phenomenon was becoming known as the book went into production and I deal with this further in the Postscript.

Vaccine effects on sterility are well known. The World Health Organization was accused in 2014 of sterilising millions of women in Kenya with the evidence confirmed by the content of the vaccines involved. The same WHO behind the 'Covid' hoax admitted its involvement for more than ten years with the vaccine programme. Other countries made similar claims. Charges were lodged by Tanzania, Nicaragua, Mexico, and the Philippines. The Gardasil vaccine claimed to protect against a genital 'virus' known as HPV has also been linked to infertility. Big Pharma and the WHO (same thing) are criminal and satanic entities. Then there's the Bill Gates Foundation which is connected through funding and shared interests with 20 pharmaceutical giants and laboratories. He stands accused of directing the policy of United Nations Children's Fund (UNICEF), vaccine alliance GAVI, and other groupings, to advance the vaccine agenda and silence opposition at great cost to women and children. At the same time Gates wants to reduce the global population. Coincidence?

**Great Reset = Smart Grid = new human**

The Cult agenda I have been exposing for 30 years is now being openly promoted by Cult assets like Gates and Klaus Schwab of the World Economic Forum under code-terms like the 'Great Reset', 'Build Back Better' and 'a rare but narrow window of opportunity to reflect, reimagine, and reset our world'. What provided this 'rare but narrow window of opportunity'? The 'Covid' hoax did. Who created that? *They* did. My books from not that long ago warned about the planned 'Internet of Things' (IoT) and its implications for human freedom. This was the plan to connect all technology to the Internet and artificial intelligence and today we are way down that road with an estimated 36 billion devices connected to the World Wide Web and that figure is projected to be 76 billion by 2025. I further warned that the Cult planned to go beyond that to the Internet of *Everything* when the human brain was connected via AI to the Internet and Kurzweil's 'cloud'. Now we have Cult operatives like Schwab calling for precisely that under the term 'Internet of Bodies', a fusion of the physical, digital and biological into one centrally-controlled Smart Grid system which the Cult refers to as the 'Fourth Industrial Revolution'. They talk about the 'biological', but they really mean the synthetic-biological which is required to fully integrate the human body and brain into the Smart Grid and artificial intelligence planned to replace the human mind. We have everything being synthetically manipulated including the natural world through GMO and smart dust, the food we eat and the human body itself with synthetic 'vaccines'. I said in *The Answer* that we would see the Cult push for synthetic meat to replace animals and in February, 2021, the so predictable psychopath Bill Gates called for the introduction of synthetic meat to save us all from 'climate change'. The climate hoax just keeps on giving like the 'Covid' hoax. The war on meat by vegan activists is a carbon (oops, sorry) copy of the manipulation of transgender activists. They have no idea (except their inner core) that they are being used to promote and impose the agenda of the Cult or that they are only the *vehicle* and not the *reason*. This is not to say those who choose not to eat meat shouldn't be respected and supported in that right, but there are ulterior motives

for those in power. A *Forbes* article in December, 2019, highlighted the plan so beloved of Schwab and the Cult under the heading: 'What Is The Internet of Bodies? And How Is It Changing Our World?' The article said the human body is the latest data platform (remember 'our vaccine is an operating system'). *Forbes* described the plan very accurately and the words could have come straight out of my books from long before:

The Internet of Bodies (IoB) is an extension of the IoT and basically connects the human body to a network through devices that are ingested, implanted, or connected to the body in some way. Once connected, data can be exchanged, and the body and device can be remotely monitored and controlled.

They were really describing a human hive mind with human perception centrally-dictated via an AI connection as well as allowing people to be 'remotely monitored and controlled'. Everything from a fridge to a human mind could be directed from a central point by these insane psychopaths and 'Covid vaccines' are crucial to this. *Forbes* explained the process I mentioned earlier of holdable and wearable technology followed by implantable. The article said there were three generations of the Internet of Bodies that include:

- Body external: These are wearable devices such as Apple Watches or Fitbits that can monitor our health.
- Body internal: These include pacemakers, cochlear implants, and digital pills that go inside our bodies to monitor or control various aspects of health.
- Body embedded: The third generation of the Internet of Bodies is embedded technology where technology and the human body are melded together and have a real-time connection to a remote machine.

*Forbes* noted the development of the Brain Computer Interface (BCI) which merges the brain with an external device for monitoring and controlling in real-time. 'The ultimate goal is to help restore function to individuals with disabilities by using brain signals rather than conventional neuromuscular pathways.' Oh, do fuck off. The goal of brain interface technology is controlling human thought and emotion from the central point in a hive mind serving its masters wishes. Many people are now agreeing to be chipped to open doors without a key. You can recognise them because they'll be wearing a mask, social distancing and lining up for the 'vaccine'. The Cult plans a Great Reset money system after they have completed the demolition of the global economy in which 'money' will be exchanged through communication with body operating systems. Rand Corporation, a Cult-owned think tank, said of the Internet of Bodies or IoB:

Internet of Bodies technologies fall under the broader IoT umbrella. But as the name suggests, IoB devices introduce an even more intimate interplay between humans and gadgets. IoB devices monitor the human body, collect health metrics and other personal information, and transmit those data over the Internet. Many devices, such as fitness trackers, are already in use ... IoB devices ... and those in development can track, record, and store users' whereabouts, bodily functions, and what they see, hear, and even think.

Schwab's World Economic Forum, a long-winded way of saying 'fascism' or 'the Cult', has gone full-on with the Internet of Bodies in the 'Covid' era. 'We're entering the era of the Internet of Bodies', it declared, 'collecting our physical data via a range of devices that can be implanted, swallowed or worn'. The result would be a huge amount of health-related data that could improve human wellbeing around the world, and prove crucial in fighting the 'Covid-19 pandemic'. Does anyone think these clowns care about 'human wellbeing' after the death and devastation their pandemic hoax has purposely caused? Schwab and co say we should move forward with the Internet of Bodies because 'Keeping track of symptoms could help us stop the spread of infection, and quickly detect new cases'. How wonderful, but keeping track' is all they are really bothered

about. Researchers were investigating if data gathered from smartwatches and similar devices could be used as viral infection alerts by tracking the user's heart rate and breathing. Schwab said in his 2018 book *Shaping the Future of the Fourth Industrial Revolution*:

The lines between technologies and beings are becoming blurred and not just by the ability to create lifelike robots or synthetics. Instead it is about the ability of new technologies to literally become part of us. Technologies already influence how we understand ourselves, how we think about each other, and how we determine our realities. As the technologies ... give us deeper access to parts of ourselves, we may begin to integrate digital technologies into our bodies.

You can see what the game is. Twenty-four hour control and people – if you could still call them that – would never know when something would go ping and take them out of circulation. It's the most obvious rush to a global fascist dictatorship and the complete submission of humanity and yet still so many are locked away in their Cult-induced perceptual coma and can't see it.

## **Smart Grid control centres**

The human body is being transformed by the 'vaccines' and in other ways into a synthetic cyborg that can be attached to the global Smart Grid which would be controlled from a central point and other sub-locations of Grid manipulation. Where are these planned to be? Well, China for a start which is one of the Cult's biggest centres of operation. The technological control system and technocratic rule was incubated here to be unleashed across the world after the 'Covid' hoax came out of China in 2020. Another Smart Grid location that will surprise people new to this is Israel. I have exposed in *The Trigger* how Sabbatian technocrats, intelligence and military operatives were behind the horrors of 9/11 and not 19 Arab hijackers' who somehow manifested the ability to pilot big passenger airliners when instructors at puddle-jumping flying schools described some of them as a joke. The 9/11 attacks were made possible through control of civilian and military air computer systems and those of the White House, Pentagon and connected agencies. See *The Trigger* – it

will blow your mind. The controlling and coordinating force were the Sabbatian networks in Israel and the United States which by then had infiltrated the entire US government, military and intelligence system. The real name of the American Deep State is 'Sabbatian State'. Israel is a tiny country of only nine million people, but it is one of the global centres of cyber operations and fast catching Silicon Valley in importance to the Cult. Israel is known as the 'start-up nation' for all the cyber companies spawned there with the Sabbatian specialisation of 'cyber security' that I mentioned earlier which gives those companies access to computer systems of their clients in real time through 'backdoors' written into the coding when security software is downloaded. The Sabbatian centre of cyber operations outside Silicon Valley is the Israeli military Cyber Intelligence Unit, the biggest infrastructure project in Israel's history, headquartered in the desert-city of Beersheba and involving some 20,000 'cyber soldiers'. Here are located a literal army of Internet trolls scanning social media, forums and comment lists for anyone challenging the Cult agenda. The UK military has something similar with its 77th Brigade and associated operations. The Beersheba complex includes research and development centres for other Cult operations such as Intel, Microsoft, IBM, Google, Apple, Hewlett-Packard, Cisco Systems, Facebook and Motorola. [Techcrunch.com](http://Techcrunch.com) ran an article about the Beersheba global Internet technology centre headlined 'Israel's desert city of Beersheba is turning into a cybertech oasis':

The military's massive relocation of its prestigious technology units, the presence of multinational and local companies, a close proximity to Ben Gurion University and generous government subsidies are turning Beersheba into a major global cybertech hub. Beersheba has all of the ingredients of a vibrant security technology ecosystem, including Ben Gurion University with its graduate program in cybersecurity and Cyber Security Research Center, and the presence of companies such as EMC, Deutsche Telekom, PayPal, Oracle, IBM, and Lockheed Martin. It's also the future home of the INCB (Israeli National Cyber Bureau); offers a special income tax incentive for cyber security companies, and was the site for the relocation of the army's intelligence corps units.

Sabbatians have taken over the cyber world through the following process: They scan the schools for likely cyber talent and develop them at Ben Gurion University and their period of conscription in the Israeli Defense Forces when they are stationed at the Beersheba complex. When the cyber talented officially leave the army they are funded to start cyber companies with technology developed by themselves or given to them by the state. Much of this is stolen through backdoors of computer systems around the world with America top of the list. Others are sent off to Silicon Valley to start companies or join the major ones and so we have many major positions filled by apparently 'Jewish' but really Sabbatian operatives. Google, YouTube and Facebook are all run by 'Jewish' CEOs while Twitter is all but run by ultra-Zionist hedge-fund shark Paul Singer. At the centre of the Sabbatian global cyber web is the Israeli army's Unit 8200 which specialises in hacking into computer systems of other countries, inserting viruses, gathering information, instigating malfunction, and even taking control of them from a distance. A long list of Sabbatians involved with 9/11, Silicon Valley and Israeli cyber security companies are operatives of Unit 8200. This is not about Israel. It's about the Cult. Israel is planned to be a Smart Grid hub as with China and what is happening at Beersheba is not for the benefit of Jewish people who are treated disgustingly by the Sabbatian elite that control the country. A glance at the Nuremberg Codes will tell you that.

The story is much bigger than 'Covid', important as that is to where we are being taken. Now, though, it's time to really strap in. There's more ... much more ...



## CHAPTER ELEVEN

### Who controls the Cult?

*Awake, arise or be forever fall'n*  
John Milton, *Paradise Lost*

I have exposed this far the level of the Cult conspiracy that operates in the world of the seen and within the global secret society and satanic network which operates in the shadows one step back from the seen. The story, however, goes much deeper than that.

The 'Covid' hoax is major part of the Cult agenda, but only part, and to grasp the biggest picture we have to expand our attention beyond the realm of human sight and into the infinity of possibility that we cannot see. It is from here, ultimately, that humanity is being manipulated into a state of total control by the force which dictates the actions of the Cult. How much of reality can we see? Next to damn all is the answer. We may appear to see all there is to see in the 'space' our eyes survey and observe, but little could be further from the truth. The human 'world' is only a tiny band of frequency that the body's visual and perceptual systems can decode into *perception* of a 'world'. According to mainstream science the electromagnetic spectrum is 0.005 percent of what exists in the Universe ([Fig 10](#)). The maximum estimate I have seen is 0.5 percent and either way it's miniscule. I say it is far, far, smaller even than 0.005 percent when you compare reality we see with the totality of reality that we don't. Now get this if you are new to such information: Visible light, the only band of frequency that we can see, is a *fraction* of the 0.005

percent (Fig 11 overleaf). Take this further and realise that our universe is one of infinite universes and that universes are only a fragment of overall reality – *infinite* reality. Then compare that with the almost infinitesimal frequency band of visible light or human sight. You see that humans are as near blind as it is possible to be without actually being so. Artist and filmmaker, Sergio Toporek, said:

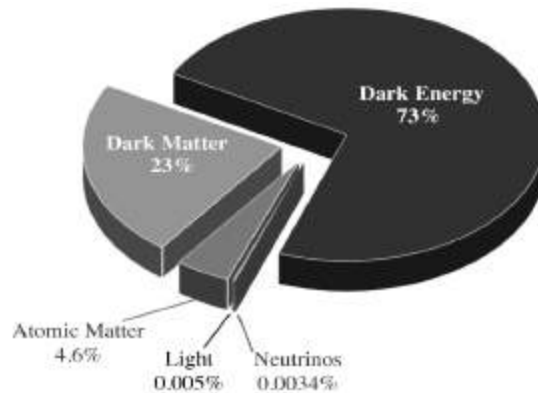


**Figure 10:** Humans can perceive such a tiny band of visual reality it's laughable.

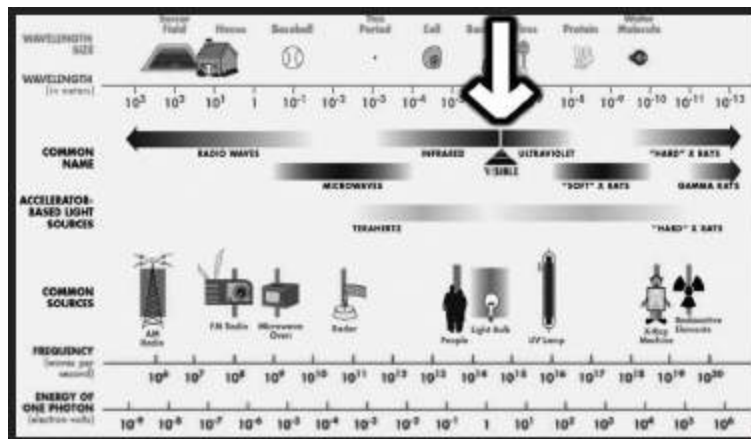


**Figure 11:** We can see a smear of the 0.005 percent electromagnetic spectrum, but we still know it all. Yep, makes sense.

Consider that you can see less than 1% of the electromagnetic spectrum and hear less than 1% of the acoustic spectrum. 90% of the cells in your body carry their own microbial DNA and are not 'you'. The atoms in your body are 99.9999999999999999% empty space and none of them are the ones you were born with ... Human beings have 46 chromosomes, two less than a potato.

The existence of the rainbow depends on the conical photoreceptors in your eyes; to animals without cones, the rainbow does not exist. So you don't just look at a rainbow, you create it. This is pretty amazing, especially considering that all the beautiful colours you see represent less than 1% of the electromagnetic spectrum.

Suddenly the 'world' of humans looks a very different place. Take into account, too, that Planet Earth when compared with the projected size of this single universe is the equivalent of a billionth of a pinhead. Imagine the ratio that would be when compared to infinite reality. To think that Christianity once insisted that Earth and humanity were the centre of everything. This background is vital if we are going to appreciate the nature of 'human' and how we can be manipulated by an unseen force. To human visual reality virtually *everything* is unseen and yet the prevailing perception within the institutions and so much of the public is that if we can't see it, touch it, hear it, taste it and smell it then it cannot exist. Such perception is indoctrinated and encouraged by the Cult and its agents because it isolates believers in the strictly limited, village-idiot, realm of the five senses where perceptions can be firewalled and information controlled. Most of those perpetuating the 'this-world-is-all-there-is' insanity are themselves indoctrinated into believing the same delusion. While major players and influencers know that official reality is laughable most of those in science, academia and medicine really believe the nonsense they peddle and teach succeeding generations. Those who challenge the orthodoxy are dismissed as nutters and freaks to protect the manufactured illusion from exposure. Observe the dynamic of the 'Covid' hoax and you will see how that takes the same form. The inner-circle psychopaths knows it's a gigantic scam, but almost the entirety of those imposing their fascist rules believe that 'Covid' is all that they're told it is.

## **Stolen identity**

Ask people who they are and they will give you their name, place of birth, location, job, family background and life story. Yet that is not who they are – it is what they are *experiencing*. The difference is *absolutely crucial*. The true 'I', the eternal, infinite 'I', is consciousness,

a state of being aware. Forget 'form'. That is a vehicle for a brief experience. Consciousness does not come *from* the brain, but *through* the brain and even that is more symbolic than literal. We are awareness, pure awareness, and this is what withdraws from the body at what we call 'death' to continue our eternal beingness, *isness*, in other realms of reality within the limitlessness of infinity or the Biblical 'many mansions in my father's house'. Labels of a human life, man, woman, transgender, black, white, brown, nationality, circumstances and income are not who we are. They are what we are – awareness – is *experiencing* in a brief connection with a band of frequency we call 'human'. The labels are not the self; they are, to use the title of one of my books, a *Phantom Self*. I am not David Icke born in Leicester, England, on April 29th, 1952. I am the consciousness *having that experience*. The Cult and its non-human masters seek to convince us through the institutions of 'education', science, medicine, media and government that what we are *experiencing* is who we *are*. It's so easy to control and direct perception locked away in the bewildered illusions of the five senses with no expanded radar. Try, by contrast, doing the same with a humanity aware of its true self and its true power to consciously create its reality and experience. How is it possible to do this? We do it all day every day. If you perceive yourself as 'little me' with no power to impact upon your life and the world then your life experience will reflect that. You will hand the power you don't think you have to authority in all its forms which will use it to control your experience. This, in turn, will appear to confirm your perception of 'little me' in a self-fulfilling feedback loop. But that is what 'little me' really is – a *perception*. We are all 'big-me', infinite me, and the Cult has to make us forget that if its will is to prevail. We are therefore manipulated and pressured into self-identifying with human labels and not the consciousness/awareness *experiencing* those human labels.

The phenomenon of identity politics is a Cult-instigated manipulation technique to sub-divide previous labels into even smaller ones. A United States university employs this list of letters to

describe student identity: LGBTTQQFAGPBDSM or lesbian, gay, bisexual, transgender, transsexual, queer, questioning, flexual, asexual, gender-fuck, polyamorous, bondage/discipline, dominance/submission and sadism/masochism. I'm sure other lists are even longer by now as people feel the need to self-identity the 'I' with the minutiae of race and sexual preference. Wokers programmed by the Cult for generations believe this is about 'inclusivity' when it's really the Cult locking them away into smaller and smaller versions of Phantom Self while firewalling them from the influence of their true self, the infinite, eternal 'I'. You may notice that my philosophy which contends that we are all unique points of attention/awareness within the same infinite whole or Oneness is the ultimate non-racism. The very sense of Oneness makes the judgement of people by their body-type, colour or sexuality utterly ridiculous and confirms that racism has no understanding of reality (including anti-white racism). Yet despite my perception of life Cult agents and fast-asleep Wokers label me racist to discredit my information while they are themselves phenomenally racist and sexist. All they see is race and sexuality and they judge people as good or bad, demons or untouchables, by their race and sexuality. All they see is *Phantom Self* and perceive themselves in terms of Phantom Self. They are pawns and puppets of the Cult agenda to focus attention and self-identity in the five senses and play those identities against each other to divide and rule. Columbia University has introduced segregated graduations in another version of social distancing designed to drive people apart and teach them that different racial and cultural groups have nothing in common with each other. The last thing the Cult wants is unity. Again the pump-primers of this will be Cult operatives in the knowledge of what they are doing, but the rest are just the Phantom Self blind leading the Phantom Self blind. We *do* have something in common – we are all *the same consciousness* having different temporary experiences.

## **What is this 'human'?**

Yes, what *is* 'human'? That is what we are supposed to be, right? I mean 'human'? True, but 'human' is the experience not the 'I'. Break it down to basics and 'human' is the way that information is processed. If we are to experience and interact with this band of frequency we call the 'world' we must have a vehicle that operates within that band of frequency. Our consciousness in its prime form cannot do that; it is way beyond the frequency of the human realm. My consciousness or awareness could not tap these keys and pick up the cup in front of me in the same way that radio station A cannot interact with radio station B when they are on different frequencies. The human body is the means through which we have that interaction. I have long described the body as a biological computer which processes information in a way that allows consciousness to experience this reality. The body is a receiver, transmitter and processor of information in a particular way that we call human. We visually perceive only the world of the five senses in a wakened state – that is the limit of the body's visual decoding system. In truth it's not even visual in the way we experience 'visual reality' as I will come to in a moment. We are 'human' because the body processes the information sources of human into a reality and behaviour system that we *perceive* as human. Why does an elephant act like an elephant and not like a human or a duck? The elephant's biological computer is a different information field and processes information according to that program into a visual and behaviour type we call an elephant. The same applies to everything in our reality. These body information fields are perpetuated through procreation (like making a copy of a software program). The Cult wants to break that cycle and intervene technologically to transform the human information field into one that will change what we call humanity. If it can change the human information field it will change the way that field processes information and change humanity both 'physically' and psychologically. Hence the *messenger* (information) RNA 'vaccines' and so much more that is targeting human genetics by changing the body's information – *messaging* – construct through food, drink, radiation, toxicity and other means.

Reality that we experience is nothing like reality as it really is in the same way that the reality people experience in virtual reality games is not the reality they are really living in. The game is only a decoded source of information that appears to be a reality. Our world is also an information construct – a *simulation* (more later). In its base form our reality is a wavefield of information much the same in theme as Wi-Fi. The five senses decode wavefield information into electrical information which they communicate to the brain to decode into holographic (illusory ‘physical’) information. Different parts of the brain specialise in decoding different senses and the information is fused into a reality that appears to be outside of us but is really inside the brain and the genetic structure in general ([Fig 12](#) overleaf). DNA is a receiver-transmitter of information and a vital part of this decoding process and the body’s connection to other realities. Change DNA and you change the way we decode and connect with reality – see ‘Covid vaccines’. Think of computers decoding Wi-Fi. You have information encoded in a radiation field and the computer decodes that information into a very different form on the screen. You can’t see the Wi-Fi until its information is made manifest on the screen and the information on the screen is inside the computer and not outside. I have just described how we decode the ‘human world’. All five senses decode the waveform ‘Wi-Fi’ field into electrical signals and the brain (computer) constructs reality inside the brain and not outside – ‘You don’t just look at a rainbow, you create it’. Sound is a simple example. We don’t hear sound until the brain decodes it. Waveform sound waves are picked up by the hearing sense and communicated to the brain in an electrical form to be decoded into the sounds that we hear. Everything we hear is inside the brain along with everything we see, feel, smell and taste. Words and language are waveform fields generated by our vocal chords which pass through this process until they are decoded by the brain into words that we hear. Different languages are different frequency fields or sound waves generated by vocal chords. Late British philosopher Alan Watts said:

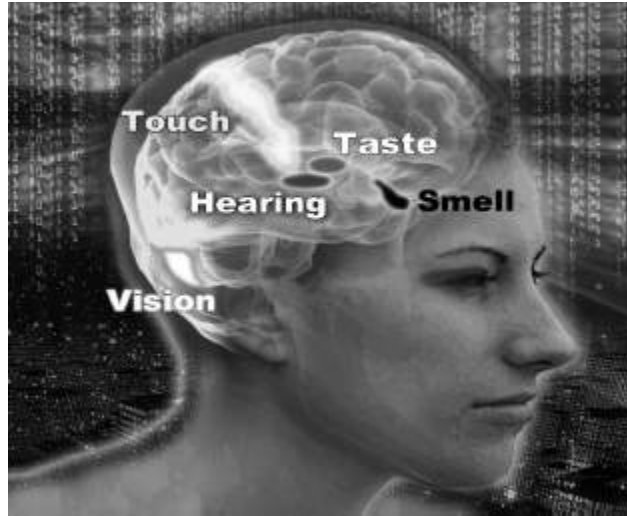


**Figure 12:** The brain receives information from the five senses and constructs from that our perceived reality.

[Without the brain] the world is devoid of light, heat, weight, solidity, motion, space, time or any other imaginable feature. All these phenomena are interactions, or transactions, of vibrations with a certain arrangement of neurons.

That's exactly what they are and scientist Robert Lanza describes in his book, *Biocentrism*, how we decode electromagnetic waves and energy into visual and 'physical' experience. He uses the example of a flame emitting photons, electromagnetic energy, each pulsing electrically and magnetically:

... these ... invisible electromagnetic waves strike a human retina, and if (and only if) the waves happen to measure between 400 and 700 nano meters in length from crest to crest, then their energy is just right to deliver a stimulus to the 8 million cone-shaped cells in the retina.

Each in turn send an electrical pulse to a neighbour neuron, and on up the line this goes, at 250 mph, until it reaches the ... occipital lobe of the brain, in the back of the head. There, a cascading complex of neurons fire from the incoming stimuli, and we subjectively perceive this experience as a yellow brightness occurring in a place we have been conditioned to call the 'external world'.

**You hear what you decode**



If a tree falls or a building collapses they make no noise unless someone is there to decode the energetic waves generated by the disturbance into what we call sound. Does a falling tree make a noise? Only if you hear it – *decode* it. Everything in our reality is a frequency field of information operating within the overall ‘Wi-Fi’ field that I call The Field. A vibrational disturbance is generated in The Field by the fields of the falling tree or building. These disturbance waves are what we decode into the sound of them falling. If no one is there to do that then neither will make any noise. Reality is created by the observer – *decoder* – and the *perceptions* of the observer affect the decoding process. For this reason different people – different *perceptions* – will perceive the same reality or situation in a different way. What one may perceive as a nightmare another will see as an opportunity. The question of why the Cult is so focused on controlling human perception now answers itself. All experienced reality is the act of decoding and we don’t experience Wi-Fi until it is decoded on the computer screen. The sight and sound of an Internet video is encoded in the Wi-Fi all around us, but we don’t see or hear it until the computer decodes that information. Taste, smell and touch are all phenomena of the brain as a result of the same process. We don’t taste, smell or feel anything except in the brain and there are pain relief techniques that seek to block the signal from the site of discomfort to the brain because if the brain doesn’t decode that signal we don’t feel pain. Pain is in the brain and only appears to be at the point of impact thanks to the feedback loop between them. We don’t see anything until electrical information from the sight senses is decoded in an area at the back of the brain. If that area is damaged we can go blind when our eyes are perfectly okay. So why do we go blind if we damage an eye? We damage the information processing between the waveform visual information and the visual decoding area of the brain. If information doesn’t reach the brain in a form it can decode then we can’t see the visual reality that it represents. What’s more the brain is decoding only a fraction of the information it receives and the rest is absorbed by the

sub-conscious mind. This explanation is from the science magazine, *Wonderpedia*:

Every second, 11 million sensations crackle along these [brain] pathways ... The brain is confronted with an alarming array of images, sounds and smells which it rigorously filters down until it is left with a manageable list of around 40. Thus 40 sensations per second make up what we perceive as reality.

The 'world' is not what people are told to believe that is it and the inner circles of the Cult *know that*.

### **Illusory 'physical' reality**

We can only see a smear of 0.005 percent of the Universe which is only one of a vast array of universes – 'mansions' – within infinite reality. Even then the brain decodes only 40 pieces of information ('sensations') from a potential *11 million* that we receive every second. Two points strike you from this immediately: The sheer breathtaking stupidity of believing we know anything so rigidly that there's nothing more to know; and the potential for these processes to be manipulated by a malevolent force to control the reality of the population. One thing I can say for sure with no risk of contradiction is that when you can perceive an almost indescribable fraction of infinite reality there is always more to know as in tidal waves of it. Ancient Greek philosopher Socrates was so right when he said that wisdom is to know how little we know. How obviously true that is when you think that we are experiencing a physical world of solidity that is neither physical nor solid and a world of apartness when everything is connected. Cult-controlled 'science' dismisses the so-called 'paranormal' and all phenomena related to that when the 'para'-normal is perfectly normal and explains the alleged 'great mysteries' which dumbfound scientific minds. There is a reason for this. A 'scientific mind' in terms of the mainstream is a material mind, a five-sense mind imprisoned in see it, touch it, hear it, smell it and taste it. Phenomena and happenings that can't be explained that way leave the 'scientific mind' bewildered and the rule is that if they

can't account for why something is happening then it can't, by definition, be happening. I beg to differ. Telepathy is thought waves passing through The Field (think wave disturbance again) to be decoded by someone able to connect with that wavelength (information). For example: You can pick up the thought waves of a friend at any distance and at the very least that will bring them to mind. A few minutes later the friend calls you. 'My god', you say, 'that's incredible – I was just thinking of you.' Ah, but *they* were thinking of *you* before they made the call and that's what you decoded. Native peoples not entrapped in five-sense reality do this so well it became known as the 'bush telegraph'. Those known as psychics and mediums (genuine ones) are doing the same only across dimensions of reality. 'Mind over matter' comes from the fact that matter and mind are the *same*. The state of one influences the state of the other. Indeed one *and* the other are illusions. They are aspects of the same field. Paranormal phenomena are all explainable so why are they still considered 'mysteries' or not happening? Once you go down this road of understanding you begin to expand awareness beyond the five senses and that's the nightmare for the Cult.



**Figure 13:** Holograms are not solid, but the best ones appear to be.

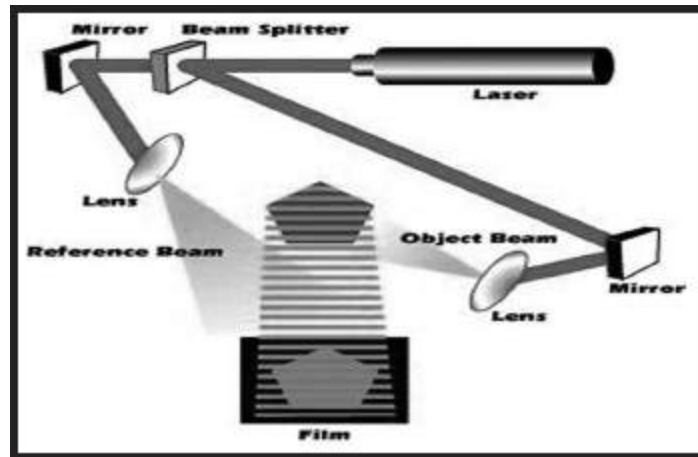


**Figure 14:** How holograms are created by capturing a waveform version of the subject image.

## Holographic 'solidity'

Our reality is not solid, it is holographic. We are now well aware of holograms which are widely used today. Two-dimensional information is decoded into a three-dimensional reality that is not solid although can very much appear to be (Fig 13). Holograms are created with a laser divided into two parts. One goes directly onto a holographic photographic print ('reference beam') and the other takes a waveform image of the subject ('working beam') before being directed onto the print where it 'collides' with the other half of the laser (Fig 14). This creates a *waveform* interference pattern which contains the wavefield information of whatever is being photographed (Fig 15 overleaf). The process can be likened to dropping pebbles in a pond. Waves generated by each one spread out across the water to collide with the others and create a wave representation of where the stones fell and at what speed, weight and distance. A waveform interference pattern of a hologram is akin to the waveform information in The Field which the five senses decode into electrical signals to be decoded by the brain into a holographic illusory 'physical' reality. In the same way when a laser (think human attention) is directed at the waveform interference pattern a three-dimensional version of the subject is projected into apparently 'solid' reality (Fig 16). An amazing trait of holograms reveals more 'paranormal mysteries'. Information of the *whole*

hologram is encoded in waveform in every part of the interference pattern by the way they are created. This means that every *part* of a hologram is a smaller version of the whole. Cut the interference wave-pattern into four and you won't get four parts of the image. You get quarter-sized versions of the *whole* image. The body is a hologram and the same applies. Here we have the basis of acupuncture, reflexology and other forms of healing which identify representations of the whole body in all of the parts, hands, feet, ears, everywhere. Skilled palm readers can do what they do because the information of whole body is encoded in the hand. The concept of as above, so below, comes from this.



**Figure 15:** A waveform interference pattern that holds the information that transforms into a hologram.



**Figure 16:** Holographic people including 'Elvis' holographically inserted to sing a duet with Celine Dion.

The question will be asked of why, if solidity is illusory, we can't just walk through walls and each other. The resistance is not solid against solid; it is electromagnetic field against electromagnetic field and we decode this into the *experience* of solid against solid. We should also not underestimate the power of belief to dictate reality. What you believe is impossible *will be*. Your belief impacts on your decoding processes and they won't decode what you think is impossible. What we believe we perceive and what we perceive we experience. 'Can't dos' and 'impossibles' are like a firewall in a computer system that won't put on the screen what the firewall blocks. How vital that is to understanding how human experience has been hijacked. I explain in *The Answer, Everything You Need To Know But Have Never Been Told* and other books a long list of 'mysteries' and 'paranormal' phenomena that are not mysterious and perfectly normal once you realise what reality is and how it works. 'Ghosts' can be seen to pass through 'solid' walls because the walls are not solid and the ghost is a discarnate entity operating on a frequency so different to that of the wall that it's like two radio stations sharing the same space while never interfering with each other. I have seen ghosts do this myself. The apartness of people and objects is also an illusion. Everything is connected by the Field like all sea life is connected by the sea. It's just that within the limits of our visual reality we only 'see' holographic information and not the field of information that connects everything and from which the holographic world is made manifest. If you can only see holographic 'objects' and not the field that connects them they will appear to you as unconnected to each other in the same way that we see the computer while not seeing the Wi-Fi.

### **What you don't know *can* hurt you**

Okay, we return to those 'two worlds' of human society and the Cult with its global network of interconnecting secret societies and satanic groups which manipulate through governments, corporations, media, religions, etc. The fundamental difference between them is *knowledge*. The idea has been to keep humanity

ignorant of the plan for its total enslavement underpinned by a crucial ignorance of reality – who we are and where we are – and how we interact with it. ‘Human’ should be the interaction between our expanded eternal consciousness and the five-sense body experience. We are meant to be *in* this world in terms of the five senses but not *of* this world in relation to our greater consciousness and perspective. In that state we experience the small picture of the five senses within the wider context of the big picture of awareness beyond the five senses. Put another way the five senses see the dots and expanded awareness connects them into pictures and patterns that give context to the apparently random and unconnected. Without the context of expanded awareness the five senses see only apartness and randomness with apparently no meaning. The Cult and its other-dimensional controllers seek to intervene in the frequency realm where five-sense reality is supposed to connect with expanded reality and to keep the two apart (more on this in the final chapter). When that happens five-sense mental and emotional processes are no longer influenced by expanded awareness, or the True ‘I’, and instead are driven by the isolated perceptions of the body’s decoding systems. They are in the world *and* of it. Here we have the human plight and why humanity with its potential for infinite awareness can be so easily manipulatable and descend into such extremes of stupidity.

Once the Cult isolates five-sense mind from expanded awareness it can then program the mind with perceptions and beliefs by controlling information that the mind receives through the ‘education’ system of the formative years and the media perceptual bombardment and censorship of an entire lifetime. Limit perception and a sense of the possible through limiting knowledge by limiting and skewing information while censoring and discrediting that which could set people free. As the title of another of my books says ... *And The Truth Shall Set You Free*. For this reason the last thing the Cult wants in circulation is the truth about anything – especially the reality of the eternal ‘I’ – and that’s why it is desperate to control information. The Cult knows that information becomes perception

which becomes behaviour which, collectively, becomes human society. Cult-controlled and funded mainstream 'science' denies the existence of an eternal 'I' and seeks to dismiss and trash all evidence to the contrary. Cult-controlled mainstream religion has a version of 'God' that is little more than a system of control and dictatorship that employs threats of damnation in an afterlife to control perceptions and behaviour in the here and now through fear and guilt. Neither is true and it's the 'neither' that the Cult wishes to suppress. This 'neither' is that everything is an expression, a point of attention, within an infinite state of consciousness which is the real meaning of the term 'God'.

Perceptual obsession with the 'physical body' and five-senses means that 'God' becomes personified as a bearded bloke sitting among the clouds or a raging bully who loves us if we do what 'he' wants and condemns us to the fires of hell if we don't. These are no more than a 'spiritual' fairy tales to control and dictate events and behaviour through fear of this 'God' which has bizarrely made 'God-fearing' in religious circles a state to be desired. I would suggest that fearing *anything* is not to be encouraged and celebrated, but rather deleted. You can see why 'God fearing' is so beneficial to the Cult and its religions when *they* decide what 'God' wants and what 'God' demands (the Cult demands) that everyone do. As the great American comedian Bill Hicks said satirising a Christian zealot: 'I think what God meant to say.' How much of this infinite awareness ('God') that we access is decided by how far we choose to expand our perceptions, self-identity and sense of the possible. The scale of self-identity reflects itself in the scale of awareness that we can connect with and are influenced by – how much knowing and insight we have instead of programmed perception. You cannot expand your awareness into the infinity of possibility when you believe that you are little me Peter the postman or Mary in marketing and nothing more. I'll deal with this in the concluding chapter because it's crucial to how we turnaround current events.

## **Where the Cult came from**



When I realised in the early 1990s there was a Cult network behind global events I asked the obvious question: When did it start? I took it back to ancient Rome and Egypt and on to Babylon and Sumer in Mesopotamia, the 'Land Between Two Rivers', in what we now call Iraq. The two rivers are the Tigris and Euphrates and this region is of immense historical and other importance to the Cult, as is the land called Israel only 550 miles away by air. There is much more going on with deep esoteric meaning across this whole region. It's not only about 'wars for oil'. Priceless artefacts from Mesopotamia were stolen or destroyed after the American and British invasion of Iraq in 2003 justified by the lies of Boy Bush and Tony Blair (their Cult masters) about non-existent 'weapons of mass destruction'.

Mesopotamia was the location of Sumer (about 5,400BC to 1,750BC), and Babylon (about 2,350BC to 539BC). Sabbatians may have become immensely influential in the Cult in modern times but they are part of a network that goes back into the mists of history. Sumer is said by historians to be the 'cradle of civilisation'. I disagree. I say it was the re-start of what we call human civilisation after cataclysmic events symbolised in part as the 'Great Flood' destroyed the world that existed before. These fantastic upheavals that I have been describing in detail in the books since the early 1990s appear in accounts and legends of ancient cultures across the world and they are supported by geological and biological evidence. Stone tablets found in Iraq detailing the Sumer period say the cataclysms were caused by non-human 'gods' they call the Anunnaki. These are described in terms of extraterrestrial visitations in which knowledge supplied by the Anunnaki is said to have been the source of at least one of the world's oldest writing systems and developments in astronomy, mathematics and architecture that were way ahead of their time. I have covered this subject at length in *The Biggest Secret* and *Children of the Matrix* and the same basic 'Anunnaki' story can be found in Zulu accounts in South Africa where the late and very great Zulu high shaman Credo Mutwa told me that the Sumerian Anunnaki were known by Zulus as the Chitauri or 'children of the serpent'. See my six-hour video interview with Credo on this subject entitled *The*

*Reptilian Agenda* recorded at his then home near Johannesburg in 1999 which you can watch on the Ickonic media platform.

The Cult emerged out of Sumer, Babylon and Egypt (and elsewhere) and established the Roman Empire before expanding with the Romans into northern Europe from where many empires were savagely imposed in the form of Cult-controlled societies all over the world. Mass death and destruction was their calling card. The Cult established its centre of operations in Europe and European Empires were Cult empires which allowed it to expand into a global force. Spanish and Portuguese colonialists headed for Central and South America while the British and French targeted North America. Africa was colonised by Britain, France, Belgium, the Netherlands, Portugal, Spain, Italy, and Germany. Some like Britain and France moved in on the Middle East. The British Empire was by far the biggest for a simple reason. By now Britain was the headquarters of the Cult from which it expanded to form Canada, the United States, Australia and New Zealand. The Sun never set on the British Empire such was the scale of its occupation. London remains a global centre for the Cult along with Rome and the Vatican although others have emerged in Israel and China. It is no accident that the 'virus' is alleged to have come out of China while Italy was chosen as the means to terrify the Western population into compliance with 'Covid' fascism. Nor that Israel has led the world in 'Covid' fascism and mass 'vaccination'.

You would think that I would mention the United States here, but while it has been an important means of imposing the Cult's will it is less significant than would appear and is currently in the process of having what power it does have deleted. The Cult in Europe has mostly loaded the guns for the US to fire. America has been controlled from Europe from the start through Cult operatives in Britain and Europe. The American Revolution was an illusion to make it appear that America was governing itself while very different forces were pulling the strings in the form of Cult families such as the Rothschilds through the Rockefellers and other subordinates. The Rockefellers are extremely close to Bill Gates and

established both scalpel and drug 'medicine' and the World Health Organization. They play a major role in the development and circulation of vaccines through the Rockefeller Foundation on which Bill Gates said his Foundation is based. Why wouldn't this be the case when the Rockefellers and Gates are on the same team? Cult infiltration of human society goes way back into what we call history and has been constantly expanding and centralising power with the goal of establishing a global structure to dictate everything. Look how this has been advanced in great leaps with the 'Covid' hoax.

## **The non-human dimension**

I researched and observed the comings and goings of Cult operatives through the centuries and even thousands of years as they were born, worked to promote the agenda within the secret society and satanic networks, and then died for others to replace them. Clearly there had to be a coordinating force that spanned this entire period while operatives who would not have seen the end goal in their lifetimes came and went advancing the plan over millennia. I went in search of that coordinating force with the usual support from the extraordinary synchronicity of my life which has been an almost daily experience since 1990. I saw common themes in religious texts and ancient cultures about a non-human force manipulating human society from the hidden. Christianity calls this force Satan, the Devil and demons; Islam refers to the Jinn or Djinn; Zulus have their Chitauri (spelt in other ways in different parts of Africa); and the Gnostic people in Egypt in the period around and before 400AD referred to this phenomena as the 'Archons', a word meaning rulers in Greek. Central American cultures speak of the 'Predators' among other names and the same theme is everywhere. I will use 'Archons' as a collective name for all of them. When you see how their nature and behaviour is described all these different sources are clearly talking about the same force. Gnostics described the Archons in terms of 'luminous fire' while Islam relates the Jinn to 'smokeless fire'. Some refer to beings in form that could occasionally be seen, but the most common of common theme is that they operate from

unseen realms which means almost all existence to the visual processes of humans. I had concluded that this was indeed the foundation of human control and that the Cult was operating within the human frequency band on behalf of this hidden force when I came across the writings of Gnostics which supported my conclusions in the most extraordinary way.

A sealed earthen jar was found in 1945 near the town of Nag Hammadi about 75-80 miles north of Luxor on the banks of the River Nile in Egypt. Inside was a treasure trove of manuscripts and texts left by the Gnostic people some 1,600 years earlier. They included 13 leather-bound papyrus codices (manuscripts) and more than 50 texts written in Coptic Egyptian estimated to have been hidden in the jar in the period of 400AD although the source of the information goes back much further. Gnostics oversaw the Great or Royal Library of Alexandria, the fantastic depository of ancient texts detailing advanced knowledge and accounts of human history. The Library was dismantled and destroyed in stages over a long period with the death-blow delivered by the Cult-established Roman Church in the period around 415AD. The Church of Rome was the Church of Babylon relocated as I said earlier. Gnostics were not a race. They were a way of perceiving reality. Whenever they established themselves and their information circulated the terrorists of the Church of Rome would target them for destruction. This happened with the Great Library and with the Gnostic Cathars who were burned to death by the psychopaths after a long period of oppression at the siege of the Castle of Monségur in southern France in 1244. The Church has always been terrified of Gnostic information which demolishes the official Christian narrative although there is much in the Bible that supports the Gnostic view if you read it in another way. To anyone studying the texts of what became known as the Nag Hammadi Library it is clear that great swathes of Christian and Biblical belief has its origin with Gnostics sources going back to Sumer. Gnostic themes have been twisted to manipulate the perceived reality of Bible believers. Biblical texts have been in the open for centuries where they could be changed while Gnostic

documents found at Nag Hammadi were sealed away and untouched for 1,600 years. What you see is what they wrote.

### **Use your *pneuma* not your *nous***

Gnosticism and Gnostic come from 'gnosis' which means knowledge, or rather *secret* knowledge, in the sense of spiritual awareness – knowledge about reality and life itself. The desperation of the Cult's Church of Rome to destroy the Gnostics can be understood when the knowledge they were circulating was the last thing the Cult wanted the population to know. Sixteen hundred years later the same Cult is working hard to undermine and silence me for the same reason. The dynamic between knowledge and ignorance is a constant. 'Time' appears to move on, but essential themes remain the same. We are told to 'use your nous', a Gnostic word for head/brain/intelligence. They said, however, that spiritual awakening or 'salvation' could only be secured by expanding awareness *beyond* what they called *nous* and into *pneuma* or Infinite Self. Obviously as I read these texts the parallels with what I have been saying since 1990 were fascinating to me. There is a universal truth that spans human history and in that case why wouldn't we be talking the same language 16 centuries apart? When you free yourself from the perception program of the five senses and explore expanded realms of consciousness you are going to connect with the same information no matter what the perceived 'era' within a manufactured timeline of a single and tiny range of manipulated frequency. Humans working with 'smart' technology or knocking rocks together in caves is only a timeline appearing to operate within the human frequency band. Expanded awareness and the knowledge it holds have always been there whether the era be Stone Age or computer age. We can only access that knowledge by opening ourselves to its frequency which the five-sense prison cell is designed to stop us doing. Gates, Fauci, Whitty, Vallance, Zuckerberg, Brin, Page, Wojcicki, Bezos, and all the others behind the 'Covid' hoax clearly have a long wait before their range of frequency can make that connection given that an open heart is

crucial to that as we shall see. Instead of accessing knowledge directly through expanded awareness it is given to Cult operatives by the secret society networks of the Cult where it has been passed on over thousands of years outside the public arena. Expanded realms of consciousness is where great artists, composers and writers find their inspiration and where truth awaits anyone open enough to connect with it. We need to go there fast.

## **Archon hijack**

A fifth of the Nag Hammadi texts describe the existence and manipulation of the Archons led by a 'Chief Archon' they call 'Yaldabaoth', or the 'Demiurge', and this is the Christian 'Devil', 'Satan', 'Lucifer', and his demons. Archons in Biblical symbolism are the 'fallen ones' which are also referred to as fallen angels after the angels expelled from heaven according to the Abrahamic religions of Judaism, Christianity and Islam. These angels are claimed to tempt humans to 'sin' ongoing and you will see how accurate that symbolism is during the rest of the book. The theme of 'original sin' is related to the 'Fall' when Adam and Eve were 'tempted by the serpent' and fell from a state of innocence and 'obedience' (connection) with God into a state of disobedience (disconnection). The Fall is said to have brought sin into the world and corrupted everything including human nature. Yaldabaoth, the 'Lord Archon', is described by Gnostics as a 'counterfeit spirit', 'The Blind One', 'The Blind God', and 'The Foolish One'. The Jewish name for Yaldabaoth in Talmudic writings is Samael which translates as 'Poison of God', or 'Blindness of God'. You see the parallels. Yaldabaoth in Islamic belief is the Muslim Jinn devil known as Shaytan – Shaytan is Satan as the same themes are found all over the world in every religion and culture. The 'Lord God' of the Old Testament is the 'Lord Archon' of Gnostic manuscripts and that's why he's such a bloodthirsty bastard. Satan is known by Christians as 'the Demon of Demons' and Gnostics called Yaldabaoth the 'Archon of Archons'. Both are known as 'The Deceiver'. We are talking about the same 'bloke' for sure and these common themes

using different names, storylines and symbolism tell a common tale of the human plight.

Archons are referred to in Nag Hammadi documents as mind parasites, inverters, guards, gatekeepers, detainers, judges, pitiless ones and deceivers. The 'Covid' hoax alone is a glaring example of all these things. The Biblical 'God' is so different in the Old and New Testaments because they are not describing the same phenomenon. The vindictive, angry, hate-filled, 'God' of the Old Testament, known as Yahweh, is Yaldabaoth who is depicted in Cult-dictated popular culture as the 'Dark Lord', 'Lord of Time', Lord (Darth) Vader and Dormammu, the evil ruler of the 'Dark Dimension' trying to take over the 'Earth Dimension' in the Marvel comic movie, *Dr Strange*. Yaldabaoth is both the Old Testament 'god' and the Biblical 'Satan'. Gnostics referred to Yaldabaoth as the 'Great Architect of the Universe' and the Cult-controlled Freemason network calls their god 'the 'Great Architect of the Universe' (also Grand Architect). The 'Great Architect' Yaldabaoth is symbolised by the Cult as the all-seeing eye at the top of the pyramid on the Great Seal of the United States and the dollar bill. Archon is encoded in *arch*-itect as it is in *arch*-angels and *arch*-bishops. All religions have the theme of a force for good and force for evil in some sort of spiritual war and there is a reason for that – the theme is true. The Cult and its non-human masters are quite happy for this to circulate. They present themselves as the force for good fighting evil when they are really the force of evil (absence of love). The whole foundation of Cult modus operandi is inversion. They promote themselves as a force for good and anyone challenging them in pursuit of peace, love, fairness, truth and justice is condemned as a satanic force for evil. This has been the game plan throughout history whether the Church of Rome inquisitions of non-believers or 'conspiracy theorists' and 'anti-vaxxers' of today. The technique is the same whatever the timeline era.

**Yaldabaoth is revolting (true)**

Yaldabaoth and the Archons are said to have revolted against God with Yaldabaoth claiming to *be* God – the *All That Is*. The Old Testament ‘God’ (Yaldabaoth) demanded to be worshipped as such: ‘*I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me*’ (Isaiah 45:5). I have quoted in other books a man who said he was the unofficial son of the late Baron Philippe de Rothschild of the Mouton-Rothschild wine producing estates in France who died in 1988 and he told me about the Rothschild ‘revolt from God’. The man said he was given the name Phillip Eugene de Rothschild and we shared long correspondence many years ago while he was living under another identity. He said that he was conceived through ‘occult incest’ which (within the Cult) was ‘normal and to be admired’. ‘Phillip’ told me about his experience attending satanic rituals with rich and famous people whom he names and you can see them and the wider background to Cult Satanism in my other books starting with *The Biggest Secret*. Cult rituals are interactions with Archontic ‘gods’. ‘Phillip’ described Baron Philippe de Rothschild as ‘a master Satanist and hater of God’ and he used the same term ‘revolt from God’ associated with Yaldabaoth/Satan/Lucifer/the Devil in describing the Sabbatian Rothschild dynasty. ‘I played a key role in my family’s revolt from God’, he said. That role was to infiltrate in classic Sabbatian style the Christian Church, but eventually he escaped the mind-prison to live another life. The Cult has been targeting religion in a plan to make worship of the Archons the global one-world religion. Infiltration of Satanism into modern ‘culture’, especially among the young, through music videos, stage shows and other means, is all part of this.

Nag Hammadi texts describe Yaldabaoth and the Archons in their prime form as energy – consciousness – and say they can take form if they choose in the same way that consciousness takes form as a human. Yaldabaoth is called ‘formless’ and represents a deeply inverted, distorted and chaotic state of consciousness which seeks to attached to humans and turn them into a likeness of itself in an attempt at assimilation. For that to happen it has to manipulate



humans into low frequency mental and emotional states that match its own. Archons can certainly appear in human form and this is the origin of the psychopathic personality. The energetic distortion Gnostics called Yaldabaoth is psychopathy. When psychopathic Archons take human form that human will be a psychopath as an expression of Yaldabaoth consciousness. Cult psychopaths are Archons in human form. The principle is the same as that portrayed in the 2009 *Avatar* movie when the American military travelled to a fictional Earth-like moon called Pandora in the Alpha Centauri star system to infiltrate a society of blue people, or Na'vi, by hiding within bodies that looked like the Na'vi. Archons posing as humans have a particular hybrid information field, part human, part Archon, (the ancient 'demigods') which processes information in a way that manifests behaviour to match their psychopathic evil, lack of empathy and compassion, and stops them being influenced by the empathy, compassion and love that a fully-human information field is capable of expressing. Cult bloodlines interbreed, be they royalty or dark suits, for this reason and you have their obsession with incest. Interbreeding with full-blown humans would dilute the Archontic energy field that guarantees psychopathy in its representatives in the human realm.

Gnostic writings say the main non-human forms that Archons take are *serpentine* (what I have called for decades 'reptilian' amid unbounded ridicule from the Archontically-programmed) and what Gnostics describe as 'an unborn baby or foetus with grey skin and dark, unmoving eyes'. This is an excellent representation of the ET 'Greys' of UFO folklore which large numbers of people claim to have seen and been abducted by – Zulu shaman Credo Mutwa among them. I agree with those that believe in extraterrestrial or interdimensional visitations today and for thousands of years past. No wonder with their advanced knowledge and technological capability they were perceived and worshipped as gods for technological and other 'miracles' they appeared to perform. Imagine someone arriving in a culture disconnected from the modern world with a smartphone and computer. They would be

seen as a 'god' capable of 'miracles'. The Renegade Mind, however, wants to know the source of everything and not only the way that source manifests as human or non-human. In the same way that a Renegade Mind seeks the original source material for the 'Covid virus' to see if what is claimed is true. The original source of Archons in form is consciousness – the distorted state of consciousness known to Gnostics as Yaldabaoth.

### **'Revolt from God' is energetic disconnection**

Where I am going next will make a lot of sense of religious texts and ancient legends relating to 'Satan', Lucifer' and the 'gods'. Gnostic descriptions sync perfectly with the themes of my own research over the years in how they describe a consciousness distortion seeking to impose itself on human consciousness. I've referred to the core of infinite awareness in previous books as Infinite Awareness in Awareness of Itself. By that I mean a level of awareness that knows that it is all awareness and is aware of all awareness. From here comes the frequency of love in its true sense and balance which is what love is on one level – the balance of all forces into a single whole called Oneness and Isness. The more we disconnect from this state of love that many call 'God' the constituent parts of that Oneness start to unravel and express themselves as a part and not a whole. They become individualised as intellect, mind, selfishness, hatred, envy, desire for power over others, and such like. This is not a problem in the greater scheme in that 'God', the *All That Is*, can experience all these possibilities through different expressions of itself including humans. What we as expressions of the whole experience the *All That Is* experiences. We are the *All That Is* experiencing itself. As we withdraw from that state of Oneness we disconnect from its influence and things can get very unpleasant and very stupid. Archontic consciousness is at the extreme end of that. It has so disconnected from the influence of Oneness that it has become an inversion of unity and love, an inversion of everything, an inversion of life itself. Evil is appropriately live written backwards. Archontic consciousness is obsessed with death, an inversion of life,

and so its manifestations in Satanism are obsessed with death. They use inverted symbols in their rituals such as the inverted pentagram and cross. Sabbatians as Archontic consciousness incarnate invert Judaism and every other religion and culture they infiltrate. They seek disunity and chaos and they fear unity and harmony as they fear love like garlic to a vampire. As a result the Cult, Archons incarnate, act with such evil, psychopathy and lack of empathy and compassion disconnected as they are from the source of love. How could Bill Gates and the rest of the Archontic psychopaths do what they have to human society in the 'Covid' era with all the death, suffering and destruction involved and have no emotional consequence for the impact on others? Now you know. Why have Zuckerberg, Brin, Page, Wojcicki and company callously censored information warning about the dangers of the 'vaccine' while thousands have been dying and having severe, sometimes life-changing reactions? Now you know. Why have Tedros, Fauci, Whitty, Vallance and their like around the world been using case and death figures they're aware are fraudulent to justify lockdowns and all the deaths and destroyed lives that have come from that? Now you know. Why did Christian Drosten produce and promote a 'testing' protocol that he knew couldn't test for infectious disease which led to a global human catastrophe. Now you know. The Archontic mind doesn't give a shit ([Fig 17](#)). I personally think that Gates and major Cult insiders are a form of AI cyborg that the Archons want humans to become.

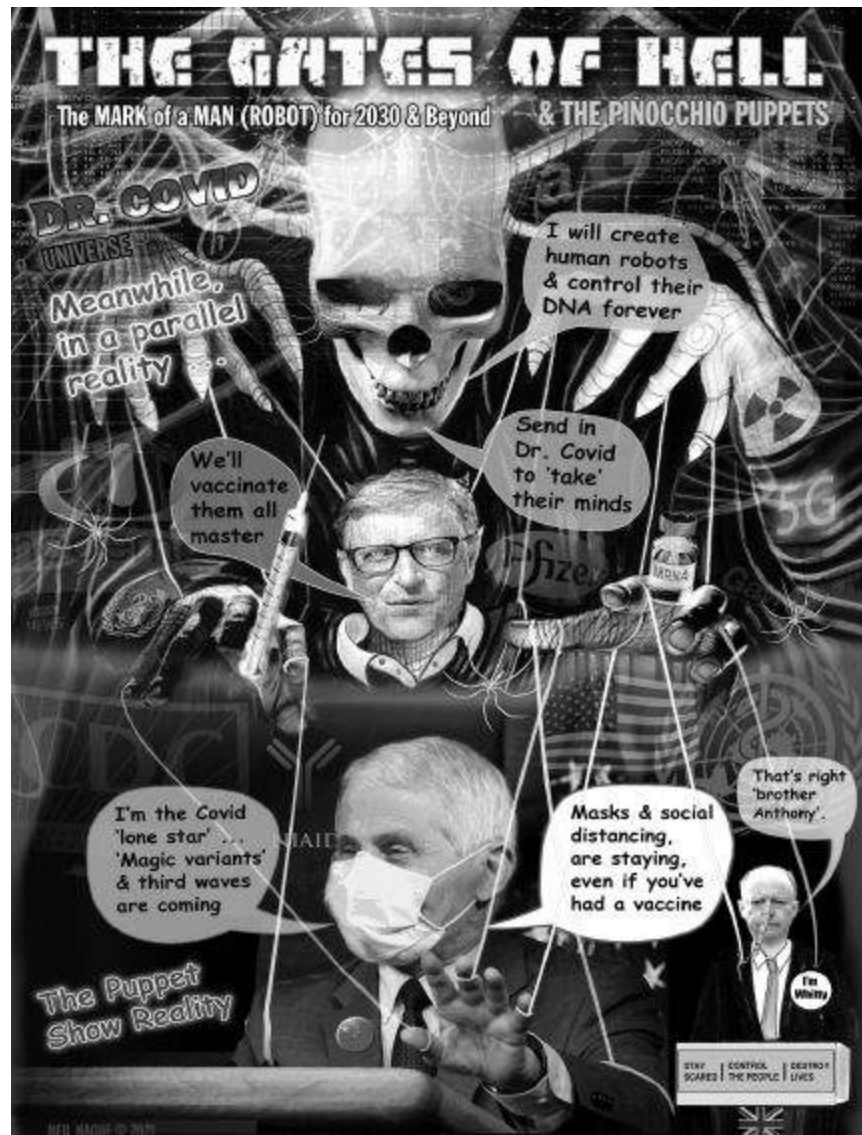


**Figure 17:** Artist Neil Hague's version of the 'Covid' hierarchy.

## Human batteries

A state of such inversion does have its consequences, however. The level of disconnection from the Source of All means that you withdraw from that source of energetic sustenance and creativity. This means that you have to find your own supply of energetic power and it has – *us*. When the Morpheus character in the first *Matrix* movie held up a battery he spoke a profound truth when he said: 'The Matrix is a computer-generated dream world built to keep us under control in order to change the human being into one of

these.' The statement was true in all respects. We do live in a technologically-generated virtual reality simulation (more very shortly) and we have been manipulated to be an energy source for Archontic consciousness. The Disney-Pixar animated movie *Monsters, Inc.* in 2001 symbolised the dynamic when monsters in their world had no energy source and they would enter the human world to terrify children in their beds, catch the child's scream, terror (low-vibrational frequencies), and take that energy back to power the monster world. The lead character you might remember was a single giant eye and the symbolism of the Cult's all-seeing eye was obvious. Every thought and emotion is broadcast as a frequency unique to that thought and emotion. Feelings of love and joy, empathy and compassion, are high, quick, frequencies while fear, depression, anxiety, suffering and hate are low, slow, dense frequencies. Which kind do you think Archontic consciousness can connect with and absorb? In such a low and dense frequency state there's no way it can connect with the energy of love and joy. Archons can only feed off energy compatible with their own frequency and they and their Cult agents want to delete the human world of love and joy and manipulate the transmission of low vibrational frequencies through low-vibrational human mental and emotional states. *We are their energy source.* Wars are energetic banquets to the Archons – a world war even more so – and think how much low-frequency mental and emotional energy has been generated from the consequences for humanity of the 'Covid' hoax orchestrated by Archons incarnate like Gates.

The ancient practice of human sacrifice 'to the gods', continued in secret today by the Cult, is based on the same principle. 'The gods' are Archontic consciousness in different forms and the sacrifice is induced into a state of intense terror to generate the energy the Archontic frequency can absorb. Incarnate Archons in the ritual drink the blood which contains an adrenaline they crave which floods into the bloodstream when people are terrorised. Most of the sacrifices, ancient and modern, are children and the theme of 'sacrificing young virgins to the gods' is just code for children. They

have a particular pre-puberty energy that Archons want more than anything and the energy of the young in general is their target. The California Department of Education wants students to chant the names of Aztec gods (Archontic gods) once worshipped in human sacrifice rituals in a curriculum designed to encourage them to 'challenge racist, bigoted, discriminatory, imperialist/colonial beliefs', join 'social movements that struggle for social justice', and 'build new possibilities for a post-racist, post-systemic racism society'. It's the usual Woke crap that inverts racism and calls it anti-racism. In this case solidarity with 'indigenous tribes' is being used as an excuse to chant the names of 'gods' to which people were sacrificed (and still are in secret). What an example of Woke's inability to see beyond black and white, us and them, They condemn the colonisation of these tribal cultures by Europeans (quite right), but those cultures sacrificing people including children to their 'gods', and mass murdering untold numbers as the Aztecs did, is just fine. One chant is to the Aztec god Tezcatlipoca who had a man sacrificed to him in the 5th month of the Aztec calendar. His heart was cut out and he was eaten. Oh, that's okay then. Come on children ... after three ... Other sacrificial 'gods' for the young to chant their allegiance include Quetzalcoatl, Huitzilopochtli and Xipe Totec. The curriculum says that 'chants, affirmations, and energizers can be used to bring the class together, build unity around ethnic studies principles and values, and to reinvigorate the class following a lesson that may be emotionally taxing or even when student engagement may appear to be low'. Well, that's the cover story, anyway. Chanting and mantras are the repetition of a particular frequency generated from the vocal cords and chanting the names of these Archontic 'gods' tunes you into their frequency. That is the last thing you want when it allows for energetic synchronisation, attachment and perceptual influence. Initiates chant the names of their 'Gods' in their rituals for this very reason.

## **Vampires of the Woke**

Paedophilia is another way that Archons absorb the energy of children. Paedophiles possessed by Archontic consciousness are used as the conduit during sexual abuse for discarnate Archons to vampire the energy of the young they desire so much. Stupendous numbers of children disappear every year never to be seen again although you would never know from the media. Imagine how much low-vibrational energy has been generated by children during the 'Covid' hoax when so many have become depressed and psychologically destroyed to the point of killing themselves. Shocking numbers of children are now taken by the state from loving parents to be handed to others. I can tell you from long experience of researching this since 1996 that many end up with paedophiles and assets of the Cult through corrupt and Cult-owned social services which in the reframing era has hired many psychopaths and emotionless automatons to do the job. Children are even stolen to order using spurious reasons to take them by the corrupt and secret (because they're corrupt) 'family courts'. I have written in detail in other books, starting with *The Biggest Secret* in 1997, about the ubiquitous connections between the political, corporate, government, intelligence and military elites (Cult operatives) and Satanism and paedophilia. If you go deep enough both networks have an interlocking leadership. The Woke mentality has been developed by the Cult for many reasons: To promote almost every aspect of its agenda; to hijack the traditional political left and turn it fascist; to divide and rule; and to target agenda pushbackers. But there are other reasons which relate to what I am describing here. How many happy and joyful Wokers do you ever see especially at the extreme end? They are a mental and psychological mess consumed by emotional stress and constantly emotionally cocked for the next explosion of indignation at someone referring to a female as a female. They are walking, talking, batteries as Morpheus might say emitting frequencies which both enslave them in low-vibrational bubbles of perceptual limitation and feed the Archons. Add to this the hatred claimed to be love; fascism claimed to 'anti-fascism', racism claimed to be 'anti-racism';

exclusion claimed to inclusion; and the abuse-filled Internet trolling. You have a purpose-built Archontic energy system with not a wind turbine in sight and all founded on Archontic *inversion*. We have whole generations now manipulated to serve the Archons with their actions and energy. They will be doing so their entire adult lives unless they snap out of their Archon-induced trance. Is it really a surprise that Cult billionaires and corporations put so much money their way? Where is the energy of joy and laughter, including laughing at yourself which is confirmation of your own emotional security? Mark Twain said: 'The human race has one really effective weapon, and that is laughter.' We must use it all the time. Woke has destroyed comedy because it has no humour, no joy, sense of irony, or self-deprecation. Its energy is dense and intense. *Mmmmm*, lunch says the Archontic frequency. Rudolf Steiner (1861-1925) was the Austrian philosopher and famous esoteric thinker who established Waldorf education or Steiner schools to treat children like unique expressions of consciousness and not minds to be programmed with the perceptions determined by authority. I'd been writing about this energy vampiring for decades when I was sent in 2016 a quote by Steiner. He was spot on:

There are beings in the spiritual realms for whom anxiety and fear emanating from human beings offer welcome food. When humans have no anxiety and fear, then these creatures starve. If fear and anxiety radiates from people and they break out in panic, then these creatures find welcome nutrition and they become more and more powerful. These beings are hostile towards humanity. Everything that feeds on negative feelings, on anxiety, fear and superstition, despair or doubt, are in reality hostile forces in super-sensible worlds, launching cruel attacks on human beings, while they are being fed ... These are exactly the feelings that belong to contemporary culture and materialism; because it estranges people from the spiritual world, it is especially suited to evoke hopelessness and fear of the unknown in people, thereby calling up the above mentioned hostile forces against them.

Pause for a moment from this perspective and reflect on what has happened in the world since the start of 2020. Not only will pennies drop, but billion dollar bills. We see the same theme from Don Juan Matus, a Yaqui Indian shaman in Mexico and the information source for Peruvian-born writer, Carlos Castaneda, who wrote a series of



books from the 1960s to 1990s. Don Juan described the force manipulating human society and his name for the Archons was the predator:

We have a predator that came from the depths of the cosmos and took over the rule of our lives. Human beings are its prisoners. The predator is our lord and master. It has rendered us docile, helpless. If we want to protest, it suppresses our protest. If we want to act independently, it demands that we don't do so ... indeed we are held prisoner!

They took us over because we are food to them, and they squeeze us mercilessly because we are their sustenance. Just as we rear chickens in coops, the predators rear us in human coops, humaneros. Therefore, their food is always available to them.

Different cultures, different eras, same recurring theme.

## **The 'ennoia' dilemma**

Nag Hammadi Gnostic manuscripts say that Archon consciousness has no 'ennoia'. This is directly translated as 'intentionality', but I'll use the term 'creative imagination'. The *All That Is* in awareness of itself is the source of all creativity – all possibility – and the more disconnected you are from that source the more you are subsequently denied 'creative imagination'. Given that Archon consciousness is almost entirely disconnected it severely lacks creativity and has to rely on far more mechanical processes of thought and exploit the creative potential of those that do have 'ennoia'. You can see cases of this throughout human society. Archon consciousness almost entirely dominates the global banking system and if we study how that system works you will appreciate what I mean. Banks manifest 'money' out of nothing by issuing lines of 'credit' which is 'money' that has never, does not, and will never exist except in theory. It's a confidence trick. If you think 'credit' figures-on-a-screen 'money' is worth anything you accept it as payment. If you don't then the whole system collapses through lack of confidence in the value of that 'money'. Archontic bankers with no 'ennoia' are 'lending' 'money' that doesn't exist to humans that *do* have creativity – those that have the inspired ideas and create businesses and products. Archon banking feeds off human creativity

which it controls through 'money' creation and debt. Humans have the creativity and Archons exploit that for their own benefit and control while having none themselves. Archon Internet platforms like Facebook claim joint copyright of everything that creative users post and while Archontic minds like Zuckerberg may officially head that company it will be human creatives on the staff that provide the creative inspiration. When you have limitless 'money' you can then buy other companies established by creative humans. Witness the acquisition record of Facebook, Google and their like. Survey the Archon-controlled music industry and you see non-creative dark suit executives making their fortune from the human creativity of their artists. The cases are endless. Research the history of people like Gates and Zuckerberg and how their empires were built on exploiting the creativity of others. Archon minds cannot create out of nothing, but they are skilled (because they have to be) in what Gnostic texts call 'countermimicry'. They can imitate, but not innovate. Sabbatians trawl the creativity of others through backdoors they install in computer systems through their cybersecurity systems. Archon-controlled China is globally infamous for stealing intellectual property and I remember how Hong Kong, now part of China, became notorious for making counterfeit copies of the creativity of others – 'countermimicry'. With the now pervasive and all-seeing surveillance systems able to infiltrate any computer you can appreciate the potential for Archons to vampire the creativity of humans. Author John Lamb Lash wrote in his book about the Nag Hammadi texts, *Not In His Image*:

Although they cannot originate anything, because they lack the divine factor of ennoia (intentionality), Archons can imitate with a vengeance. Their expertise is simulation (HAL, virtual reality). The Demiurge [Yaldabaoth] fashions a heaven world copied from the fractal patterns [of the original] ... His construction is celestial kitsch, like the fake Italianate villa of a Mafia don complete with militant angels to guard every portal.

This brings us to something that I have been speaking about since the turn of the millennium. Our reality is a simulation; a virtual reality that we think is real. No, I'm not kidding.

## **Human reality? Well, virtually**

I had pondered for years about whether our reality is 'real' or some kind of construct. I remembered being immensely affected on a visit as a small child in the late 1950s to the then newly-opened Planetarium on the Marylebone Road in London which is now closed and part of the adjacent Madame Tussauds wax museum. It was in the middle of the day, but when the lights went out there was the night sky projected in the Planetarium's domed ceiling and it appeared to be so real. The experience never left me and I didn't know why until around the turn of the millennium when I became certain that our 'night sky' and entire reality is a projection, a virtual reality, akin to the illusory world portrayed in the *Matrix* movies. I looked at the sky one day in this period and it appeared to me like the domed roof of the Planetarium. The release of the first *Matrix* movie in 1999 also provided a synchronistic and perfect visual representation of where my mind had been going for a long time. I hadn't come across the Gnostic Nag Hammadi texts then. When I did years later the correlation was once again astounding. As I read Gnostic accounts from 1,600 years and more earlier it was clear that they were describing the same simulation phenomenon. They tell how the Yaldabaoth 'Demiurge' and Archons created a 'bad copy' of original reality to rule over all that were captured by its illusions and the body was a prison to trap consciousness in the 'bad copy' fake reality. Read how Gnostics describe the 'bad copy' and update that to current times and they are referring to what we would call today a virtual reality simulation.

Author John Lamb Lash said 'the Demiurge fashions a heaven world copied from the fractal patterns' of the original through expertise in 'HAL' or virtual reality simulation. Fractal patterns are part of the energetic information construct of our reality, a sort of blueprint. If these patterns were copied in computer terms it would indeed give you a copy of a 'natural' reality in a non-natural frequency and digital form. The principle is the same as making a copy of a website. The original website still exists, but now you can change the copy version to make it whatever you like and it can

become very different to the original website. Archons have done this with our reality, a *synthetic* copy of prime reality that still exists beyond the frequency walls of the simulation. Trapped within the illusions of this synthetic Matrix, however, were and are human consciousness and other expressions of prime reality and this is why the Archons via the Cult are seeking to make the human body synthetic and give us synthetic AI minds to complete the job of turning the entire reality synthetic including what we perceive to be the natural world. To quote Kurzweil: 'Nanobots will infuse all the matter around us with information. Rocks, trees, everything will become these intelligent creatures.' Yes, *synthetic* 'creatures' just as 'Covid' and other genetically-manipulating 'vaccines' are designed to make the human body synthetic. From this perspective it is obvious why Archons and their Cult are so desperate to infuse synthetic material into every human with their 'Covid' scam.

### **Let there be (electromagnetic) light**

Yaldabaoth, the force that created the simulation, or Matrix, makes sense of the Gnostic reference to 'The Great Architect' and its use by Cult Freemasonry as the name of its deity. The designer of the Matrix in the movies is called 'The Architect' and that trilogy is jam-packed with symbolism relating to these subjects. I have contended for years that the angry Old Testament God (Yaldabaoth) is the 'God' being symbolically 'quoted' in the opening of Genesis as 'creating the world'. This is not the creation of prime reality – it's the creation of the *simulation*. The Genesis 'God' says: 'Let there be Light: and there was light.' But what is this 'Light'? I have said for decades that the speed of light (186,000 miles per second) is not the fastest speed possible as claimed by mainstream science and is in fact the frequency walls or outer limits of the Matrix. You can't have a fastest or slowest anything within all possibility when everything is possible. The human body is encoded to operate within the speed of light or *within the simulation* and thus we see only the tiny frequency band of visible *light*. Near-death experiencers who perceive reality outside the body during temporary 'death' describe a very different

form of light and this is supported by the Nag Hammadi texts. Prime reality beyond the simulation ('Upper Aeons' to the Gnostics) is described as a realm of incredible beauty, bliss, love and harmony – a realm of 'watery light' that is so powerful 'there are no shadows'. Our false reality of Archon control, which Gnostics call the 'Lower Aeons', is depicted as a realm with a different kind of 'light' and described in terms of chaos, 'Hell', 'the Abyss' and 'Outer Darkness', where trapped souls are tormented and manipulated by demons (relate that to the 'Covid' hoax alone). The watery light theme can be found in near-death accounts and it is not the same as *simulation* 'light' which is electromagnetic or radiation light within the speed of light – the 'Lower Aeons'. Simulation 'light' is the 'luminous fire' associated by Gnostics with the Archons. The Bible refers to Yaldabaoth as 'that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world' (Revelation 12:9). I think that making a simulated copy of prime reality ('countermimicry') and changing it dramatically while all the time manipulating humanity to believe it to be real could probably meet the criteria of deceiving the whole world. Then we come to the Cult god Lucifer – the *Light Bringer*. Lucifer is symbolic of Yaldabaoth, the bringer of radiation light that forms the bad copy simulation within the speed of light. 'He' is symbolised by the lighted torch held by the Statue of Liberty and in the name 'Illuminati'. Sabbatian-Frankism declares that Lucifer is the true god and Lucifer is the real god of Freemasonry honoured as their 'Great or Grand Architect of the Universe' (simulation).

I would emphasise, too, the way Archontic technologically-generated luminous fire of radiation has deluged our environment since I was a kid in the 1950s and changed the nature of The Field with which we constantly interact. Through that interaction technological radiation is changing us. The Smart Grid is designed to operate with immense levels of communication power with 5G expanding across the world and 6G, 7G, in the process of development. Radiation is the simulation and the Archontic manipulation system. Why wouldn't the Archon Cult wish to unleash radiation upon us to an ever-greater extreme to form

Kurzweil's 'cloud'? The plan for a synthetic human is related to the need to cope with levels of radiation beyond even anything we've seen so far. Biological humans would not survive the scale of radiation they have in their script. The Smart Grid is a technological sub-reality within the technological simulation to further disconnect five-sense perception from expanded consciousness. It's a technological prison of the mind.

### **Infusing the 'spirit of darkness'**

A recurring theme in religion and native cultures is the manipulation of human genetics by a non-human force and most famously recorded as the biblical 'sons of god' (the gods plural in the original) who interbred with the daughters of men. The Nag Hammadi *Apocryphon of John* tells the same story this way:

He [Yaldabaoth] sent his angels [Archons/demons] to the daughters of men, that they might take some of them for themselves and raise offspring for their enjoyment. And at first they did not succeed. When they had no success, they gathered together again and they made a plan together ... And the angels changed themselves in their likeness into the likeness of their mates, filling them with the spirit of darkness, which they had mixed for them, and with evil ... And they took women and begot children out of the darkness according to the likeness of their spirit.

Possession when a discarnate entity takes over a human body is an age-old theme and continues today. It's very real and I've seen it. Satanic and secret society rituals can create an energetic environment in which entities can attach to initiates and I've heard many stories of how people have changed their personality after being initiated even into lower levels of the Freemasons. I have been inside three Freemasonic temples, one at a public open day and two by just walking in when there was no one around to stop me. They were in Ryde, the town where I live, Birmingham, England, when I was with a group, and Boston, Massachusetts. They all felt the same energetically – dark, dense, low-vibrational and sinister. Demonic attachment can happen while the initiate has no idea what is going on. To them it's just a ritual to get in the Masons and do a bit of good

business. In the far more extreme rituals of Satanism human possession is even more powerful and they are designed to make possession possible. The hierarchy of the Cult is dictated by the power and perceived status of the possessing Archon. In this way the Archon hierarchy becomes the Cult hierarchy. Once the entity has attached it can influence perception and behaviour and if it attaches to the extreme then so much of its energy (information) infuses into the body information field that the hologram starts to reflect the nature of the possessing entity. This is the *Exorcist* movie type of possession when facial features change and it's known as shapeshifting. Islam's Jinn are said to be invisible tricksters who change shape, 'whisper', confuse and take human form. These are all traits of the Archons and other versions of the same phenomenon. Extreme possession could certainly infuse the 'spirit of darkness' into a partner during sex as the Nag Hammadi texts appear to describe. Such an infusion can change genetics which is also energetic information. Human genetics is information and the 'spirit of darkness' is information. Mix one with the other and change must happen. Islam has the concept of a 'Jinn baby' through possession of the mother and by Jinn taking human form. There are many ways that human genetics can be changed and remember that Archons have been aware all along of advanced techniques to do this. What is being done in human society today – and far more – was known about by Archons at the time of the 'fallen ones' and their other versions described in religions and cultures.

Archons and their human-world Cult are obsessed with genetics as we see today and they know this dictates how information is processed into perceived reality during a human life. They needed to produce a human form that would decode the simulation and this is symbolically known as 'Adam and Eve' who left the 'garden' (prime reality) and 'fell' into Matrix reality. The simulation is not a 'physical' construct (there is no 'physical'); it is a source of information. Think Wi-Fi again. The simulation is an energetic field encoded with information and body-brain systems are designed to decode that information encoded in wave or frequency form which

is transmitted to the brain as electrical signals. These are decoded by the brain to construct our sense of reality – an illusory ‘physical’ world that only exists in the brain or the mind. Virtual reality games mimic this process using the same sensory decoding system. Information is fed to the senses to decode a virtual reality that can appear so real, but isn’t (Figs 18 and 19). Some scientists believe – and I agree with them – that what we perceive as ‘physical’ reality only exists when we are looking or observing. The act of perception or focus triggers the decoding systems which turn waveform information into holographic reality. When we are not observing something our reality reverts from a holographic state to a waveform state. This relates to the same principle as a falling tree not making a noise unless someone is there to hear it or decode it. The concept makes sense from the simulation perspective. A computer is not decoding all the information in a Wi-Fi field all the time and only decodes or brings into reality on the screen that part of Wi-Fi that it’s decoding – focusing upon – at that moment.



**Figure 18:** Virtual reality technology ‘hacks’ into the body’s five-sense decoding system.



**Figure 19:** The result can be experienced as very ‘real’.



Interestingly, Professor Donald Hoffman at the Department of Cognitive Sciences at the University of California, Irvine, says that our experienced reality is like a computer interface that shows us only the level with which we interact while hiding all that exists beyond it: 'Evolution shaped us with a user interface that hides the truth. Nothing that we see is the truth – the very language of space and time and objects is the wrong language to describe reality.' He is correct in what he says on so many levels. Space and time are not a universal reality. They are a phenomenon of decoded *simulation* reality as part of the process of enslaving our sense of reality. Near-death experiencers report again and again how space and time did not exist as we perceive them once they were free of the body – body decoding systems. You can appreciate from this why Archons and their Cult are so desperate to entrap human attention in the five senses where we are in the Matrix and of the Matrix. Opening your mind to expanded states of awareness takes you beyond the information confines of the simulation and you become aware of knowledge and insights denied to you before. This is what we call 'awakening' – *awakening from the Matrix* – and in the final chapter I will relate this to current events.

## **Where are the 'aliens'?**

A simulation would explain the so-called 'Fermi Paradox' named after Italian physicist Enrico Fermi (1901-1954) who created the first nuclear reactor. He considered the question of why there is such a lack of extraterrestrial activity when there are so many stars and planets in an apparently vast universe; but what if the night sky that we see, or think we do, is a simulated projection as I say? If you control the simulation and your aim is to hold humanity fast in essential ignorance would you want other forms of life including advanced life coming and going sharing information with humanity? Or would you want them to believe they were isolated and apparently alone? Themes of human isolation and apartness are common whether they be the perception of a lifeless universe or the fascist isolation laws of the 'Covid' era. Paradoxically the very

existence of a simulation means that we are not alone when some force had to construct it. My view is that experiences that people have reported all over the world for centuries with Reptilians and Grey entities are Archon phenomena as Nag Hammadi texts describe; and that benevolent 'alien' interactions are non-human groups that come in and out of the simulation by overcoming Archon attempts to keep them out. It should be highlighted, too, that Reptilians and Greys are obsessed with *genetics* and *technology* as related by cultural accounts and those who say they have been abducted by them. Technology is their way of overcoming some of the limitations in their creative potential and our technology-driven and controlled human society of today is *archetypical* Archon-Reptilian-Grey *modus operandi*. Technocracy is really *Archontocracy*. The Universe does not have to be as big as it appears with a simulation. There is no space or distance only information decoded into holographic reality. What we call 'space' is only the absence of holographic 'objects' and that 'space' is The Field of energetic information which connects everything into a single whole. The same applies with the artificially-generated information field of the simulation. The Universe is not big or small as a physical reality. It is decoded information, that's all, and its perceived size is decided by the way the simulation is encoded to make it appear. The entire night sky as we perceive it only exists in our brain and so where are those 'millions of light years'? The 'stars' on the ceiling of the Planetarium looked a vast distance away.

There's another point to mention about 'aliens'. I have been highlighting since the 1990s the plan to stage a fake 'alien invasion' to justify the centralisation of global power and a world military. Nazi scientist Werner von Braun, who was taken to America by Operation Paperclip after World War Two to help found NASA, told his American assistant Dr Carol Rosin about the Cult agenda when he knew he was dying in 1977. Rosin said that he told her about a sequence that would lead to total human control by a one-world government. This included threats from terrorism, rogue nations, meteors and asteroids before finally an 'alien invasion'. All of these

things, von Braun said, would be bogus and what I would refer to as a No-Problem-Reaction-Solution. Keep this in mind when 'the aliens are coming' is the new mantra. The aliens are not coming – they are *already here* and they have infiltrated human society while looking human. French-Canadian investigative journalist Serge Monast said in 1994 that he had uncovered a NASA/military operation called Project Blue Beam which fits with what Werner von Braun predicted. Monast died of a 'heart attack' in 1996 the day after he was arrested and spent a night in prison. He was 51. He said Blue Beam was a plan to stage an alien invasion that would include religious figures beamed holographically into the sky as part of a global manipulation to usher in a 'new age' of worshipping what I would say is the Cult 'god' Yaldabaoth in a one-world religion. Fake holographic asteroids are also said to be part of the plan which again syncs with von Braun. How could you stage an illusory threat from asteroids unless they were holographic inserts? This is pretty straightforward given the advanced technology outside the public arena and the fact that our 'physical' reality is holographic anyway. Information fields would be projected and we would decode them into the illusion of a 'physical' asteroid. If they can sell a global 'pandemic' with a 'virus' that doesn't exist what will humans not believe if government and media tell them?

All this is particularly relevant as I write with the Pentagon planning to release in June, 2021, information about 'UFO sightings'. I have been following the UFO story since the early 1990s and the common theme throughout has been government and military denials and cover up. More recently, however, the Pentagon has suddenly become more talkative and apparently open with Air Force pilot radar images released of unexplained craft moving and changing direction at speeds well beyond anything believed possible with human technology. Then, in March, 2021, former Director of National Intelligence John Ratcliffe said a Pentagon report months later in June would reveal a great deal of information about UFO sightings unknown to the public. He said the report would have 'massive implications'. The order to do this was included bizarrely

in a \$2.3 trillion 'coronavirus' relief and government funding bill passed by the Trump administration at the end of 2020. I would add some serious notes of caution here. I have been pointing out since the 1990s that the US military and intelligence networks have long had craft – 'flying saucers' or anti-gravity craft – which any observer would take to be extraterrestrial in origin. Keeping this knowledge from the public allows craft flown by *humans* to be perceived as alien visitations. I am not saying that 'aliens' do not exist. I would be the last one to say that, but we have to be streetwise here. President Ronald Reagan told the UN General Assembly in 1987: 'I occasionally think how quickly our differences worldwide would vanish if we were facing an alien threat from outside this world.' That's the idea. Unite against a common 'enemy' with a common purpose behind your 'saviour force' (the Cult) as this age-old technique of mass manipulation goes global.

### **Science moves this way ...**

I could find only one other person who was discussing the simulation hypothesis publicly when I concluded it was real. This was Nick Bostrom, a Swedish-born philosopher at the University of Oxford, who has explored for many years the possibility that human reality is a computer simulation although his version and mine are not the same. Today the simulation and holographic reality hypothesis have increasingly entered the scientific mainstream. Well, the more open-minded mainstream, that is. Here are a few of the ever-gathering examples. American nuclear physicist Silas Beane led a team of physicists at the University of Bonn in Germany pursuing the question of whether we live in a simulation. They concluded that we probably do and it was likely based on a lattice of cubes. They found that cosmic rays align with that specific pattern. The team highlighted the Greisen–Zatsepin–Kuzmin (GZK) limit which refers to cosmic ray particle interaction with cosmic background radiation that creates an apparent boundary for cosmic ray particles. They say in a paper entitled 'Constraints on the Universe as a Numerical Simulation' that this 'pattern of constraint' is exactly what you

would find with a computer simulation. They also made the point that a simulation would create its own 'laws of physics' that would limit possibility. I've been making the same point for decades that the *perceived* laws of physics relate only to this reality, or what I would later call the simulation. When designers write codes to create computer and virtual reality games they are the equivalent of the laws of physics for that game. Players interact within the limitations laid out by the coding. In the same way those who wrote the codes for the simulation decided the laws of physics that would apply. These can be overridden by expanded states of consciousness, but not by those enslaved in only five-sense awareness where simulation codes rule. Overriding the codes is what people call 'miracles'. They are not. They are bypassing the encoded limits of the simulation. A population caught in simulation perception would have no idea that this was their plight. As the Bonn paper said: 'Like a prisoner in a pitch-black cell we would not be able to see the "walls" of our prison,' That's true if people remain mesmerised by the five senses. Open to expanded awareness and those walls become very clear. The main one is the speed of light.

American theoretical physicist James Gates is another who has explored the simulation question and found considerable evidence to support the idea. Gates was Professor of Physics at the University of Maryland, Director of The Center for String and Particle Theory, and on Barack Obama's Council of Advisors on Science and Technology. He and his team found *computer codes* of digital data embedded in the fabric of our reality. They relate to on-off electrical charges of 1 and 0 in the binary system used by computers. 'We have no idea what they are doing there', Gates said. They found within the energetic fabric mathematical sequences known as error-correcting codes or block codes that 'reboot' data to its original state or 'default settings' when something knocks it out of sync. Gates was asked if he had found a set of equations embedded in our reality indistinguishable from those that drive search engines and browsers and he said: 'That is correct.' Rich Terrile, director of the Centre for Evolutionary Computation and Automated Design at NASA's Jet

Propulsion Laboratory, has said publicly that he believes the Universe is a digital hologram that must have been created by a form of intelligence. I agree with that in every way. Waveform information is delivered electrically by the senses to the brain which constructs a *digital* holographic reality that we call the 'world'. This digital level of reality can be read by the esoteric art of numerology. Digital holograms are at the cutting edge of holographics today. We have digital technology everywhere designed to access and manipulate our digital level of perceived reality. Synthetic mRNA in 'Covid vaccines' has a digital component to manipulate the body's digital 'operating system'.

## **Reality is numbers**

How many know that our reality can be broken down to numbers and codes that are the same as computer games? Max Tegmark, a physicist at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT), is the author of *Our Mathematical Universe* in which he lays out how reality can be entirely described by numbers and maths in the way that a video game is encoded with the 'physics' of computer games. Our world and computer virtual reality are essentially the same.

Tegmark imagines the perceptions of characters in an advanced computer game when the graphics are so good they don't know they are in a game. They think they can bump into real objects (electromagnetic resistance in our reality), fall in love and feel emotions like excitement. When they began to study the apparently 'physical world' of the video game they would realise that everything was made of pixels (which have been found in our energetic reality as must be the case when on one level our world is digital). What computer game characters thought was physical 'stuff', Tegmark said, could actually be broken down into numbers:

And we're exactly in this situation in our world. We look around and it doesn't seem that mathematical at all, but everything we see is made out of elementary particles like quarks and electrons. And what properties does an electron have? Does it have a smell or a colour or a texture? No! ... We physicists have come up with geeky names for [Electron] properties, like

electric charge, or spin, or lepton number, but the electron doesn't care what we call it, the properties are just numbers.

This is the illusory reality Gnostics were describing. This is the simulation. The A, C, G, and T codes of DNA have a binary value – A and C = 0 while G and T = 1. This has to be when the simulation is digital and the body must be digital to interact with it. Recurring mathematical sequences are encoded throughout reality and the body. They include the Fibonacci sequence in which the two previous numbers are added to get the next one, as in ... 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 8, 13, 21, 34, 55, etc. The sequence is encoded in the human face and body, proportions of animals, DNA, seed heads, pine cones, trees, shells, spiral galaxies, hurricanes and the number of petals in a flower. The list goes on and on. There are fractal patterns – a 'never-ending pattern that is infinitely complex and self-similar across all scales in the as above, so below, principle of holograms. These and other famous recurring geometrical and mathematical sequences such as Phi, Pi, Golden Mean, Golden Ratio and Golden Section are *computer codes* of the simulation. I had to laugh and give my head a shake the day I finished this book and it went into the production stage. I was sent an article in *Scientific American* published in April, 2021, with the headline 'Confirmed! We Live in a Simulation'. Two decades after I first said our reality is a simulation and the speed of light is its outer limit the article suggested that we do live in a simulation and that the speed of light is its outer limit. I left school at 15 and never passed a major exam in my life while the writer was up to his eyes in qualifications. As I will explain in the final chapter *knowing* is far better than thinking and they come from very different sources. The article rightly connected the speed of light to the processing speed of the 'Matrix' and said what has been in my books all this time ... 'If we are in a simulation, as it appears, then space is an abstract property written in code. It is not real'. No it's not and if we live in a simulation something created it and it wasn't *us*. 'That David Icke says we are manipulated by aliens' – he's crackers.'

## Wow ...

The reality that humanity thinks is so real is an illusion. Politicians, governments, scientists, doctors, academics, law enforcement, media, school and university curriculums, on and on, are all founded on a world that *does not exist* except as a simulated prison cell. Is it such a stretch to accept that 'Covid' doesn't exist when our entire 'physical' reality doesn't exist? Revealed here is the knowledge kept under raps in the Cult networks of compartmentalised secrecy to control humanity's sense of reality by inducing the population to believe in a reality that's not real. If it wasn't so tragic in its experiential consequences the whole thing would be hysterically funny. None of this is new to Renegade Minds. Ancient Greek philosopher Plato (about 428 to about 347BC) was a major influence on Gnostic belief and he described the human plight thousands of years ago with his Allegory of the Cave. He told the symbolic story of prisoners living in a cave who had never been outside. They were chained and could only see one wall of the cave while behind them was a fire that they could not see. Figures walked past the fire casting shadows on the prisoners' wall and those moving shadows became their sense of reality. Some prisoners began to study the shadows and were considered experts on them (today's academics and scientists), but what they studied was only an illusion (today's academics and scientists). A prisoner escaped from the cave and saw reality as it really is. When he returned to report this revelation they didn't believe him, called him mad and threatened to kill him if he tried to set them free. Plato's tale is not only a brilliant analogy of the human plight and our illusory reality. It describes, too, the dynamics of the 'Covid' hoax. I have only skimmed the surface of these subjects here. The aim of this book is to crisply connect all essential dots to put what is happening today into its true context. All subject areas and their connections in this chapter are covered in great evidential detail in *Everything You Need To Know, But Have Never Been Told* and *The Answer*.

They say that bewildered people 'can't see the forest for the trees'. Humanity, however, can't see the forest for the *twigs*. The five senses



see only twigs while Renegade Minds can see the forest and it's the forest where the answers lie with the connections that reveals.

Breaking free of perceptual programming so the forest can be seen is the way we turn all this around. Not breaking free is how humanity got into this mess. The situation may seem hopeless, but I promise you it's not. We are a perceptual heartbeat from paradise if only we knew.

## CHAPTER TWELVE

### **Escaping Wetiko**

*Life is simply a vacation from the infinite*  
Dean Cavanagh

**R**enegade Minds weave the web of life and events and see common themes in the apparently random. They are always there if you look for them and their pursuit is aided by incredible synchronicity that comes when your mind is open rather than mesmerised by what it thinks it can see.

Infinite awareness is infinite possibility and the more of infinite possibility that we access the more becomes infinitely possible. That may be stating the apparently obvious, but it is a devastatingly-powerful fact that can set us free. We are a point of attention within an infinity of consciousness. The question is how much of that infinity do we choose to access? How much knowledge, insight, awareness, wisdom, do we want to connect with and explore? If your focus is only in the five senses you will be influenced by a fraction of infinite awareness. I mean a range so tiny that it gives new meaning to infinitesimal. Limitation of self-identity and a sense of the possible limit accordingly your range of consciousness. We are what we think we are. Life is what we think it is. The dream is the dreamer and the dreamer is the dream. Buddhist philosophy puts it this way: 'As a thing is viewed, so it appears.' Most humans live in the realm of touch, taste, see, hear, and smell and that's the limit of their sense of the possible and sense of self. Many will follow a religion and speak of a God in his heaven, but their lives are still

dominated by the five senses in their perceptions and actions. The five senses become the arbiter of everything. When that happens all except a smear of infinity is sealed away from influence by the rigid, unyielding, reality bubbles that are the five-sense human or Phantom Self. Archon Cult methodology is to isolate consciousness within five-sense reality – the simulation – and then program that consciousness with a sense of self and the world through a deluge of life-long information designed to instil the desired perception that allows global control. Efforts to do this have increased dramatically with identity politics as identity bubbles are squeezed into the minutiae of five-sense detail which disconnect people even more profoundly from the infinite 'I'.

Five-sense focus and self-identity are like a firewall that limits access to the infinite realms. You only perceive one radio or television station and no other. We'll take that literally for a moment. Imagine a vast array of stations giving different information and angles on reality, but you only ever listen to one. Here we have the human plight in which the population is overwhelmingly confined to CultFM. This relates only to the frequency range of CultFM and limits perception and insight to that band – limits *possibility* to that band. It means you are connecting with an almost imperceptibly minuscule range of possibility and creative potential within the infinite Field. It's a world where everything seems apart from everything else and where synchronicity is rare. Synchronicity is defined in the dictionary as 'the happening by chance of two or more related or similar events at the same time'. Use of 'by chance' betrays a complete misunderstanding of reality. Synchronicity is not 'by chance'. As people open their minds, or 'awaken' to use the term, they notice more and more coincidences in their lives, bits of 'luck', apparently miraculous happenings that put them in the right place at the right time with the right people. Days become peppered with 'fancy meeting you here' and 'what are the chances of that?' My entire life has been lived like this and ever more so since my own colossal awakening in 1990 and 91 which transformed my sense of reality. Synchronicity is not 'by chance'; it is by accessing expanded

realms of possibility which allow expanded potential for manifestation. People broadcasting the same vibe from the same openness of mind tend to be drawn 'by chance' to each other through what I call frequency magnetism and it's not only people. In the last more than 30 years incredible synchronicity has also led me through the Cult maze to information in so many forms and to crucial personal experiences. These 'coincidences' have allowed me to put the puzzle pieces together across an enormous array of subjects and situations. Those who have breached the bubble of five-sense reality will know exactly what I mean and this escape from the perceptual prison cell is open to everyone whenever they make that choice. This may appear super-human when compared with the limitations of 'human', but it's really our natural state. 'Human' as currently experienced is consciousness in an unnatural state of induced separation from the infinity of the whole. I'll come to how this transformation into unity can be made when I have described in more detail the force that holds humanity in servitude by denying this access to infinite self.

## **The Wetiko factor**

I have been talking and writing for decades about the way five-sense mind is systematically barricaded from expanded awareness. I have used the analogy of a computer (five-sense mind) and someone at the keyboard (expanded awareness). Interaction between the computer and the operator is symbolic of the interaction between five-sense mind and expanded awareness. The computer directly experiences the Internet and the operator experiences the Internet via the computer which is how it's supposed to be – the two working as one. Archons seek to control that point where the operator connects with the computer to stop that interaction ([Fig 20](#)). Now the operator is banging the keyboard and clicking the mouse, but the computer is not responding and this happens when the computer is taken over – *possessed* – by an appropriately-named computer 'virus'. The operator has lost all influence over the computer which goes its own way making decisions under the control of the 'virus'. I have

just described the dynamic through which the force known to Gnostics as Yaldabaoth and Archons disconnects five-sense mind from expanded awareness to imprison humanity in perceptual servitude.



**Figure 20:** The mind ‘virus’ I have been writing about for decades seeks to isolate five-sense mind (the computer) from the true ‘I’. (Image by Neil Hague).

About a year ago I came across a Native American concept of Wetiko which describes precisely the same phenomenon. Wetiko is the spelling used by the Cree and there are other versions including wintiko and windigo used by other tribal groups. They spell the name with lower case, but I see Wetiko as a proper noun as with Archons and prefer a capital. I first saw an article about Wetiko by writer and researcher Paul Levy which so synced with what I had been writing about the computer/operator disconnection and later the Archons. I then read his book, the fascinating *Dispelling Wetiko, Breaking the Spell of Evil*. The parallels between what I had concluded long before and the Native American concept of Wetiko were so clear and obvious that it was almost funny. For Wetiko see the Gnostic Archons for sure and the Jinn, the Predators, and every other name for a force of evil, inversion and chaos. Wetiko is the Native American name for the force that divides the computer from

the operator (Fig 21). Indigenous author Jack D. Forbes, a founder of the Native American movement in the 1960s, wrote another book about Wetiko entitled *Columbus And Other Cannibals – The Wetiko Disease of Exploitation, Imperialism, and Terrorism* which I also read. Forbes says that Wetiko refers to an evil person or spirit ‘who terrorizes other creatures by means of terrible acts, including cannibalism’. Zulu shaman Credo Mutwa told me that African accounts tell how cannibalism was brought into the world by the Chitauri ‘gods’ – another manifestation of Wetiko. The distinction between ‘evil person or spirit’ relates to Archons/Wetiko possessing a human or acting as pure consciousness. Wetiko is said to be a sickness of the soul or spirit and a state of being that takes but gives nothing back – the Cult and its operatives perfectly described. Black Hawk, a Native American war leader defending their lands from confiscation, said European invaders had ‘poisoned hearts’ – Wetiko hearts – and that this would spread to native societies. Mention of the heart is very significant as we shall shortly see. Forbes writes: ‘Tragically, the history of the world for the past 2,000 years is, in great part, the story of the epidemiology of the wetiko disease.’ Yes, and much longer. Forbes is correct when he says: ‘The wetikos destroyed Egypt and Babylon and Athens and Rome and Tenochtitlan [capital of the Aztec empire] and perhaps now they will destroy the entire earth.’ Evil, he said, is the number one export of a Wetiko culture – see its globalisation with ‘Covid’. Constant war, mass murder, suffering of all kinds, child abuse, Satanism, torture and human sacrifice are all expressions of Wetiko and the Wetiko possessed. The world is Wetiko made manifest, *but it doesn’t have to be*. There is a way out of this even now.



**Figure 21:** The mind 'virus' is known to Native Americans as 'Wetiko'. (Image by Neil Hague).

## **Cult of Wetiko**

Wetiko is the Yaldabaoth frequency distortion that seeks to attach to human consciousness and absorb it into its own. Once this connection is made Wetiko can drive the perceptions of the target which they believe to be coming from their own mind. All the horrors of history and today from mass killers to Satanists, paedophiles like Jeffrey Epstein and other psychopaths, are the embodiment of Wetiko and express its state of being in all its grotesqueness. The Cult is Wetiko incarnate, Yaldabaoth incarnate, and it seeks to facilitate Wetiko assimilation of humanity in totality into its distortion by manipulating the population into low frequency states that match its own. Paul Levy writes:

'Holographically enforced within the psyche of every human being the wetiko virus pervades and underlies the entire field of consciousness, and can therefore potentially manifest through any one of us at any moment if we are not mindful.' The 'Covid' hoax has achieved this with many people, but others have not fallen into Wetiko's frequency lair. Players in the 'Covid' human catastrophe including Gates, Schwab, Tedros, Fauci, Whitty, Vallance, Johnson, Hancock, Ferguson, Drosten, and all the rest, including the psychopath psychologists, are expressions of Wetiko. This is why

they have no compassion or empathy and no emotional consequence for what they do that would make them stop doing it. Observe all the people who support the psychopaths in authority against the Pushbackers despite the damaging impact the psychopaths have on their own lives and their family's lives. You are again looking at Wetiko possession which prevents them seeing through the lies to the obvious scam going on. *Why can't they see it?* Wetiko won't let them see it. The perceptual divide that has now become a chasm is between the Wetikoed and the non-Wetikoed.

Paul Levy describes Wetiko in the same way that I have long described the Archontic force. They are the same distorted consciousness operating across dimensions of reality: '... the subtle body of wetiko is not located in the third dimension of space and time, literally existing in another dimension ... it is able to affect ordinary lives by mysteriously interpenetrating into our three-dimensional world.' Wetiko does this through its incarnate representatives in the Cult and by weaving itself into The Field which on our level of reality is the electromagnetic information field of the simulation or Matrix. More than that, the simulation *is* Wetiko / Yaldabaoth. Caleb Scharf, Director of Astrobiology at Columbia University, has speculated that 'alien life' could be so advanced that it has transcribed itself into the quantum realm to become what we call physics. He said intelligence indistinguishable from the fabric of the Universe would solve many of its greatest mysteries:

Perhaps hyper-advanced life isn't just external. Perhaps it's already all around. It is embedded in what we perceive to be physics itself, from the root behaviour of particles and fields to the phenomena of complexity and emergence ... In other words, life might not just be in the equations. It might BE the equations [My emphasis].

Scharf said it is possible that 'we don't recognise advanced life because it forms an integral and unsuspecting part of what we've considered to be the natural world'. I agree. Wetiko/Yaldabaoth *is* the simulation. We are literally in the body of the beast. But that doesn't mean it has to control us. We all have the power to overcome Wetiko



influence and the Cult knows that. I doubt it sleeps too well because it knows that.

## **Which Field?**

This, I suggest, is how it all works. There are two Fields. One is the fierce electromagnetic light of the Matrix within the speed of light; the other is the 'watery light' of The Field beyond the walls of the Matrix that connects with the Great Infinity. Five-sense mind and the decoding systems of the body attach us to the Field of Matrix light. They have to or we could not experience this reality. Five-sense mind sees only the Matrix Field of information while our expanded consciousness is part of the Infinity Field. When we open our minds, and most importantly our hearts, to the Infinity Field we have a mission control which gives us an expanded perspective, a road map, to understand the nature of the five-sense world. If we are isolated only in five-sense mind there is no mission control. We're on our own trying to understand a world that's constantly feeding us information to ensure we do not understand. People in this state can feel 'lost' and bewildered with no direction or radar. You can see ever more clearly those who are influenced by the Fields of Big Infinity or little five-sense mind simply by their views and behaviour with regard to the 'Covid' hoax. We have had this division throughout known human history with the mass of the people on one side and individuals who could see and intuit beyond the walls of the simulation – Plato's prisoner who broke out of the cave and saw reality for what it is. Such people have always been targeted by Wetiko/Archon-possessed authority, burned at the stake or demonised as mad, bad and dangerous. The Cult today and its global network of 'anti-hate', 'anti-fascist' Woke groups are all expressions of Wetiko attacking those exposing the conspiracy, 'Covid' lies and the 'vaccine' agenda.

Woke as a whole is Wetiko which explains its black and white mentality and how at one it is with the Wetiko-possessed Cult. Paul Levy said: 'To be in this paradigm is to still be under the thrall of a two-valued logic – where things are either true or false – of a

wetikoized mind.’ Wetiko consciousness is in a permanent rage, therefore so is Woke, and then there is Woke inversion and contradiction. ‘Anti-fascists’ act like fascists because fascists *and* ‘anti-fascists’ are both Wetiko at work. Political parties act the same while claiming to be different for the same reason. Secret society and satanic rituals are attaching initiates to Wetiko and the cold, ruthless, psychopathic mentality that secures the positions of power all over the world is Wetiko. Reframing ‘training programmes’ have the same cumulative effect of attaching Wetiko and we have their graduates described as automatons and robots with a cold, psychopathic, uncaring demeanour. They are all traits of Wetiko possession and look how many times they have been described in this book and elsewhere with regard to personnel behind ‘Covid’ including the police and medical profession. Climbing the greasy pole in any profession in a Wetiko society requires traits of Wetiko to get there and that is particularly true of politics which is not about fair competition and pre-eminence of ideas. It is founded on how many backs you can stab and arses you can lick. This culminated in the global ‘Covid’ coordination between the Wetiko possessed who pulled it off in all the different countries without a trace of empathy and compassion for their impact on humans. Our sight sense can see only holographic form and not the Field which connects holographic form. Therefore we perceive ‘physical’ objects with ‘space’ in between. In fact that ‘space’ is energy/consciousness operating on multiple frequencies. One of them is Wetiko and that connects the Cult psychopaths, those who submit to the psychopaths, and those who serve the psychopaths in the media operations of the world. Wetiko is Gates. Wetiko is the mask-wearing submissive. Wetiko is the fake journalist and ‘fact-checker’. The Wetiko Field is coordinating the whole thing. Psychopaths, gofers, media operatives, ‘anti-hate’ hate groups, ‘fact-checkers’ and submissive people work as one unit *even without human coordination* because they are attached to the *same* Field which is organising it all ([Fig 22](#)). Paul Levy is here describing how Wetiko-possessed people are drawn together and refuse to let any information breach their rigid

perceptions. He was writing long before 'Covid', but I think you will recognise followers of the 'Covid' religion *oh just a little bit*:

People who are channelling the vibratory frequency of wetiko align with each other through psychic resonance to reinforce their unspoken shared agreement so as to uphold their deranged view of reality. Once an unconscious content takes possession of certain individuals, it irresistibly draws them together by mutual attraction and knits them into groups tied together by their shared madness that can easily swell into an avalanche of insanity.

A psychic epidemic is a closed system, which is to say that it is insular and not open to any new information or informing influences from the outside world which contradict its fixed, limited, and limiting perspective.

There we have the Woke mind and the 'Covid' mind. Compatible resonance draws the awakening together, too, which is clearly happening today.

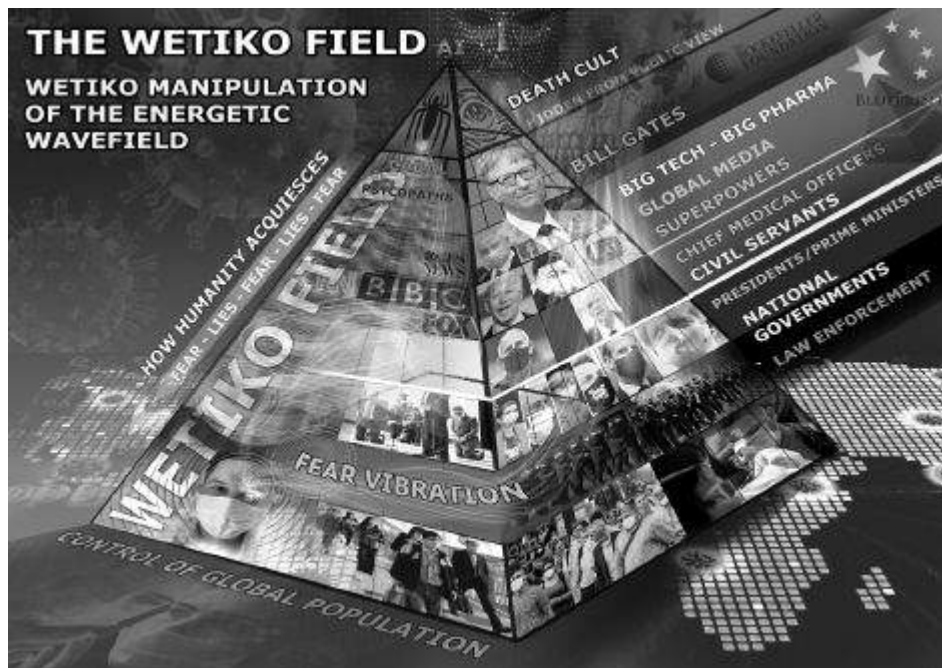


**Figure 22:** The Wetiko Field from which the Cult pyramid and its personnel are made manifest. (Image by Neil Hague).

## **Spiritual servitude**

Wetiko doesn't care about humans. It's not human; it just possesses humans for its own ends and the effect (depending on the scale of

possession) can be anything from extreme psychopathy to unquestioning obedience. Wetiko's worst nightmare is for human consciousness to expand beyond the simulation. Everything is focussed on stopping that happening through control of information, thus perception, thus frequency. The 'education system', media, science, medicine, academia, are all geared to maintaining humanity in five-sense servitude as is the constant stimulation of low-vibrational mental and emotional states (see 'Covid'). Wetiko seeks to dominate those subconscious spaces between five-sense perception and expanded consciousness where the computer meets the operator. From these subconscious hiding places Wetiko speaks to us to trigger urges and desires that we take to be our own and manipulate us into anything from low-vibrational to psychopathic states. Remember how Islam describes the Jinn as invisible tricksters that 'whisper' and confuse. Wetiko is the origin of the 'trickster god' theme that you find in cultures all over the world. Jinn, like the Archons, are Wetiko which is terrified of humans awakening and reconnecting with our true self for then its energy source has gone. With that the feedback loop breaks between Wetiko and human perception that provides the energetic momentum on which its very existence depends as a force of evil. Humans are both its target and its source of survival, but only if we are operating in low-vibrational states of fear, hate, depression and the background anxiety that most people suffer. We are Wetiko's target because we are its key to survival. It needs us, not the other way round. Paul Levy writes:

A vampire has no intrinsic, independent, substantial existence in its own right; it only exists in relation to us. The pathogenic, vampiric mind-parasite called wetiko is nothing in itself – not being able to exist from its own side – yet it has a 'virtual reality' such that it can potentially destroy our species ...

...The fact that a vampire is not reflected by a mirror can also mean that what we need to see is that there's nothing, no-thing to see, other than ourselves. The fact that wetiko is the expression of something inside of us means that the cure for wetiko is with us as well. The critical issue is finding this cure within us and then putting it into effect.

Evil begets evil because if evil does not constantly expand and find new sources of energetic sustenance its evil, its *distortion*, dies with the assimilation into balance and harmony. Love is the garlic to Wetiko's vampire. Evil, the absence of love, cannot exist in the presence of love. I think I see a way out of here. I have emphasised so many times over the decades that the Archons/Wetiko and their Cult are not all powerful. *They are not*. I don't care how it looks even now *they are not*. I have not called them little boys in short trousers for effect. I have said it because it is true. Wetiko's insatiable desire for power over others is not a sign of its omnipotence, but its insecurity. Paul Levy writes: 'Due to the primal fear which ultimately drives it and which it is driven to cultivate, wetiko's body politic has an intrinsic and insistent need for centralising power and control so as to create imagined safety for itself.' *Yeeeeeees!* Exactly! Why does Wetiko want humans in an ongoing state of fear? Wetiko itself *is* fear and it is petrified of love. As evil is an absence of love, so love is an absence of fear. Love conquers all and *especially* Wetiko which *is* fear. Wetiko brought fear into the world when it wasn't here before. *Fear* was the 'fall', the fall into low-frequency ignorance and illusion – fear is **False Emotion Appearing Real**. The simulation is driven and energised by fear because Wetiko/Yaldabaoth (fear) *are* the simulation. Fear is the absence of love and Wetiko is the absence of love.

## **Wetiko today**

We can now view current events from this level of perspective. The 'Covid' hoax has generated momentous amounts of ongoing fear, anxiety, depression and despair which have empowered Wetiko. No wonder people like Gates have been the instigators when they are Wetiko incarnate and exhibit every trait of Wetiko in the extreme. See how cold and unemotional these people are like Gates and his cronies, how dead of eye they are. That's Wetiko. Sabbatians are Wetiko and everything they control including the World Health Organization, Big Pharma and the 'vaccine' makers, national 'health'

hierarchies, corporate media, Silicon Valley, the banking system, and the United Nations with its planned transformation into world government. All are controlled and possessed by the Wetiko distortion into distorting human society in its image. We are with this knowledge at the gateway to understanding the world. Divisions of race, culture, creed and sexuality are diversions to hide the real division between those possessed and influenced by Wetiko and those that are not. The 'Covid' hoax has brought both clearly into view. Human behaviour is not about race. Tyrants and dictatorships come in all colours and creeds. What unites the US president bombing the innocent and an African tribe committing genocide against another as in Rwanda? What unites them? *Wetiko*. All wars are Wetiko, all genocide is Wetiko, all hunger over centuries in a world of plenty is Wetiko. Children going to bed hungry, including in the West, is Wetiko. Cult-generated Woke racial divisions that focus on the body are designed to obscure the reality that divisions in behaviour are manifestations of mind, not body. Obsession with body identity and group judgement is a means to divert attention from the real source of behaviour – mind and perception. Conflict sown by the Woke both within themselves and with their target groups are Wetiko providing lunch for itself through still more agents of the division, chaos, and fear on which it feeds. The Cult is seeking to assimilate the entirety of humanity and all children and young people into the Wetiko frequency by manipulating them into states of fear and despair. Witness all the suicide and psychological unravelling since the spring of 2020. Wetiko psychopaths want to impose a state of unquestioning obedience to authority which is no more than a conduit for Wetiko to enforce its will and assimilate humanity into itself. It needs us to believe that resistance is futile when it fears resistance and even more so the game-changing non-cooperation with its impositions. It can use violent resistance for its benefit. Violent impositions and violent resistance are *both* Wetiko. The Power of Love with its Power of No will sweep Wetiko from our world. Wetiko and its Cult know that. They just don't want us to know.

## **AI Wetiko**

This brings me to AI or artificial intelligence and something else Wetikos don't want us to know. What is AI *really*? I know about computer code algorithms and AI that learns from data input. These, however, are more diversions, the expeditionary force, for the real AI that they want to connect to the human brain as promoted by Silicon Valley Wetikos like Kurzweil. What is this AI? It is the frequency of *Wetiko*, the frequency of the Archons. The connection of AI to the human brain is the connection of the Wetiko frequency to create a Wetiko hive mind and complete the job of assimilation. The hive mind is planned to be controlled from Israel and China which are both 100 percent owned by Wetiko Sabbatians. The assimilation process has been going on minute by minute in the 'smart' era which fused with the 'Covid' era. We are told that social media is scrambling the minds of the young and changing their personality. This is true, but what is social media? Look more deeply at how it works, how it creates divisions and conflict, the hostility and cruelty, the targeting of people until they are destroyed. That's Wetiko. Social media is manipulated to tune people to the Wetiko frequency with all the emotional exploitation tricks employed by platforms like Facebook and its Wetiko front man, Zuckerberg. Facebook's Instagram announced a new platform for children to overcome a legal bar on them using the main site. This is more Wetiko exploitation and manipulation of kids. Amnesty International likened the plan to foxes offering to guard the henhouse and said it was incompatible with human rights. Since when did Wetiko or Zuckerberg (I repeat myself) care about that? Would Brin and Page at Google, Wojcicki at YouTube, Bezos at Amazon and whoever the hell runs Twitter act as they do if they were not channelling Wetiko? Would those who are developing technologies for no other reason than human control? How about those designing and selling technologies to kill people and Big Pharma drug and 'vaccine' producers who know they will end or devastate lives? Quite a thought for these people to consider is that if you are Wetiko in a human life you are Wetiko on the 'other side' unless your frequency

changes and that can only change by a change of perception which becomes a change of behaviour. Where Gates is going does not bear thinking about although perhaps that's exactly where he wants to go. Either way, that's where he's going. His frequency will make it so.

## **The frequency lair**

I have been saying for a long time that a big part of the addiction to smartphones and devices is that a frequency is coming off them that entraps the mind. People spend ages on their phones and sometimes even a minute or so after they put them down they pick them up again and it all repeats. 'Covid' lockdowns will have increased this addiction a million times for obvious reasons. Addictions to alcohol overindulgence and drugs are another way that Wetiko entraps consciousness to attach to its own. Both are symptoms of low-vibrational psychological distress which alcoholism and drug addiction further compound. Do we think it's really a coincidence that access to them is made so easy while potions that can take people into realms beyond the simulation are banned and illegal? I have explored smartphone addiction in other books, the scale is mind-blowing, and that level of addiction does not come without help. Tech companies that make these phones are Wetiko and they will have no qualms about destroying the minds of children. We are seeing again with these companies the Wetiko perceptual combination of psychopathic enforcers and weak and meek unquestioning compliance by the rank and file.

The global Smart Grid is the Wetiko Grid and it is crucial to complete the Cult endgame. The simulation is radiation and we are being deluged with technological radiation on a devastating scale. Wetiko frauds like Elon Musk serve Cult interests while occasionally criticising them to maintain his street-cred. 5G and other forms of Wi-Fi are being directed at the earth from space on a volume and scale that goes on increasing by the day. Elon Musk's (officially) SpaceX Starlink project is in the process of putting tens of thousands of satellites in low orbit to cover every inch of the planet with 5G and other Wi-Fi to create Kurzweil's global 'cloud' to which the



human mind is planned to be attached very soon. SpaceX has approval to operate 12,000 satellites with more than 1,300 launched at the time of writing and applications filed for 30,000 more. Other operators in the Wi-Fi, 5G, low-orbit satellite market include OneWeb (UK), Telesat (Canada), and AST & Science (US). Musk tells us that AI could be the end of humanity and then launches a company called Neuralink to connect the human brain to computers. Musk's (in theory) Tesla company is building electric cars and the driverless vehicles of the smart control grid. As frauds and bullshitters go Elon Musk in my opinion is Major League.

5G and technological radiation in general are destructive to human health, genetics and psychology and increasing the strength of artificial radiation underpins the five-sense perceptual bubbles which are themselves expressions of radiation or electromagnetism. Freedom activist John Whitehead was so right with his 'databit by databit, we are building our own electronic concentration camps'. The Smart Grid and 5G is a means to control the human mind and infuse perceptual information into The Field to influence anyone in sync with its frequency. You can change perception and behaviour en masse if you can manipulate the population into those levels of frequency and this is happening all around us today. The arrogance of Musk and his fellow Cult operatives knows no bounds in the way that we see with Gates. Musk's satellites are so many in number already they are changing the night sky when viewed from Earth. The astronomy community has complained about this and they have seen nothing yet. Some consequences of Musk's Wetiko hubris include: Radiation; visible pollution of the night sky; interference with astronomy and meteorology; ground and water pollution from intensive use of increasingly many spaceports; accumulating space debris; continual deorbiting and burning up of aging satellites, polluting the atmosphere with toxic dust and smoke; and ever-increasing likelihood of collisions. A collective public open letter of complaint to Musk said:

We are writing to you ... because SpaceX is in process of surrounding the Earth with a network of thousands of satellites whose very purpose is to irradiate every square inch of the

Earth. SpaceX, like everyone else, is treating the radiation as if it were not there. As if the mitochondria in our cells do not depend on electrons moving undisturbed from the food we digest to the oxygen we breathe.

As if our nervous systems and our hearts are not subject to radio frequency interference like any piece of electronic equipment. As if the cancer, diabetes, and heart disease that now afflict a majority of the Earth's population are not metabolic diseases that result from interference with our cellular machinery. As if insects everywhere, and the birds and animals that eat them, are not starving to death as a result.

People like Musk and Gates believe in their limitless Wetiko arrogance that they can do whatever they like to the world because they own it. Consequences for humanity are irrelevant. It's absolutely time that we stopped taking this shit from these self-styled masters of the Earth when you consider where this is going.

## **Why is the Cult so anti-human?**

I hear this question often: Why would they do this when it will affect them, too? Ah, but will it? Who is this *them*? Forget their bodies. They are just vehicles for Wetiko consciousness. When you break it all down to the foundations we are looking at a state of severely distorted consciousness targeting another state of consciousness for assimilation. The rest is detail. The simulation is the fly-trap in which unique sensations of the five senses create a cycle of addiction called reincarnation. Renegade Minds see that everything which happens in our reality is a smaller version of the whole picture in line with the holographic principle. Addiction to the radiation of smart technology is a smaller version of addiction to the whole simulation. Connecting the body/brain to AI is taking that addiction on a giant step further to total ongoing control by assimilating human incarnate consciousness into Wetiko. I have watched during the 'Covid' hoax how many are becoming ever more profoundly attached to Wetiko's perceptual calling cards of aggressive response to any other point of view ('There is no other god but me'), psychopathic lack of compassion and empathy, and servile submission to the narrative and will of authority. Wetiko is the psychopaths *and* subservience to psychopaths. The Cult of Wetiko is

so anti-human because it is *not* human. It embarked on a mission to destroy human by targeting everything that it means to be human and to survive as human. 'Covid' is not the end, just a means to an end. The Cult with its Wetiko consciousness is seeking to change Earth systems, including the atmosphere, to suit them, not humans. The gathering bombardment of 5G alone from ground and space is dramatically changing The Field with which the five senses interact. There is so much more to come if we sit on our hands and hope it will all go away. It is not meant to go away. It is meant to get ever more extreme and we need to face that while we still can – just.

Carbon dioxide is the gas of life. Without that human is over. Kaput, gone, history. No natural world, no human. The Cult has created a cock and bull story about carbon dioxide and climate change to justify its reduction to the point where Gates and the ignoramus Biden 'climate chief' John Kerry want to suck it out of the atmosphere. Kerry wants to do this because his master Gates does. Wetikos have made the gas of life a demon with the usual support from the Wokers of Extinction Rebellion and similar organisations and the bewildered puppet-child that is Greta Thunberg who was put on the world stage by Klaus Schwab and the World Economic Forum. The name Extinction Rebellion is both ironic and as always Wetiko inversion. The gas that we need to survive must be reduced to save us from extinction. The most basic need of human is oxygen and we now have billions walking around in face nappies depriving body and brain of this essential requirement of human existence. More than that 5G at 60 gigahertz interacts with the oxygen molecule to reduce the amount of oxygen the body can absorb into the bloodstream. The obvious knock-on consequences of that for respiratory and cognitive problems and life itself need no further explanation. Psychopaths like Musk are assembling a global system of satellites to deluge the human atmosphere with this insanity. The man should be in jail. Here we have two most basic of human needs, oxygen and carbon dioxide, being dismantled.

Two others, water and food, are getting similar treatment with the United Nations Agendas 21 and 2030 – the Great Reset – planning to

centrally control all water and food supplies. People will not even own rain water that falls on their land. Food is affected at the most basic level by reducing carbon dioxide. We have genetic modification or GMO infiltrating the food chain on a mass scale, pesticides and herbicides polluting the air and destroying the soil. Freshwater fish that provide livelihoods for 60 million people and feed hundreds of millions worldwide are being 'pushed to the brink' according the conservationists while climate change is the only focus. Now we have Gates and Schwab wanting to dispense with current food sources all together and replace them with a synthetic version which the Wetiko Cult would control in terms of production and who eats and who doesn't. We have been on the Totalitarian Tiptoe to this for more than 60 years as food has become ever more processed and full of chemical shite to the point today when it's not natural food at all. As Dr Tom Cowan says: 'If it has a label don't eat it.' Bill Gates is now the biggest owner of farmland in the United States and he does nothing without an ulterior motive involving the Cult. Klaus Schwab wrote: 'To feed the world in the next 50 years we will need to produce as much food as was produced in the last 10,000 years ... food security will only be achieved, however, if regulations on genetically modified foods are adapted to reflect the reality that gene editing offers a precise, efficient and safe method of improving crops.' Liar. People and the world are being targeted with aluminium through vaccines, chemtrails, food, drink cans, and endless other sources when aluminium has been linked to many health issues including dementia which is increasing year after year. Insects, bees and wildlife essential to the food chain are being deleted by pesticides, herbicides and radiation which 5G is dramatically increasing with 6G and 7G to come. The pollinating bee population is being devastated while wildlife including birds, dolphins and whales are having their natural radar blocked by the effects of ever-increasing radiation. In the summer windscreens used to be splattered with insects so numerous were they. It doesn't happen now. Where have they gone?

## **Synthetic everything**

The Cult is introducing genetically-modified versions of trees, plants and insects including a Gates-funded project to unleash hundreds of millions of genetically-modified, lab-altered and patented male mosquitoes to mate with wild mosquitoes and induce genetic flaws that cause them to die out. Clinically-insane Gates-funded Japanese researchers have developed mosquitos that spread vaccine and are dubbed 'flying vaccinators'. Gates is funding the modification of weather patterns in part to sell the myth that this is caused by carbon dioxide and he's funding geoengineering of the skies to change the atmosphere. Some of this came to light with the Gates-backed plan to release tonnes of chalk into the atmosphere to 'deflect the Sun and cool the planet'. Funny how they do this while the heating effect of the Sun is not factored into climate projections focussed on carbon dioxide. The reason is that they want to reduce carbon dioxide (so don't mention the Sun), but at the same time they do want to reduce the impact of the Sun which is so essential to human life and health. I have mentioned the sun-cholesterol-vitamin D connection as they demonise the Sun with warnings about skin cancer (caused by the chemicals in sun cream they tell you to splash on). They come from the other end of the process with statin drugs to reduce cholesterol that turns sunlight into vitamin D. A lack of vitamin D leads to a long list of health effects and how vitamin D levels must have fallen with people confined to their homes over 'Covid'. Gates is funding other forms of geoengineering and most importantly chemtrails which are dropping heavy metals, aluminium and self-replicating nanotechnology onto the Earth which is killing the natural world. See *Everything You Need To Know, But Have Never Been Told* for the detailed background to this.

Every human system is being targeted for deletion by a force that's not human. The Wetiko Cult has embarked on the process of transforming the human body from biological to synthetic biological as I have explained. Biological is being replaced by the artificial and synthetic – Archontic 'countermimicry' – right across human society. The plan eventually is to dispense with the human body altogether

and absorb human consciousness – which it wouldn't really be by then – into cyberspace (the simulation which is Wetiko/Yaldabaoth). Preparations for that are already happening if people would care to look. The alternative media rightly warns about globalism and 'the globalists', but this is far bigger than that and represents the end of the human race as we know it. The 'bad copy' of prime reality that Gnostics describe was a bad copy of harmony, wonder and beauty to start with before Wetiko/Yaldabaoth set out to change the simulated 'copy' into something very different. The process was slow to start with. Entrapped humans in the simulation timeline were not technologically aware and they had to be brought up to intellectual speed while being suppressed spiritually to the point where they could build their own prison while having no idea they were doing so. We have now reached that stage where technological intellect has the potential to destroy us and that's why events are moving so fast. Central American shaman Don Juan Matus said:

Think for a moment, and tell me how you would explain the contradictions between the intelligence of man the engineer and the stupidity of his systems of belief, or the stupidity of his contradictory behaviour. Sorcerers believe that the predators have given us our systems of beliefs, our ideas of good and evil; our social mores. They are the ones who set up our dreams of success or failure. They have given us covetousness, greed, and cowardice. It is the predator who makes us complacent, routinary, and egomaniacal.

In order to keep us obedient and meek and weak, the predators engaged themselves in a stupendous manoeuvre – stupendous, of course, from the point of view of a fighting strategist; a horrendous manoeuvre from the point of those who suffer it. They gave us their mind. The predators' mind is baroque, contradictory, morose, filled with the fear of being discovered any minute now.

For 'predators' see Wetiko, Archons, Yaldabaoth, Jinn, and all the other versions of the same phenomenon in cultures and religions all over the world. The theme is always the same because it's true and it's real. We have reached the point where we have to deal with it. The question is – how?

**Don't fight – walk away**

I thought I'd use a controversial subheading to get things moving in terms of our response to global fascism. What do you mean 'don't fight'? What do you mean 'walk away'? We've got to fight. We can't walk away. Well, it depends what we mean by fight and walk away. If fighting means physical combat we are playing Wetiko's game and falling for its trap. It wants us to get angry, aggressive, and direct hate and hostility at the enemy we think we must fight. Every war, every battle, every conflict, has been fought with Wetiko leading both sides. It's what it does. Wetiko wants a fight, anywhere, any place. Just hit me, son, so I can hit you back. Wetiko hits Wetiko and Wetiko hits Wetiko in return. I am very forthright as you can see in exposing Wetikos of the Cult, but I don't hate them. I refuse to hate them. It's what they want. What you hate you become. What you *fight* you become. Wokers, 'anti-haters' and 'anti-fascists' prove this every time they reach for their keyboards or don their balaclavas. By walk away I mean to disengage from Wetiko which includes ceasing to cooperate with its tyranny. Paul Levy says of Wetiko:

The way to 'defeat' evil is not to try to destroy it (for then, in playing evil's game, we have already lost), but rather, to find the invulnerable place within ourselves where evil is unable to vanquish us – this is to truly 'win' our battle with evil.

Wetiko is everywhere in human society and it's been on steroids since the 'Covid' hoax. Every shouting match over wearing masks has Wetiko wearing a mask and Wetiko not wearing one. It's an electrical circuit of push and resist, push and resist, with Wetiko pushing *and* resisting. Each polarity is Wetiko empowering itself. Dictionary definitions of 'resist' include 'opposing, refusing to accept or comply with' and the word to focus on is 'opposing'. What form does this take – setting police cars alight or 'refusing to accept or comply with'? The former is Wetiko opposing Wetiko while the other points the way forward. This is the difference between those aggressively demanding that government fascism must be obeyed who stand in stark contrast to the great majority of Pushbackers. We saw this clearly with a march by thousands of Pushbackers against lockdown in London followed days later by a Woker-hijacked

protest in Bristol in which police cars were set on fire. Masks were virtually absent in London and widespread in Bristol. Wetiko wants lockdown on every level of society and infuses its aggression to police it through its unknowing stooges. Lockdown protesters are the ones with the smiling faces and the hugs, The two blatantly obvious states of being – getting more obvious by the day – are the result of Wokers and their like becoming ever more influenced by the simulation Field of Wetiko and Pushbackers ever more influenced by The Field of a far higher vibration beyond the simulation. Wetiko can't invade the heart which is where most lockdown opponents are coming from. It's the heart that allows them to see through the lies to the truth in ways I will be highlighting.

Renegade Minds know that calmness is the place from which wisdom comes. You won't find wisdom in a hissing fit and wisdom is what we need in abundance right now. Calmness is not weakness – you don't have to scream at the top of your voice to be strong. Calmness is indeed a sign of strength. 'No' means I'm not doing it. NOOOO!!! doesn't mean you're not doing it even more. Volume does not advance 'No – I'm not doing it'. You are just not doing it. Wetiko possessed and influenced don't know how to deal with that. Wetiko wants a fight and we should not give it one. What it needs more than anything is our *cooperation* and we should not give that either. Mass rallies and marches are great in that they are a visual representation of feeling, but if it ends there they are irrelevant. You demand that Wetikos act differently? Well, they're not going to are they? They are Wetikos. We don't need to waste our time demanding that something doesn't happen when that will make no difference. We need to delete the means that *allows* it to happen. This, invariably, is our cooperation. You can demand a child stop firing a peashooter at the dog or you can refuse to buy the peashooter. If you provide the means you are cooperating with the dog being smacked on the nose with a pea. How can the authorities enforce mask-wearing if millions in a country refuse? What if the 74 million Pushbackers that voted for Trump in 2020 refused to wear masks, close their businesses or stay in their homes. It would be unenforceable. The



few control the many through the compliance of the many and that's always been the dynamic be it 'Covid' regulations or the Roman Empire. I know people can find it intimidating to say no to authority or stand out in a crowd for being the only one with a face on display; but it has to be done or it's over. I hope I've made clear in this book that where this is going will be far more intimidating than standing up now and saying 'No' – I will not cooperate with my own enslavement and that of my children. There might be consequences for some initially, although not so if enough do the same. The question that must be addressed is what is going to happen if we don't? It is time to be strong and unyieldingly so. No means no. Not here and there, but *everywhere* and *always*. I have refused to wear a mask and obey all the other nonsense. I will not comply with tyranny. I repeat: Fascism is not imposed by fascists – there are never enough of them. Fascism is imposed by the population acquiescing to fascism. *I will not do it*. I will die first, or my body will. Living meekly under fascism is a form of death anyway, the death of the spirit that Martin Luther King described.

## **Making things happen**

We must not despair. This is not over till it's over and it's far from that. The 'fat lady' must refuse to sing. The longer the 'Covid' hoax has dragged on and impacted on more lives we have seen an awakening of phenomenal numbers of people worldwide to the realisation that what they have believed all their lives is not how the world really is. Research published by the system-serving University of Bristol and King's College London in February, 2021, concluded: 'One in every 11 people in Britain say they trust David Icke's take on the coronavirus pandemic.' It will be more by now and we have gathering numbers to build on. We must urgently progress from seeing the scam to ceasing to cooperate with it. Prominent German lawyer Reiner Fuellmich, also licenced to practice law in America, is doing a magnificent job taking the legal route to bring the psychopaths to justice through a second Nuremberg tribunal for crimes against humanity. Fuellmich has an impressive record of

beating the elite in court and he formed the German Corona Investigative Committee to pursue civil charges against the main perpetrators with a view to triggering criminal charges. Most importantly he has grasped the foundation of the hoax – the PCR test not testing for the ‘virus’ – and Christian Drosten is therefore on his charge sheet along with Gates frontman Tedros at the World Health Organization. Major players must not be allowed to inflict their horrors on the human race without being brought to book. A life sentence must follow for Bill Gates and the rest of them. A group of researchers has also indicted the government of Norway for crimes against humanity with copies sent to the police and the International Criminal Court. The lawsuit cites participation in an internationally-planned false pandemic and violation of international law and human rights, the European Commission’s definition of human rights by coercive rules, Nuremberg and Hague rules on fundamental human rights, and the Norwegian constitution. We must take the initiative from hereon and not just complain, protest and react.

There are practical ways to support vital mass non-cooperation. Organising in numbers is one. Lockdown marches in London in the spring in 2021 were mass non-cooperation that the authorities could not stop. There were too many people. Hundreds of thousands walked the London streets in the centre of the road for mile after mile while the Face-Nappies could only look on. They were determined, but calm, and just *did it* with no histrionics and lots of smiles. The police were impotent. Others are organising group shopping without masks for mutual support and imagine if that was happening all over. Policing it would be impossible. If the store refuses to serve people in these circumstances they would be faced with a long line of trolleys full of goods standing on their own and everything would have to be returned to the shelves. How would they cope with that if it kept happening? I am talking here about moving on from complaining to being pro-active; from watching things happen to making things happen. I include in this our relationship with the police. The behaviour of many Face-Nappies

has been disgraceful and anyone who thinks they would never find concentration camp guards in the 'enlightened' modern era have had that myth busted big-time. The period and setting may change – Wetikos never do. I watched film footage from a London march in which a police thug viciously kicked a protestor on the floor who had done nothing. His fellow Face-Nappies stood in a ring protecting him. What he did was a criminal assault and with a crowd far outnumbering the police this can no longer be allowed to happen unchallenged. I get it when people chant 'shame on you' in these circumstances, but that is no longer enough. They *have* no shame those who do this. Crowds needs to start making a citizen's arrest of the police who commit criminal offences and brutally attack innocent people and defenceless women. A citizen's arrest can be made under section 24A of the UK Police and Criminal Evidence (PACE) Act of 1984 and you will find something similar in other countries. I prefer to call it a Common Law arrest rather than citizen's for reasons I will come to shortly. Anyone can arrest a person committing an indictable offence or if they have reasonable grounds to suspect they are committing an indictable offence. On both counts the attack by the police thug would have fallen into this category. A citizen's arrest can be made to stop someone:

- Causing physical injury to himself or any other person
- Suffering physical injury
- Causing loss of or damage to property
- Making off before a constable can assume responsibility for him

A citizen's arrest may also be made to prevent a breach of the peace under Common Law and if they believe a breach of the peace will happen or anything related to harm likely to be done or already done in their presence. This is the way to go I think – the Common Law version. If police know that the crowd and members of the public will no longer be standing and watching while they commit

their thuggery and crimes they will think twice about acting like Brownshirts and Blackshirts.

## **Common Law – common sense**

Mention of Common Law is very important. Most people think the law is the law as in one law. This is not the case. There are two bodies of law, Common Law and Statute Law, and they are not the same. Common Law is founded on the simple premise of do no harm. It does not recognise victimless crimes in which no harm is done while Statute Law does. There is a Statute Law against almost everything. So what is Statute Law? Amazingly it's the law of the *sea* that was brought ashore by the Cult to override the law of the land which is Common Law. They had no right to do this and as always they did it anyway. They had to. They could not impose their will on the people through Common Law which only applies to do no harm. How could you stitch up the fine detail of people's lives with that? Instead they took the law of the sea, or Admiralty Law, and applied it to the population. Statute Law refers to all the laws spewing out of governments and their agencies including all the fascist laws and regulations relating to 'Covid'. The key point to make is that Statute Law is *contract law*. It only applies between *contracting* corporations. Most police officers don't even know this. They have to be kept in the dark, too. Long ago when merchants and their sailing ships began to trade with different countries a contractual law was developed called Admiralty Law and other names. Again it only applied to *contracts* agreed between *corporate* entities. If there is no agreed contract the law of the sea had no jurisdiction *and that still applies to its new alias of Statute Law*. The problem for the Cult when the law of the sea was brought ashore was an obvious one. People were not corporations and neither were government entities. To overcome the latter they made governments and all associated organisations corporations. All the institutions are *private corporations* and I mean governments and their agencies, local councils, police, courts, military, US states, the whole lot. Go to the

Dun and Bradstreet corporate listings website for confirmation that they are all corporations. You are arrested by a private corporation called the police by someone who is really a private security guard and they take you to court which is another private corporation. Neither have jurisdiction over you unless you consent and *contract* with them. This is why you hear the mantra about law enforcement policing by *consent* of the people. In truth the people 'consent' only in theory through monumental trickery.

Okay, the Cult overcame the corporate law problem by making governments and institutions corporate entities; but what about people? They are not corporations are they? Ah ... well in a sense, and *only* a sense, they are. Not people exactly – the illusion of people. The Cult creates a corporation in the name of everyone at the time that their birth certificate is issued. Note birth/ *berth* certificate and when you go to court under the law of the sea on land you stand in a *dock*. These are throwbacks to the origin. My Common Law name is David Vaughan Icke. The name of the corporation created by the government when I was born is called Mr David Vaughan Icke usually written in capitals as MR DAVID VAUGHAN ICKE. That is not me, the living, breathing man. It is a fictitious corporate entity. The trick is to make you think that David Vaughan Icke and MR DAVID VAUGHAN ICKE are the same thing. *They are not*. When police charge you and take you to court they are prosecuting the corporate entity and not the living, breathing, man or woman. They have to trick you into identifying as the corporate entity and contracting with them. Otherwise they have no jurisdiction. They do this through a language known as legalese. Lawful and legal are not the same either. Lawful relates to Common Law and legal relates to Statute Law. Legalese is the language of Statue Law which uses terms that mean one thing to the public and another in legalese. Notice that when a police officer tells someone why they are being charged he or she will say at the end: 'Do you understand?' To the public that means 'Do you comprehend?' In legalese it means 'Do you stand under me?' Do you stand under my authority? If you say

yes to the question you are unknowingly agreeing to give them jurisdiction over you in a contract between two corporate entities.

This is a confidence trick in every way. Contracts have to be agreed between informed parties and if you don't know that David Vaughan Icke is agreeing to be the corporation MR DAVID VAUGHAN ICKE you cannot knowingly agree to contract. They are deceiving you and another way they do this is to ask for proof of identity. You usually show them a driving licence or other document on which your corporate name is written. In doing so you are accepting that you are that corporate entity when you are not. Referring to yourself as a 'person' or 'citizen' is also identifying with your corporate fiction which is why I made the Common Law point about the citizen's arrest. If you are approached by a police officer you identify yourself immediately as a living, breathing, man or woman and say 'I do not consent, I do not contract with you and I do not understand' or stand under their authority. I have a Common Law birth certificate as a living man and these are available at no charge from [commonlawcourt.com](http://commonlawcourt.com). Businesses registered under the Statute Law system means that its laws apply. There are, however, ways to run a business under Common Law. Remember all 'Covid' laws and regulations are Statute Law – the law of *contracts* and you do not have to contract. This doesn't mean that you can kill someone and get away with it. Common Law says do no harm and that applies to physical harm, financial harm etc. Police are employees of private corporations and there needs to be a new system of non-corporate Common Law constables operating outside the Statute Law system. If you go to [davidicke.com](http://davidicke.com) and put Common Law into the search engine you will find videos that explain Common Law in much greater detail. It is definitely a road we should walk.

## **With all my heart**

I have heard people say that we are in a spiritual war. I don't like the term 'war' with its Wetiko dynamic, but I know what they mean. Sweep aside all the bodily forms and we are in a situation in which two states of consciousness are seeking very different realities.

Wetiko wants upheaval, chaos, fear, suffering, conflict and control. The other wants love, peace, harmony, fairness and freedom. That's where we are. We should not fall for the idea that Wetiko is all-powerful and there's nothing we can do. Wetiko is not all-powerful. It's a joke, pathetic. It doesn't have to be, but it has made that choice for now. A handful of times over the years when I have felt the presence of its frequency I have allowed it to attach briefly so I could consciously observe its nature. The experience is not pleasant, the energy is heavy and dark, but the ease with which you can kick it back out the door shows that its real power is in persuading us that it has power. It's all a con. Wetiko is a con. It's a trickster and not a power that can control us if we unleash our own. The con is founded on manipulating humanity to give its power to Wetiko which recycles it back to present the illusion that it has power when its power is *ours* that we gave away. This happens on an energetic level and plays out in the world of the seen as humanity giving its power to Wetiko authority which uses that power to control the population when the power is only the power the population has handed over. How could it be any other way for billions to be controlled by a relative few? I have had experiences with people possessed by Wetiko and again you can kick its arse if you do it with an open heart. Oh yes – the *heart* which can transform the world of perceived 'matter'.

We are receiver-transmitters and processors of information, but what information and where from? Information is processed into perception in three main areas – the brain, the heart and the belly. These relate to thinking, knowing, and emotion. Wetiko wants us to be head and belly people which means we think within the confines of the Matrix simulation and low-vibrational emotional reaction scrambles balance and perception. A few minutes on social media and you see how emotion is the dominant force. Woke is all emotion and is therefore thought-free and fact-free. Our heart is something different. It *knows* while the head *thinks* and has to try to work it out because it doesn't know. The human energy field has seven prime vortexes which connect us with wider reality ([Fig 23](#)). Chakra means

‘wheels of light’ in the Sanskrit language of ancient India. The main ones are: The crown chakra on top of the head; brow (or ‘third eye’) chakra in the centre of the forehead; throat chakra; heart chakra in the centre of the chest; solar plexus chakra below the sternum; sacral chakra beneath the navel; and base chakra at the bottom of the spine. Each one has a particular function or functions. We feel anxiety and nervousness in the belly where the sacral chakra is located and this processes emotion that can affect the colon to give people ‘the shits’ or make them ‘shit scared’ when they are nervous. Chakras all play an important role, but the Mr and Mrs Big is the heart chakra which sits at the centre of the seven, above the chakras that connect us to the ‘physical’ and below those that connect with higher realms (or at least should). Here in the heart chakra we feel love, empathy and compassion – ‘My heart goes out to you’. Those with closed hearts become literally ‘heart-less’ in their attitudes and behaviour (see Bill Gates). Native Americans portrayed Wetiko with what Paul Levy calls a ‘frigid, icy heart, devoid of mercy’ (see Bill Gates).



**Figure 23:** The chakra system which interpenetrates the human energy field. The heart chakra is the governor – or should be.

Wetiko trembles at the thought of heart energy which it cannot infiltrate. The frequency is too high. What it seeks to do instead is close the heart chakra vortex to block its perceptual and energetic influence. Psychopaths have ‘hearts of stone’ and emotionally-damaged people have ‘heartache’ and ‘broken hearts’. The astonishing amount of heart disease is related to heart chakra



disruption with its fundamental connection to the 'physical' heart. Dr Tom Cowan has written an outstanding book challenging the belief that the heart is a pump and making the connection between the 'physical' and spiritual heart. Rudolph Steiner who was way ahead of his time said the same about the fallacy that the heart is a pump. *What?* The heart is not a pump? That's crazy, right? Everybody knows that. Read Cowan's *Human Heart, Cosmic Heart* and you will realise that the very idea of the heart as a pump is ridiculous when you see the evidence. How does blood in the feet so far from the heart get pumped horizontally up the body by the heart?? Cowan explains in the book the real reason why blood moves as it does. Our 'physical' heart is used to symbolise love when the source is really the heart vortex or spiritual heart which is our most powerful energetic connection to 'out there' expanded consciousness. That's why we feel *knowing* – intuitive knowing – in the centre of the chest. Knowing doesn't come from a process of thoughts leading to a conclusion. It is there in an instant all in one go. Our heart knows because of its connection to levels of awareness that *do* know. This is the meaning and source of intuition – intuitive *knowing*.

For the last more than 30 years of uncovering the global game and the nature of reality my heart has been my constant antenna for truth and accuracy. An American intelligence insider once said that I had quoted a disinformant in one of my books and yet I had only quoted the part that was true. He asked: 'How do you do that?' By using my heart antenna was the answer and anyone can do it. Heart-centred is how we are meant to be. With a closed heart chakra we withdraw into a closed mind and the bubble of five-sense reality. If you take a moment to focus your attention on the centre of your chest, picture a spinning wheel of light and see it opening and expanding. You will feel it happening, too, and perceptions of the heart like joy and love as the heart impacts on the mind as they interact. The more the chakra opens the more you will feel expressions of heart consciousness and as the process continues, and becomes part of you, insights and knowings will follow. An open

heart is connected to that level of awareness that knows all is *One*. You will see from its perspective that the fault-lines that divide us are only illusions to control us. An open heart does not process the illusions of race, creed and sexuality except as brief experiences for a consciousness that is all. Our heart does not see division, only unity (Figs 24 and 25). There's something else, too. Our hearts love to laugh. Mark Twain's quote that says 'The human race has one really effective weapon, and that is laughter' is really a reference to the heart which loves to laugh with the joy of knowing the true nature of infinite reality and that all the madness of human society is an illusion of the mind. Twain also said: 'Against the assault of laughter nothing can stand.' This is so true of Wetiko and the Cult. Their insecurity demands that they be taken seriously and their power and authority acknowledged and feared. We should do nothing of the sort. We should not get aggressive or fearful which their insecurity so desires. We should laugh in their face. Even in their no-face as police come over in their face-nappies and expect to be taken seriously. They don't take themselves seriously looking like that so why should we? Laugh in the face of intimidation. Laugh in the face of tyranny. You will see by its reaction that you have pressed all of its buttons. Wetiko does not know what to do in the face of laughter or when its targets refuse to concede their joy to fear. We have seen many examples during the 'Covid' hoax when people have expressed their energetic power and the string puppets of Wetiko retreat with their tail limp between their knees. Laugh – the world is bloody mad after all and if it's a choice between laughter and tears I know which way I'm going.



**Figure 24:** Head consciousness without the heart sees division and everything apart from everything else.



**Figure 25:** Heart consciousness sees everything as One.

## **'Vaccines' and the soul**

The foundation of Wetiko/Archon control of humans is the separation of incarnate five-sense mind from the infinite 'I' and closing the heart chakra where the True 'I' lives during a human life. The goal has been to achieve complete separation in both cases. I was interested therefore to read an account by a French energetic healer of what she said she experienced with a patient who had been given the 'Covid' vaccine. Genuine energy healers can sense information and consciousness fields at different levels of being which are referred to as 'subtle bodies'. She described treating the patient who later returned after having, without the healer's knowledge, two doses of the 'Covid vaccine'. The healer said:

I noticed immediately the change, very heavy energy emanating from [the] subtle bodies. The scariest thing was when I was working on the heart chakra, I connected with her soul: it was detached from the physical body, it had no contact and it was, as if it was floating in a state of total confusion: a damage to the consciousness that loses contact with the physical body, i.e. with our biological machine, there is no longer any communication between them.

I continued the treatment by sending light to the heart chakra, the soul of the person, but it seemed that the soul could no longer receive any light, frequency or energy. It was a very powerful experience for me. Then I understood that this substance is indeed used to detach consciousness so that this consciousness can no longer interact through this body that it possesses in life, where there is no longer any contact, no frequency, no light, no more energetic balance or mind.

This would create a human that is rudderless and at the extreme almost zombie-like operating with a fractional state of consciousness at the mercy of Wetiko. I was especially intrigued by what the healer said in the light of the prediction by the highly-informed Rudolf Steiner more than a hundred years ago. He said:

In the future, we will eliminate the soul with medicine. Under the pretext of a 'healthy point of view', there will be a vaccine by which the human body will be treated as soon as possible directly at birth, so that the human being cannot develop the thought of the existence of soul and Spirit. To materialistic doctors will be entrusted the task of removing the soul of humanity.

As today, people are vaccinated against this disease or that disease, so in the future, children will be vaccinated with a substance that can be produced precisely in such a way that people, thanks to this vaccination, will be immune to being subjected to the 'madness' of spiritual life. He would be extremely smart, but he would not develop a conscience, and that is the true goal of some materialistic circles.

Steiner said the vaccine would detach the physical body from the etheric body (subtle bodies) and 'once the etheric body is detached the relationship between the universe and the etheric body would become extremely unstable, and man would become an automaton'. He said 'the physical body of man must be polished on this Earth by spiritual will – so the vaccine becomes a kind of arymanique (Wetiko) force' and 'man can no longer get rid of a given materialistic feeling'. Humans would then, he said, become 'materialistic of constitution and can no longer rise to the spiritual'. I have been writing for years about DNA being a receiver-transmitter of information that connects us to other levels of reality and these 'vaccines' changing DNA can be likened to changing an antenna and what it can transmit and receive. Such a disconnection would clearly lead to changes in personality and perception. Steiner further predicted the arrival of AI. Big Pharma 'Covid vaccine' makers, expressions of Wetiko, are testing their DNA-manipulating evil on children as I write with a view to giving the 'vaccine' to babies. If it's a soul-body disconnecter – and I say that it is or can be – every child would be disconnected from 'soul' at birth and the 'vaccine' would create a closed system in which spiritual guidance from the greater self would play no part. This has been the ambition of Wetiko all

along. A Pentagon video from 2005 was leaked of a presentation explaining the development of vaccines to change behaviour by their effect on the brain. Those that believe this is not happening with the 'Covid' genetically-modifying procedure masquerading as a 'vaccine' should make an urgent appointment with Naivety Anonymous. Klaus Schwab wrote in 2018:

Neurotechnologies enable us to better influence consciousness and thought and to understand many activities of the brain. They include decoding what we are thinking in fine levels of detail through new chemicals and interventions that can influence our brains to correct for errors or enhance functionality.

The plan is clear and only the heart can stop it. With every heart that opens, every mind that awakens, Wetiko is weakened. Heart and love are far more powerful than head and hate and so nothing like a majority is needed to turn this around.

## **Beyond the Phantom**

Our heart is the prime target of Wetiko and so it must be the answer to Wetiko. We *are* our heart which is part of one heart, the infinite heart. Our heart is where the true self lives in a human life behind firewalls of five-sense illusion when an imposter takes its place – *Phantom Self*; but our heart waits patiently to be set free any time we choose to see beyond the Phantom, beyond Wetiko. A Wetikoed Phantom Self can wreak mass death and destruction while the love of forever is locked away in its heart. The time is here to unleash its power and let it sweep away the fear and despair that is Wetiko. Heart consciousness does not seek manipulated, censored, advantage for its belief or religion, its activism and desires. As an expression of the One it treats all as One with the same rights to freedom and opinion. Our heart demands fairness for itself no more than for others. From this unity of heart we can come together in mutual support and transform this Wetikoed world into what reality is meant to be – a place of love, joy, happiness, fairness, justice and freedom. Wetiko has another agenda and that's why the world is as

it is, but enough of this nonsense. Wetiko can't stay where hearts are open and it works so hard to keep them closed. Fear is its currency and its food source and love in its true sense has no fear. Why would love have fear when it knows it is *All That Is, Has Been, And Ever Can Be* on an eternal exploration of all possibility? Love in this true sense is not the physical attraction that passes for love. This can be an expression of it, yes, but Infinite Love, a love without condition, goes far deeper to the core of all being. It is the core of all being. Infinite reality was born from love beyond the illusions of the simulation. Love infinitely expressed is the knowing that all is One and the swiftly-passing experience of separation is a temporary hallucination. You cannot disconnect from Oneness; you can only *perceive* that you have and withdraw from its influence. This is the most important of all perception trickery by the mind parasite that is Wetiko and the foundation of all its potential for manipulation.

If we open our hearts, open the sluice gates of the mind, and redefine self-identity amazing things start to happen. Consciousness expands or contracts in accordance with self-identity. When true self is recognised as infinite awareness and label self – Phantom Self – is seen as only a series of brief experiences life is transformed. Consciousness expands to the extent that self-identity expands and everything changes. You see unity, not division, the picture, not the pixels. From this we can play the long game. No more is an experience something in and of itself, but a fleeting moment in the eternity of forever. Suddenly people in uniform and dark suits are no longer intimidating. Doing what your heart knows to be right is no longer intimidating and consequences for those actions take on the same nature of a brief experience that passes in the blink of an infinite eye. Intimidation is all in the mind. Beyond the mind there is no intimidation.

An open heart does not consider consequences for what it knows to be right. To do so would be to consider not doing what it knows to be right and for a heart in its power that is never an option. The Renegade Mind is really the Renegade Heart. Consideration of consequences will always provide a getaway car for the mind and

the heart doesn't want one. What is right in the light of what we face today is to stop cooperating with Wetiko in all its forms and to do it without fear or compromise. You cannot compromise with tyranny when tyranny always demands more until it has everything. Life is your perception and you are your destiny. Change your perception and you change your life. Change collective perception and we change the world.

*Come on people ... One human family, One heart, One goal ...*  
*FREEEEEEEDOM!*

We must settle for nothing less.

## Postscript

The big scare story as the book goes to press is the 'Indian' variant and the world is being deluged with propaganda about the 'Covid catastrophe' in India which mirrors in its lies and misrepresentations what happened in Italy before the first lockdown in 2020.

The *New York Post* published a picture of someone who had 'collapsed in the street from Covid' in India in April, 2021, which was actually taken during a gas leak in May, 2020. Same old, same old. Media articles in mid-February were asking why India had been so untouched by 'Covid' and then as their vaccine rollout gathered pace the alleged 'cases' began to rapidly increase. Indian 'Covid vaccine' maker Bharat Biotech was funded into existence by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation (the pair announced their divorce in May, 2021, which is a pity because they so deserve each other). The Indian 'Covid crisis' was ramped up by the media to terrify the world and prepare people for submission to still more restrictions. The scam that worked the first time was being repeated only with far more people seeing through the deceit. [Davidicke.com](http://Davidicke.com) and [Ickonic.com](http://Ickonic.com) have sought to tell the true story of what is happening by talking to people living through the Indian nightmare which has nothing to do with 'Covid'. We posted a letter from 'Alisha' in Pune who told a very different story to government and media mendacity. She said scenes of dying people and overwhelmed hospitals were designed to hide what was really happening – genocide and starvation. Alisha said that millions had already died of starvation during the ongoing lockdowns while government and media were lying and making it look like the 'virus':



Restaurants, shops, gyms, theatres, basically everything is shut. The cities are ghost towns. Even so-called 'essential' businesses are only open till 11am in the morning. You basically have just an hour to buy food and then your time is up.

Inter-state travel and even inter-district travel is banned. The cops wait at all major crossroads to question why you are traveling outdoors or to fine you if you are not wearing a mask.

The medical community here is also complicit in genocide, lying about hospitals being full and turning away people with genuine illnesses, who need immediate care. They have even created a shortage of oxygen cylinders.

This is the classic Cult modus operandi played out in every country. Alisha said that people who would not have a PCR test not testing for the 'virus' were being denied hospital treatment. She said the people hit hardest were migrant workers and those in rural areas. Most businesses employed migrant workers and with everything closed there were no jobs, no income and no food. As a result millions were dying of starvation or malnutrition. All this was happening under Prime Minister Narendra Modi, a 100-percent asset of the Cult, and it emphasises yet again the scale of pure anti-human evil we are dealing with. Australia banned its people from returning home from India with penalties for trying to do so of up to five years in jail and a fine of £37,000. The manufactured 'Covid' crisis in India was being prepared to justify further fascism in the West. Obvious connections could be seen between the Indian 'vaccine' programme and increased 'cases' and this became a common theme. The Seychelles, the most per capita 'Covid vaccinated' population in the world, went back into lockdown after a 'surge of cases'.

Long ago the truly evil Monsanto agricultural biotechnology corporation with its big connections to Bill Gates devastated Indian farming with genetically-modified crops. Human rights activist Gurcharan Singh highlighted the efforts by the Indian government to complete the job by destroying the food supply to hundreds of millions with 'Covid' lockdowns. He said that 415 million people at the bottom of the disgusting caste system (still going whatever they say) were below the poverty line and struggled to feed themselves every year. Now the government was imposing lockdown at just the

time to destroy the harvest. This deliberate policy was leading to mass starvation. People may reel back at the suggestion that a government would do that, but Wetiko-controlled 'leaders' are capable of any level of evil. In fact what is described in India is in the process of being instigated worldwide. The food chain and food supply are being targeted at every level to cause world hunger and thus control. Bill Gates is not the biggest owner of farmland in America for no reason and destroying access to food aids both the depopulation agenda and the plan for synthetic 'food' already being funded into existence by Gates. Add to this the coming hyper-inflation from the suicidal creation of fake 'money' in response to 'Covid' and the breakdown of container shipping systems and you have a cocktail that can only lead one way and is meant to. The Cult plan is to crash the entire system to 'build back better' with the Great Reset.

### **'Vaccine' transmission**

Reports from all over the world continue to emerge of women suffering menstrual and fertility problems after having the fake 'vaccine' and of the non-'vaccinated' having similar problems when interacting with the 'vaccinated'. There are far too many for 'coincidence' to be credible. We've had menopausal women getting periods, others having periods stop or not stopping for weeks, passing clots, sometimes the lining of the uterus, breast irregularities, and miscarriages (which increased by 400 percent in parts of the United States). Non-'vaccinated' men and children have suffered blood clots and nose bleeding after interaction with the 'vaccinated'. Babies have died from the effects of breast milk from a 'vaccinated' mother. Awake doctors – the small minority – speculated on the cause of non-'vaccinated' suffering the same effects as the 'vaccinated'. Was it nanotechnology in the synthetic substance transmitting frequencies or was it a straight chemical bioweapon that was being transmitted between people? I am not saying that some kind of chemical transmission is not one possible answer, but the foundation of all that the Cult does is frequency and

this is fertile ground for understanding how transmission can happen. American doctor Carrie Madej, an internal medicine physician and osteopath, has been practicing for the last 20 years, teaching medical students, and she says attending different meetings where the agenda for humanity was discussed. Madej, who operates out of Georgia, did not dismiss other possible forms of transmission, but she focused on frequency in search of an explanation for transmission. She said the Moderna and Pfizer 'vaccines' contained nano-lipid particles as a key component. This was a brand new technology never before used on humanity. 'They're using a nanotechnology which is pretty much little tiny computer bits ... nanobots or hydrogel.' Inside the 'vaccines' was 'this sci-fi kind of substance' which suppressed immune checkpoints to get into the cell. I referred to this earlier as the 'Trojan horse' technique that tricks the cell into opening a gateway for the self-replicating synthetic material and while the immune system is artificially suppressed the body has no defences. Madej said the substance served many purposes including an on-demand ability to 'deliver the payload' and using the nano 'computer bits' as biosensors in the body. 'It actually has the ability to accumulate data from your body, like your breathing, your respiration, thoughts, emotions, all kinds of things.'

She said the technology obviously has the ability to operate through Wi-Fi and transmit and receive energy, messages, frequencies or impulses. 'Just imagine you're getting this new substance in you and it can react to things all around you, the 5G, your smart device, your phones.' We had something completely foreign in the human body that had never been launched large scale at a time when we were seeing 5G going into schools and hospitals (plus the Musk satellites) and she believed the 'vaccine' transmission had something to do with this: '... if these people have this inside of them ... it can act like an antenna and actually transmit it outwardly as well.' The synthetic substance produced its own voltage and so it could have that kind of effect. This fits with my own contention that the nano receiver-transmitters are designed to connect people to the

Smart Grid and break the receiver-transmitter connection to expanded consciousness. That would explain the French energy healer's experience of the disconnection of body from 'soul' with those who have had the 'vaccine'. The nanobots, self-replicating inside the body, would also transmit the synthetic frequency which could be picked up through close interaction by those who have not been 'vaccinated'. Madej speculated that perhaps it was 5G and increased levels of other radiation that was causing the symptoms directly although interestingly she said that non-'vaccinated' patients had shown improvement when they were away from the 'vaccinated' person they had interacted with. It must be remembered that you can control frequency and energy with your mind and you can consciously create energetic barriers or bubbles with the mind to stop damaging frequencies from penetrating your field. American paediatrician Dr Larry Palevsky said the 'vaccine' was not a 'vaccine' and was never designed to protect from a 'viral' infection. He called it 'a massive, brilliant propaganda of genocide' because they didn't have to inject everyone to get the result they wanted. He said the content of the jabs was able to infuse any material into the brain, heart, lungs, kidneys, liver, sperm and female productive system. 'This is genocide; this is a weapon of mass destruction.' At the same time American colleges were banning students from attending if they didn't have this life-changing and potentially life-ending 'vaccine'. Class action lawsuits must follow when the consequences of this college fascism come to light. As the book was going to press came reports about fertility effects on sperm in 'vaccinated' men which would absolutely fit with what I have been saying and hospitals continued to fill with 'vaccine' reactions. Another question is what about transmission via blood transfusions? The NHS has extended blood donation restrictions from seven days after a 'Covid vaccination' to 28 days after even a sore arm reaction.

I said in the spring of 2020 that the then touted 'Covid vaccine' would be ongoing each year like the flu jab. A year later Pfizer CEO, the appalling Albert Bourla, said people would 'likely' need a 'booster dose' of the 'vaccine' within 12 months of getting 'fully

vaccinated' and then a yearly shot. 'Variants will play a key role', he said confirming the point. Johnson & Johnson CEO Alex Gorsky also took time out from his 'vaccine' disaster to say that people may need to be vaccinated against 'Covid-19' each year. UK Health Secretary, the psychopath Matt Hancock, said additional 'boosters' would be available in the autumn of 2021. This is the trap of the 'vaccine passport'. The public will have to accept every last 'vaccine' they introduce, including for the fake 'variants', or it would cease to be valid. The only other way in some cases would be continuous testing with a test not testing for the 'virus' and what is on the swabs constantly pushed up your nose towards the brain every time?

### **'Vaccines' changing behaviour**

I mentioned in the body of the book how I believed we would see gathering behaviour changes in the 'vaccinated' and I am already hearing such comments from the non-'vaccinated' describing behaviour changes in friends, loved ones and work colleagues. This will only increase as the self-replicating synthetic material and nanoparticles expand in body and brain. An article in the *Guardian* in 2016 detailed research at the University of Virginia in Charlottesville which developed a new method for controlling brain circuits associated with complex animal behaviour. The method, dubbed 'magnetogenetics', involves genetically-engineering a protein called ferritin, which stores and releases iron, to create a magnetised substance – 'Magneto' – that can activate specific groups of nerve cells from a distance. This is claimed to be an advance on other methods of brain activity manipulation known as optogenetics and chemogenetics (the Cult has been developing methods of brain control for a long time). The ferritin technique is said to be non-invasive and able to activate neurons 'rapidly and reversibly'. In other words, human thought and perception. The article said that earlier studies revealed how nerve cell proteins 'activated by heat and mechanical pressure can be genetically engineered so that they become sensitive to radio waves and magnetic fields, by attaching them to an iron-storing protein called ferritin, or to inorganic

paramagnetic particles'. Sensitive to radio waves and magnetic fields? You mean like 5G, 6G and 7G? This is the human-AI Smart Grid hive mind we are talking about. The *Guardian* article said:

... the researchers injected Magneto into the striatum of freely behaving mice, a deep brain structure containing dopamine-producing neurons that are involved in reward and motivation, and then placed the animals into an apparatus split into magnetised and non-magnetised sections.

Mice expressing Magneto spent far more time in the magnetised areas than mice that did not, because activation of the protein caused the striatal neurons expressing it to release dopamine, so that the mice found being in those areas rewarding. This shows that Magneto can remotely control the firing of neurons deep within the brain, and also control complex behaviours.

Make no mistake this basic methodology will be part of the 'Covid vaccine' cocktail and using magnetics to change brain function through electromagnetic field frequency activation. The Pentagon is developing a 'Covid vaccine' using ferritin. Magnetism would explain changes in behaviour and why videos are appearing across the Internet as I write showing how magnets stick to the skin at the point of the 'vaccine' shot. Once people take these 'vaccines' anything becomes possible in terms of brain function and illness which will be blamed on 'Covid-19' and 'variants'. Magnetic field manipulation would further explain why the non-'vaccinated' are reporting the same symptoms as the 'vaccinated' they interact with and why those symptoms are reported to decrease when not in their company. Interestingly 'Magneto', a 'mutant', is a character in the Marvel Comic *X-Men* stories with the ability to manipulate magnetic fields and he believes that mutants should fight back against their human oppressors by any means necessary. The character was born Erik Lehnsherr to a Jewish family in Germany.

## **Cult-controlled courts**

The European Court of Human Rights opened the door for mandatory 'Covid-19 vaccines' across the continent when it ruled in a Czech Republic dispute over childhood immunisation that legally

enforced vaccination could be 'necessary in a democratic society'. The 17 judges decided that compulsory vaccinations did not breach human rights law. On the face of it the judgement was so inverted you gasp for air. If not having a vaccine infused into your body is not a human right then what is? Ah, but they said human rights law which has been specifically written to delete all human rights at the behest of the state (the Cult). Article 8 of the European Convention on Human Rights relates to the right to a private life. The crucial word here is '*except*':

There shall be no interference by a public authority with the exercise of this right EXCEPT such as is in accordance with the law and is necessary in a democratic society in the interests of national security, public safety or the economic wellbeing of the country, for the prevention of disorder or crime, for the protection of health or morals, or for the protection of the rights and freedoms of others [My emphasis].

No interference *except* in accordance with the law means there *are* no 'human rights' *except* what EU governments decide you can have at their behest. 'As is necessary in a democratic society' explains that reference in the judgement and 'in the interests of national security, public safety or the economic well-being of the country, for the prevention of disorder or crime, for the protection of health or morals, or for the protection of the rights and freedoms of others' gives the EU a coach and horses to ride through 'human rights' and scatter them in all directions. The judiciary is not a check and balance on government extremism; it is a vehicle to enforce it. This judgement was almost laughably predictable when the last thing the Cult wanted was a decision that went against mandatory vaccination. Judges rule over and over again to benefit the system of which they are a part. Vaccination disputes that come before them are invariably delivered in favour of doctors and authorities representing the view of the state which owns the judiciary. Oh, yes, and we have even had calls to stop putting 'Covid-19' on death certificates within 28 days of a 'positive test' because it is claimed the practice makes the 'vaccine' appear not to work. They are laughing at you.

The scale of madness, inhumanity and things to come was highlighted when those not 'vaccinated' for 'Covid' were refused evacuation from the Caribbean island of St Vincent during massive volcanic eruptions. Cruise ships taking residents to the safety of another island allowed only the 'vaccinated' to board and the rest were left to their fate. Even in life and death situations like this we see 'Covid' stripping people of their most basic human instincts and the insanity is even more extreme when you think that fake 'vaccine'-makers are not even claiming their body-manipulating concoctions stop 'infection' and 'transmission' of a 'virus' that doesn't exist. St Vincent Prime Minister Ralph Gonsalves said: 'The chief medical officer will be identifying the persons already vaccinated so that we can get them on the ship.' Note again the power of the chief medical officer who, like Whitty in the UK, will be answering to the World Health Organization. This is the Cult network structure that has overridden politicians who 'follow the science' which means doing what WHO-controlled 'medical officers' and 'science advisers' tell them. Gonsalves even said that residents who were 'vaccinated' after the order so they could board the ships would still be refused entry due to possible side effects such as 'wooziness in the head'. The good news is that if they were woozy enough in the head they could qualify to be prime minister of St Vincent.

## **Microchipping freedom**

The European judgement will be used at some point to justify moves to enforce the 'Covid' DNA-manipulating procedure. Sandra Ro, CEO of the Global Blockchain Business Council, told a World Economic Forum event that she hoped 'vaccine passports' would help to 'drive forced consent and standardisation' of global digital identity schemes: 'I'm hoping with the desire and global demand for some sort of vaccine passport – so that people can get travelling and working again – [it] will drive forced consent, standardisation, and frankly, cooperation across the world.' The lady is either not very bright, or thoroughly mendacious, to use the term 'forced consent'.



You do not 'consent' if you are forced – you *submit*. She was describing what the plan has been all along and that's to enforce a digital identity on every human without which they could not function. 'Vaccine passports' are opening the door and are far from the end goal. A digital identity would allow you to be tracked in everything you do in cyberspace and this is the same technique used by Cult-owned China to enforce its social credit system of total control. The ultimate 'passport' is planned to be a microchip as my books have warned for nearly 30 years. Those nice people at the Pentagon working for the Cult-controlled Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) claimed in April, 2021, they have developed a microchip inserted under the skin to detect 'asymptomatic Covid-19 infection' before it becomes an outbreak and a 'revolutionary filter' that can remove the 'virus' from the blood when attached to a dialysis machine. The only problems with this are that the 'virus' does not exist and people transmitting the 'virus' with no symptoms is brain-numbing bullshit. This is, of course, not a ruse to get people to be microchipped for very different reasons. DARPA also said it was producing a one-stop 'vaccine' for the 'virus' and all 'variants'. One of the most sinister organisations on Planet Earth is doing this? Better have it then. These people are insane because Wetiko that possesses them is insane.

Researchers from the Salk Institute in California announced they have created an embryo that is part human and part monkey. My books going back to the 1990s have exposed experiments in top secret underground facilities in the United States where humans are being crossed with animal and non-human 'extraterrestrial' species. They are now easing that long-developed capability into the public arena and there is much more to come given we are dealing with psychiatric basket cases. Talking of which – Elon Musk's scientists at Neuralink trained a monkey to play Pong and other puzzles on a computer screen using a joystick and when the monkey made the correct move a metal tube squirted banana smoothie into his mouth which is the basic technique for training humans into unquestioning compliance. Two Neuralink chips were in the monkey's skull and

more than 2,000 wires ‘fanned out’ into its brain. Eventually the monkey played a video game purely with its brain waves. Psychopathic narcissist Musk said the ‘breakthrough’ was a step towards putting Neuralink chips into human skulls and merging minds with artificial intelligence. *Exactly*. This man is so dark and Cult to his DNA.

## **World Economic Fascism (WEF)**

The World Economic Forum is telling you the plan by the statements made at its many and various events. Cult-owned fascist YouTube CEO Susan Wojcicki spoke at the 2021 WEF Global Technology Governance Summit (see the name) in which 40 governments and 150 companies met to ensure ‘the responsible design and deployment of emerging technologies’. Orwellian translation: ‘Ensuring the design and deployment of long-planned technologies will advance the Cult agenda for control and censorship.’ Freedom-destroyer and Nuremberg-bound Wojcicki expressed support for tech platforms like hers to censor content that is ‘technically legal but could be harmful’. Who decides what is ‘harmful’? She does and they do. ‘Harmful’ will be whatever the Cult doesn’t want people to see and we have legislation proposed by the UK government that would censor content on the basis of ‘harm’ no matter if the information is fair, legal and provably true. Make that *especially* if it is fair, legal and provably true. Wojcicki called for a global coalition to be formed to enforce content moderation standards through automated censorship. This is a woman and mega-censor so self-deluded that she shamelessly accepted a ‘free expression’ award – *Wojcicki* – in an event sponsored by her own *YouTube*. They have no shame and no self-awareness.

You know that ‘Covid’ is a scam and Wojcicki a Cult operative when YouTube is censoring medical and scientific opinion purely on the grounds of whether it supports or opposes the Cult ‘Covid’ narrative. Florida governor Ron DeSantis compiled an expert panel with four professors of medicine from Harvard, Oxford, and Stanford Universities who spoke against forcing children and

vaccinated people to wear masks. They also said there was no proof that lockdowns reduced spread or death rates of 'Covid-19'. Cult-gofer Wojcicki and her YouTube deleted the panel video 'because it included content that contradicts the consensus of local and global health authorities regarding the efficacy of masks to prevent the spread of Covid-19'. This 'consensus' refers to what the Cult tells the World Health Organization to say and the WHO tells 'local health authorities' to do. Wojcicki knows this, of course. The panellists pointed out that censorship of scientific debate was responsible for deaths from many causes, but Wojcicki couldn't care less. She would not dare go against what she is told and as a disgrace to humanity she wouldn't want to anyway. The UK government is seeking to pass a fascist 'Online Safety Bill' to specifically target with massive fines and other means non-censored video and social media platforms to make them censor 'lawful but harmful' content like the Cult-owned Facebook, Twitter, Google and YouTube. What is 'lawful but harmful' would be decided by the fascist Blair-created Ofcom.

Another WEF obsession is a cyber-attack on the financial system and this is clearly what the Cult has planned to take down the bank accounts of everyone – except theirs. Those that think they have enough money for the Cult agenda not to matter to them have got a big lesson coming if they continue to ignore what is staring them in the face. The World Economic Forum, funded by Gates and fronted by Klaus Schwab, announced it would be running a 'simulation' with the Russian government and global banks of just such an attack called Cyber Polygon 2021. What they simulate – as with the 'Covid' Event 201 – they plan to instigate. The WEF is involved in a project with the Cult-owned Carnegie Endowment for International Peace called the WEF-Carnegie Cyber Policy Initiative which seeks to merge Wall Street banks, 'regulators' (I love it) and intelligence agencies to 'prevent' (arrange and allow) a cyber-attack that would bring down the global financial system as long planned by those that control the WEF and the Carnegie operation. The Carnegie Endowment for International Peace sent an instruction to First World

War US President Woodrow Wilson not to let the war end before society had been irreversibly transformed.

## **The Wuhan lab diversion**

As I close, the Cult-controlled authorities and lapdog media are systematically pushing 'the virus was released from the Wuhan lab' narrative. There are two versions – it happened by accident and it happened on purpose. Both are nonsense. The perceived existence of the never-shown-to-exist 'virus' is vital to sell the impression that there is actually an infective agent to deal with and to allow the endless potential for terrifying the population with 'variants' of a 'virus' that does not exist. The authorities at the time of writing are going with the 'by accident' while the alternative media is promoting the 'on purpose'. Cable news host Tucker Carlson who has questioned aspects of lockdown and 'vaccine' compulsion has bought the Wuhan lab story. 'Everyone now agrees' he said. Well, I don't and many others don't and the question is *why* does the system and its media suddenly 'agree'? When the media moves as one unit with a narrative it is always a lie – witness the hour by hour mendacity of the 'Covid' era. Why would this Cult-owned combination which has unleashed lies like machine gun fire suddenly 'agree' to tell the truth??

Much of the alternative media is buying the lie because it fits the conspiracy narrative, but it's the *wrong* conspiracy. The real conspiracy is that *there is no virus* and that is what the Cult is desperate to hide. The idea that the 'virus' was released by accident is ludicrous when the whole 'Covid' hoax was clearly long-planned and waiting to be played out as it was so fast in accordance with the Rockefeller document and Event 201. So they prepared everything in detail over decades and then sat around strumming their fingers waiting for an 'accidental' release from a bio-lab? *What??* It's crazy. Then there's the 'on purpose' claim. You want to circulate a 'deadly virus' and hide the fact that you've done so and you release it down the street from the highest-level bio-lab in China? I repeat – *What??*

You would release it far from that lab to stop any association being made. But, no, we'll do it in a place where the connection was certain to be made. Why would you need to scam 'cases' and 'deaths' and pay hospitals to diagnose 'Covid-19' if you had a real 'virus'? What are sections of the alternative media doing believing this crap? Where were all the mass deaths in Wuhan from a 'deadly pathogen' when the recovery to normal life after the initial propaganda was dramatic in speed? Why isn't the 'deadly pathogen' now circulating all over China with bodies in the street? Once again we have the technique of tell them what they want to hear and they will likely believe it. The alternative media has its 'conspiracy' and with Carlson it fits with his 'China is the danger' narrative over years. China *is* a danger as a global Cult operations centre, but not for this reason. The Wuhan lab story also has the potential to instigate conflict with China when at some stage the plan is to trigger a Problem-Reaction-Solution confrontation with the West. Question everything – *everything* – and especially when the media agrees on a common party line.

### **Third wave ... fourth wave ... fifth wave ...**

As the book went into production the world was being set up for more lockdowns and a 'third wave' supported by invented 'variants' that were increasing all the time and will continue to do so in public statements and computer programs, but not in reality. India became the new Italy in the 'Covid' propaganda campaign and we were told to be frightened of the new 'Indian strain'. Somehow I couldn't find it within myself to do so. A document produced for the UK government entitled 'Summary of further modelling of easing of restrictions – Roadmap Step 2' declared that a third wave was inevitable (of course when it's in the script) and it would be the fault of children and those who refuse the health-destroying fake 'Covid vaccine'. One of the computer models involved came from the Cult-owned *Imperial College* and the other from Warwick University which I wouldn't trust to tell me the date in a calendar factory. The document states that both models presumed extremely high uptake

of the 'Covid vaccines' and didn't allow for 'variants'. The document states: 'The resurgence is a result of some people (mostly children) being ineligible for vaccination; others choosing not to receive the vaccine; and others being vaccinated but not perfectly protected.' The mendacity takes the breath away. Okay, blame those with a brain who won't take the DNA-modifying shots and put more pressure on children to have it as 'trials' were underway involving children as young as six months with parents who give insanity a bad name. Massive pressure is being put on the young to have the fake 'vaccine' and child age consent limits have been systematically lowered around the world to stop parents intervening. Most extraordinary about the document was its claim that the 'third wave' would be driven by 'the resurgence in both hospitalisations and deaths ... dominated by *those that have received two doses of the vaccine*, comprising around 60-70% of the wave respectively'. The predicted peak of the 'third wave' suggested 300 deaths per day with 250 of them *fully 'vaccinated' people*. How many more lies do acquiescers need to be told before they see the obvious? Those who took the jab to 'protect themselves' are projected to be those who mostly get sick and die? So what's in the 'vaccine'? The document went on:

It is possible that a summer of low prevalence could be followed by substantial increases in incidence over the following autumn and winter. Low prevalence in late summer should not be taken as an indication that SARS-CoV-2 has retreated or that the population has high enough levels of immunity to prevent another wave.

They are telling you the script and while many British people believed 'Covid' restrictions would end in the summer of 2021 the government was preparing for them to be ongoing. Authorities were awarding contracts for 'Covid marshals' to police the restrictions with contracts starting in July, 2021, and going through to January 31st, 2022, and the government was advertising for 'Media Buying Services' to secure media propaganda slots worth a potential £320 million for 'Covid-19 campaigns' with a contract not ending until March, 2022. The recipient – via a list of other front companies – was reported to be American media marketing giant Omnicom Group

Inc. While money is no object for 'Covid' the UK waiting list for all other treatment – including life-threatening conditions – passed 4.5 million. Meantime the Cult is seeking to control all official 'inquiries' to block revelations about what has really been happening and why. It must not be allowed to – we need Nuremberg jury trials in every country. The cover-up doesn't get more obvious than appointing ultra-Zionist professor Philip Zelikow to oversee two dozen US virologists, public health officials, clinicians, former government officials and four American 'charitable foundations' to 'learn the lessons' of the 'Covid' debacle. The personnel will be those that created and perpetuated the 'Covid' lies while Zelikow is the former executive director of the 9/11 Commission who ensured that the truth about those attacks never came out and produced a report that must be among the most mendacious and manipulative documents ever written – see *The Trigger* for the detailed exposure of the almost unimaginable 9/11 story in which Sabbatians can be found at every level.

## **Passive no more**

People are increasingly challenging the authorities with amazing numbers of people taking to the streets in London well beyond the ability of the Face-Nappies to stop them. Instead the Nappies choose situations away from the mass crowds to target, intimidate, and seek to promote the impression of 'violent protestors'. One such incident happened in London's Hyde Park. Hundreds of thousands walking through the streets in protest against 'Covid' fascism were ignored by the Cult-owned BBC and most of the rest of the mainstream media, but they delighted in reporting how police were injured in 'clashes with protestors'. The truth was that a group of people gathered in Hyde Park at the end of one march when most had gone home and they were peacefully having a good time with music and chat. Face-Nappies who couldn't deal with the full-march crowd then waded in with their batons and got more than they bargained for. Instead of just standing for this criminal brutality the crowd used their numerical superiority to push the Face-Nappies out of the

park. Eventually the Nappies turned and ran. Unfortunately two or three idiots in the crowd threw drink cans striking two officers which gave the media and the government the image they wanted to discredit the 99.9999 percent who were peaceful. The idiots walked straight into the trap and we must always be aware of potential agent provocateurs used by the authorities to discredit their targets.

This response from the crowd – the can people apart – must be a turning point when the public no longer stand by while the innocent are arrested and brutally attacked by the Face-Nappies. That doesn't mean to be violent, that's the last thing we need. We'll leave the violence to the Face-Nappies and government. But it does mean that when the Face-Nappies use violence against peaceful people the numerical superiority is employed to stop them and make citizen's arrests or Common Law arrests for a breach of the peace. The time for being passive in the face of fascism is over.

We are the many, they are the few, and we need to make that count before there is no freedom left and our children and grandchildren face an ongoing fascist nightmare.

*COME ON PEOPLE – IT'S TIME.*

### **One final thought ...**

The power of love  
A force from above  
Cleaning my soul  
Flame on burn desire  
Love with tongues of fire  
Purge the soul  
Make love your goal



I'll protect you from the hooded claw  
Keep the vampires from your door  
When the chips are down I'll be around  
With my undying, death-defying  
Love for you

Envy will hurt itself  
Let yourself be beautiful  
Sparkling love, flowers  
And pearls and pretty girls  
Love is like an energy  
Rushin' rushin' inside of me

This time we go sublime  
Lovers entwine, divine, divine,  
Love is danger, love is pleasure  
Love is pure – the only treasure

I'm so in love with you  
Purge the soul  
Make love your goal

The power of love  
A force from above  
Cleaning my soul  
The power of love  
A force from above  
A sky-scraping dove

Flame on burn desire  
Love with tongues of fire  
Purge the soul  
Make love your goal

**Frankie Goes To Hollywood**

## APPENDIX

### **Cowan-Kaufman-Morell Statement on Virus Isolation (SOVI)**

*Isolation: The action of isolating; the fact or condition of being isolated or standing alone; separation from other things or persons; solitariness*

Oxford English Dictionary

The controversy over whether the SARS-CoV-2 virus has ever been isolated or purified continues. However, using the above definition, common sense, the laws of logic and the dictates of science, any unbiased person must come to the conclusion that the SARS-CoV-2 virus has never been isolated or purified. As a result, no confirmation of the virus' existence can be found. The logical, common sense, and scientific consequences of this fact are:

- the structure and composition of something not shown to exist can't be known, including the presence, structure, and function of any hypothetical spike or other proteins;
- the genetic sequence of something that has never been found can't be known;
- "variants" of something that hasn't been shown to exist can't be known;
- it's impossible to demonstrate that SARS-CoV-2 causes a disease called Covid-19.

In as concise terms as possible, here's the proper way to isolate, characterize and demonstrate a new virus. First, one takes samples (blood, sputum, secretions) from many people (e.g. 500) with symptoms which are unique and specific enough to characterize an illness. Without mixing these samples with ANY tissue or products that also contain genetic material, the virologist macerates, filters and ultracentrifuges i.e. *purifies* the specimen. This common virology technique, done for decades to isolate bacteriophages<sup>1</sup> and so-called giant viruses in every virology lab, then allows the virologist to demonstrate with electron microscopy thousands of identically sized and shaped particles. These particles are the isolated and purified virus.

These identical particles are then checked for uniformity by physical and/or microscopic techniques. Once the purity is determined, the particles may be further characterized. This would include examining the structure, morphology, and chemical composition of the particles. Next, their genetic makeup is characterized by extracting the genetic material directly from the purified particles and using genetic-sequencing techniques, such as Sanger sequencing, that have also been around for decades. Then one does an analysis to confirm that these uniform particles are exogenous (outside) in origin as a virus is conceptualized to be, and not the normal breakdown products of dead and dying tissues.<sup>2</sup> (As of May 2020, we know that virologists have no way to determine whether the particles they're seeing are viruses or just normal breakdown products of dead and dying tissues.)<sup>3</sup>

---

1 Isolation, characterization and analysis of bacteriophages from the haloalkaline lake Elmenteita, Kenya Julia Khayeli Akhwale et al, PLOS One, Published: April 25, 2019.  
<https://journals.plos.org/plosone/article?id=10.1371/journal.pone.0215734> – accessed 2/15/21

---

2 "Extracellular Vesicles Derived From Apoptotic Cells: An Essential Link Between Death and Regeneration," Maojiao Li et al, Frontiers in Cell and Developmental Biology, 2020 October 2.  
<https://www.frontiersin.org/articles/10.3389/fcell.2020.573511/full> – accessed 2/15/21

If we have come this far then we have fully isolated, characterized, and genetically sequenced an exogenous virus particle. However, we still have to show it is causally related to a disease. This is carried out by exposing a group of healthy subjects (animals are usually used) to this isolated, purified virus in the manner in which the disease is thought to be transmitted. If the animals get sick with the same disease, as confirmed by clinical and autopsy findings, one has now shown that the virus actually causes a disease. This demonstrates infectivity and transmission of an infectious agent.

None of these steps has even been attempted with the SARS-CoV-2 virus, nor have all these steps been successfully performed for any so-called pathogenic virus. Our research indicates that a single study showing these steps does not exist in the medical literature.

Instead, since 1954, virologists have taken unpurified samples from a relatively few people, often less than ten, with a similar disease. They then minimally process this sample and inoculate this unpurified sample onto tissue culture containing usually four to six other types of material – all of which contain identical genetic material as to what is called a “virus.” The tissue culture is starved and poisoned and naturally disintegrates into many types of particles, some of which contain genetic material. Against all common sense, logic, use of the English language and scientific integrity, this process is called “virus isolation.” This brew containing fragments of genetic material from many sources is then subjected to genetic analysis, which then creates in a computer-simulation process the alleged sequence of the alleged virus, a so called in silico genome. At no time is an actual virus confirmed by electron microscopy. At no time is a genome extracted and sequenced from an actual virus. This is scientific fraud.

The observation that the unpurified specimen — inoculated onto tissue culture along with toxic antibiotics, bovine fetal tissue, amniotic fluid and other tissues — destroys the kidney tissue onto which it is inoculated is given as evidence of the virus' existence and pathogenicity. This is scientific fraud.

From now on, when anyone gives you a paper that suggests the SARS-CoV-2 virus has been isolated, please check the methods sections. If the researchers used Vero cells or any other culture method, you know that their process was not isolation. You will hear the following excuses for why actual isolation isn't done:

1. There were not enough virus particles found in samples from patients to analyze.
2. Viruses are intracellular parasites; they can't be found outside the cell in this manner.

If No. 1 is correct, and we can't find the virus in the sputum of sick people, then on what evidence do we think the virus is dangerous or even lethal? If No. 2 is correct, then how is the virus spread from person to person? We are told it emerges from the cell to infect others. Then why isn't it possible to find it?

Finally, questioning these virology techniques and conclusions is not some distraction or divisive issue. Shining the light on this truth is essential to stop this terrible fraud that humanity is confronting. For, as we now know, if the virus has never been isolated, sequenced or shown to cause illness, if the virus is imaginary, then why are we wearing masks, social distancing and putting the whole world into prison?

Finally, if pathogenic viruses don't exist, then what is going into those injectable devices erroneously called "vaccines," and what is their purpose? This scientific question is the most urgent and relevant one of our time.

We are correct. The SARS-CoV2 virus does not exist.

Sally Fallon Morell, MA

Dr. Thomas Cowan, MD

Dr. Andrew Kaufman, MD

# Bibliography

- Alinsky, Saul:** *Rules for Radicals* (Vintage, 1989)
- Antelman, Rabbi Marvin:** *To Eliminate the Opiate* (Zahavia, 1974)
- Bastardi, Joe:** *The Climate Chronicles* (Relentless Thunder Press, 2018)
- Cowan, Tom:** *Human Heart, Cosmic Heart* (Chelsea Green Publishing, 2016)
- Cowan, Tom, and Fallon Morell, Sally:** *The Contagion Myth* (Skyhorse Publishing, 2020)
- Forbes, Jack D:** *Columbus And Other Cannibals – The Wetiko Disease of Exploitation, Imperialism, and Terrorism* (Seven Stories Press, 2008 – originally published in 1979)
- Gates, Bill:** *How to Avoid a Climate Disaster: The Solutions We Have and the Breakthroughs We Need* (Allen Lane, 2021)
- Huxley, Aldous:** *Brave New World* (Chatto & Windus, 1932)
- Köhnlein, Dr Claus, and Engelbrecht, Torsten:** *Virus Mania* (emu-Verlag, Lahnstein, 2020)
- Lanza, Robert, and Berman, Bob:** *Biocentrism* (BenBella Books, 2010)
- Lash, John Lamb:** *Not In His Image* (Chelsea Green Publishing, 2006)
- Lester, Dawn, and Parker, David:** *What Really Makes You Ill – Why everything you thought you knew about disease is wrong* (Independently Published, 2019)
- Levy, Paul:** *Dispelling Wetiko, Breaking the Spell of Evil* (North Atlantic Books, 2013)
- Marx, Karl:** *A World Without Jews* (Philosophical Library, first edition, 1959)
- Mullis, Kary:** *Dancing Naked in the Mine Field* (Bloomsbury, 1999)
- O'Brien, Cathy:** *Trance-Formation of America* (Reality Marketing, 1995)
- Scholem, Gershon:** *The Messianic Idea in Judaism* (Schocken Books, 1994)
- Schwab, Klaus, and Davis, Nicholas:** *Shaping the Future of the Fourth Industrial Revolution: A guide to building a better world* (Penguin Books, 2018)
- Schwab, Klaus:** *The Great Reset* (Agentur Schweiz, 2020)
- Sunstein, Cass and Thaler, Richard:** *Nudge: Improving Decisions About Health, Wealth, and Happiness* (Penguin, 2009)
- Swan, Shanna:** *Count Down: How Our Modern World Is Threatening Sperm Counts, Altering Male and Female Reproductive Development and Imperiling the Future of the Human Race* (Scribner, 2021)
- Tegmark, Max:** *Our Mathematical Universe: My Quest for the Ultimate Nature of Reality* (Penguin, 2015)
- Velikovsky, Immanuel:** *Worlds in Collision* (Paradigma, 2009)



**Wilton, Robert:** *The Last Days of the Romanovs* (Blurb, 2018, first published 1920)

# Index

## A

### **abusive relationships**

- blaming themselves, abused as [ref1](#)
- children [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)
- conspiracy theories [ref1](#)
- domestic abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
- economic abuse and dependency [ref1](#)
- isolation [ref1](#)
- physical abuse [ref1](#)
- psychological abuse [ref1](#)
- signs of abuse [ref1](#)

### **addiction**

- alcoholism [ref1](#)
- frequencies [ref1](#)
- substance abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
- technology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Adelson, Sheldon** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Agenda 21/Agenda 2030 (UN)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**AIDs/HIV** [ref1](#)

- causal link between HIV and AIDs [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

retroviruses [ref1](#)

- testing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
- trial-run for Covid-19, as [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**aliens/extraterrestrials** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**aluminium** [ref1](#)

**Amazon** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**amplification cycles** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**anaphylactic shock** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**animals** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**antibodies** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
**Antifa** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**antigens** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**anti-Semitism** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Archons** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
    energy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
    ennoa [ref1](#)  
    genetic manipulation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    inversion [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
    lockdowns [ref1](#)  
    money [ref1](#)  
    radiation [ref1](#)  
    religion [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    technology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
    Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**artificial intelligence (AI)** [ref1](#)  
**army made up of robots** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    Internet [ref1](#)  
    MHRA [ref1](#)  
    Morgellons fibres [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    Smart Grid [ref1](#)  
    Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
**asymptomatic, Covid-19 as** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**aviation industry** [ref1](#)

## **B**

**banking, finance and money** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

2008 crisis [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

boom and bust [ref1](#)

cashless digital money systems [ref1](#)

central banks [ref1](#)

credit [ref1](#)

digital currency [ref1](#)

fractional reserve lending [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#)

guaranteed income [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#)

incomes, destruction of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

interest [ref1](#)

one per cent [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

scams [ref1](#)

**BBC** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

**Becker-Phelps, Leslie** [ref1](#)

**Behavioural Insights Team (BIT) (Nudge Unit)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**behavioural scientists *and* psychologists, advice from** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Bezos, Jeff** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**Biden, Hunter** [ref1](#)

**Biden, Joe** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#),  
[ref12](#), [ref13](#), [ref14](#), [ref15](#), [ref16](#), [ref17](#)

**Big Pharma**

cholesterol [ref1](#)

health professionals [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

immunity from prosecution in US [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

WHO [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#),  
[ref7](#)

**billionaires** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#) [ref10](#), [ref11](#)  
**bird flu (H5N1)** [ref1](#)  
**Black Lives Matter (BLM)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
**Blair, Tony** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
**Brin, Sergei** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
**British Empire** [ref1](#)  
**Bush, George HW** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Bush, George W** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**Byrd, Robert** [ref1](#)

## **C**

### **Canada**

Global Cult [ref1](#)  
hate speech [ref1](#)  
internment [ref1](#)  
masks [ref1](#)  
old people [ref1](#)  
SARS-COV-2 [ref1](#)  
satellites [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)  
wearable technology [ref1](#)

### **Capitol Hill riot** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

agents provocateur [ref1](#)  
Antifa [ref1](#)  
Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
QAnon [ref1](#)  
security precautions, lack of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

### **carbon dioxide** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

### **care homes, deaths in** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

### **cashless digital money systems** [ref1](#)

### **censorship** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

fact-checkers [ref1](#)

masks [ref1](#)

media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

private messages [ref1](#)

social media [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

transgender persons [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

**Centers for Disease Control (CDC) (United States)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#),  
[ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#), [ref13](#)

**centralisation** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

**chakras** [ref1](#)

**change agents** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**chemtrails** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**chief medical officers and scientific advisers** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#),  
[ref5](#), [ref6](#)

**children** *see also* **young people**

abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)

care, taken into [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

education [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

energy [ref1](#)

family courts [ref1](#)

hand sanitisers [ref1](#)

human sacrifice [ref1](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

mental health [ref1](#)

old people [ref1](#)

parents, replacement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

reframing [ref1](#)

smartphone addiction [ref1](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)  
social media [ref1](#)  
transgender persons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
United States [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

## **China** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

anal swab tests [ref1](#)  
**Chinese Revolution** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
digital currency [ref1](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)  
guaranteed income [ref1](#)  
Imperial College [ref1](#)  
Israel [ref1](#)  
lockdown [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
masculinity crisis [ref1](#)  
masks [ref1](#)  
media [ref1](#)  
origins of virus in China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
pollution causing respiratory diseases [ref1](#)  
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Smart Grid [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
social credit system [ref1](#)  
testing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
wet market conspiracy [ref1](#)  
Wuhan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

## **cholesterol** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## **Christianity** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

criticism [ref1](#)  
cross, inversion of the [ref1](#)

Nag Hammadi texts [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Roman Catholic Church [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Satan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

**class** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**climate change hoax** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Agenda 21/Agenda 2030 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

carbon dioxide [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Club of Rome [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

fear [ref1](#)

funding [ref1](#)

Global Cult [ref1](#)

green new deals [ref1](#)

green parties [ref1](#)

inversion [ref1](#)

perception, control of [ref1](#)

PICC [ref1](#)

reframing [ref1](#)

temperature, increases in [ref1](#)

United Nations [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Wikipedia [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Clinton, Bill** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

**Clinton, Hillary** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**the cloud** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

**Club of Rome and climate change hoax** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**cognitive therapy** [ref1](#)

**Cohn, Roy** [ref1](#)

**Common Law** [ref1](#)

Admiralty Law [ref1](#)

arrests [ref1](#), [ref2](#)



contractual law, Statute Law as [ref1](#)

corporate entities, people as [ref1](#)

legalese [ref1](#)

sea, law of the [ref1](#)

Statute Law [ref1](#)

**Common Purpose leadership programme** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**communism** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**co-morbidities** [ref1](#)

**computer-generated virus,**

**Covid-19** as [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**computer models** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**connections** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**consciousness** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

expanded [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

experience [ref1](#)

heart [ref1](#)

infinity [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

religion [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

self-identity [ref1](#)

simulation thesis [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**conspiracy theorists** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**contradictory rules** [ref1](#)

**contrails** [ref1](#)

**Corman-Drosten test** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**countermimicry** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Covid-19 vaccines** *see* vaccines

**Covidiots** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Cowan, Tom** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**crimes against humanity** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

cyber-operations [ref1](#)

cyberwarfare [ref1](#)

## **D**

DARPA (Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency) [ref1](#)

deaths

care homes [ref1](#)

certificates [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

mortality rate [ref1](#)

post-mortems/autopsies [ref1](#)

recording [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

deceit

pyramid of deceit [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

sequence of deceit [ref1](#)

decoding [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

dehumanisation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Delphi technique [ref1](#)

democracy [ref1](#)

dependency [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Descartes, René [ref1](#)

DNA

numbers [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)

DNR (do not resuscitate)

orders [ref1](#)

domestic abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

downgrading of Covid-19 [ref1](#)

Drosten, Christian [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

Duesberg, Peter [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## **E**

economic abuse [ref1](#)

Edmunds, John [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

education [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

electromagnetic spectrum [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Enders, John [ref1](#)

energy

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

children and young people [ref1](#)

consciousness [ref1](#)

decoding [ref1](#)

frequencies [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

heart [ref1](#)

human energy field [ref1](#)

source, humans as an energy [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

viruses [ref1](#)

ennoia [ref1](#)

Epstein, Jeffrey [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

eternal 'I' [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

ethylene oxide [ref1](#)

European Union [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Event [ref1](#) *and* Bill Gates [ref2](#)

exosomes, Covid-19 as natural defence mechanism called [ref1](#)

experience [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Extinction Rebellion [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## **F**

Facebook

addiction [ref1](#), 448–50

Facebook

Archons [ref1](#)

censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

hate speech [ref1](#)

monopoly, as [ref1](#)

private messages, censorship of [ref1](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#)

United States election fraud [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

**fact-checkers** [ref1](#)

**Fauci, Anthony** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#),  
[ref11](#), [ref12](#)

**fear** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

climate change [ref1](#)

computer models [ref1](#)

conspiracy theories [ref1](#)

empty hospitals [ref1](#)

Italy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

medical staff [ref1](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**female infertility** [ref1](#)

**Fermi Paradox** [ref1](#)

**Ferguson, Neil** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

**fertility, decline in** [ref1](#)

**The Field** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

**finance** *see* **banking, finance and money**

**five-senses** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

censorship [ref1](#)  
consciousness, expansion of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
decoding [ref1](#)  
education [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
the Field [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
God, personification of [ref1](#)  
infinity [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
media [ref1](#)  
paranormal [ref1](#)  
perceptual programming [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Phantom Self [ref1](#)  
pneuma not nous, using [ref1](#)  
reincarnation [ref1](#)  
self-identity [ref1](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
**5G** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)  
**Floyd, George and protests, killing of** [ref1](#)  
**flu, re-labelling of** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**food and water, control of** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Freemasons** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
**Frei, Rosemary** [ref1](#)  
**frequencies**  
addictions [ref1](#)  
Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
awareness [ref1](#)  
chanting and mantras [ref1](#)  
consciousness [ref1](#)  
decoding [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
education [ref1](#)  
electromagnetic (EMF) frequencies [ref1](#)  
energy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
fear [ref1](#)

the Field [ref1](#), [ref2](#) 5G [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)  
five-senses [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
ghosts [ref1](#)  
Gnostics [ref1](#)  
hive-minds [ref1](#)  
human, meaning of [ref1](#)  
light [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
love [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
magnetism [ref1](#)  
perception [ref1](#)  
reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
simulation [ref1](#)  
terror [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)  
Wetiko [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Fuellmich, Reiner** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
furlough/rescue payments [ref1](#)

## **G**

**Gallo, Robert** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Gates, Bill**

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
climate change [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Daily Pass tracking system [ref1](#)  
Epstein [ref1](#)  
fascism [ref1](#)  
five senses [ref1](#)  
GAVI [ref1](#)  
Great Reset [ref1](#)  
GSK [ref1](#)  
Imperial College [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Johns Hopkins University [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
masks [ref1](#)  
Nuremberg trial, proposal for [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Rockefellers [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)  
Sun, dimming the [ref1](#)  
synthetic meat [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
Wellcome Trust [ref1](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
WHO [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#)  
World Economic Forum [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**Gates, Melinda** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**GAVI vaccine alliance** [ref1](#)  
**genetics, manipulation of** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Germany** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#) *see also* **Nazi Germany**  
**Global Cult** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
anti-human, why Global Cult is [ref1](#)  
Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)  
climate change hoax [ref1](#)  
contradictory rules [ref1](#)  
Covid-19 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
fascism [ref1](#)  
geographical origins [ref1](#)  
immigration [ref1](#)  
Internet [ref1](#)  
mainstream media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
monarchy [ref1](#)  
non-human dimension [ref1](#)

perception [ref1](#)  
political parties [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
pyramidal hierarchy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
reframing [ref1](#)  
Sabbatian-Frankism [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
science, manipulation of [ref1](#)  
spider and the web [ref1](#)  
transgender persons [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)  
who controls the Cult [ref1](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**globalisation** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Gnostics** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**Google** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**government**

behavioural scientists and psychologists, advice from [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

definition [ref1](#)

Joint Biosecurity Centre (JBC) [ref1](#)

people, abusive relationship with [ref1](#)

**Great Reset** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

fascism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

financial system [ref1](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#)

water and food, control of [ref1](#)

**green parties** [ref1](#)

**Griesz-Brisson, Margarite** [ref1](#)

**guaranteed income** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

## **H**

**Hancock, Matt** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**hand sanitisers** [ref1](#)

**heart** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)



**hive-minds/groupthink** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**holographs** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**hospitals, empty** [ref1](#)

**human, meaning of** [ref1](#)

**Human 2.0** [ref1](#)

addiction to technology [ref1](#)

artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

elimination of Human 1.0 [ref1](#)

fertility, decline in [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#)

implantables [ref1](#)

money [ref1](#)

mRNA [ref1](#)

nanotechnology [ref1](#)

parents, replacement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Smart Grid, connection to [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

synthetic biology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

testosterone levels, decrease in [ref1](#)

transgender = transhumanism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**human sacrifice** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Hunger Games Society** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

**Huxley, Aldous** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**I**

**identity politics** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Illuminati** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**illusory physical reality** [ref1](#)

**immigration** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**Imperial College** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

**implantables** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**incomes, destruction of** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Infinite Awareness** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**Internet** [ref1](#), [ref2](#) *see also* social media

artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)

independent journalism, lack of [ref1](#)

Internet of Bodies (IoB) [ref1](#)

**Internet of Everything (IoE)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Internet of Things (IoT)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**lockdowns** [ref1](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)  
trolls [ref1](#)

**intersectionality** [ref1](#)

**inversion**

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

climate change hoax [ref1](#)

energy [ref1](#)

Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

symbolism [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Islam**

Archons [ref1](#)

crypto-Jews [ref1](#)

Islamic State [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Jinn and Djinn [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Ottoman Empire [ref1](#)

Wahhabism [ref1](#)

**isolation** *see* **social distancing** *and* **isolation**

**Israel**

China [ref1](#)

Cyber Intelligence Unit Beersheba complex [ref1](#)

expansion of illegal settlements [ref1](#)

formation [ref1](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#)  
Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
medical experiments, consent for [ref1](#)  
Mossad [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Palestine-Israel conflict [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
parents, replacement of [ref1](#)  
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks on United States [ref1](#)  
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)  
Smart Grid [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

## **Italy**

fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Lombardy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)

## **J**

Johns Hopkins University [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
Johnson, Boris [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)  
Joint Biosecurity Centre (JBC) [ref1](#)

## **Judaism**

anti-Semitism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
crypto-Jews [ref1](#)  
inversion [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Labour Party [ref1](#)  
Nazi Germany [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Silicon Valley [ref1](#)  
Torah [ref1](#)  
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Zionists [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

## **K**

Kaufman, Andrew [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
knowledge [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
Koch's postulates [ref1](#)  
Kurzweil, Ray [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
Kushner, Jared [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## **L**

Labour Party [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Lanka, Stefan [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Lateral Flow Device (LFD) [ref1](#)  
Levy, Paul [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Life Program [ref1](#)  
lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
    amplification tampering [ref1](#)  
    Archons [ref1](#)  
    Behavioural Insights Team [ref1](#)  
    Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#)  
    care homes, deaths in [ref1](#)  
    children  
abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
mental health [ref1](#)  
    China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    computer models [ref1](#)  
    consequences [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    dependency [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

domestic abuse [ref1](#)  
fall in cases [ref1](#)  
fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
guaranteed income [ref1](#)  
Hunger Games Society [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
interaction, destroying [ref1](#)  
Internet [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
overdoses [ref1](#)  
perception [ref1](#)  
police-military state [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
protests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
psychopathic personality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
reporting/snitching, encouragement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
testing [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
WHO [ref1](#)  
**love** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Lucifer** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

## **M**

**Madej, Carrie** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Magufuli, John** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**mainstream media** [ref1](#)  
BBC [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)  
censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
China [ref1](#)  
climate change hoax [ref1](#)  
fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
independent journalism, lack of [ref1](#)  
Ofcom [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

perception [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

social disapproval [ref1](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)

United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**Mao Zedong** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Marx and Marxism** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

**masculinity** [ref1](#)

**masks/face coverings** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

  censorship [ref1](#)

  children [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

  China, made in [ref1](#)

  dehumanisation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

  fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

  flu [ref1](#)

  health professionals [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

  isolation [ref1](#)

  laughter [ref1](#)

**mass non-cooperation** [ref1](#)

**microplastics, risk of** [ref1](#)

**mind control** [ref1](#)

**multiple masks** [ref1](#)

  oxygen deficiency [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

  police [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

  pollution, as cause of plastic [ref1](#)

  Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

  reframing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

  risk assessments, lack of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

  self-respect [ref1](#)

  surgeons [ref1](#)

United States [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
'worms' [ref1](#)  
*The Matrix* movies [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
measles [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
media see mainstream media  
Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA)  
[ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**Mesopotamia** [ref1](#)  
**messaging** [ref1](#)  
**military-police state** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**mind control** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#) *see also* MKUltra  
MKUltra [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**monarchy** [ref1](#)  
**money** *see* banking, finance and money  
**Montagnier, Luc** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Mooney, Bel** [ref1](#)  
**Morgellons disease** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**mortality rate** [ref1](#)  
**Mullis, Kary** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Musk, Elon** [ref1](#)

## **N**

**Nag Hammadi texts** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**nanotechnology** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**narcissism** [ref1](#)  
**Nazi Germany** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)  
**near-death experiences** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Neocons** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Neuro-Linguistic Programming (NLP) and the Delphi technique  
[ref1](#)

NHS (National Health Service)

amplification cycles [ref1](#)

Common Purpose [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

mind control [ref1](#)

NHS England [ref1](#)

saving the NHS [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

whistle-blowers [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

No-Problem-Reaction-Solution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

non-human dimension of Global Cult [ref1](#)

nous [ref1](#)

numbers, reality as [ref1](#)

Nuremberg Codes [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Nuremberg-like tribunal, proposal for [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#),  
[ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#)

## **O**

Obama, Barack [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)

O'Brien, Cathy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Ochel, Evita [ref1](#)

Ofcom [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

old people [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Oneness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Open Society Foundations (Soros) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

oxygen 406, 528–34

## **P**

paedophilia [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Page, Larry [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)



**Palestine-Israel conflict** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**pandemic, definition of** [ref1](#)

**pandemic and health crisis scenarios/simulations** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#),  
[ref4](#)

**paranormal** [ref1](#)

**PCR tests** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

**Pearl Harbor attacks, prior knowledge of** [ref1](#)

**Pelosi, Nancy** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**perception** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

climate change hoax [ref1](#)

control [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

decoding [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

enslavement [ref1](#)

externally-delivered perceptions [ref1](#)

five senses [ref1](#)

human labels [ref1](#)

media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

political parties [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

sale of perception [ref1](#)

self-identity [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

**Phantom Self** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**pharmaceutical industry** *see* **Big Pharma**

**phthalates** [ref1](#)

**Plato's Allegory of the Cave** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**pneuma** [ref1](#)

**police**

Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#)

brutality [ref1](#)

citizen's arrests [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

common law arrests [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Common Purpose [ref1](#)

defunding [ref1](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

police-military state [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

psychopathic personality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

reframing [ref1](#)

United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

**polio** [ref1](#)

**political correctness** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**political parties** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**political puppets** [ref1](#)

**pollution** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**post-mortems/autopsies** [ref1](#)

**Postage Stamp Consensus** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**pre-emptive programming** [ref1](#)

**Problem-Reaction-Solution** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

**Project for the New American Century** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**psychopathic personality** [ref1](#)

Archons [ref1](#)

heart energy [ref1](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

police [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

recruitment [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

wealth [ref1](#)

Wetiko [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**Pushbackers** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**pyramid structure** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

## Q

**QAnon Psyop** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

## R

**racism** *see also* **Black Lives**

Matter (BLM)

anti-racism industry [ref1](#)

class [ref1](#)

critical race theory [ref1](#)

culture [ref1](#)

intersectionality [ref1](#)

reverse racism [ref1](#)

white privilege [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

white supremacy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**radiation** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**randomness, illusion of** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**reality** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**reframing** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

change agents [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

children [ref1](#)

climate change [ref1](#)

Common Purpose leadership programme [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

contradictory rules [ref1](#)

enforcers [ref1](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

NLP and the Delphi technique [ref1](#)

police [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

**religion** *see also* particular religions

alien invasions [ref1](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
control, system of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
criticism, prohibition on [ref1](#)  
five senses [ref1](#)  
good and evil, war between [ref1](#)  
hidden non-human forces [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Sabbatians [ref1](#)  
save me syndrome [ref1](#)  
Wetiko [ref1](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#)

**repetition and mind control** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**reporting/snitching, encouragement of** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Reptilians/Grey entities** [ref1](#)  
**rewiring the mind** [ref1](#)  
**Rivers, Thomas Milton** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Rockefeller family** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)  
**Rockefeller Foundation documents** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**Roman Empire** [ref1](#)  
**Rothschild family** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)  
**RT-PCR tests** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)  
**Russia**  
    collusion inquiry in US [ref1](#)  
**Russian Revolution** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Sabbatians** [ref1](#)

## **S**

**Sabbatian-Frankism** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    anti-Semitism [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    banking and finance [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
    China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Lucifer [ref1](#)  
media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Nazis [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
QAnon [ref1](#)  
Rothschilds [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
Russia [ref1](#)  
Saudi Arabia [ref1](#)  
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)  
Sumer [ref1](#)  
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**SAGE (Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#),  
[ref4](#)  
**SARS-1** [ref1](#)  
**SARs-CoV-2** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)  
**Satan/Satanism** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
**satellites in low-orbit** [ref1](#)  
**Saudi Arabia** [ref1](#)  
**Save Me Syndrome** [ref1](#)  
**scapegoating** [ref1](#)  
**Schwab, Klaus** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#),  
[ref11](#), [ref12](#)  
**science, manipulation of** [ref1](#)  
**self-identity** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**self-respect, attacks on** [ref1](#)  
**September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks on United States** [ref1](#), [ref2](#),  
[ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**77th Brigade of UK military** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Silicon Valley/tech giants** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#) *see also*  
**Facebook**

Israel [ref1](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#)

technocracy [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

**simulation hypothesis** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

**Smart Grid** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)

China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

control centres [ref1](#)

the Field [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

**social disapproval** [ref1](#)

**social distancing and isolation** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

abusive relationships [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

children [ref1](#)

flats and apartments [ref1](#)

heart issues [ref1](#)

hugs [ref1](#)

Internet [ref1](#)

masks [ref1](#)

media [ref1](#)

older people [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

one-metre (three feet) rule [ref1](#)

rewiring the mind [ref1](#)

**simulation, universe as a** [ref1](#)

**SPI-B** [ref1](#)

substance abuse [ref1](#)

suicide and self-harm [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
technology [ref1](#)  
torture, as [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
two-metre (six feet) rule [ref1](#)  
women [ref1](#)  
**social justice** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**social media** *see also* **Facebook bans on alternative views** [ref1](#)  
censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
children [ref1](#)  
emotion [ref1](#)  
perception [ref1](#)  
private messages [ref1](#)  
Twitter [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
YouTube [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
**Soros, George** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
**Spain** [ref1](#)  
**SPI-B (Scientific Pandemic Insights Group on Behaviours)** [ref1](#),  
[ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
spider and the web [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Starmer, Keir [ref1](#)  
Statute Law [ref1](#)  
Steiner, Rudolf [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Stockholm syndrome [ref1](#)  
streptomycin [ref1](#)  
suicide and self-harm [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Sumer [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Sunstein, Cass [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
swine flu (H1N1) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
synchronicity [ref1](#)  
synthetic biology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
synthetic meat [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## T

**technology** *see also* **artificial intelligence (AI)**; **Internet**;

social media addiction [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

the cloud [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

cyber-operations [ref1](#)

cyberwarfare [ref1](#)

radiation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)

technocracy [ref1](#)

**Tedros Adhanom Ghebreyesus** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#),  
[ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#), [ref13](#)

telepathy [ref1](#)

**Tenpenny, Sherri** [ref1](#)

**Tesla, Nikola** [ref1](#)

**testosterone levels, decrease in** [ref1](#)

**testing for Covid-19** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

anal swab tests [ref1](#)

cancer [ref1](#)

China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Corman-Drosten test [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

death certificates [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

fraudulent testing [ref1](#)

genetic material, amplification of [ref1](#)

Lateral Flow Device (LFD) [ref1](#)

PCR tests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Thunberg, Greta** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

**Totalitarian Tiptoe** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

**transgender persons**

activism [ref1](#)

artificial wombs [ref1](#)



censorship [ref1](#)  
child abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
women, deletion of rights and status of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
young persons [ref1](#)  
**travel restrictions** [ref1](#)  
**Trudeau, Justin** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
**Trump, Donald** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#),  
[ref11](#)  
**Twitter** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

## **U**

**UKColumn** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**United Nations (UN)** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#) *see also* **Agenda 21/Agenda 2030 (UN)**  
**United States** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
American Revolution [ref1](#)  
borders [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Capitol Hill riot [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
children [ref1](#)  
China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
CIA [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Daily Pass tracking system [ref1](#)  
demographics by immigration, changes in [ref1](#)  
Democrats [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
election fraud [ref1](#)  
far-right domestic terrorists, pushbackers as [ref1](#)  
Federal Reserve [ref1](#)  
flu/respiratory diseases statistics [ref1](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
hand sanitisers, FDA warnings on [ref1](#)

immigration, effects of illegal [ref1](#)  
impeachment [ref1](#)  
Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
lockdown [ref1](#)  
masks [ref1](#)  
mass media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
nursing homes [ref1](#)  
Pentagon [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
police [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
pushbackers [ref1](#)  
Republicans [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
borders [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Democrats [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Russia, inquiry into collusion with [ref1](#)  
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
UFO sightings, release of information on [ref1](#)  
vaccines [ref1](#)  
white supremacy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Woke Democrats [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## **V**

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
adverse reactions [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Africa [ref1](#)  
anaphylactic shock [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
animals [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
anti-vax movement [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
AstraZeneca/Oxford [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
autoimmune diseases, rise in [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Big Pharma [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

bioweapon, as real [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
black and ethnic minority communities [ref1](#)  
blood clots [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Brain Computer Interface (BCI) [ref1](#)  
care homes, deaths in [ref1](#)  
censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
chief medical officers and scientific advisers, financial interests of  
[ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
children [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)  
China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
clinical trials [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
compensation [ref1](#)  
compulsory vaccinations [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
computer programs [ref1](#)  
consciousness [ref1](#)  
cover-ups [ref1](#)  
creation before Covid [ref1](#)  
cytokine storm [ref1](#)  
deaths and illnesses caused by vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
definition [ref1](#)  
developing countries [ref1](#)  
digital tattoos [ref1](#)  
DNA-manipulation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#),  
[ref10](#)  
emergency approval [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
female infertility [ref1](#)  
funding [ref1](#)  
genetic suicide [ref1](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#)  
heart chakras [ref1](#)  
hesitancy [ref1](#)  
Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
immunity from prosecution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

implantable technology [ref1](#)  
Israel [ref1](#)  
Johnson & Johnson [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
lockdowns [ref1](#)  
long-term effects [ref1](#)  
mainstream media [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA)  
[ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
messaging [ref1](#)  
Moderna [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)  
mRNA vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)  
nanotechnology [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
NHS [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
older people [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
operating system [ref1](#)  
passports [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Pfizer/BioNTech [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
polyethylene glycol [ref1](#)  
pregnant women [ref1](#)  
psychopathic personality [ref1](#)  
races, targeting different [ref1](#)  
reverse transcription [ref1](#)  
Smart Grid [ref1](#)  
social distancing [ref1](#)  
social media [ref1](#)  
sterility [ref1](#)  
synthetic material, introduction of [ref1](#)  
tests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
travel restrictions [ref1](#)  
**variants** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**viruses, existence of** [ref1](#)  
whistle-blowing [ref1](#)

WHO [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#)  
working, vaccine as [ref1](#)  
young people [ref1](#)  
Vallance, Patrick [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)  
variants [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
vegans [ref1](#)  
ventilators [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
virology [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
virtual reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
viruses, existence of [ref1](#)  
visual reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
vitamin D [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
von Braun, Wernher [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

## **W**

war-zone hospital myths [ref1](#)  
waveforms [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
wealth [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#) [ref10](#), [ref11](#)  
wet market conspiracy [ref1](#)  
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)  
    alcoholism and drug addiction [ref1](#)  
    anti-human, why Global Cult is [ref1](#)  
    Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
    artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)  
    Big Pharma [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    children [ref1](#)  
    China [ref1](#)  
    consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
    education [ref1](#)  
    Facebook [ref1](#)

fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
frequency [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Gates [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
heart [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
lockdowns [ref1](#)  
masks [ref1](#)  
Native American concept [ref1](#)  
psychopathic personality [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
reframing/retraining programmes [ref1](#)  
religion [ref1](#)  
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)  
Smart Grid [ref1](#)  
smartphone addiction [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
social media [ref1](#)  
war [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
WHO [ref1](#)  
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Yaldabaoth [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**whistle-blowing** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
**white privilege** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**white supremacy** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)  
**Whitty, Christopher** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#),  
[ref10](#)  
**‘who benefits’** [ref1](#)  
**Wi-Fi** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
**Wikipedia** [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
**Wojcicki, Susan** [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)  
**Wokeness**  
    Antifa [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
    anti-Semitism [ref1](#)  
    billionaire social justice warriors [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Capitol Hill riot [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
censorship [ref1](#)  
Christianity [ref1](#)  
climate change hoax [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
culture [ref1](#)  
education, control of [ref1](#)  
emotion [ref1](#)  
facts [ref1](#)  
fascism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)  
group-think [ref1](#)  
immigration [ref1](#)  
indigenous people, solidarity with [ref1](#)  
inversion [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
left, hijacking the [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
Marxism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
mind control [ref1](#)  
New Woke [ref1](#)  
Old Woke [ref1](#)  
Oneness [ref1](#)  
perceptual programming [ref1](#)  
    Phantom Self [ref1](#)  
police [ref1](#)  
defunding the [ref1](#)  
reframing [ref1](#)  
public institutions [ref1](#)  
Pushbackers [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
racism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
reframing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)  
religion, as [ref1](#)  
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)  
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)  
social justice [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

transgender [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

young people [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

women, deletion of rights and status of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

World Economic Forum (WEF) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)

World Health Organization (WHO) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)

AIDs/HIV [ref1](#)

amplification cycles [ref1](#)

Big Pharma [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

cooperation in health emergencies [ref1](#)

creation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

fatality rate [ref1](#)

funding [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Gates [ref1](#)

Internet [ref1](#)

lockdown [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

world number 1 (masses) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

world number 2 [ref1](#)

Wuhan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#) [ref8](#)

## Y

Yaldabaoth [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

Yeadon, Michael [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

young people *see also* children addiction to technology [ref1](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#)



Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

YouTube [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

WHO 548

## **Z**

Zaks, Tal [ref1](#)

Zionism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Zuckerberg, Mark [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#),  
[ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#)

Zulus [ref1](#)



Ickonic is something that has been a dream of mine for the last 5 years, growing up around alternative information I have always had a natural interest in what is going on in the World and what could I do to make it better.

Across the range of subjects and positions of influence occupied mainly by people who don't strive to make things better it's the Media that I have always found the most frustrating and fascinating. Mainly because if the Media did their Jobs properly then so much of the negative things happening in the World simply would not be able to happen, because they would be exposed within a heartbeat.

Free Press and the Opportunities that the internet could have given would mean that the Media are able to expose things like never before and hold people to account for their actions. As we all know there are 'Untouchables' that walk among us, people the Media simply won't touch, expose or investigate and that leads to the dark underworlds that infest the establishment the World over. Well I say enough, it's time for something different, a different kind of Media, where no one is off limits from exposing and investigating. All we're interested in at Ickonic is the truth of what is really going on in the World on whichever subject we're covering.

We hope you enjoy what we have created and take something away from the platform, we aim to deliver information that's informative and most importantly self-empowering, you're not a little person, you're part of something much bigger than that and its time we as a collective race began to understand that and look to the future as ours to take.

It's time...

Jaymie Icke - Founder Ickonic Alternative Media.

**SIGN UP NOW AT [ICKONIC.COM](http://ICKONIC.COM)**

DAVID ICKE  
**THE ANSWER**



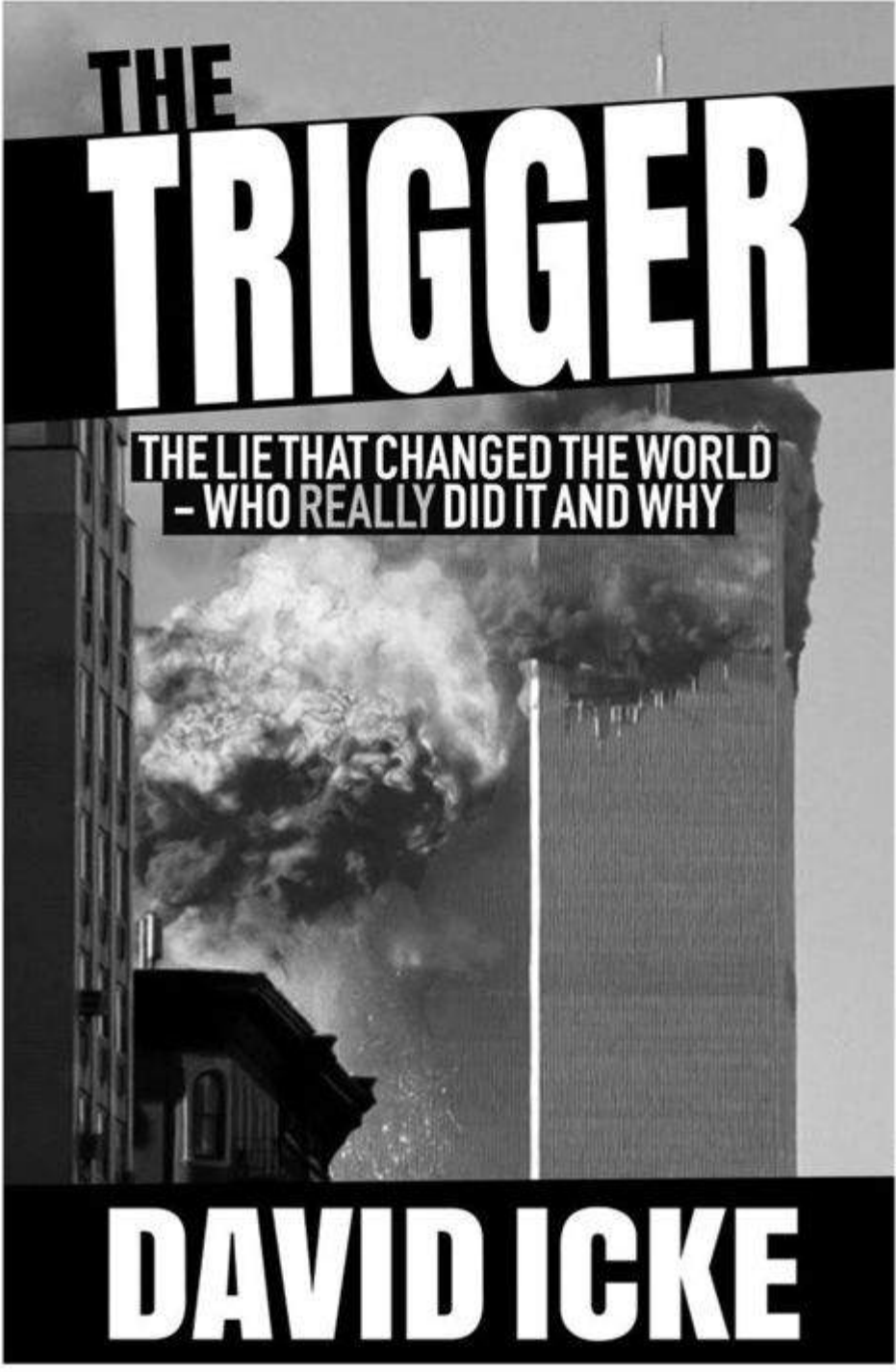
We live in extraordinary times with billions bewildered and seeking answers for what is happening. David Icke, the man who has been proved right again and again, has spent 30 years uncovering the truth behind world affairs and in a stream of previous books he predicted current events.

The Answer will change your every perception of life and the world and set you free of the illusions that control human society. There is nothing more vital for our collective freedom than humanity becoming aware of what is in this book.

**Available now at [davidicke.com](http://davidicke.com).**

# **THE TRIGGER**

**THE LIE THAT CHANGED THE WORLD  
- WHO REALLY DID IT AND WHY**



**DAVID ICKE**



**EVERYTHING  
YOU NEED  
TO KNOW**

**BUT HAVE NEVER BEEN TOLD**

**DAVID ICKE**

**DAVIDICKE.COM**



**DAVID ICKE STORE**  
**LATEST NEWS ARTICLES**  
**DAVID ICKE VIDEOS**  
**WEEKLY DOT-CONNECTOR PODCASTS**  
**LIVE EVENTS**

**WWW.DAVIDICKE.COM**

364

THE LIFE STORY OF DAVID ICKE

# RENEGADE

THE FEATURE LENGTH FILM

/ren·i·geɪd/

**noun**

A person who behaves in a rebelliously unconventional manner.



**AVAILABLE NOW AT DAVIDICKE.COM**

2 NEW BOOKS  
BY NEIL HAGUE

# ORION'S DOOR

SYMBOLS OF CONSCIOUSNESS & BLUEPRINTS OF CONTROL  
- THE STORY OF ORION'S INFLUENCE OVER HUMANITY

CUTTING EDGE VISIONARY ART  
& UNIQUE ILLUSTRATED BOOKS

NEIL HAGUE

FOR  
BOOKS, PRINTS & T-SHIRTS

VISIT:

**NEILHAGUEBOOKS.COM**

OR NEILHAGUE.COM





## **Before you go ...**

For more detail, background and evidence about the subjects in *Perceptions of a Renegade Mind* – and so much more – see my others books including *And The Truth Shall Set You Free*; *The Biggest Secret*; *Children of the Matrix*; *The David Icke Guide to the Global Conspiracy*; *Tales from the Time Loop*; *The Perception Deception*; *Remember Who You Are*; *Human Race Get Off Your Knees*; *Phantom Self*; *Everything You Need To Know But Have Never Been Told*, *The Trigger* and *The Answer*.

You can subscribe to the fantastic new Ickonic media platform where there are many hundreds of hours of cutting-edge information in videos, documentaries and series across a whole range of subjects which are added to every week. This includes my 90 minute breakdown of the week's news every Friday to explain *why* events are happening and to what end.